



Fyodor Dostoevsky  
Crime and Punishment

OXFORD WORLD'S CLASSICS

**Boston Public Library**



# CRIME AND PUNISHMENT

FYODOR MIKHAILOVICH DOSTOEVSKY was born in Moscow in 1821, the second in a family of seven children. His mother died of consumption in 1837 and his father, a generally disliked army physician, died in suspicious circumstances on his estate two years later. In 1844 he left the College of Military Engineering in St Petersburg and devoted himself to writing. *Poor Folk* (1846) met with great success from the literary critics of the day. In 1849 he was imprisoned and sentenced to death on account of his involvement with a group of utopian socialists, the Petrashevsky circle. The sentence was commuted at the last moment to penal servitude and exile, but the experience radically altered his political and personal ideology and led directly to *Memoirs from the House of the Dead* (1861-2). In 1857, whilst still in exile, he married his first wife, Maria Dmitrievna Isaeva, returning to St Petersburg in 1859. In the early 1860s he founded two new literary journals, *Vremya* and *Epokha*, and proved himself to be a brilliant journalist. He travelled in Europe, which served to strengthen his anti-European sentiment. During this period abroad he had an affair with Polina Suslova, the model for many of his literary heroines, including Polina in *The Gambler*. Central to their relationship was their mutual passion for gambling—an obsession which brought financial chaos to his affairs. Both his wife and his much-loved brother, Mikhail, died in 1864, the same year in which *Notes from the Underground* was published; *Crime and Punishment* and *The Gambler* followed in 1866, and in 1867 he married his stenographer, Anna Snitkina, who managed to bring an element of stability into his frenetic life. His other major novels, *The Idiot* (1868), *Devils* (1871), *An Accidental Family* (1875), and *The Brothers Karamazov* (1880), met with varying degrees of success. In 1880 he was hailed as a saint, prophet, and genius by the audience to whom he delivered an address at the unveiling of the Pushkin memorial. He died six months later in 1881; at the funeral thirty thousand people accompanied his coffin and his death was mourned throughout Russia.

RICHARD PEACE is Emeritus Professor of Russian at Bristol University. His publications include *Dostoyevsky: An Examination of the Major Novels* (1992), and *Dostoevsky's 'Notes from the Underground'* (1993).

## OXFORD WORLD'S CLASSICS

*For over 100 years Oxford World's Classics have brought readers closer to the world's great literature. Now with over 700 titles—from the 4,000-year-old myths of Mesopotamia to the twentieth century's greatest novels—the series makes available lesser-known as well as celebrated writing.*

*The pocket-sized hardbacks of the early years contained introductions by Virginia Woolf, T. S. Eliot, Graham Greene, and other literary figures which enriched the experience of reading.*

*Today the series is recognized for its fine scholarship and reliability in texts that span world literature, drama and poetry, religion, philosophy and politics. Each edition includes perceptive commentary and essential background information to meet the changing needs of readers.*



OXFORD WORLD'S CLASSICS

---

FYODOR DOSTOEVSKY

*Crime and Punishment*

---

*Translated by*  
JESSIE COULSON

*With an Introduction and Notes by*  
RICHARD PEACE

OXFORD  
UNIVERSITY PRESS

**OXFORD**

UNIVERSITY PRESS

• Great Clarendon Street, Oxford OX2 6DP

Oxford University Press is a department of the University of Oxford.  
It furthers the University's objective of excellence in research, scholarship,  
and education by publishing worldwide in

Oxford New York

Athens Auckland Bangkok Bogotá Buenos Aires Calcutta  
Cape Town Chennai Dar es Salaam Delhi Florence Hong Kong Istanbul  
Karachi Kuala Lumpur Madrid Melbourne Mexico City Mumbai  
Nairobi Paris São Paulo Singapore Taipei Tokyo Toronto Warsaw

with associated companies in Berlin Boston

Oxford is a registered trade mark of Oxford University Press  
in the UK and in certain other countries

Published in the United States  
by Oxford University Press Inc., New York

Translation © Jessie Coulson 1953, 1981  
Introduction, Notes © Richard Peace 1993

The moral rights of the author have been asserted

Database right Oxford University Press (maker)

First published as a World's Classics paperback 1980  
Reissued as an Oxford World's Classics paperback 1998  
Reissued 2008

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced,  
stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means,  
without the prior permission in writing of Oxford University Press,  
or as expressly permitted by law, or under terms agreed with the appropriate  
reprographic rights organizations. Enquiries concerning reproduction  
outside the scope of the above should be sent to the Rights Department,  
Oxford University Press, at the address above

You must not circulate this book in any other binding or cover  
and you must impose this same condition on any acquirer

British Library Cataloguing in Publication Data  
Data available

Library of Congress Cataloging in Publication Data  
Data available

ISBN 978-0-19-953636-8

1

Printed in Great Britain by  
Clays Ltd, St Ives plc



## CONTENTS

<i>Introduction</i>	vii
<i>Select Bibliography</i>	xxiv
<i>A Chronology of Fyodor Dostoevsky</i>	xxv
<i>Map of St Petersburg</i>	xxviii-xxix

## CRIME AND PUNISHMENT

PART I	1
PART II	84
PART III	188
PART IV	269
PART V	345
PART VI	420
EPILOGUE	512
<i>The Characters of Crime and Punishment</i>	529
<i>Explanatory Notes</i>	531





## INTRODUCTION

*Crime and Punishment* was written in circumstances of acute psychological pressure. Dostoevsky had not long returned from Siberia, and was intent on establishing a literary career disrupted by ten years of penal servitude and exile. The two literary journals he had started with his brother Mikhail had been closed down. His wife had died and shortly afterwards his brother, to whom he was very close, had also died. He felt morally obliged to support his feckless stepson as well as the family of his own brother. Yet he was desperately short of money. He turned to a rogue publisher, Stellovsky, and concluded an iniquitous contract, which unless he delivered a further manuscript on time would deprive him of his author's rights for nine years. He fled abroad to escape his creditors and to join his young mistress, Apollinaria Suslova, but abroad fresh trouble awaited him: she had fallen in love with another, and the tortured, self-lacerating relationship that now developed between her and Dostoevsky could well have been taken from one of his novels. He sought consolation in gaming at Wiesbaden but lost what little he had left of the money he had received from Stellovsky as well as a loan from Turgenev. He skulked in a hotel room for which he could not afford to pay and tried to subsist on tea.

It was in these circumstances that he conceived the idea for a novel about a student living in abject poverty, immured in a cramped, dingy room, hiding away from the psychological pressure of family and friends, and seeking to redeem his fortunes at a stroke by the murder of an old pawnbroker. Yet the novel, which in similar fashion Dostoevsky hoped would restore his own fortunes, was to be more complex than this bare outline. In offering the novel to the publisher Katkov in return for an immediate advance, he linked his plot to ideological motives which cast light on contemporary Russian society:

It is a psychological account of a crime. The action is contemporary, in the present year. A young man, an expelled university student, *petit bourgeois* in origin, and living in extreme poverty, who through the superficiality of his thought and the instability of his ideas has



surrendered himself to certain strange and half-baked notions which are in the air, has decided to extricate himself at one stroke from his terrible position.

Dostoevsky could not afford to 'extricate himself' from the terrible position he was in with Stellovsky. He needed money immediately. The advance from Katkov arrived late, but in the meantime he had received money from a friend in Copenhagen, which he supplemented by borrowing from a Russian priest in Wiesbaden. The letter to Katkov suggests many of the fundamental features of the novel itself: the emphasis on psychology, the contemporary actuality of the setting, and even the unresolved nature of Raskolnikov's motivation—is the crime committed merely for material gain, or because of 'notions that are in the air'?

What makes *Crime and Punishment* a modern novel is precisely its unrelenting focus on the psychology of the central character. Dostoevsky had first planned the work as a confession, but the third-person narrative which he later substituted bears all the inward-looking quality of a first-person narrative, in which other characters, although conceived in their own right, take on the almost spectral quality of figures working within the imagination of the central character. The psychological battle with Porfiry is a case in point. The examining magistrate appears to have intuitive, prior knowledge about the murderer, in whom he recognizes great qualities, so that his struggle to save him by bringing him to repentance suggests Porfiry in the role of objectified conscience.

Psychology in the novel 'cuts both ways'. Raskolnikov uses psychological cunning in his attempt to put Porfiry off the scent. The latter, on the other hand, uses similar tricks in his apparently friendly and light-hearted interrogation of Raskolnikov. Psychologists from Freud to R. D. Laing have shown great interest in Dostoevsky's work. A character in his novel *The Idiot* claims that the law of self-destruction has as much force in human affairs as the law of self-preservation—an idea that appears to anticipate Freud's theory of the death-wish. In *Crime and Punishment* Raskolnikov feels the full force of the 'law of self-preservation':

'Where was it,' Raskolnikov thought... 'where was it that I read of how a condemned man, just before he died, said, or thought, that if



he had to live on some high crag on a ledge so small that there was no more than room for his two feet, with all about him the abyss—the ocean, eternal night, eternal solitude, eternal storm—and there he must remain, on a hand-sbreadth of ground all his life—a thousand years, through all eternity—it would be better to live so, than die within the hour! Only to live—to live! No matter how—only to live! . . . How true! Lord, how true!’ (152)

Yet the ‘law of self-destruction’ has as much force as the ‘law of self-preservation’. Raskolnikov seems compelled by some inner drive constantly to betray himself. He blurts out a mock confession to the police clerk Zametov—a confession which he passes off as a bitter joke, but which is in fact the truth. He goes back to the scene of the crime, rings the bell compulsively, and asks about the blood. By actions such as these he appears to court disaster—to be going out of his way to attract suspicion to himself.

The novel also anticipates Freudian theory on memory and the working of the subconscious. Towards the end of *Crime and Punishment* Raskolnikov is on his way to see his evil genius, Svidrigaylov, but he wanders from the direct route and suddenly, to his surprise, catches sight of Svidrigaylov sitting in an inn. Raskolnikov thinks this chance encounter is a pure fluke. Svidrigaylov, however, taunts him by calling it a ‘miracle’, which he then explains. He had given Raskolnikov precise and detailed instructions to meet him at this very place, but he must have suppressed them from his conscious memory and come along ‘automatically’, as Svidrigaylov puts it (447–8).

The psychological condition of masochism is also formulated by Dostoevsky in *The Idiot*, where one of the characters claims that there is a point beyond which self-abasement ceases to be a pain and becomes a pleasure. In *Crime and Punishment* the scene in which Sonya’s reprobate father, Marmeladov, having spent all his money on drink, returns home to meet the onslaughts of his wife illustrates this well enough:

‘Where is the money, then?’ she cried. ‘Oh God, he can’t have drunk it all!’ There were twelve silver roubles left in my box! . . . Then, beside herself, she clutched his hair with a sudden swift movement and dragged him into the room. Marmeladov himself helped, shuffling meekly on his knees after her.

'This is sweet satisfaction to me' This gives me not pain but pleasure, sure, my very dear sir' he exclaimed, while he was shaken by the hair and once even had his forehead bumped on the floor (23-4)

Its counterpart, sadism, is also clearly seen in the novel, particularly in the attitude of the crowd to the beating to death of the old mare—a dream obviously related to Raskolnikov's murder of the old woman. Both these psychological poles are present in Raskolnikov himself. They are reflected in the antinomies of his theory, a 'louse' or 'Napoleon', and they permeate his behaviour: the cruel act and the thrill of self-immolation, the ruthless self-assertion and the urge towards philanthropy (his very name suggests division: *raskol* means 'split', 'schism'). It is his friend, Razumikhin, who points to Raskolnikov's divided nature: 'Really, it is as if he had two separate personalities, each dominating him alternately' (206).

On the other hand, the contemporaneity, which Dostoevsky also stresses in his letter to Katkov, suggests quite a different type of novel—one concerned with actuality and realism. The contemporary setting is the post-reform Russia of 1865. The major reform, the emancipation of the serfs, had occurred four years before, and was to have profound effects on the whole of Russian society. It reduced the wealth and status of the landowners without satisfying the basic needs of the peasants, yet it was seen as the first major step towards the introduction of a Western style, free-enterprise economy. Dostoevsky's journeys to the West in 1862 and 1865 had left him very sceptical about the benefits of Western capitalism. Like many Russians, then and now, he tended to equate 'freedom' with 'licence', seeing a correlation between untrammelled liberty and crime. There is much discussion of crime as a contemporary phenomenon in the novel. Razumikhin refers to the case of intellectuals convicted of forging bank notes, who justified themselves in the spirit of the times: 'Everyone else gets rich by various means, and we wanted to get rich too, as quickly as we could' (145). Significantly, Razumikhin relates this to the great social changes ushered in by the emancipation of the serfs: 'When the great hour struck, they revealed who they were'. Other reforms followed, including major revision of the legal system (1863-4). The most polemically charged portrait in the



novel is that of a new lawyer, Luzhin, who is also a would-be entrepreneur.

Part of the licence that was abroad could be seen in the greater incidence of drunkenness, which had stemmed from the control of the sale of alcohol in 1863 and by 1865 had led to a proliferation of establishments selling hard drink. Marmeladov is the chief character exemplifying this contemporary vice, yet his is not an isolated example. With Raskolnikov we enter cheap vodka dens and meet their clientele, but there are also drunkards on the streets, and drink appears to be a potent factor in the sadistic beating to death of the old mare in Raskolnikov's dream. A further example of 'licence' is also linked to the abuse of alcohol. It is because of her father's drunkenness that Sonya has to become a prostitute to support him and the family. Dukhda, who accosts Raskolnikov from her basement, manages to beg fifteen copecks from him for drink. The girl who is trying to escape the clutches of the roue has already been given a great deal to drink. The woman who tries to drown herself is recognized by a woman in the crowd as 'our Afrosimvushka' and the only explanation the woman offers for Afrosimvushka's behaviour is that 'She's drunk herself to rumatation' (164).

Yet if drunkenness is such a problem, why should Dostoevsky give his principle drunkard the comic name of Marmeladov? The answer may be found in an earlier strand of Dostoevsky's writing. The famous apocryphal remark 'We have all come from underneath Gogol's *Dead Souls*' is attributed to Dostoevsky, but the 'we' refers to the so-called 'Natural School' of the 1840s – a group of writers identified principally by their depiction of low-life urban themes. The epithet 'Natural' is, nevertheless, misleading: their approach to urban poverty, as the apocryphal remark in itself suggests, was influenced by Gogol and, in a manner typical of his style, contained pathetic as well as bizarre and humorous elements. Dostoevsky's overnight acclaim in 1845 was based on just such a work, his first novel, *Poor Folk*.

The portrait of Marmeladov, with its mixture of the comic, the pathetic, and the grotesque, looks back to Dostoevsky's early writing. As a figure he antedates the conception of the novel proper, for when Dostoevsky's second journal, *Izokha*, was closed down he had already drafted the theme of a story on the contemporary problem of drunkenness, which was to

have borne the title *The Drunkards*. Marmeladov is the chief figure in a whole substratum of 'Natural School' writing that is clearly present in the novel. The beggars, prostitutes, musicians of the thronging streets, the scenes set in low taverns and tenement houses present us with a panorama of the 'lower depths' of St Petersburg life. Yet this base 'reality' is perceived, at least by suggestion, through the delirious eyes of Raskolnikov, it is not naturalism in its normal sense, but carries on that tradition established by Pushkin and Gogol of depicting St Petersburg as 'the most fantastic city'.

Because of this subjective treatment, the grim outer world seems almost part of Raskolnikov's inner world, and is somehow linked to his crime. His victim—the money-lender Alena—exploits this poverty, her death could serve a double purpose—the elimination of an evil and the use of her money to save her victims, for Raskolnikov's act is conceived as a double crime—murder followed by robbery. The clear formulation of this motive, however, belongs to another student, whom Raskolnikov overhears in a tavern. 'One death and a hundred lives in exchange—why it's simple arithmetic' (62).

This is the altruistic justification for the double crime of murder plus robbery, but Dostoevsky's letter to Katkov advanced a purely personal motive—to lift Raskolnikov himself out of poverty. If this non-altruistic motive were entirely straightforward, robbery alone would suffice, but it also transpires that there is a personal reason for the murder too. Raskolnikov not only needs to lift himself out of poverty, he yearns to raise himself above the crowd.

The letter to Katkov itself hinted at ambivalence. This was to be a crime committed both for pragmatic and for ideological reasons (personal gain and 'notions in the air'), yet once translated into the novel this dichotomy takes on further ambivalence. There is here a process fundamental to Dostoevsky's art, a process that mirrors that of life itself: the embryo of a conceived idea develops through self-division, and further division into symbiotic but antithetical cells. Thus the ideological motive develops further into the article on crime written by Raskolnikov himself. Typically, the reader is not presented with the straight lines of an argument logically pursued. The article is merely referred to and discussed—a technique which allows the ambiguity of its central ideas to be opened up and developed.

The principal argument concerns the right of the exceptional individual to 'step over', to commit crimes with impunity (in Russian the verb to 'step over' *perestupit* is semantically linked to 'crime' *prestuplenie*). This is the so-called Napoleonic motive, and such half-baked notions were in the air. Napoleon III had attempted to justify the actions of his uncle (Napoleon I) in a book, which appeared in Russian translation as Dostoevsky was working on his novel *The History of Julius Caesar*. The author, like Raskolnikov in his article, divided humanity into 'ordinary' people and heroes and defended the right of the 'heroes' to commit acts which 'ordinary' people would regard as crimes.

The embryo of the Napoleonic idea is to be found in Raskolnikov's self-doubts on the very first page of the novel:

'To think that I can contemplate such a terrible act and yet be afraid of such trifles . . . A man holds the fate of the world in his two hands and yet simply because he is afraid he just lets things drift—that is a madness. I wonder what men are most afraid of. Any new departure and especially a *monstrum*—that is what they fear most of all.' (1-2)

Raskolnikov will need an act of the will to overcome this fear, if he is to become 'a man who holds the fate of the world in his two hands'. Yet here again is a contradiction which seems at odds with the premisses of his own article: for according to this exceptional men are a consequence of other fashionable notions that are in the air—they are the product of the Darwinian evolutionary process.

'The great mass of men, the common stuff of humanity, exists on earth in order that at last, by some endeavour, some process that remains as yet mysterious, some happy conjunction of race and breeding, there should struggle into life a being, one in a thousand, capable, in however small a degree, of standing on his own feet. A definite law there must be, and is: it cannot be a matter of chance.' (252-3)

Raskolnikov is trapped between the promptings of his own will, his own endeavour 'to struggle into life' and the inevitability of external laws. To this extent he is a tragic figure, almost in a Greek mould. In the act of asserting his supreme will he is constantly dogged by a sense of fate. The final decision to commit the murder is made when he learns by



chance of Lizaveta's proposed absence from her sister's apartment, and he feels 'It was almost as though fate had laid an ambush for him' (58). The sense is reinforced by another overheard conversation between a student and an officer who are discussing the possibility of the very crime which he himself intends to commit. Again he feels this is fate: 'This casual public-house conversation had an extraordinary influence on the subsequent development of the matter, as if indeed there were something fateful and preordained about it' (63).

The feeling of inevitability intensifies on the eve of the crime itself.

His reactions during this last day, which had come upon him so unexpectedly and settled everything at one stroke, were almost completely mechanical, as though someone had taken his hand and pulled him along irresistibly, blindly, with supernatural strength and without objection. It was as if a part of his clothing had been caught in the wheel of a machine and he was being dragged into it (67-8).

The image does not augur well for Raskolnikov—he is caught up in the process of his own destruction. After the murder his fear returns, and he is finally driven to the act of self-immolation—his confession to Sonya. Here too he is dogged by a sense of inevitability. On his way to see her he feels exactly as he did on his way to murder Alëna 'the tormenting consciousness of his helplessness before the inevitable almost crushed him' (389).

The all-knowing Porfiry points to the interconnection of theory, will, and fate in Raskolnikov's crime, and in so doing appears to contradict Raskolnikov's own self-image of a man clinging at all costs to a precipice:

'There are bookish dreams here and a heart troubled by theories, there is resolution evident here, for the first step, but resolution of a special kind—a resolve like that of a man falling from a precipice or flinging himself off a tower; this is the work of a man carried along into crime, as it were, by some outside force' (437).

The 'heart troubled by theories' might have succumbed to Napoleonism, but there is in effect a whole background of 'half-baked' notions in the air, stemming directly from an English tradition. The influence of Darwinism on Raskolnikov's article has been noted, but the general intellectual climate of Russia at the time was influenced by ideas

which have enjoyed a surprising resurgence in Britain itself (not to mention Russia) in the late twentieth century: the economic theories of English Utilitarianism. Lebezyatnikov, their chief proponent in the novel, proclaims: "Everything that is *useful* to humanity is honourable. I understand only one word, *useful*" (355). The moral implications of such ideas are introduced early in the novel through the mouth of Marmeladov: "But recently Mr Lebezvatnikov, who is a follower of the latest ideas, was explaining that in this age the sentiment of compassion is actually prohibited by science, and that is how they order things in England, where they have *political economy*" (11-12).

The reference to 'political economy' is an oblique allusion to the foremost of the English Utilitarians, John Stuart Mill. His *magnum opus*, *Principles of Political Economy* which restated the economic theories of Adam Smith, Ricardo, and Malthus had been commented on and translated by N. G. Chernyshevsky, the foremost radical of post-reform Russia, who had also taken over Mill's precept of 'enlightened self-interest'. Nevertheless, this ideological corner-stone of *laissez-faire* capitalism had undergone a strange transformation in Russia, where it turned itself into the 'socialist' doctrine of 'rational egoism'. By charging *reason* with full control of the ego, Chernyshevsky ended up with a doctrine of social altruism in which the commune, rather than the individual, was proposed as the foundation of a new society. Dostoevsky, on the other hand, whose earlier visit to London had left him profoundly disillusioned with the English view of progress, knew the consequences of a philosophy of 'self-interest', and by redirecting them back to their true base in his bourgeois figure, Luzhin, he manages to discredit the 'half-baked' theories of Chernyshevsky, as propounded by his epigone, Lebezyatnikov, while at the same time pointing to their attractiveness for the entrepreneurs of post-reform Russia. Luzhin appears to reject Christian morality in the name of the new doctrine of 'self-interest'.

'No, sir' If for example, in earlier times it was said to me: "Love your neighbour" and I acted upon it, what was the result? The result was that I divided my cloak with my neighbour and we were both left half-naked, for according to the Russian proverb: "If you run after two hares, you will catch neither." Science, however, says: love your

self first of all, for everything in the world is based on personal interest. If you love yourself alone, you will conduct your affairs properly, and your cloak will remain whole' (142)

Thus before the church leaders of the late twentieth century, Dostoevsky, through the polemical figure of Luzhin, had already pointed out that the philosophical values of the 'me generation' were the very antithesis of the teachings of Christ.

Luzhin then proceeds to give his own version of 'trickle down':

Economic truth adds that the more private enterprises are established and the more — so to say, whole cloaks there are in a society, the firmer will be its foundations and the more will be undertaken for the common good. That is to say that by the very act of devoting my gains solely and exclusively to myself, I am at the same time benefiting the whole community, and ensuring that my neighbour receives something better than half a torn cloak, and that not by private, isolated bounty, but as a consequence of the general economic advancement.' (142-3)

Another preoccupation of the late twentieth century, the relationship between self-interest and criminality, is pointed out by Raskolnikov, who, in a sudden challenge to the fashionable ideas propounded by Luzhin, reveals them as a possible ideological underpinning for a crime similar to his own:

'What are you making so much fuss about?' broke in Raskolnikov unexpectedly. 'It has worked out in accordance with your own theory.'

'How do you mean, in accordance with my theory?'

'Carry to its logical conclusion what you were preaching just now, and it emerges that you can cut people's throats.' (145)

Dostoevsky with his gift for exploiting ambiguity has shown what are both the right-wing and the left wing implications of 'rational egoism'. Indeed, the followers of Chernyshevsky would later throw themselves into criminal acts in the growing terrorist tide of the revolutionary struggle. These political overtones are present in Raskolnikov's article, both in his reference to the building of the 'New Jerusalem' and in his arguments on exceptional people:



'The second group are all lawbreakers and transgressors, or are inclined that way, in the measure of their capacities. The aims of these people are, of course, relative and very diverse: for the most part they require, in widely different contexts, the destruction of what exists in the name of better things. But if it is necessary for one of them, for the fulfilment of his ideas, to march over corpses, or wade through blood, then in my opinion he may in all conscience authorize himself to wade through blood—in proportion, however, to his idea and the degree of its importance—mark that' (250).

In the following year (1866) Dostoevsky saw his fears realized in the first attempt on the life of Tsar Alexander II by the student revolutionary Karakozov, for the terms of the emancipation were such that they had engendered disillusionment and anger not only among the peasants but also among their intellectual supporters. The traditional weapon of peasant unrest was the axe, and it is precisely this instrument which Raskolnikov has chosen for his murder, despite its many disadvantages: the chance nature of its procurement, the difficulty of concealing it on the person, and the crude and gory nature of its action. If the choice of this weapon is designed to put investigators off the scent, it fails to confuse Porfiry, who pointedly dismisses the culpability of the peasant painters and, in turn, uses the 'axe' as a double-edged metaphor in his psychological campaign against Raskolnikov. Nevertheless, the choice of the traditional weapon of the peasant has clear political overtones, and when Raskolnikov is confronted with real peasant criminals in Siberia, they show their disapproval: "You are a gentleman!" they said. "You shouldn't have gone to work with an axe, it's not at all the thing for a gentleman!" (522).

A further ambiguity in Raskolnikov's article is the suggestion that the commission of crime is always accompanied by illness. This in itself would appear to undermine the status of the exceptional man empowered by the theory to commit such acts. Indeed, in spite of Raskolnikov's assertion of the right of the exceptional man to 'step over', his own case seems to illustrate it as a stepping over into illness and delirium. Doctor Zosimov gives his professional opinion on such matters:

"That is a very well-known phenomenon. . . . Sometimes actions are performed very skilfully, most cleverly, but the aims of the actions,

and their origin are confused, and depend on various morbid influences. It is like a dream." (217)

Crime, illness, and dream all seem interconnected. Raskolnikov's nightmare of the beating to death of the old mare which is clearly related to his own crime, is introduced as 'a sick man's dream' (51). Before he commits the murder he experiences the reassuring dream of the oasis, yet, once committed, the murder is recreated in nightmare form in his dream of the beating of his landlady, with its clear reference back to the beating of the old mare ('He undressed and lay down shuddering like an overdriven horse' (109)). The final dream in Siberia about nihilism infecting the minds of men like a disease is presented as a moment of enlightenment, but once more dream and illness are linked.

With Svidrigaylov's entrance into the novel the argument goes further—illness makes possible the contact with another world. Svidrigaylov rejects conventional wisdom which argues 'You are sick, and so what you think you see is nothing more than the unreal dream of your feverish mind' (277). Svidrigaylov contends that as illness increases so do contacts with the other world, until 'at the moment of a man's death he enters fully into that world' (277). Yet the apparitions from the other world that appear to Svidrigaylov are the ghosts of his victims (his wife and his servant), they are perhaps mere manifestations of conscience, and as such suggest the 'unreal dreams' of Raskolnikov's own 'feverish mind'.

Raskolnikov's coffin-like room, the lack of air in a fantastic city reduced to an area that can be measured in the hero's footsteps, the many coincidences and the interweaving of relationships, in which Raskolnikov is always at the centre—all this creates a claustrophobic intensity suggesting a world that verges on the solipsistic. Alena and Lizaveta are not only characters in their own right, but embodiments of the polar choices confronting Raskolnikov himself: on the one hand ruthless self-interest, on the other selfless humility. They are reflections of the two antithetical types of humanity posed in Raskolnikov's article—the tyrant as hero, and the ordinary person as victim. Yet these very same antinomies in the article are merely the intellectual projection of a dichotomy lying deep within the personality of its author.

In conceiving his act of self-assertion Raskolnikov virtually ignores Lizaveta, yet the chance knowledge that she will be absent from the common apartment shared with Alëna is the sudden determining factor confirming his resolution to 'step over' and reveal his Napoleonic potential. Nevertheless, the allegory of the novel shows that Raskolnikov's act of self-definition cannot involve one side of his divided personality to the exclusion of the other. The planned murder of Alëna inevitably brings in its train the unforeseen murder of Lizaveta. This débâcle does not eliminate but rather intensifies the contrary pull of the two sides of his character. The polarity is now embodied in Svidrigaylov and Sonya who like Alëna and Lizaveta before them also share a common dwelling. Moreover, both first encounter Raskolnikov after the symbolic act of crossing a threshold—an echo of Raskolnikov's own emblematic desire to 'step over'.

Sonya is quite specifically linked to Lizaveta. The two women have exchanged crosses, and the bible from which Sonya reads the symbolic story of the raising of Lazarus was given her by Lizaveta (it is this bible which Raskolnikov keeps under his pillow in Siberia). The identification of Sonya with Lizaveta is in Raskolnikov's mind before his disturbing dream of re-enacting the murder of Alëna—an Alëna who refuses to die—and it is at this point that Svidrigaylov enters the novel, giving Raskolnikov the strange feeling that his dream is still continuing. As a character Svidrigaylov is the embodiment of the very values Raskolnikov had sought to appropriate through Alëna's murder.

If murder is the emblematic act of Napoleonic self-assertion, confession marks the contrary pole of louse-like self-abasement. The first is directed towards Alëna, the second towards Lizaveta, for it is specifically her murder which Raskolnikov feels the need to confess to Sonya. The parallel between these two emblematic acts is quite clear to Raskolnikov himself: This moment felt to him terribly like that other, when he had stood behind the old woman, after he had freed the axe from its loop, and felt that "there was not a moment to lose" (392). At the allegorical level this parallel is further strengthened, for just as he could not commit his act of assertion without involving the other pole represented by Lizaveta, so now he cannot confess to Sonya alone. Svidrigaylov is an eavesdropper, prepared to use



Raskolnikov's admission of weakness for his own ruthless ends. Raskolnikov is still caught between the contrary drives of his own inner conflict, and it is only on the death of Svidrigaylov that the Lizaveta/Sonya side comes more fully to the fore and he is able to make a deposition to the police. Yet even so the conflict is not fully resolved. As a convict in Siberia he is unable to acknowledge the murder of Alena as a crime, and although in the Epilogue Raskolnikov wonders whether Sonya's beliefs could 'become his beliefs now? Her feelings, her aspirations, at least' (527), the final paragraph warns us that his 'gradual renewal' his 'gradual regeneration' is in fact the beginning of a new story.

Such 'open-endedness' is typical of Dostoevsky's artistic procedures, and the fluidity which this suggests permeates the whole of the novel. Ideas in Dostoevsky always have a life of their own. Although characters such as Svidrigaylov and Sonya can be seen as allegorical opposites, yet even as ideological markers they are by no means the fixed, static figures of true allegory. The ideas which they embody are subject to the same process of inner division that characterizes the central figure himself. Each extreme contains within it a contrary direction, its own inherent self-criticism and destruction. Thus Svidrigaylov, the embodiment of the self-willed man and untroubled perpetrator of evil, reveals a vulnerable side in his love for Dunya—'I also am capable of being attracted and falling in love (which after all is not a matter that depends on our will)' (269). It is unrequited love which appears to lead him to suicide, and before his death he performs acts of unsolicited benefaction. The riddle he poses on first meeting Raskolnikov: 'The whole question is: am I a monster or am I myself a victim?' (269) is one that cannot ultimately be solved.

Nor is the goodness and Christian humility of Sonya all that it might appear. Irrespective of the fact that her virtue is 'subverted' through her activities as a prostitute, her philosophy of 'non-resistance to evil' can lead to greater harm, as Raskolnikov is only too pleased to prove to her, after the false accusation of Luzhin. He poses her dilemma in terms of a stark choice: 'either that Luzhin should live and go on doing evil, or that Katerina Ivanovna should die' (391) — a formulation equally relevant to his own position and his arguments justifying the elimination of Alena.

It is typical of Dostoevsky's novelistic procedures that his characters, while remaining true to their essential being, are nevertheless pushed by the relentless logic of ideas to a point where they reveal their own shadowy anti-selves. This is true even of the minor characters: the wheedling self-abasement of Marmeladov can also be read as a covert form of self-assertion and aggression, while the polemically presented Lebezyatnikov, with his fashionable, nihilistic Utilitarianism, turns out to be the true defender of Sonya from the persecution of Luzhin.

Dostoevsky's ruthless logic probes at his material to reveal the potential duality lurking within every character and behind every 'fixed' idea. Most disturbing of all is the extension of this process to include the consciousness of the reader. The bounds between objectivity and subjectivity, which Dostoevsky breaches by placing the solipsistic consciousness of his hero at the very centre of the novel, are, by this very fact, also fractured for the reader, who increasingly is obliged to see the world through Raskolnikov's eyes. A bond is forged between reader and hero which is so strong that willy nilly – as readers, we ourselves identify with Raskolnikov, are alarmed when his rashness seems about to betray him, relieved when the danger has passed. Yet if we step out of this subjective involvement and try to view Raskolnikov objectively, it must be said that he is a figure little deserving of sympathy. He is a sullen, unsociable young man who with cold rationality has planned a particularly vile and cowardly murder: in horrifying, gory brutality he has hacked down a defenceless old woman, and then in similar fashion has been obliged to kill her meek sister. Moreover, to the very end his rational self shows no remorse for the death of Alëna, even though his dreams appear to tell a different story.

The ambivalence of Raskolnikov's personality and behaviour intrigues and ensnares the reader's susceptibilities: like Svidrigaylov, Raskolnikov is both 'monster' and 'victim'. His act of self-determination is framed by two parallel moments which throw this paradox into sharp relief. On the very threshold of the crime, murderer and victim wait like mirror images. 'Someone was standing silently just inside the door listening, just as he was doing outside it, holding her breath and probably also with her ear to the door' (71). After the murder he is surprised by an unexpected caller and is

trapped. 'The unknown visitor was also at the door. They were standing now, opposite one another, as he and the old woman had stood with the door dividing them, when he had listened there a short time ago' (78-9). By this grimly ironic twist Dostoevsky indicates that from now on the roles of monster and victim have been reversed. We may see here *peripetia*, a turning point for the whole novel. The caller, Koch, rings the bell (just as Raskolnikov had done earlier) and is joined by a second caller, a student who, ominously, is striving to become an examining magistrate.

Raskolnikov manages to escape from entrapment by a mixture of good fortune and an animal instinct for self-preservation, but from now on this basic situation will be repeated time and time again throughout the novel: he will be cornered, will feel trapped, but always he will just manage to escape. Yet the trauma of this original reversal of positions will always haunt him. The nightmarish terror of the bell ringing is such that he will be driven back to the apartment to repeat the full horror of it, and further incriminate himself by enquiring about the blood.

From this point of *peripetia* Raskolnikov almost ceases to be the butcher, to become instead the hunted animal. It is with this predicament that the reader can so readily empathize, can catch in breath at each beat of Raskolnikov's pounding heart. Yet a disturbing question still remains: do not we, the readers, also empathize with that other side of Raskolnikov, are we not also pushed by Dostoevskian logic to acknowledge our own shadowy anti-selves?

Truth itself has its shadowy other side in the novel: 'untruth is valuable because it leads to truth' (129). This view is expressed more than once by Razumikhin—the figure of common sense and a norm against whom Raskolnikov must be set (*razum* means 'reason'). Thus Razumikhin argues: 'By pursuing falsehood you will arrive at the truth! The fact that I am in error shows that I am human. You will not attain one single truth until you have produced at least fourteen false theories, and perhaps a hundred and fourteen' (193). These words go to the heart of the novel: Raskolnikov is the inventor of at least one false theory, but through his very error he is at least human. As a convict in Siberia he looks out over the boundary of the river and ponders on his crime. Although he cannot acknowledge his theory to be wrong, he admits the



inadequacy of his own behaviour, he had not succeeded, he had confessed; unlike Svidrigaylov, he had not chosen the path of suicide:

He tortured himself with these questions, unable to realize that perhaps even while he stood by the river he already felt in his heart that there was something profoundly false in himself and in his beliefs. He did not understand that that feeling might have been the herald of a coming crisis in his life, of his coming resurrection, of a future new outlook on life. (521)

Error, the mark of Raskolnikov's humanity, contains a pledge of resurrection. Its time has not yet come, but eventually untruth will lead him to the truth. 'Life had taken the place of logic and something quite different must be worked out in his mind' (527).

## SELECT BIBLIOGRAPHY

- CATTEAL, J. *Dostoyevsky and the Process of Literary Creation*, trans. by Audrey Littlewood (Cambridge, 1989).
- CONRADI, P., *Fyodor Dostoevsky* (Basingstoke, 1988).
- FANGER, D., *Dostoevsky and Romantic Realism. A Study of Dostoevsky in Relation to Balzac, Dickens, and Gogol* (Cambridge Mass., 1967).
- FRANK, J., *Dostoevsky The Seeds of Revolt 1821-1849* (Princeton and London, 1976).
- *Dostoevsky The Years of Ordeal 1850-1859* (Princeton and London, 1983).
- *Dostoevsky The Stir of Liberation 1860-1865* (Princeton and London, 1986).
- *Dostoevsky The Miraculous Years 1865-1871* (Princeton and London, 1986).
- JACKSON, R. L. (ed.), *Twentieth Century Interpretations of 'Crime and Punishment' A Collection of Critical Essays* (Englewood Cliffs, NJ, 1974).
- JONES, M., *Dostoyevsky The Novel of Discord* (London, 1976).
- JONES, M. V., and TERRY, G. M., *New Essays on Dostoevsky* (Cambridge, 1983).
- KJETSAA, G., *Fyodor Dostoyevsky. A Writer's Life* (London, 1988).
- LEATHERBARROW, W. J., *Fedor Dostoevsky* (Boston, Mass., 1981).
- MOGHULSKY, K., *Dostoevsky, His Life and Work*, trans. by Michael Minihan (Princeton, 1967).
- NUTTALL, A. D., *'Crime and Punishment'. Murder as Philosophic Experiment* (Falmer, 1978).
- PEACE, R., *Dostoyevsky. An Examination of the Major Novels* (repr Bristol, 1992).
- WASIOLEK, E., *Dostoevsky The Major Fiction* (Cambridge, Mass., 1964).

## A CHRONOLOGY OF FYODOR DOSTOEVSKY

Italicized items are works by Dostoevsky listed by year of first publication. Dates are Old Style, which means that they lag behind those used in nineteenth-century Western Europe by twelve days.

- 1821      Fyodor Mikhailovich Dostoevsky is born in Moscow, the son of an army doctor (30 October)
- 1837      His mother dies.
- 1838      Enters the Chief Engineering Academy in St Petersburg as an army cadet.
- 1839      His father dies, possibly murdered by his serfs
- 1842      Is promoted Second Lieutenant
- 1843      Translates Balzac's *Eugénie Grandet*
- 1844      Resigns his army commission
- 1846      *Poor Folk*  
*The Double*
- 1849      *Netochka Nezvanova*  
Is led out for execution in the Semenovskiy Square in St Petersburg (22 December); his sentence is commuted at the last moment to penal servitude, to be followed by army service and exile, in Siberia.
- 1850-4    Serves four years at the prison at Omsk in western Siberia.
- 1854      Is released from prison (March), but is immediately posted as a private soldier to an infantry battalion stationed at Semipalatinsk, in western Siberia
- 1855      Is promoted Corporal  
Death of Nicholas I, accession of Alexander II
- 1856      Is promoted Ensign.
- 1857      Marries Maria Dmitrievna Isaeva (6 February)
- 1859      Resigns his army commission with the rank of Second Lieutenant (March), and receives permission to return to European Russia.  
Resides in Tver (August-December)  
Moves to St Petersburg (December)



- 1859 *Uncle's Dream*  
*Stepanchukovo Village*
- 1861 Begins publication of a new literary monthly, *Vremya*, founded by himself and his brother Mikhail (January)  
*The Emancipation of the Serfs*  
*The Insulted and the Injured*  
*A Series of Essays on Literature*
- 1861-2 *Memoirs from the House of the Dead*
- 1862 His first visit to Western Europe, including England and France
- 1863 *Winter Notes on Summer Impressions*  
*Vremya* is closed by the authorities for political reasons.
- 1864 Launches a second journal, *Epokha* (March)  
His first wife dies (15 April)  
His brother Mikhail dies (10 July)  
*Notes from the Underground*
- 1865 *Epokha* collapses for financial reasons (June)
- 1866 Attempted assassination of Alexander II by Dmitry Karakozov (April)  
*Crime and Punishment*  
*The Gambler*
- 1867 Marries Anna Grigorevna Snitkina, his stenographer, as his second wife (15 February).  
Dostoevsky and his bride leave for Western Europe (April).
- 1867-71 The Dostoevskys reside abroad, chiefly in Dresden, but also in Geneva, Vevey, Florence, and elsewhere
- 1868 *The Idiot*
- 1870 *The Eternal Husband*
- 1871 The Dostoevskys return to St Petersburg Birth of their first son, Fyodor (16 July)
- 1871-2 *Devils* (also called *The Possessed*)
- 1873-4 Edits the weekly journal *Grazhdanin* (*The Citizen*),
- 1873-81 *Diary of a Writer*
- 1875 *An Accidental Family* (also called *A Raw Youth*)
- 1878 Death of Dostoevsky's beloved three-year-old son Alesha (16 May)

1879-80 *The Brothers Karamazov*

1880 His speech at lavish celebrations held in Moscow in honour of Pushkin is received with frenetic enthusiasm on 8 June, and marks the peak point attained by his reputation during his lifetime.

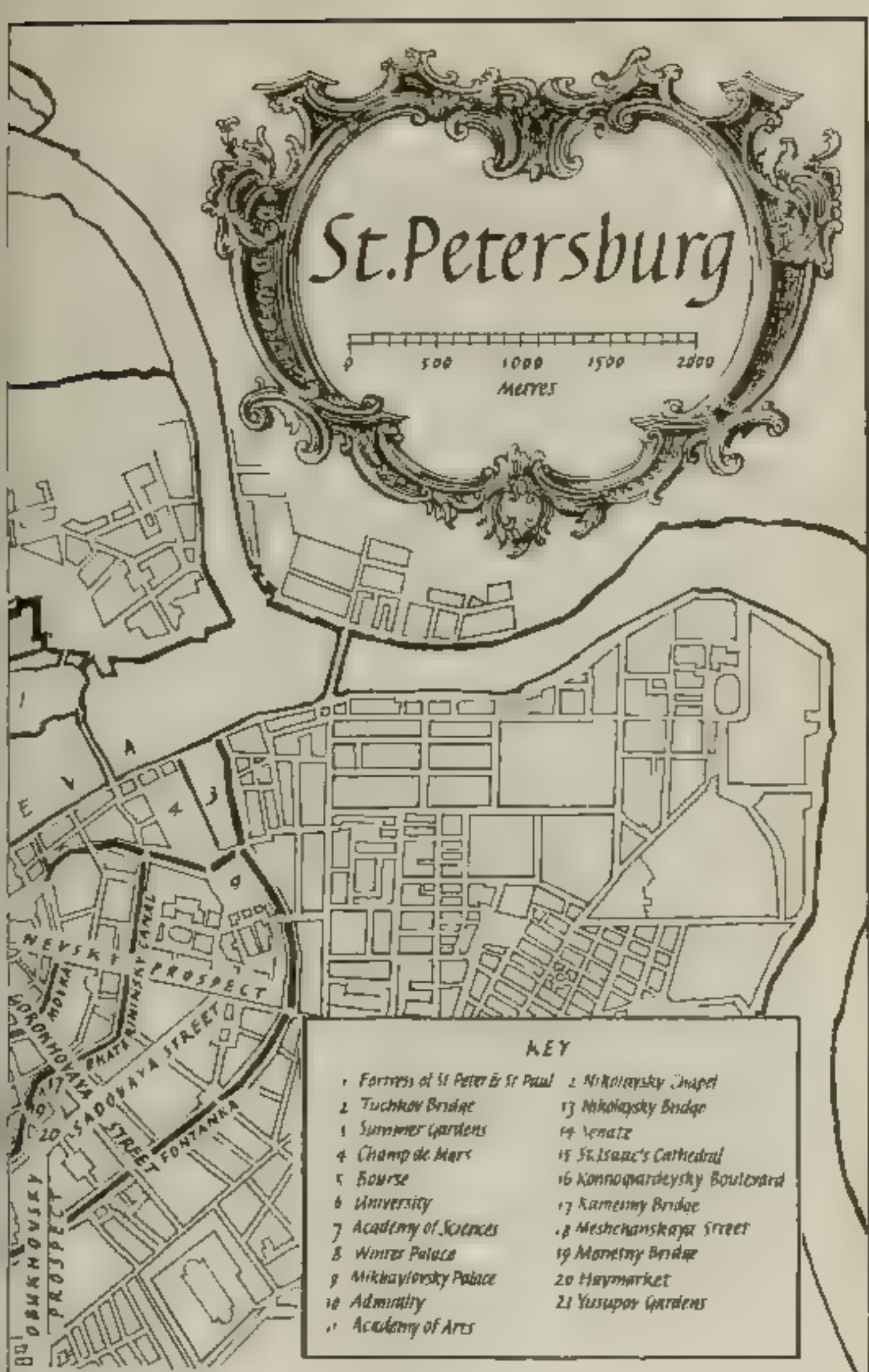
1881 Dostoevsky dies in St Petersburg (28 January)  
Alexander II is assassinated (1 March).





# St. Petersburg

0 500 1000 1500 2000  
METRES



## KEY

- |                                  |                            |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 1 Fortress of St Peter & St Paul | 2 Nikolsky Chapel          |
| 3 Tuchkov Bridge                 | 13 Nikolsky Bridge         |
| 4 Summer Gardens                 | 14 Senate                  |
| 5 Champ de Mars                  | 15 St. Isaac's Cathedral   |
| 6 Bourse                         | 16 Konnovardesky Boulevard |
| 7 University                     | 17 Kamenny Bridge          |
| 8 Academy of Sciences            | 18 Meshchanskaya Street    |
| 9 Winter Palace                  | 19 Mariy Bridge            |
| 10 Mikhailovsky Palace           | 20 Haymarket               |
| 11 Admiralty                     | 21 Yusupov Gardens         |
| 12 Academy of Arts               |                            |



CRIME AND  
PUNISHMENT





# PART ONE

---

## CHAPTER I

TOWARDS the end of a sultry afternoon early in July a young man came out of his little room in Stolyarny Lane and turned slowly and somewhat irresolutely in the direction of Kamenny Bridge.

He had been lucky enough to escape an encounter with his landlady on the stairs. His little room, more like a cupboard than a place to live in, was tucked away under the roof of the high five-storied building. The landlady, who let him the room and provided him with dinners and service, occupied a flat on the floor below, and every time he went out he was forced to pass the door of her kitchen, which nearly always stood wide open. He went past each time with an uneasy, almost frightened, feeling that made him frown with saame. He was heavily in debt to his landlady and shrank from meeting her.

It was not that he was a cowed or naturally timorous person, far from it; but he had been for some time in an almost morbid state of irritability and tension. He had cut himself off from everybody and withdrawn so completely into himself that he now shrank from every kind of contact. He was crushingly poor, but he no longer felt the oppression of his poverty. For some time he had ceased to concern himself with everyday affairs. He was not really afraid of any landlady, whatever plots he might think she was hatching against him, but to have to stop on the stairs and listen to all her chatter about trivialities in which he refused to take any interest, all her complaints, threats, and insistent demands for payment, and then to have to extricate himself, lying and making excuses—no, better to creep downstairs as softly as a cat and slip out unnoticed.

This time, however, he reached the street feeling astonished at the intensity of his fear of his landlady.

'To think that I can contemplate such a terrible act and yet be afraid of such trifles,' he thought, and he smiled strangely. 'Hm . . . yes . . . a man holds the fate of the world in his two hands, and yet, simply because he is afraid, he just lets things

drift—that is a truism . . . I wonder what men are most afraid of . . . Any new departure, and especially a *new word*—that is what they fear most of all . . . But I am talking too much. That's why I don't act, because I am always talking. Or perhaps I talk so much just because I can't act. I have got into a habit of babbling to myself during this last month, while I have been lying in a corner for days on end, thinking . . . fantastic nonsense. And why have I come out now? Can I really be capable of *that*? Am I really serious? No, of course I'm not serious. So I am just amusing myself with fancies, children's games? Yes, perhaps I am only playing a game.'

The heat in the streets was stifling. The stuffiness, the jostling crowds, the bricks and mortar, scaffolding and dust everywhere, and that peculiar summer stench so familiar to everyone who cannot get away from St. Petersburg into the country, all combined to aggravate the disturbance of the young man's nerves. The intolerable reek from the public houses, so numerous in that part of the city, and the sight of the drunken men encountered at every turn, even though this was not a holiday, completed the mournfully repellent picture. An expression of the deepest loathing passed across the young man's delicate features. (He was, by the way, a strikingly handsome young man, with fine dark eyes, brown hair, and a slender well-knit figure, taller than the average.) Soon, however, he relapsed again into profound thought, or rather into a sort of abstraction, and continued on his way in complete and wiful unconsciousness of his surroundings. Once or twice he muttered something to himself in a manner that, as he had just confessed, had grown habitual with him. He himself realized that at times his thoughts were confused and that he was very weak; he had eaten practically nothing for two days.

He was so wretchedly dressed that anybody else, however used to them, might have hesitated to go out in daylight in such rags. It is true that it would have been difficult to attract attention by one's dress in this part of central St. Petersburg. In these streets and alleys near the Haymarket, with their numerous houses of ill fame and their swarming population of artisans and labourers, such queer figures sometimes appeared on the scene that even the oddest of them could hardly arouse any surprise. Besides, the young man's heart was so full of bitter scorn that, in spite of his often very youthful sensitiveness, wearing his rags in the street caused him no embarrassment.



It would have been different had he come across any of his acquaintances or former friends, whom he wished in any case to avoid . . . All the same, when a drunken man, who was being carted off somewhere in an enormous dray drawn by an equally enormous cart-horse, suddenly yelled as he went by 'Hi, you in the German hat!' and went on pointing at him and bawling at the top of his voice, the young man stopped dead and clutched feverishly at his hat. It was a high, round hat, which had come from Zimmermann's famous hat-shop, but was now all rubbed and rusty with age, stained and full of slits; what remained of its battered brim was cocked up grotesquely at one side. But it was not shame but an entirely different emotion, more like terror, that had seized him.

'I knew it!' he muttered in confusion. 'I foresaw something like this, but this is worse than anything I thought of. A piece of stupidity like this, an insignificant trifle, might wreck the whole affair. Yes, the hat is too noticeable. It is ridiculous, and that means that it attracts attention. I must get a cap, any sort of old cap, to go with my rags, not this monstrosity. Nobody wears this sort of thing. It would be noticed a mile off, and remembered . . . that's the point: it would be remembered afterwards, and it would be evidence . . . I must be as inconspicuous as possible . . . Trifles are important! . . . Trifles like this can bring disaster.'

He had not far to go; he even knew how many paces it was from his own door—exactly seven hundred and thirty. He had counted them once, when he had first begun to give his imagination free rein. At that time he did not believe in the reality of his imaginings, and their audacity, which both repelled and fascinated him at the same time, was merely irritating. Now, a month later, he saw them in a different light, and had somehow grown used to regarding the 'ugly' dream as a real project, although he still did not trust himself to carry it out, and reproached himself for his own weakness and lack of resolution. He was now engaged in *rehearsing* his project, and his agitation increased with every step he took.

With a fainting heart and shuddering nerves he approached an enormous building which fronted the canal on one side, and Sadovaya Street on the other. The building was split up into small tenements, which housed all kinds of tradespeople—tailors, locksmiths, cooks, various German craftsmen, prostitutes, clerks, and so on. People were hurrying in and out of its two

gates and across its two courtyards. The building had three or four porters, and the young man thought himself lucky not to meet any of them as he slipped from the gate to the first staircase on the right. It was narrow and dark, but he already knew that, and the circumstance pleased him, in such obscurity there was no danger from prying eyes. 'If I feel so afraid at this moment, what would it be like if I had really brought myself to the point of doing *the thing itself*?' he thought involuntarily, as he came up to the fourth floor. Here his way was blocked by two porters, old soldiers, who were removing furniture from one of the flats. He knew that a German clerk lived here with his family. 'The German must be removing, and that means that the old woman's will be the only flat occupied on the fourth floor on this staircase, at any rate for some time. That's fine . . . in case I . . . ' he thought, as he rang the old woman's bell. The bell tinkled feebly, as though it were made of tin, not copper. Small flats in that kind of house nearly all have such bells, but he had forgotten what it sounded like and its peculiar tinkle seemed to stir him, as if it brought back something to his memory with great clearness . . . He shuddered, evidently his nerves were too weak *this time*. After a short interval the door opened the merest crack, and a woman peered suspiciously out at her visitor, only her glistening little eyes were visible in the gloom. She seemed reassured, however, when she saw that there were several people on the landing, and opened the door wider. The young man stepped across the threshold into a dark hall divided by a partition from the tiny kitchen. The old woman stood silently before him, looking at him with a question in her eyes. She was a tiny dried-up scrap of a creature, about sixty years old, with sharp, malicious little eyes and a small sharp nose. She was bare-headed and her fur hair, just beginning to go grey, was thick with grease. A strip of flannel was twisted round her long thin neck, which was wrinkled and yellow like a hen's legs, and in spite of the heat a short jacket of worn fur, yellow with age, hung from her shoulders. She coughed and groaned continually. The young man must have been looking at her rather oddly, for distrust flashed into her eyes again.

Reminding himself that he must be as polite as possible, the young man made a hurried half-bow and muttered: 'Raskolnikov, a student. I was here a month ago.'

'I remember you were, my friend, I remember very well,'

the old woman answered duly, still without taking her eyes from his face.

'Well . . . I've come again on the same business,' continued Raskolnikov, rather disconcerted by her suspicion. 'Perhaps, though,' he thought uneasily, 'she was always like this, only I didn't notice it before.'

The old woman remained silent, apparently still doubtful, and then stood aside and pointed to a door, saying, as she let her visitor pass: 'Go in, my friend.'

The little room the young man entered, with its faded wallpaper, geraniums, and muslin window-curtains, was bright with the rays of the setting sun. The unexpected thought crossed his mind. 'The sun will be shining *then*, too, just as it does now.' He glanced rapidly round the room, trying to fix its appearance as firmly in his mind as possible. There was nothing special about it. The old furniture, all of painted yellow wood, consisted of a sofa with a high carved wooden back, an oval table in front of it, a toilet table with a small mirror between the windows, some chairs against the wall, and two or three cheap pictures in yellow frames, representing German young ladies with birds in their hands: that was all. In a corner a lamp was burning before a small icon. Everything was very clean; both furniture and floor were highly polished, and everything shone. 'Lizaveta's work,' thought the young man. There was not a speck of dust anywhere in the flat. 'How do nasty old widows contrive to have everything so clean?' he continued to himself, with his curious glance fixed on the print curtain hanging over the door into another tiny room. In this stood the old woman's bed and chest of drawers, and he had never contrived to see into it. The flat contained only these two rooms.

'What can I do for you?' inquired the old woman in a forbidding tone. She had followed him in and planted herself squarely in front of him, and was looking him in the face as before.

'I have brought something to pawn. Here,' and he drew from his pocket an old flat silver watch, with a globe engraved on the back and a steel guard.

'But it is time you redeemed your other pledge. The month was up two days ago.'

'I will pay you another month's interest. Please be patient.'

'I shall please myself, my friend, whether I am patient or sell your property now.'



'How much for the watch, Alena Ivanovna?'

'It is not really worth anything; you bring me nothing but trash, my friend. Last time I lent you two roubles on a ring you could buy from a jeweller for a rouble and a half.'

'Let me have four roubles. I will redeem it; it was my father's. I am expecting some money soon.'

'A rouble and a half, interest in advance. Take it or leave it.'

'One and a half roubles!' exclaimed the young man.

'Just as you like.' And the old woman held out the watch to him. The young man took it, so angry that he was on the point of leaving at once; but he changed his mind, remembering that he had nowhere else to turn, and that he had had another object in coming.

'All right,' he said roughly.

The old woman felt in her pocket for her keys and went into the other room, behind the curtain. The young man, left alone, strained his ears and followed her movements in imagination. He could hear her opening the chest of drawers. 'That will be the top drawer,' he fancied. 'I know she keeps the keys in her right-hand pocket . . . They are all in one bunch, on a steel ring . . . There is one with toothed wards, three times as big as the others, that can't belong to the drawer, of course. There must be something else, a chest or a trunk . . . I wonder if there is. Those big wooden trunks always have that kind of key . . . All the same, how sickening all this is! . . .'

The old woman returned.

'Now, my friend, ten copecks per rouble per month makes fifteen copecks from you for a rouble and a half for one month, in advance. Then there are twenty copecks due for the two roubles I lent you before at the same rate. Thirty-five altogether. That makes one rouble fifteen copecks for the watch. Here you are.'

'What? So now it's one rouble fifteen copecks?'

'Quite correct.'

The young man did not argue but took the money. He was in no hurry to leave and stood there looking at the old woman as if he wanted to say or do something more, but did not know exactly what.

'Perhaps, Alena Ivanovna, I will bring you something else in a day or two . . . It's silver . . . valuable . . . a cigarette-case . . . I have to get it back from a friend . . .' He faltered and stopped.

'Time enough to talk about it then, my friend.'

'Good night. . . . You always seem to be alone in the place; isn't your sister here?' he asked as carelessly as he could, as he went into the hall.

'And what do you want with her, my friend?'

'Nothing in particular. I only asked. But you . . . Good bye, Alena Ivanovna.'

Raskolnikov went out in great confusion. The confusion grew and grew, and on his way downstairs he stopped more than once as if suddenly struck by something or other. When at last he reached the street, he broke out:

'Oh God, how repulsive! Can I possibly, can I possibly . . . no, that's nonsense, it's ridiculous!' he broke off decisively. 'How could such a horrible idea enter my mind? What vileness my heart seems capable of! The point is, that it is vile, filthy, horrible, horrible! . . . And for a whole month I have . . .'

But words and exclamations were not a sufficient outlet for his agitation. The feeling of infinite loathing that had begun to burden and torment him while he was on his way to the old woman's had now reached such a pitch that he did not know what to do with himself in his anguish. He walked along the pavement like a drunken man, not seeing the passers by and sometimes bumping into them. He had left that street behind before he succeeded in collecting his wits. He looked round and saw that he was standing outside a public house, whose entrance led down several steps from the street into a basement. Two tipsy men were at that moment emerging, supporting each other and swearing as they staggered up into the street. Raskolnikov hesitated only for a moment and then went down the steps. He had never set foot in such a place before, but now his head was swimming and his throat was parched. He felt a need for cold beer, especially as he now attributed his sudden weakness to having had nothing to eat. He sat down in a dark and dirty corner behind a small sticky table, ordered his beer, and drank the first glass thirstily. He began to feel better at once, and his thoughts grew clearer. 'This is all nonsense,' he said to himself hopefully, 'and there was no need to get so agitated. It was simply physical weakness. One glass of beer and a rusk and my mind grows keen, my thoughts clear, my resolution firm. Bah, how paltry it all is!' But in spite of the scorn with which he spat out these words, his outlook had grown cheerful, as if he had been suddenly freed from a

terrible burden, and he cast friendly glances at the other people in the room. Even at this moment he dimly perceived, however, that there was something morbid in his sudden recovery of spirits.

Few people now remained in the place. Besides the two tipsy men he had met on the stairs, a party of four or five men and a woman, with an accordion, had also gone out. After they left the place seemed quiet and empty. There remained a man who looked like a small tradesman, drunk, but not very, sitting over his beer; his companion, a huge fat man with a grey beard, wearing a long Siberian tunic, was very drunk and sat dozing on a bench. Every now and then, half waking up, he would suddenly begin to snap his fingers, throw his arms wide and jerk the top part of his body about, without getting up from his bench. Meanwhile he would drone out the half-forgotten words of some rubbishy song, something like:

For a whole year I loved my wife,  
For a who-o-ole yea ear I lo-o-oved my wife . . .

or:

As I was walking down the street  
My old lost love I chanced to meet . . .

But there was nobody to share his jollity. His friend watched all these outbursts silently and with a hostile and suspicious expression.

There was one other man, who looked like a retired Government clerk, sitting apart with his bottle of vodka, taking a drink from time to time, and gazing round. He, too, seemed to be in rather a disturbed state of mind.

## CHAPTER II

RASKOLNIKOV was not used to crowds and, as we have said, had lately avoided all social contacts, but now he suddenly felt drawn to people. Something as it were new had been accomplished in his soul, and with it had come a thirst for society. He was so weary after a whole month of concentrated misery and gloomy agitation that he longed to breathe, if only for a moment, the air of some other world, and so, in spite of the filthy surroundings, he took pleasure in this visit to the public house.

The master of the establishment was in another room, but



he often came into the main room by way of a flight of steps, so that the first parts of him to appear were his smart well-greased boots with their wide red tops. He wore a long Russian tunic, a black satin waistcoat horribly smeared with grease, and no neck-cloth; his face looked as if it had been smeared all over with grease, like an iron lock. There was a lad of about fourteen behind the bar and another, younger, who waited on the customers. On the bar were sliced cucumbers, rusk of black bread, and fish cut into small pieces, all very evil-smelling. The atmosphere was unbearably stuffy and so saturated with alcohol that it almost seemed that five minutes in it would be enough to make one drunk.

It sometimes happens that we find ourselves interested from the first glance in complete strangers, even before we have spoken to them. The customer who was sitting apart, and who looked like a retired clerk, made just such an impression on Raskolnikov. Later the young man more than once recalled this first impression and put it down to a prophetic insight. He kept his eyes fixed on the man, partly because the stranger gazed at him equally steadily and plainly wished to enter into conversation with him. The others present, including the landlord, he regarded with the boredom of long habit and with a shade of lofty disdain, as if he considered them too much his inferiors in rank and education to speak to. He was a man of over fifty, of middle height and corpulent build, with grizzled hair and a large bald patch. His face was bloated with continual drinking and his complexion was yellow, even greenish. From between his swollen eyelids his little reddish slits of eyes glittered with animation. But there was something very strange about him; his eyes had an almost rapturous shine, they seemed to hold both intelligence and good sense, but gleams of something like madness showed in them as well. His old black frock-coat was terribly frayed and had lost all but one button, but this, with evident regard for the proprieties, he kept carefully fastened. A crumpled, stained, and dirty shirt-front protruded from under his nankeen waistcoat. The thick grey stubble on his cheeks and chin, once clean-shaven in civil-service style, revealed that it was some time since they had known a razor. His bearing, too, was solidly official. But he seemed disturbed, his hair was ruffled, and from time to time, propping his ragged elbows on the stained and sticky table, he leaned his head on his hands in utter dejection. At length he looked straight

at Raskolnikov and addressed him in a loud and decided tone:

'My dear sir, will you allow me to address some words of seemingly conversation to you? For, although you bear no outward evidence of distinction, my experience discerns in you a man of education and one unaccustomed to potations. I have always held education, coupled with sincerity of feeling, in the highest respect, and indeed I am myself a Titular Councillor. Marmeladov is my name, sir, Titular Councillor. May I take the liberty of asking if you are in the Service?'

'No, I am studying . . .' replied the young man, surprised partly at being so directly addressed and partly by the other's peculiarly florid manner of speech. In spite of his recent momentary wish for contact, of whatever kind, with other people, no sooner was a word actually spoken to him than he experienced the old unpleasant feeling of exasperated dislike for any person who violated, or even seemed desirous of disturbing, his privacy.

'A student, then, or a former student,' cried the clerk; 'I thought so! Experience, my dear sir, experience' and he laid his finger to his forehead in self-congratulation. 'You have been a student - or you have moved in academic circles! But permit me . . .' He rose, wavering a little, took his bottle and glass and sat down close to the young man and a little to one side. Although he was drunk, he spoke glibly and fluently, only occasionally hesitating and losing the thread. The avidity with which he seized upon Raskolnikov was such that it almost seemed as though he too had spoken to nobody for a month.

'My dear sir,' he began almost portentously, 'it is a true saying that poverty is no crime. And even less, as I well know, is drunkenness a virtue. But beggary, my dear sir, beggary is a vice. In poverty, the inborn honourable sentiments may still be preserved, but never in beggary - not by anybody. In beggary, a man is not driven forth from human society with a cudgel, but, to make his condition more humiliating, is swept away with a broom - and with justice, for as a beggar I am the first to humiliate myself, hence the public house. My dear sir, a month ago Mr. Lebezyatnikov gave my wife a terrible beating, and my wife, you must understand, is not at all the same thing as myself. May I be allowed to ask you, even though it has the appearance of simple curiosity, whether you have ever passed the night on a hay barge on the Neva?'

'No, as it happens, I haven't,' answered Raskolnikov. 'Why do you ask?'

'Well, sir, I come from spending five nights there . . .'

He filled his glass, drank it off, and sat deep in thought. There were, in fact, wisps of hay clinging to his clothing and even in his hair. It was easy to believe that he had neither undressed nor washed for five days. His greasy red hands were particularly dirty, with black-rimmed nails.

His talk seemed to have attracted general, though languid, interest. The lads behind the bar began to snigger. The landlord seemed to have come down from the upper room on purpose to listen to the 'comic turn', and sat in dignified aloofness, yawning lazily. It was plain that Marmeladov was well known in this place. Even his florid way of speaking appeared to derive from his constant habit of talking to strangers of all kinds in public houses. This habit becomes a necessity to some drunkards, especially if they are harshly used and domineered over at home. Then in the company of other drinkers they strive to justify themselves and even, if they can, to inspire respect.

'A regular comic!' said the host loudly. 'Why don't you do some work? If you are in the civil service, why don't you perform your duties?'

'Why don't I perform my duties, my dear sir?' retorted Marmeladov, addressing himself exclusively to Raskolnikov, as if it were he who had put the question, 'why don't I perform my duties? Does not my heart bleed because I am an abject and useless creature? Did I not suffer when, a month ago, Mr. Lebezyatnikov beat my wife with his own hands while I lay fuddled with drink? Allow me to ask, young man, if you have known what it is to . . . hm . . . well, to plead without hope for a loan?'

'Yes, I have . . . but what do you mean by "without hope"?''

'I mean utterly without hope, sir, knowing beforehand that nothing will come of it. For instance, you know quite definitely, beforehand that this person, this most right-minded and useful citizen, will not in any circumstances give you the money. And why, indeed, I ask, should he give me it, when he knows that I shall not repay it? Out of compassion? But recently Mr. Lebezyatnikov, who is a follower of the latest ideas, was explaining that in this age the sentiment of compassion is



actually prohibited by science, and that that is how they order things in England, where they have political economy.' Why, then, I ask, should he give you it? Nevertheless, knowing in advance that he will give you nothing, you turn your steps towards him and . . .'

'But then why go?' put in Raskolnikov.

'But if you have nobody else, no other place, to turn to! Every man must needs have somewhere to turn to. For there comes a time when it is absolutely essential to turn somewhere. The first time my only daughter went on the streets I too went . . . for my daughter is a street-walker, sir),' he added parenthetically, regarding the young man somewhat uneasily. 'It is nothing, my dear sir, it doesn't matter,' he hastily, but with apparent tranquillity, declared, when the two lads at the bar burst out laughing and even the host himself smiled. 'It matters nothing, sir. This wagging of heads does not discountenance me, for all these things are already known to everybody and all secrets are revealed; and I bear myself in this matter with humility, not with scorn. Suffer them, suffer them! "Behold the man!" Allow me to ask, young man, can you . . .? Or no, let me express it with greater force and exactness—not *can* you, but *dare* you, looking upon me at this moment, say with conviction that I am not a swine?'

The young man made no answer.

'Well, sir,' continued the orator sedately and with even greater dignity waiting for the sniggering to die down again, 'well sir, grant that I am a swine, but she is a lady! I have the form of a beast, but Katerina Ivanovna, the partner of my life, is an educated person and by birth the daughter of a staff officer. Grant that I am an infamous wretch, but she is a creature of lofty mind, filled with sentiments ennobled by education. And yet . . . oh, if only she showed some sympathy for me! My dear sir, my dear sir, it is necessary for every man to have one place, if only one, where he can find sympathy. But Katerina Ivanovna, although she is a great-souled lady, is unjust. And although I fully understand that when she pulls me by the hair it is only out of compassion—for, I repeat without embarrassment, she does pull me by the hair, young man),' he affirmed with enhanced dignity, when he heard the sniggers break out again, 'but, oh God, if she would only, just once . . . But no, no! it is all in vain, it is useless to talk! Useless to talk! . . . for, more than once before, my wish has been granted,



and more than once she has taken pity on me, but . . . but—such is my character, I am a beast by nature!’

‘I should think so!’ yawned the landlord.

Marmeladov emphatically banged his fist on the table.

‘Yes, such is my character! Do you know, do you know, sir, that I have drunk her very stockings? Not her shoes, for that might have some small resemblance to a natural action, but her stockings, I have drunk even her stockings, sir! And I have drunk her mohair shawl as well, and it was her own, a gift made to her in the old days, not mine, and the room where we live is cold, and this winter she caught a chill and began to cough and even to spit blood. We have three small children and Katerina Ivanovna is working from morning till night, scrubbing and washing and bathing the children, for she has been accustomed to cleanliness from a child; but her chest is weak and she has a consumptive tendency, and I feel it. Could I fail to feel it? The more I drink, the more deeply I feel it. That indeed is why I drink, to find compassion and feeling in drink . . . I drink because I wish to multiply my sufferings!’ And in apparent despair he laid his head on the table.

‘Young man,’ he continued, raising himself again, ‘I read a certain affliction in your features. I saw it as soon as you entered, and for that reason I addressed myself to you. For when I confide the story of my life to you, it is not in order to expose my shame to these idlers here, who know it already, but because I seek the company of a man of feeling and education. You must know that my wife was educated in a provincial Imperial Academy for the daughters of gentlemen, on leaving she performed a shawl dance before the Governor and other distinguished persons, for which she was presented with a gold medal and a certificate of merit. The medal . . . well, the medal was sold long ago . . . hm, but she has the certificate in her trunk to this day, and she was displaying it to our landlady quite recently. Although there is the most unrelenting hostility between the landlady and herself, she needed somebody to show off to a little, and to tell of the vanished happy days. And I do not judge her, I do not judge her, for these things are cherished in her memory, and everything besides is gone with the wind! Yes, yes, she is a lady of passionate, proud, and inflexible character. She washes the floor with her own hands, she eats the bread of affliction, but she will not brook disrespect. For that reason she refused to tolerate Mr. Lebezyatnikov’s

incivility, and when Mr. Lebezyatnikov beat her for it and she took to her bed, it was not so much from her physical injuries as from wounded feelings. She was a widow when I married her, with three children—small, smaller, and smallest. She married her first husband, an infantry officer, for love, and she ran away from home with him. She loved him immoderately, but he fell into gambling habits, was brought into court, and died of it. He began to beat her towards the end, and although, as I know for a fact, from written evidence, she repaid him in kind, yet she remembers him to this day with tears, and uses him to reproach me with—and I am glad, I am glad, for even if it is only her imagination, she thinks of herself as having been happy once. . . . And she was left with three young children in a wild and remote part of the provinces, where I happened to be at the time. She was left in such hopeless destitution that, with all my wide and varied experience, I lack words to describe it. All her family had renounced her. Besides, she was proud, proud to excess. . . . And it was then, my dear sir, then that I, who was myself a widower with a fourteen-year-old daughter, offered her my hand, for I could not bear to see such suffering. And from the fact that she, an educated and well-bred person bearing a well-known name, consented to marry me, you may judge the extent of her attraction. But she did marry me! Weeping and sobbing and wringing her hands, she married me! For she had nobody to turn to. Do you understand, young man, do you understand what it means to have nowhere left to turn to? No, you do not understand that yet. . . . And for a whole year I religiously fulfilled my sacred obligations and never touched this' (he poked at the bottle with his finger), 'for I am not without feeling. But I could not please her, even by that, and then I lost my situation, not through any fault of mine but through reorganization in the Service, and then I did touch it! . . . It must be a year and a half since, after all our wanderings and numerous disasters, we finally found ourselves in this magnificent capital city, adorned with so many monuments. And here I found a situation. . . . Found it, and lost it again. Do you understand, sir? Here it was by my own fault that I lost it, for my characteristic failing had reasserted itself. . . . Now we are living in a corner at Amalia Fedorovna Lippewechsel's, though what we live on and how we pay the rent I do not know. There are many other people living there besides

ourselves . . . It is an absolute bear-garden, sir, most disgraceful . . . hm . . . yes . . . And meanwhile my little daughter by my first wife has grown up, and what she has borne, poor chud, from her stepmother while she was growing up I will not speak of. For although Katerina Ivanovna is full of generous sentiments, she is a hasty, irritable, and sharp-tongued lady . . . Yes, sir. Well, it does no good to talk of that! Sonya, as you may well imagine, has had no education. About four years ago I tried to study geography and the history of the world with her, but as my own knowledge was limited and we had no suitable textbooks, while the few poor books we did possess . . . hm . . . well, we no longer have even them now, and so that was the end of our studies. We stopped at *Cyrus the Persian*! Later, after she grew up, she read a few novels, and not long since, through the kindness of Mr. Lebezyatnikov she read with great interest a little book, Lewes's *Physiology*!—perhaps you know it, sir?—, and even read parts of it aloud to us; and that is the sum total of her education. And now, my very dear sir, I wish to put to you a confidential question on my own account. do you think that a poor but honourable girl can earn much by honest labour? . . . She cannot earn fifteen copecks a day, sir, if she is honest and without special talents, even though her hands are never still for a moment. And even so, State Councillor Ivan Ivanovich Klopstock—perhaps you may have heard of him?—not only has not paid her to this day for making half a dozen fine linen shirts, but even shouted at her and drove her from the house, stamping and calling her abusive names, on the pretext that the collars were the wrong size and set in crooked. And here were the children hungry. . . And here was Katerina Ivanovna walking up and down the room, wringing her hands, with a red flush in her cheeks, as there always is in her disease: "Here you are," she says, "living with us, eating and drinking and keeping warm, you lazy good-for-nothing" though what is there to eat and drink when even the little ones haven't seen a crust for three days? . . . At the time I was lying . . . well, why make any bones about it? . . . I was tipsy, and I heard my Sonya saying (she is meek and her voice is so soft and gentle . . . she is fair, and her little face is always thin and pale—saying: "Oh, Katerina Ivanovna, must I really come to that?" I must tell you that Darya Franzovna, a woman well known to the police, had tried two or three times to approach her through the landlady, with evil intentions. "Why



not?" answered Katerina Ivanovna mockingly, "what is there to preserve so carefully? What a treasure!" but don't blame her, don't blame her, my dear sir, don't blame her! It was said in distraction, when she was ill and wrought up, and the children were crying with hunger, and besides it was said more to hurt her feelings than with any exact intention . . . For Katerina Ivanovna's disposition is like that, and if the children cry, even if it is with hunger, she lashes out at them at once. And towards six o'clock I saw my little Sonya get up and put on her kerchief and her pelisse and go out, and at some time after eight she came back. She came in and went straight to Katerina Ivanovna and laid thirty silver roubles on the table in front of her without a word. She looked at her, but she did not utter a single word, only took our big green woollen shawl (we have one which serves for all of us), wrapped it round her head and face and lay down on the bed, with her face to the wall, and her little shoulders and her whole body were trembling . . . And I was still lying there, in the same state . . . And then, young man, then I saw Katerina Ivanovna, also without a word, go to my little Sonya's bed-side, and she stayed there on her knees all the evening, kissing her feet, and would not get up, and then they both fell asleep with their arms round one another . . . both of them . . . both of them . . . yes, sir, and I . . . lay there tipsy.'

Marmeladov was silent, as though his voice failed him. Then he hastily filled his glass, drank it, and cleared his throat.

'From that time, sir,' he continued after a short silence, 'from that time, because of one unfortunate happening and because of information laid by persons of ill will (among whom Darva Franzovna was the most prominent, apparently because she thought she had not been treated with proper consideration), from that time my daughter, Sonya Semenovna, has had to carry a prostitute's yellow card, and for that reason could not go on living with us. For the landlady, Amalia Fedorovna, would not allow it (although, before, she herself had abetted Darva Franzovna), and besides, Mr. Lebezyatnikov . . . hm . . . Indeed, it was on Sonya's account that there was all that trouble between him and Katerina Ivanovna. At first he had tried to win my little Sonya's favours himself, and then suddenly he got up on his high horse. "What?" says he, "am I, a man of culture, to live in the same flat with a creature of that kind?" Katerina Ivanovna would not allow this and intervened . . . and it developed into . . . And now



when Sonya comes to see us it is usually after dark; she comforts Katerina Ivanovna and brings what money she can . . . She is living now in the flat of Kapernaumov, the tailor; she rents a room from them. Kapernaumov is lame and has an impediment in his speech, and all his many children have the same impediment. So has his wife . . . They all live in one room, but Sonya's is partitioned off . . . Him . . . yes . . . They are very poor people, and they all stammer . . . yes . . . Well, then I got up in the morning, sir, and put on my rags. I raised my hands to heaven and went to His Excellency Ivan Afanasyevich. Do you know His Excellency Ivan Afanasyevich. No? Then you do not know one of God's saints. He is—wax . . . wax before the face of the Lord; melting as wax . . . There were even tears in his eyes, when he had kindly listened to all my story. Well, Marmeladov, he said, 'you disappointed my expectations once before . . . I will take you once more on my own personal responsibility,' that's what he said, 'remember that,' says he, 'and now go.' I kissed the dust at his feet—in thought, for he would not have allowed it in fact, being a high official, an enlightened man, and a believer in advanced political ideas; I returned home and when I announced that I was again a member of the Service, and should receive a salary, what excitement there was! . . .'

Marmeladov stopped again in violent agitation. At this moment a whole party of merry-makers, who had already had too much to drink, came in and from near the door came the sound of a barrel-organ and the cracked childish voice of a seven-year-old singing *The Little Hut*. There was a lot of noise. The landlord and his assistants were busy with the newcomers. Marmeladov resumed his story without paying any attention to them. He was apparently very much 'under the influence', but the drunker he got, the more voluble he became. The recollection of his recent successful application for reinstatement had restored his spirits and the reflection of his satisfaction shone in his face. Raskolnikov was listening attentively.

'This, sir, happened five weeks ago. Yes . . . As soon as they, Katerina Ivanovna and my little Sonya, heard of it, Lord! it was like being transported to Heaven. Before, it was nothing but abuse. He there like a pig! But now, they walked on tiptoe, hushed the children: "Semen Zakharovich has been working and is tired; now he is resting. Sh." They brought me coffee

with scalded cream in it, before I went to work. We began to have real cream, think of that! And how they scraped together the money for a decent outfit, eleven and a half roubles, I can't imagine. Boots, calico shirt-fronts, the most magnificent uniform, all got up in capital style, for eleven roubles and a half. I came home from work the first day and found that Katerina Ivanovna had made a two-course dinner, - soup and salt beef with horse-radish - a thing we had never even dreamed of before. She didn't possess any dresses, not one, sir, yet she looked as if she were dressed for a party, and it wasn't as if she had had anything to do it with, but she had managed it out of nothing - she had combed her hair, found a clean collar of some sort, and cuffs, and she looked quite a different person, altogether younger and prettier. My little Sonya, my darling, had only helped with money, "But," she said, "for the time being it is better for me not to come and see you too often myself. Perhaps after dark, so that nobody will see me." Do you hear that, do you hear it? After dinner I took a nap, and what do you think? Katerina Ivanovna had broken off completely with our landlady, Anna Fedorovna, a week before, they had had a terrible quarrel, and yet now she invited her in for coffee. They sat whispering together for two hours. "Semen Zakharovich is in the service now," says she, "and drawing a salary. He went to see His Excellency, and His Excellency himself came out to him, told all the others to wait, took Semen Zakharovich by the hand, and led him past them all into his study." Do you hear that, do you hear? "Of course, Semen Zakharovich," he said, "remembering your services, and although you are given to that irresponsible weakness, yet since you now give me your promise, and especially since things have gone badly here without you" - listen, listen! - "I put my trust now," he said, "in your honourable word." And I tell you, she had just that moment made it up, not out of tightness or for the sake of boasting. No, sir, I swear she believed it all herself, it was all her own imagination, but she gloried in it. And I do not condemn her; no, I do not condemn her for that.

... Six days ago, when I took home my first salary, twenty-three roubles and forty copecks, she called me her poppet: "What a poppet you are!" she said. This was in private, you understand. Well, I suppose I'm not remarkable for beauty, and I'm a poor sort of a husband. But she pinched my cheek: "What a poppet you are!" she said.

Marmeladov stopped and tried to smile, but his chin began to quiver. He controlled himself, however. This tavern, his look of debauchery, the five nights spent in a hay-barge, the bottle, combined with his painful affection for his wife and family, bewildered his hearer. Raskolnikov was listening with close attention, yet with a feeling of discomfort. He felt vexed that he had come here.

'Oh, dear sir, dear sir!' exclaimed Marmeladov, recovering himself, 'oh, dear sir, perhaps all this seems ludicrous to you, as it does to these others, perhaps I am only worrying you with all these stupid and pitiful details of my domestic life, but it is not ludicrous to me! For I am capable of feeling it all . . . I spent the remainder of that heavenly afternoon, and all the evening, in fleeting dreams, of how I would reconstruct our life, get clothes for the children, give her tranquility and restore my only daughter from dishonour to the bosom of her family . . . And many, many things besides. It was pardonable, sir. Well, my dear sir' here Marmeladov gave a sort of shudder, raised his head, and gazed steadily at his hearer, 'well, sir, the very next day after all this dreaming—that is, exactly five days ago—in the evening, by a cunning trick, I stole the key of her box from Katerina Ivanovna and took out all that was left of the money I had brought her, how much I don't remember exactly, and now look at me, *an* of you! This is my fifth day away from home, and they are looking for me there, my employment is gone, and my uniform is in a pot-house near the Egyptian Bridge, where I exchanged it for these clothes . . . all is over!'

Marmeladov struck his forehead with his fist, clenched his teeth, closed his eyes and leant his elbow heavily on the table. But after a minute his face changed suddenly, and he looked at Raskolnikov with an assumption of slyness and artificial bravado, laughed, and went on: 'I went to see Sonya this morning and asked her for money to get something for my thick head. He-he-he!'

'She didn't give it you, did she?' shouted one of the newcomers, and roared with laughter.

'This very bottle, sir, was bought with her money,' announced Marmeladov, still addressing himself exclusively to Raskolnikov. 'Thirty copecks she gave me with her own hands, her last, all she had, as I saw for myself . . . She said nothing, she only looked at me in silence . . . A look like that does not



belong to this world, but there . . . where they grieve over mankind, they weep for them, but they do not reproach them, they do not reproach! . . . but it hurts more, when there are no reproaches! . . . Thirty copecks, yes, sir. And surely she needs them herself now, eh? What do you think, my dear sir? Now she must take care to be always neat and clean. And that neatness, that special cleanness, costs money, you understand. Do you understand? Then she must buy rouze as well, it's absolutely essential; starched petticoats, coquettish little boots to set off her little foot when she has to step across a puddle. Do you understand, do you understand, sir, what that smartness means? Well, sir, and I, her own father, took those thirty copecks of hers for drink! And I am drinking it, sir! I have already drunk it all! . . . Now, who could be sorry for a wretch like me, eh? Are you sorry for me now, sir, or not? Tell me, sir, are you sorry or aren't you? He-he-he-he!

He tried to pour himself another drink, but there was no more. The bottle was empty.

'Why should anyone be sorry for you?' cried the landlord, who happened to be near them again.

There was an outburst of laughter, and some cursing. It came partly from those who had been listening, and the others, who had not listened, laughed and cursed at the mere sight of the dismissed clerk.

'Sorry! Why be sorry for me?' exclaimed Marmeladov, positively inspired, as if he had been waiting for just those words, and rising to his feet with outstretched arms, 'Why be sorry, you say? No, there is no need to be sorry for me! I ought to be crucified, crucified, not pitied! Crucify, oh judge, crucify me, but pity your victim! Then I will come to you to be crucified, for I thirst for affliction and weeping, not for merriment . . . Do you think, you who sold it, that this bottle of yours has been sweet to me? Affliction, I sought affliction at the bottom of it, tears and affliction, and I found them, I tasted them. But He will pity us, He who pitied all men and understood all men and all things, He alone is the judge. In that day He shall come and ask: "Where is the daughter who gave herself for a harsh and consumptive stepmother and the little children of another? Where is the daughter who showed compassion to that filthy drunkard, her earthly father, and did not shrink from his beastliness?" And He will say: "Come unto Me! I have already forgiven thee . . . I have forgiven



thee . . . Thy sins, which are many, are forgiven, for thou didst love much . . ." And He will forgive my Sonya, He will forgive her; I know that He will forgive . . . When I was with her, a short time ago, I felt it in my heart . . . And He shall judge all men, and forgive them, the good and the evil, the wise and the humble . . . And when He has done with all men, then shall he summon us also. "Come forth," He will say "ye also, ye drunkards, ye weaklings, ye infamous, come forth." And we shall come forth without shame and stand before Him. And He will say, "Ye are swine! ye are made in the image of the beast and bear his mark; yet come ye also unto Me." And the wise and learned shall say, "Lord, why dost Thou receive these?" And He shall say: "I receive them, oh ye wise men, I receive them, on ye learned ones, inasmuch as not one of these has deemed himself worthy . . ." And He will stretch out His arms to us, and we shall fall at His feet and weep, and we shall understand all things. Then we shall understand . . . and all shall understand . . . and Katerina Ivanovna, she shall understand also . . . Lord, Thy kingdom come!"

And he sank back on the bench, weak and exhausted, not looking at anyone, as though he were plunged in thought and had forgotten his surroundings. His words had made some impression: silence reigned for a short time, and then laughter and curses broke out again.

"There spoke the great intellect!"

"A lot of rubbish!"

"There's a civil servant for you!" and so on, and so on.

"Let us go, sir," said Marmeladov suddenly raising his head and turning to Raskolnikov, "take me home . . . Kozel's house, at the back. It is time I went . . . to Katerina Ivanovna."

Raskolnikov had long wished to leave, and had already made up his mind to help him. Marmeladov proved to be much more affected in his legs than in his speech, and leaned heavily on the young man. They had some two or three hundred yards to go. The drunkard's agitation and apprehension grew steadily greater as they neared the house.

"I am not afraid of Katerina Ivanovna now," he muttered anxiously, "nor of her pulling me by the hair. What does my hair matter? my hair is nothing! That is what I say. It will be better, indeed, if she does pull my hair, I am not afraid of that . . . I . . . it is her eyes I am afraid of . . . yes . . . her eyes. I am afraid of the red patches on her cheeks, . . . and her

breathing. Have you seen how people with her disease breathe . . . when they are upset? I am afraid of the children's crying, too . . . Because, unless Sonya has given them food, then . . . I don't know what, I don't know! But I am not afraid of blows . . . You must know, sir, that such blows not only do not distress me, but they give me pleasure . . . For I cannot do without them. It is better to have them. Let her beat me, it will relieve her feelings . . . it is better so . . . But here is the house, the house of Kozel the locksmith, the German, the rich man . . . Take me in!

They entered from the yard and went up to the fourth floor. The higher they went, the darker grew the staircase. It was nearly eleven o'clock, and although it is never really night in St. Petersburg at that season, it was very dark at the top of the stairs.

The grimy little door at the head of the stairs stood open. A candle-end lighted up a poverty-stricken room about ten paces long, a part of it could be seen from the landing. It was disordered and untidily strewn with various tattered children's garments. A torn sheet was stretched across the corner at the back of the room. The bed was probably behind it. There was nothing in the room but two chairs and a sofa covered with ragged calicoth, with an old deal kitchen table, unpainted and uncovered, standing before it. On the edge of the table stood the stump of a tallow candle in an iron candlestick. It appeared that Marmeladov had a room, not only a corner of one, but the room was no more than a passage. At the farther end the door leading to the other rooms, or rabbit-hutches, into which Amalia Lippewechsel's flat was divided, stood ajar. From beyond it came a great deal of noisy talk and laughter. People seemed to be playing cards and drinking tea. Occasionally the most incoherent words came flying out of the door.

Raskolnikov knew Katerina Ivanovna at once. She was terribly wasted, a fairly tall, slender, shapely woman with still beautiful dark-brown hair and cheeks flushed with hectic red. She was walking up and down the little room with her hands pressed to her breast. Her lips looked parched and her breathing was harsh and uneven. Her eyes had a feverish glitter, but their gaze was hard and fixed. The consumptive and agitated creature was a painful spectacle, with the last light of the guttering candle flickering on her face. She appeared to Raskolnikov to be about thirty years old, and she and Marme-

ladov were certainly ill-matched . . . She did not hear or notice them as they entered; she seemed to be in a sort of stupor, dead and blind to everything. The room was stuffy, but she had not opened the window; a foul smell came from the stairs, but the door to the landing was not shut; clouds of tobacco-smoke blew in from the other rooms through the half open door, and she coughed but did not close it. The smallest child, a little girl of about six, was asleep on the floor, sitting hunched up with her head resting against the sofa. A boy about a year older stood crying and shaking in a corner; he had evidently just had a whipping. The eldest child was standing by her brother with her arm, as thin as a matchstick, about his neck. She was a tall and painfully thin little girl about nine years old, and her only garment was a worn and tattered caftan; round her bare shoulders was thrown an old woollen pelisse which must have fitted her two years earlier but now came down only to her knees. She was whispering to the boy to soothe him and doing her best to prevent a fresh outburst of sobs. Her enormous, lightened dark eyes, which looked still larger in her pinched and terrified little face, followed her mother's movements. Marmeladov did not go right into the room, but gave Raskolnikov a push which sent him forward, and himself fell on his knees at the door. At the sight of the stranger the distracted woman paused for a moment before him, evidently pulling herself together and wondering why he had come, but then it seemed to occur to her that he must be going to one of the other rooms, to which theirs served as a passage. Having come to this conclusion she paid him no further attention, but turned towards the entrance to shut the door, and suddenly cried out at the sight of her husband on his knees on the threshold.

'Ah!' she shrieked in a frenzy, 'so you've come back! Gosh-bird! Monster! . . . Where's the money? What have you got in your pockets?—show me! But those aren't your clothes! Where are yours? Where's the money? Say something! . . .'

And she threw herself forward and began to ransack his pockets. Marmeladov at once raised his arms, in a humble and submissive gesture, to make the search easier. There was not a single copeck.

'Where is the money, then?' she cried. 'Oh God, he can't have drunk it all! There were twelve silver roubles left in my box! . . .'. Then, beside herself, she clutched his hair with a



sudden swift movement and dragged him into the room. Marmeladov himself helped, shutting meekly on his knees after her.

'This is a sweet satisfaction to me! This gives me not pain but plea-ea-sure, my-y-y dear sir!' he exclaimed, while he was shaken by the hair and once even had his forehead bumped on the floor. The child asleep on the floor woke up and began to cry. The boy in the corner could bear it no longer, but in a paroxysm of terror flung himself crying and shivering into his sister's arms. She was trembling like a leaf.

'You've drunk it all, drunk all of it!' wailed the poor woman in despair, 'and those clothes aren't yours! Hungry, they are hungry!' she pointed to the children and wrung her hands. 'Oh, accursed, wretched life! And you, aren't you ashamed,' she turned suddenly on Raskolnikov, 'coming here from the public house? Have you been drinking with him? Get out!'

The young man left hurriedly without a word. Meanwhile the inner door had been pushed wide open and unpident laughing faces, adorned with pipes or cigarettes, or topped with skull-caps, were peering out inquisitively. There were figures in dressing-gowns left quite unfastened, others so scantily dressed as to be indecent, some of them held cards in their hands. They laughed with special glee when Marmeladov, dragged about by the hair, cried out that he enjoyed it. Some of them even began crowding into the room. Finally there came an ominous piercing yell from Anna Lippewicksel herself, who came pushing to the front to restore order in her own fashion and to frighten the poor woman by ordering her for the hundredth time, with a string of oaths, to quit the flat the very next day. As he went out, Raskolnikov, thrusting his hand into his pocket and scraping together the coppers remaining from the rouble he had changed in the tavern, managed to put them unobserved on the window-sill. Afterwards, on his way downstairs, he repented of his action and almost turned back.

'What a stupid thing to do,' he thought, 'since after all they have Sonya and I need it myself.' But reflecting that it was no longer possible to take back the money and that in any case he would not have done so, he shrugged his shoulders and turned homewards. 'Besides, of course Sonya needs rouge,' he went on with a sarcastic laugh, as he walked along, 'and such smartness costs money . . . Hm! And perhaps Sonya will be



empty-handed herself to-day, for there is always that risk, when one is hunting . . . or prospecting for gold . . . and that means they would all be in a bad way tomorrow, without that money of mine . . . Poor Sonya! What a little gold-mine they've managed to get hold of there!—and profit from! Oh yes, they draw their profits from it! And they've got used to it. They wept at first, but now they are used to it. Men are scoundrels, they can get used to anything!

He pondered.

'Well, and if I am wrong,' he burst out suddenly, 'if men are not really scoundrels, men in general, the whole human race, I mean, then all the rest is just prejudice, imaginary fears, and there are no real carriers, and that is as it should be.'

### CHAPTER III

THE next day Raskolnikov awoke late from an uneasy and unrefreshing sleep. He woke feeling gloomy, peevish, and irritable, and gazed round his little room with loathing. It was a tiny little cubby hole of a place, no more than six paces long, and so low that anybody of even a little more than average height felt uncomfortable in it, fearful that at any moment he might bump his head against the ceiling. The yellowish dusty wall-paper peeling off the walls gave it a wretchedly squalid appearance, and the furniture was in keeping; there were three rickety old chairs and a stained deal table in a corner, holding a few books and papers so covered with dust that it was plain that they had not been touched for a long time, and lastly there was a large and clumsy sofa, taking up almost the whole of one wall and half the width of the room, and with a print cover now old and worn into holes. This served Raskolnikov as a bed. He often slept on it just as he was, without undressing, without sheets, covered with his old worn-out student's overcoat, his head resting on a little cushion with his whole stock of linen, clean and dirty, bundled together under it for a bolster. Before this sofa stood a small table.

A more slovenly and degraded manner of life could hardly have been imagined, but it suited Raskolnikov's present mood. He had resolutely withdrawn from all human contacts like a tortoise retreating into its shell, until the sight even of the face of the servant-girl who was supposed to look after him and who looked in on him from time to time, made him shudder with

revulsion. Such behaviour is found among monomaniacs when they have concentrated all their energies on one point. His landlady had stopped supplying him with food two weeks earlier and it had not yet occurred to him to go down and have things out with her, although he had been left without dinner. The cook, Nastasya, the landlady's only servant, was inclined to welcome the lodger's mood and had quite stopped cleaning and tidying his room, though she might pick up a broom once a week or so. It was she who had waked him now.

'Get up!—why are you still asleep?' she exclaimed, standing over him; 'it's past nine o'clock. I've brought you some tea; wouldn't you like some? You'll be wasting away!'

Raskolnikov opened his eyes with a start and recognized Nastasya.

'Did the landlady send up the tea?' he asked, slowly and painfully raising himself on the sofa.

'Likely, isn't it?'

She put down before him her own cracked teapot with some tea still remaining in it, and laid beside it two yellowed pieces of sugar.

'Here, Nastasya, take this, please,' he said, groping in his pocket (he had slept in his clothes) and taking out a small handful of coppers, 'and go and buy me a loaf. And go to the provision-shop and get me a bit of sausage, the cheapest kind.'

'I'll bring you the loaf this minute, but instead of the sausage wouldn't you like some cabbage soup? It's good soup, yesterday's. I saved it for you yesterday, but you came in too late. It's good soup.'

When the cabbage soup had been brought and Raskolnikov had begun to eat it, Nastasya sat down beside him on the sofa and began to chatter. She was a peasant, not a townswoman, and very talkative.

'That Praskovya Pavlovna's going to go to the police about you,' she said.

He scowled.

'To the police? What does she want?'

'You won't pay her her money, and you won't get out. It's plain enough what she wants.'

'The devil! It only needed that!' he muttered, grinding his teeth. 'No! Just now that's . . . not convenient for me . . . She's a fool,' he added aloud. 'I'll go and talk to her tomorrow.'

'Of course she's a fool, and so am I, and you're very clever—'

but in that case, why do you lie here like an old sack, with nothing to show for your cleverness? You say you used to go and teach children; why do you do nothing now?

'I am doing . . . ' began Raskolnikov grimly and reluctantly.

'What?'

'Work . . . '

'What sort of work?'

'Thinking,' he replied seriously, after a moment's pause.

Nastasya fairly shook with laughter. She laughed easily and often, and when anything amused her, her whole body shook and quivered with noiseless mirth until she almost choked.

'Well, and have you thought up now to get a lot of money?' she inquired when at last she was able to speak

'I can't teach children when I have no boots. Besides, I despise the whole business.'

'It's no good quarreling with your bread and butter '

'Teaching children is very badly paid. What can you do with a few copecks?' he went on reluctantly, as if in answer to his own thoughts.

'I suppose you want a fortune straight off?'

He looked at her strangely and paused for a moment.

'Yes, I do,' he answered firmly.

'Well, you'd better go slow, or you'll frighten me; in fact I'm frightened already. Am I to go for the loaf or not?'

'If you like.'

'Oh, I forgot! A letter came for you yesterday while you were out.'

'A letter? For me? Who from?'

'I don't know I gave the postman three copecks Will you pay me back?'

'Well, bring it here then, for God's sake!' cried Raskolnikov in great excitement 'Good heavens!'

A minute later the letter appeared. As he thought, it was from his mother in the province of ——. He turned pale as he took it. It was a long time since he had received a letter, but it was something else that suddenly oppressed his spirit

'Nastasya, please go away; here are your three copecks, only please go quickly!'

The letter trembled in his hands; he did not wish to open it in her presence, he wanted to be alone with it When Nastasya went out, he lifted it quickly to his lips and kissed it, then for a long time he sat studying the small sloping writing on the



envelope, the dear familiar handwriting of the mother who had long ago taught him to read and write. He hesitated, almost as though he were afraid of something. At last he opened the thick heavy packet, the letter was a long one, two large sheets of paper covered with small close writing.

'My dear Rodya,' wrote his mother,

'It is now more than two months since I last talked to you by letter, and I am very distressed about this, so much so that sometimes I cannot sleep at night for thinking of it—but I am sure you will forgive my silence, it has not been my own choice. You know how much I love you, you are all we have, Danya and I, you are everything to us, our only hope and trust. How deeply it grieved me to learn that you had left the university several months ago because you could not afford to keep yourself there, and that your teaching and other sources of income had come to an end. What could I do to help you with my hundred and twenty roubles of pension? The fifteen roubles I sent you four months ago I borrowed, as you know, on the security of my pension from one of the merchants here, Vassily Ivanovich Vakartshin. He is a good, kind man, and used to be a friend of your father's. But as I had made over to him the right to draw my pension I had to wait until the debt was paid off, that has only just been done, so I haven't been able to send you anything all this time. But now, thank God, I think I shall be able to send you a little more. Indeed, we can now congratulate ourselves that our fortunes in general have taken a turn for the better, and I hasten to tell you about it.

'To begin with, dear Rodya, you will hardly guess—your sister has been with me for the last six weeks, and we shall never have to part again in future. Thank God, her torments are over. I must tell you everything from the beginning, so that you shall know how it all happened, and all the things we have been keeping from you till now. Two months ago, when you wrote that you had heard from somebody that Danya had a great deal of unkindness and rudeness to put up with at the Sviridgailovs, and asked me for full particulars, what answer could I give you? If I had told you the whole truth, you would perhaps have thrown everything up and come home to us, even if you had had to walk all the way, for I know your character and your feelings, and you would not have allowed



your sister to be insulted. I was desperate myself, but what could I do? And even I didn't know the whole truth at first. The chief difficulty was that when Dunetchka went to them as governess last year, she drew a whole hundred rubles in advance, to be repaid month by month out of her salary, and that meant that she could not leave until the debt was settled. She took this money (I can tell you all this now, dearest Kolya) principally so that she could send you the sixty rubles you needed so badly just then, which you had from us last year. We deceived you at the time, writing to you that it was money that Dunetchka had saved before, but that was not true, and now I am telling you the whole truth because everything has suddenly changed for the better, by God's will, and because I want you to know how much Dunya loves you, and what a precious treasure her heart is. Mr. Svidrigaylov received her very rudely at first, and made sarcastic and disrespectful remarks to her at table. But I don't want to go into all the unpleasant details, I want to spare you unnecessary distress and it is all over now. In short, although Marfa Ivanovna, Mr. Svidrigaylov's wife, and the rest of the household, treated her kindly and generously, things were very difficult for Dunetchka, especially when Mr. Svidrigaylov, who now acquired the habit in his old regimental days, was under the influence of Bacchus.

But worse was to come. Can you believe that he had long since conceived an extravagant passion for Dunya and that all his rudeness and contempt was simply assumed to hide it? Perhaps he was ashamed and frightened when he found himself, worn on in years and the father of a family, conceiving such irresponsible hopes, and for that reason felt involuntary hostility to Dunya. Or perhaps he simply wanted to hide the true state of affairs from other people by behaving rudely and jeering at her. But at last he lost all control, and had the effrontery to make dishonest proposals quite openly to Dunya, promising her all sorts of things in return. He was even prepared to throw up everything and run away with her to some other estate, or perhaps abroad. You may imagine how Dunya suffered! It was impossible to leave her position at once, not only because of her debt, but also out of consideration for Marfa Petrovna, whose suspicions might have been aroused, which would have bred discord in the family. Besides Dunya herself could not have avoided disgrace and scandal. So there

were several different reasons why she could not bring herself to escape from that horrible house until six weeks ago. Of course you know Dunya, with her wise head and her resolute character. Dunechka is capable of bearing a great deal, and even in the worst straits would still retain the nobility and firmness of her character. Even to me she didn't tell everything, for fear of upsetting me, although we often wrote to one another.

'The *déroulement* came unexpectedly. Marfa Petrovna happened to overhear her husband pleading with Dunechka in the garden and, completely misunderstanding everything, accused her of being the cause of the whole thing. There was a dreadful scene there in the garden; Marfa Petrovna even struck Dunya, and wouldn't listen to a word from her, but went on raving at her for a whole hour. Finally, she ordered Dunya to be sent back to me at once in a common peasant's cart, into which all her things were thrown pell-mell, without packing or anything. It began to pour with rain and Dunya, insulted and humiliated, had to travel the whole seventeen versts with a peasant in an open cart.

'Now think, what could I possibly have said in answer to your letter of two months ago, what could I have written about? I felt desperate, I dared not tell you the truth, because that would only have made you unhappy, anxious, and angry, and what could you have done, except perhaps run your own life?—and besides Dunya would not let me, yet I could not fill a letter with trifles and everyday affairs when my heart was so heavy. The whole town talked of the scandal for weeks, and things got to such a pitch that Dunya and I could not go to church because of the contemptuous looks we got, and the whispering, and even remarks made aloud in our presence. None of our acquaintances would have anything to do with us, they even cut us in the street, and I learned for a fact that some shop assistants and junior clerks planned to insult us in the basest manner by smearing the gates of the house with tar, so that the landlord began to press us to leave the flat. The cause of all this was Marfa Petrovna, who had managed to carry her accusations and her attacks on Dunya's good name into every house in the town. She knows everybody here, and she spent all that month running about the town. As she is rather garrulous and likes to talk about her domestic affairs and complain about her husband to all and sundry, she soon spread the story

all over the district as well as in the town itself. It made me ill, but Dunya is made of sterner stuff; I wish you could have seen how well she bore it all, and comforted and sustained me at the same time. She is an angel.

'Mercenary, our sufferings were quickly brought to an end; Mr. Svidrigaylov had a change of heart and repented. He was apparently seized with pity for Dunya, for he gave Maria Petrovna full documentary proof of her innocence, in the form of a letter which Dunya had found herself obliged to write and give to him, declining the private explanations and secret interviews he was trying to insist on. This letter, which remained in his possession after Dunya's departure, fervently and indignantly reproached him with the unworthiness of his conduct towards Maria Petrovna and reminded him that he was a husband and father, and that it was base of him to torment and make miserable a defenceless girl who was unhappy enough already. In a word, dear Rodya, it was so noble and touching a letter that I sobbed as I read it, and even now I cannot read it without tears. Besides this, there now came out at last the evidence of the servants, who, as is always the case, had seen and known a good deal more than Mr. Svidrigaylov supposed, and who also exonerated Dunya.

'Maria Petrovna was thunder-struck and "completely overwhelmed", as she herself confessed to us. She was, however, fully convinced of Dunya's innocence, and the very next day, Sunday, she went straight to the cathedral and on her knees prayed with tears to Our Lady to give her strength to bear this new trial and perform her duty. Then she came straight to us from the cathedral and told us everything, and, full of remorse and weeping bitterly, embraced Dunya and begged her forgiveness. The same morning, without losing any time, she went straight from us to every house in the town and everywhere, in the most flattering terms, proclaimed with tears Dunya's innocence and the nobility of her feelings and conduct. What is more, she showed everybody Dunya's letter to Mr. Svidrigaylov, read it aloud, and even allowed people to copy it (which seems to me to be going too far). She spent several days in going the rounds in this way, and some people began to complain that preference had been shown to others, and so turns were arranged, so that people were already waiting for her in each house, and everybody knew that on such-and-such a day she would be in such-and-such a place to read the letter.



To every reading people came who had already heard it both in their own homes and in other people's as well. It is my opinion that a great deal, a very great deal, of all this was unnecessary, but Maria Petrovna is like that. At all events she fully re-established Dunechka's reputation, and such indelible shame for his ignoble conduct has come to her husband as the principal offender that I am sorry even for him, his folly has been too severely punished. Dunya was invited to give lessons in various houses, but she refused. The general attitude towards her has suddenly changed to one of marked respect.

All this helped considerably to make possible the event which, I may venture to say, has completely changed our destiny. You must know, dear Rodya, that a suitor has presented himself for Dunya, and that she has found it possible to accept him. Now I want to take this first opportunity of telling you all about it. And although matters have been arranged without consulting you, you will not raise any grievance against either your sister or me, for you will see, when I have told you about it, that it would have been impossible to postpone the decision and wait until we had had an answer from you. Besides, you could not have formed an accurate judgement without being here. This is how it happened. Peter Petrovich Lizzin, who has already attained the rank of Civil Councillor, is a distant connexion of Maria Petrovna's, who has done a great deal to assist him in this. It all began with his expressing through her a wish to meet us; he was received in a fitting manner and took coffee with us, and the very next day sent us a letter in which he expressed his proposal very civilly and asked for a speedy decision. He is a practical man and very busy, and he had to go to St. Petersburg in a hurry, so every minute counted. Of course, we were taken aback at first; it all happened too quickly and unexpectedly. We spent the whole day weighing and considering the question. He is a dependable person, in a secure position, and already has some capital of his own; he has two different situations. It is true that he is forty-five years old, but his appearance is quite pleasant and may still be attractive to women; altogether, he is a solid and worthy man, if rather overbearing and harsh in manner. But this, perhaps, is only one's first impression.

I warn you, dear Rodya, not to judge him too rashly and hastily, as you are inclined to do, if, when you meet him in



St. Petersburg (as you will very shortly), there seems to you at first glance to be something lacking in him. I say this just in case, although I am certain that he will make a favourable impression on you. Besides, if you want to know a person thoroughly, you must go slowly and carefully, so as to avoid mistakes and prejudices, which are always difficult to correct or eradicate afterwards. And Peter Petrovich is, at heart, in many ways a man to be respected. On his first visit he explained to us that he was a man of settled opinions, but in many things shared, as he put it, "the convictions of the younger generation" and was an enemy of all prejudice. He said a great many other things, for he is a little vain and likes to have an audience, but that is a small fault. Of course, I didn't understand much of it, but Dunya explained to me that, although not very highly educated, he is intelligent and seems good and kind. You know your sister's character, Rodya. She is steady, sensible, patient, generous, even if she is impetuous too, as I have good cause to know. Of course, there is no particular love either on her side or on his, but Dunya, besides being a sensible girl, is a noble creature too, like an angel, and would make it her duty to ensure her husband's happiness if he, for his part, concerned himself with hers. On this score we have little cause for doubt, although, I confess, the thing has been done rather quickly. Besides, he is a very prudent man, and will certainly see for himself that the happier Dunya is, married to him, the more certain his own married life is to be happy. As for some dissimilarities in temperament, some confirmed old habits, even some incompatibility in opinion that may exist—and that cannot be avoided even in the happiest unions, Daria Pavlovna has told me that she can rely on herself, and that there is no reason for uneasiness on that account, since she can put up with a good deal provided that their further relationship is on an honest and honourable footing. For instance, he seemed to me at first rather brusque, but that may be—it must be—only because he is outspoken, he is certainly that. On his second visit, for example, after he had been accepted, he told us in the course of conversation that even before he knew Dunya he had intended to take as his wife an honest girl without a dowry, who must have known poverty, because, as he explained, a husband ought not to be under any sort of obligation to his wife, and it was much better if she looked upon him as her benefactor. I must add that he expressed himself rather less

crudely and harshly than this, because I have forgotten his actual words and remember only the sense of them; and besides, he really did not intend to say them at all, but evidently let them slip in the heat of the conversation, and afterwards he tried to correct himself and tone down what he had said, all the same it seemed just a little crude to me, and I told Dunya so afterwards. But Dunya was quite angry and answered rather sharply that "words are not deeds", and of course that is true.

The night before she came to her decision, Dunya did not sleep at all, but when she thought I was asleep got out of bed and walked about the room all night, finally she knelt down before the icon and prayed fervently; and in the morning she told me that she had decided.

I have already mentioned that Peter Petrovich is now on his way to St. Petersburg. He has important business to do, and he hopes to open a law office there. He has been engaged for some time in the conduct of various actions and lawsuits and only recently he won an important case in the Senate. Now he has important business to deal with in the Senate, so it is essential for him to go to St. Petersburg. So, dear Rodya, he will be able to be very helpful to you in every way, and Dunya and I expect that from this very day you can make a definite start on your future career and see your destiny taking clear shape. Oh, if only our expectations are realized! It would be such a blessing that we could only ascribe it to the direct intervention of Providence. Dunya dreams of nothing else. We have even ventured to say a few words on the subject to Peter Petrovich. His answer was expressed cautiously, he said that a secretary was certainly necessary to him and that it was obviously better to pay a salary to a relative than to a stranger, provided he is capable of fulfilling his duties—as if you could possibly not be capable!—but he expressed some doubt whether your university studies would leave you time for his office. That was the end of the matter for the moment, but now Dunya can think of nothing else. She has been in a fever of excitement for several days and has thought up a complete plan for you to become Peter Petrovich's colleague and even partner in his law business, especially as you are studying in the Faculty of Law yourself. I fully agree with her, Rodya, and share all her plans and hopes, which I think very likely to be fulfilled, and in spite of Peter Petrovich's easily explainable evasiveness (after all, he doesn't

know you yet), Dunya is firmly convinced that she will accomplish it all by her good influence over her future husband. Of course, we have taken care not to say anything to Peter Petrovich about these more distant dreams of ours, especially about your being his partner. He is a very sober-minded man, and what would seem to him to be the wildest day-dreams might get a cold reception from him. Equally, neither Dunya nor I have breathed a word to him of our profound hope that he will help us to assist you with money while you remain at the University, because, in the first place, it will come of itself later on, and he himself will probably make the offer without being urged—would he be likely to refuse Dunya such a thing?—the more readily as you may become his right hand man in the office and receive the help not as a benefaction but as well-earned salary. That is how Dunya wants it to be, and I agree with her. In the second place, we have not spoken of it because we particularly want you to meet as equals when, very soon now, you make his acquaintance. When Dunya talked enthusiastically to him about you, he replied that he found it necessary to make a close personal study of any person in order to form an opinion of him, and that he would rely on his own judgement when he came to know you.

‘Do you know, my dearest Rodya, I think without the slightest reference to Peter Petrovich or to anything but my own personal whims, those perhaps of a silly old woman—I think that I should perhaps do better to go on, after their marriage, living by myself, as I do now, rather than with them. I am quite sure that he will have the delicacy and consideration to invite me to live with them, and not to part again from my daughter, and if he has not already done so, it is because it is taken for granted, but I shall refuse. More than once in my life I have noticed that husbands have no great liking for their mothers-in-law, and I not only don’t want to be in the slightest degree a burden to anybody, but I also want to be completely free myself, so long as I have a crust of bread, and two such children as you and Dunecinka. If possible, I shall settle somewhere near both of you.

‘For you must know, Rodya, that I have saved the best news till the end; it is that we shall perhaps all three be together again in a very short time, my dear, and be able to embrace one another again after nearly three years of separation. It has been *definitely* decided that Dunya and I are to move to St.



Petersburg. I don't know exactly when, but very, very soon in any case, perhaps even next week. It all depends on Peter Petrovich's arrangements, and as soon as he has had time to look round in St. Petersburg he will let us know. For various reasons he wants the wedding to take place very soon, even before the next fast, if possible, and if the time is too short, then immediately after the Assumption. Oh, what happiness it will be to press you to my heart! Dunya is full of joy at the thought of seeing you again and once she said, in jest, that she would have married Peter Petrovich if only for that. She is an angel. She is not writing to you now, but she told me to tell you that she has a lot to say to you, so much that she won't put a finger to her pen at the moment, because writing a few lines doesn't get anything said and only upsets one. She told me to send you her love and any number of kisses.

Although we are perhaps to see each other face to face so soon, all the same I will send you some money in a few days, as much as I can. Now that everybody knows that Dunya is going to marry Peter Petrovich my credit has suddenly improved, and I am quite sure that Afanasy Ivanovich will advance me up to seventy-five roubles on the security of my pension, so that I shall be able to send you perhaps twenty-five or even thirty. I should send more except that I am afraid of our travelling expenses. Although Peter Petrovich has been good enough to take on himself part of the cost of our journey to the capital, offering to make himself responsible for the conveyance of the big trunk and our other luggage, through the good offices of some acquaintances of his up there, all the same we have to think of our arrival in St. Petersburg, where we couldn't turn up without a farthing, even for the first day or two. However, Dunya and I have already gone into all the details, and we find that the actual journey will not be very expensive. It is only ninety versts from here to the railway, and we have already made arrangements with a peasant we know, who is a carrier; then we shall be quite happy travelling on from there third class. So perhaps it will be not twenty-five, but more likely thirty roubles that I shall contrive to send you.

And now, my darling Rodya, until our speedy reunion, all my love and a mother's blessing. You must love your sister Dunya, Rodya, love her as she loves you - and her love for you is boundless; she loves you more than herself. She is an angel, Rodya, and you—you are everything to us; all our hope and



trust is in you. If only you are happy, we shall be happy too. Do you pray to God; Rodya, as you used to do, and do you believe in the mercy of our Creator and Redeemer? I am afraid, in my heart, that you too may have been affected by the fashionable modern unbelief. If that is so, I will pray for you. Remember, my dear, how, when you were a child and your father was still alive, you lisped your prayers at my knee, and remember how happy we all were then! Good-bye—or rather, *au revoir*. I send you all my love, and many, many kisses.

Your devoted mother,

Pulkheria Raskolnikova.'

Almost all the time that Raskolnikov was reading this letter his face was wet with tears, but when he came to the end it was pale and convulsively distorted and a bitter angry smile played over his lips. He put his head down on his thin, crumpled pillow and lay there for a long time, thinking. His heart was beating fiercely and his thoughts were wildly agitated. At last it began to seem close and stuffy in the shabby little room, so like a box or a cupboard. His eyes and his thoughts both craved more space. He seized his hat and went out, this time without fearing to meet anybody on the stairs, he had forgotten all about that. He turned his steps in the direction of Vasilyevsky Island, along the Voznesensky Prospect, hurrying as though he had business there, but, as usual, he walked without noticing where he was going, whispering and sometimes even talking aloud to himself, to the surprise of the passers-by. Many of them supposed him to be drunk.

## CHAPTER IV

His mother's letter had tortured him. On the most important, the fundamental, point, he had not a moment's doubt, even while he was reading the letter. The most essential question was decided in his mind, and decided with finality. 'This marriage shall never take place while I live, and Mr. Luzhin may go to the devil!'

'Because the thing is obvious,' he muttered to himself, smiling with malicious enjoyment at the anticipated triumph of his decision. 'No, mama, no, Dunya, you cannot deceive me! . . . And yet they make excuses for not asking my advice and for coming to their decision without me. Of course! they think

it's impossible to break it off now, but we shall see whether it is impossible or not. And what marvelously flimsy excuses they find "Peter Petrovich is such a busy man," say they, "so busy that he can't even get married except post-haste, everything must be done at express speed." No, Dunetchka, I see it all, and I know what it is you have such a lot to say about to me; I know, too, what you were thinking of, while you paced the room all night, and what you prayed for, kneeling before the icon of Our Lady of Kazan in mama's room. The way to Golgotha is hard Him . . . So it's all decided and settled; you, Avdotya Romanovna, are graciously pleased to marry a practical, a rational man, who has some capital of his own (*already* has some capital, that makes it sound sounder and more imposing), a man who has two situations and shares the convictions of the younger generation—as mama says—and who seems good and kind, as Dunetchka herself remarks. That *seems* is magnificent!—and Dunetchka is going to marry that *seems*! . . . Magnificent, magnificent!

"I wonder, though, why mama wrote that to me about the "younger generation." Simply because it is characteristic of the man, or with the ulterior object of influencing me in Mr. Luzhin's favour? What diplomacy! I should like one thing made clear, though, how open were they with each other, that day and that night, and later? Were their real thoughts put into actual words, or did each of them tacitly understand that the same thing was in the hearts and minds of both of them, so that there was no need to name it aloud or to waste words in discussing it? Probably that was it, at least partly; but you can tell from the letter that when mama found him crude, *just a little*, she was naive enough to go to Danya with her observations. *She*, of course, was angry and "answered rather sharply." Naturally! it would have irritated anybody, when the thing was understood, without naive questions, and when it had been settled that there was no need to put anything into words. And why does she write to me "Love Danya, Rodya; she loves you more than she loves herself"? isn't it because her conscience torments her with remorse at having consented to sacrifice her daughter for the sake of her son? "You are everything to us, our only hope and trust." Oh, mama! . . . Resentment welled up in him, more and more bitter, and if he had chanced to meet Mr. Luzhin at that moment, he would have felt like murdering him.

'Hm, it is true,' he continued, trying to follow the whirlwind of thoughts spinning in his brain, 'it is true that one must "go slowly and carefully" with a man if one wants to study him thoroughly; but Mr. Luzhin is transparent. The main thing is that he is "a practical man and *seems* good and kind" — is it a small thing that he has undertaken responsibility for the luggage, and will himself see that the big trunk is safely conveyed here? Of course he's good and kind! Meanwhile, the two of them, the *bride* and her mother, bespeak a peasant's cart covered with matting — I've traveled in it myself! — It's nothing, it's only ninety versts; 'then we shall be quite happy traveling third class' another thousand versts. And very sensible too, one must cut one's coat according to one's cloth; but you, Mr. Luzhin, what do you think of it? After all, she is your bride . . . And how could you avoid knowing that her mother must borrow money on her pension for the journey? Of course, here you have a common commercial transaction, an undertaking for mutual profit, with equal shares, and that means expenses shared equally too, bread and salt in common, but supply your own tobacco, as the proverb says. And the practical man has indulged in a little sharp practice here; the luggage costs less than their journey and perhaps he will even get it brought for nothing. Why don't they see what all this means, or are they turning a blind eye on purpose? And they are content, content! When one thinks that this is only the blossom, and the real fruit is yet to come! What is significant here is not the meanness, not the stinginess, but the *use* of everything. It foreshadows the tone of their relationship after the marriage . . . yes, and mama, what is she so pleased about? What is she going to appear in St. Petersburg with? Three silver roubles, or "a couple of rouble hats", as that . . . old woman . . . called them . . . Hm . . . What does she hope to live on in St. Petersburg afterwards? She has surely had some cause already to surmise that it will be *impossible* for her and Dunya to live together after the wedding, even at first? The dear man has evidently *let it slip*, quite by chance of course, and made himself very clear, although mama waves any such idea away with both hands. "I," she says, "shall refuse." What is she thinking of, what can she rely on? On her hundred and twenty roubles of pension, less deductions for the debt to Afanasy Ivanovich? She runs her old eyes knitting winter shawls and embroidering cuffs, and I know that all of it doesn't add more than twenty roubles a year to her hundred



and twenty. That means that in spite of everything she still relies on Mr. Luzhin's generosity of spirit. "He will invite me himself to live with them," says she, "he will urge me to." Yes, that's likely! These Schalleresque beautiful souls are always the same, up to the very last moment they see people through rose-coloured spectacles; up to the very last moment they hope for good and not evil, and even if they have some misgivings that there is a reverse side to the medal, they refuse to admit them even to themselves, they shrink from the very notion, they wave the truth away with both hands until the very moment when the over-idealized person appears in his true colours and cocks a snook at them.

"I wonder if Mr. Luzhin has any decorations, I'm willing to bet he has an order of St. Anna for his button hole and wears it at contractors' and merchants' dinners. Perhaps he'll even wear it at his wedding. However, he can go to the devil! . . .

"Well, but let mama take that line—she can't help it, bless her, it's the way she's made—but Dunya? Dunechka, my dear, I know you. You were nineteen when last we saw each other, and I already understood your nature. Mama writes that "Dunechka is capable of bearing a great deal". I know that. I knew it two and a half years ago, and I have kept thinking of it during that two and a half years, of the fact that "Dunechka is capable of bearing a great deal". And now she and mama together have conceived the idea that she can bear even Mr. Luzhin's expounding his theory that wives ought to be rescued from beggary and loaded with benedictions by their husbands, and expounding it almost the first time he saw them. Even if we assume that "he only let it slip" although he is a rational man and that means that perhaps the slip was intentional, so as to make his position clear from the outset—but Dunya, what if Dunya? Surely she must see what the man is; and to live with him! She would certainly eat only black bread and drink only water rather than sell her soul, and she would not surrender her moral freedom in return for comfort; she wouldn't surrender it for all Schleswig-Holstein, let alone for Mr. Luzhin! No, Dunya, as I knew her, was not like that and . . . of course, she hasn't changed now! . . .

"Oh, it's all quite clear! The Svidrigaylovs are not easy. It is not easy to spend one's life trailing round the provinces as a governess at two hundred roubles, but all the same I know she would sooner go to the plantations as a negro slave, or live



like a Latvian serf in some Baltic German household, than degrade her spirit and her moral feelings by a union with a man whom she does not respect and with whom she has nothing in common—for ever, just for her own personal advantage. And, even if Mr. Luzhin were made of the purest gold, if he were nothing but one large diamond, even then she would never consent to become his legal concubine. Then why does she consent now? What is the reason? What is the key to the riddle? It is quite clear, for herself, for her own comfort, even to save herself from death, she would not sell herself, but for another she would! For a dear one, for someone she adores, she would! That is the key to the riddle—for her brother, for her mother, she would!—she would sell everything! Ah, in such circumstances we throw our moral feelings into the bargain as well, we carry our freedom, our peace of mind, even our consciences, everything, everything, to the Flea Market. Let our lives go, if only these beloved creatures of ours are happy! Nay more, we invent casuistical arguments for ourselves, we take a lesson from the Jesuits, and, for a time, contrive to allay our own doubts and convince ourselves that what we are doing is necessary, absolutely necessary, in a good cause. That is the way we are made; it is all as clear as daylight. It is clear that nobody but Rodion Romanovich Raskolnikov is in question here, he occupies all the foreground. Well, his happiness may be secured, he may be kept at the University, made a partner in the office, his future provided for; perhaps later on he may be rich, respected, honoured, he may even die famous! And my mother? But this is a question of Rodya, precious Rodya, the first-born! Why hesitate to sacrifice even such a daughter for the sake of such a first-born? Oh loving hearts, without any notion of justice! Why, perhaps we would not refuse even Sonechka's fate. Sonechka, Sonechka Marmeladova, Sonechka the eternal, while the world lasts! But this sacrifice, have you plumbed the full depths of this sacrifice? Really? Is your strength great enough? Will it really bring such great benefits? Is it really sensible and wise? Do you know, Danechka, that Sonechka's fate is no whit worse than yours with Mr. Luzhin? "There can be no particular love here" writes mama. But what if, besides there being no particular love or respect, there is already abhorrence, scorn, loathing, what then? Then it follows, once more, that "one must preserve one's cleanness and purity". It is so, isn't it? Do you understand, do you

understand, what that cleanness means? Do you understand that a Mrs. Lugin's cleanness is exactly the same thing as Sonechka's, or perhaps even worse, fouler, more despicable, because you, Dunechka, can after all reckon on comforts into the bargain, and with the other it is a question simply of dying of hunger. "That purity and cleanness costs dear, dear, Dunechka." Well, and what if your strength is not equal to it, and you repent? How much grief, how many laments, how many curses, how many tears hidden from all the world, hidden because you, after all, are not Marfa Petrovna! And what of your mother then? She is uneasy and worried even now; what then, when everything is clearly revealed? And what of me? . . . How indeed have they been thinking of me? I will not have your sacrifice, Dunechka, I will not have it, mama! It shall not be, while I live, it shall not, it shall not! I will not accept it!

Suddenly he recollected himself, and stopped. "It shall not be? What are you going to do to prevent it? Will you forbid it? But what right have you to do so? What can you offer that will give you the right? To consecrate your destiny, your whole future, to them, *when you have finished your studies and obtained a vocation?* We've heard all that before, and it's all right for the future; but what about now? Something must certainly be done now, do you understand that? And what are you doing now? You are fleeing them. And they get the money for you on the security of a hundred-rouble pension or as an advance from the Svidrigaylovs. And how will you protect them from the Svidrigaylovs or from Atanasy Ivanovich Vakhrushin, your future millionaire, disposing of their fates as though you were Zeus himself? Do you need ten years? In that ten years your mother will have time to go blind with knitting, and perhaps with tears, she will waste away with fasting—and your sister? Well, think what would become of her after those ten years, or during them. Have you thought?"

Thus he teased and tormented himself with his problems, and even found a kind of pleasure in doing so. The problems were not new, however, they did not confront him unexpectedly, but were an old and painful story. It was a long time since they had begun to lacerate his feelings. Long, long ago his present anguish had first stirred within him, and it had grown and accumulated until of late it had come to a head and concentrated itself into the form of a wild, fantastic and terrible

question, that tortured his emotions and his reason with its irresistible demands to be answered. Now his mother's letter had struck him like a thunderbolt. It was clear that now the time had come, not to languish in passive suffering, arguing that his problems were insoluble, but to act, to act at once and with speed. He must decide on something or other, come what might, or . . .

'Or renounce life altogether!' he exclaimed suddenly, as if inspired, 'submit obediently, once for all, to destiny, as it is, and stifle everything within oneself, renouncing every right to act, to live, or to love!'

Suddenly Marmeladov's question of the previous day came back to him. 'Do you understand, my dear sir, do you understand what it means to have nowhere left to turn to?' for every man must needs have somewhere to turn to . . .

Suddenly he gave a shudder; another thought, also from yesterday, had come into his head again. But the shudder was not because the thought had returned. Indeed, he had known, he had *foreseen*, that it would return, and he had been expecting it; but this thought was not quite the same as yesterday's. The difference was that a month earlier, and even yesterday, it had been no more than a bad dream, but now . . . it was revealed as no dream, but in a new, unfamiliar, and terrible form; and he had suddenly become conscious of this fact . . . His head throbbed and things went dark before his eyes.

He glanced hastily round, looking for something. He needed to sit down, and he was looking for a bench. He was walking along Konnogvardeysky Boulevard, and he could see a bench about a hundred yards away, in front. He began to walk as quickly as he could, but on the way a small incident absorbed all his attention for a few minutes.

As he looked at the bench he saw a woman walking some twenty paces in front of him, but at first he paid her no more attention than he had given before to all the other objects which had passed before his eyes. He had grown used, for example, to arriving at home, as he often did, without having any idea of how he had come there. But there was something so strange and striking, even at the first glance, about this woman walking along, that little by little his attention became fixed on her, at first unwillingly and almost with some vexation, and then with more and more concentration. Suddenly



he felt a desire to know just what it was that was strange about her. To begin with, she seemed to be very young, no more than a girl, and she was walking through the blazing heat bare-headed and without gloves or parasol, waving her arms about queerly. Her dress was of a thin silken material, but it also looked rather odd; it was not properly fastened, and near the waist at the back, at the top of the skirt, there was a tear, and a great piece of material was hanging loose. A shawl had been flung round her bare neck and hung crooked and lopsided. To crown everything, the girl's gait was unsteady and she stumbled and even staggered from side to side. The encounter had by now fully engaged Raskolnikov's attention. He came up with her close to the bench, she went up to it and let herself fall into a corner of it, resting her head against the back and closing her eyes as if overcome with weariness. Looking closely at her, Raskolnikov realized at once that she was quite drunk. It was a strange, sad sight, he even thought he must be mistaken. Before him he saw the small face of a very young girl, of sixteen, or perhaps only fifteen or so, small, pretty, fair-haired; but the face looked swollen and inflamed. The girl seemed to have little understanding of her surroundings; she crossed one leg over the other, displaying more of it than was seemly, and to all appearances hardly realized that she was in the street.

Raskolnikov did not sit down, but stood irresolutely in front of her, not wanting to go away. This boulevard is always rather deserted, but now at one o'clock, and in such heat, it was almost empty. Fifteen paces away, however, a gentleman had stopped at the edge of the boulevard, a little to one side, and it was plain that he was desirous of approaching the girl for some purpose. He too had probably seen her from a distance and followed her, but Raskolnikov's presence hampered him. He cast bad-tempered glances at him, yet tried not to be observed doing so, and impatiently awaited his opportunity when the vexatious intrusion of this ragamuffin should cease. He was a man of about thirty, thick-set and plump, with a pink-and-white complexion and red lips; he wore a small moustache and was foppishly dressed. Raskolnikov grew furiously angry and was seized with a desire to make himself offensive to the fat dandy. He left the girl for a moment and went up to the gentleman.

'Hey, you Svidrigaylov, what do you want here?' he



exclaimed, clenching his fists and grinning with lips that foamed with rage.

'What does this mean?' asked the gentleman sternly, frowning with haughty astonishment.

'Clear off! That's what it means.'

'How dare you, *canaille*?'

He flourished his cane Raskolnikov threw himself upon him with both fists, without stopping to consider that the stout gentleman was capable of dealing with two of him. But at that moment he was firmly seized from behind; a policeman stood between them.

'That's enough, gentlemen! No brawling in the public streets, if you please! What do you want? Who are you?' he turned to Raskolnikov, sternly surveying his rags.

Raskolnikov looked at him attentively. He had a manly, soldier's face, with grey moustache and whiskers and a sensible expression.

'What do I want? I want you!' he exclaimed, seizing his arm. 'I am a former student, Raskolnikov . . . You may as well know, too,' he added turning to the gentleman 'But come along here, I have something to show you.'

And he pulled the policeman by the arm towards the bench.

'There, look, she's quite drunk, she has just come along the boulevard; Heaven knows who she is, but she can hardly be a professional. More likely somebody made her drunk and abused her . . . do you understand me? . . . for the first time . . . and then turned her out into the street like this. Look, her dress is torn; look how it is put on; clearly she didn't dress herself, she was dressed by somebody else, and dressed by unskilful hands, masculine hands. That is plain. And now look over here; that overdressed scoundrel that I was trying to fight is a stranger to me, this is the first time I have seen him, but he saw her as well, just now, this drunken girl, in no condition to take care of herself, and now he is aching to come and get hold of her—since she is in such a state—and take her off somewhere. It really is so; believe me, I am not mistaken. I saw him watching her and following her, but I was in his way, and now he is simply waiting for me to go. Look, now he's moved a bit farther away, and stopped as if he wanted to roll a cigarette . . . How are we to keep her out of his hands? How can we get her home?—try to think!'

The policeman had understood at once, and now he was

considering. The stout gentleman's position was, of course, clear; there remained the girl. He stooped down to look at her more closely, and sincere compassion showed in his face.

'Ah, it's a great pity!' he said, shaking his head, 'she's no more than a child. She's been led astray, that's right enough. Listen, miss,' he went on to her, 'where do you live?' The girl opened her tired, bleary eyes, looked duly at her questioners, and waved them away with her hand.

'Listen,' said Raskolnikov, rummaging in his pocket and taking out twenty copecks that he found there, 'look, take a cab and tell him to drive to her address. Only we must get to know the address.'

'Young lady, young lady!' began the policeman again, accepting the money, 'I'll get a cab for you right away, and I'll take you home myself. But where to, eh? Where do you live?'

'Pshaw! . . . pestering me . . .' muttered the girl with another wave of the hand.

'Dear, dear, it's a bad business! Oh, how shameful this is, young lady, what a disgrace!' He began to shake his head with a mixture of pity and indignation. 'You know, this is a bit of a problem,' he added, turning to Raskolnikov and again enveloping him from head to foot with a quick glance. Probably he seemed more than a little strange too, giving away money and wearing such rags.

'Was she far from here when you found her?' asked the policeman.

'I tell you she was reeling along the boulevard just here, in front of me. When she came to the bench she just slumped down on it.'

'Oh, what shameful things there are in the world now, sir! Such a simple young thing, and drunk already! She's been betrayed, that's what it is; look how her dress is torn . . . What wickedness there is nowadays! . . . Maybe she belongs to decent people, poor ones, perhaps . . . Lots of things like this happen nowadays. She looks as if she had been quite nicely brought up, almost like a real young lady,' and he stooped over her again.

Perhaps he had daughters like her himself, who were 'nicely brought up, like young ladies', had good manners and copied all the new fashions.

'The main thing,' said Raskolnikov anxiously, 'is to keep

her out of that scoundrel's hands. He would only dishonour her again. It's quite plain what he wants; look, he's not going away, the wretch.'

Raskolnikov spoke loudly and pointed straight at him. The man heard him and seemed on the point of losing his temper again, but thought better of it and contented himself with a scornful glance. Then he slowly moved away another ten paces, and stopped again.

'Well, that can be managed, sir,' answered the police officer, but with some hesitancy. 'If she would only tell us where to take her—otherwise . . . Young lady, young lady!' and he stooped down again.

Suddenly the girl opened her eyes wide, with an attentive expression, as though she had just grasped something. She got up from the bench and started back in the direction she had come from 'Pah! They have no shame, they keep on pestering me,' she said, with another wave of her hand. She walked quickly, staggering as she had before. Keeping his eyes fixed on her, the dandified gentleman followed, but along the other pavement.

'Be easy, I will not let him!' said the policeman resolutely, turning to follow them.

'Eh, what wickedness there is nowadays!' he repeated aloud, with a sigh.

At this moment an instantaneous revulsion of feeling seemed as it were to sting Raskolnikov.

'No, listen!' he cried after the moustached policeman.

He turned round.

'Stop! What is it to you? Drop it! Let him amuse himself!' (he pointed at the gentleman,). 'What business is it of yours?'

The policeman stared uncomprehendingly. Raskolnikov laughed.

'Eh!' said the officer, and with a gesture of his hand followed the girl and the man, evidently taking Raskolnikov for a lunatic or worse.

'He's gone off with my twenty copecks,' said Raskolnikov bitterly, when he was alone. 'Now he can take something from the other as well, and let the girl go with him, and that will be the end of it . . . Why did I take it on myself to interfere? Was it for me to try to help? Have I any right to help? Let them eat one another alive—what is it to me? And how dared I give away those twenty copecks? Were they mine to give?'



In spite of these strange words, he felt depressed. He sat down on the, now empty bench. His thoughts were disconnected, and indeed, he felt too weary at that moment to think at all, on whatever subject. He would have liked to forget himself, to forget everything in sleep, and then to wake up and make a fresh start.

'Poor girl!' he said, looking at the empty corner of the bench . . . 'When she comes to herself, there will be tears, and then her mother will get to know . . . First she will get a thrashing, then she will be beaten with a whip, painfully and shamefully, and perhaps she will even be driven out . . . And even if she isn't, the Darva Franzovna will get wind of her, and she will be hunted this way and that . . . Then will come the hospital (that's always the way with these girls when they live with very respectable mothers and have to take their fan on the fly, well, and then . . . and then the hospital again . . . vodka . . . dram snops . . . the hospital once more . . . a wreck in two or three years, her life finished at no more than eighteen or nineteen years old . . . Haven't I seen others like her? And what became of them? That's what became of them . . . Pah! Let it go! They say it must be so. Such and such a percentage' they say, must go every year . . . somewhere or other . . . to the devil, I suppose, so that the rest may be left in peace and quiet. A percentage! They have some capital words: they are so soothing and scientific. Once you've said "a percentage" there is no need to worry any more. If you used a different word, why then perhaps . . . it might be disturbing . . . And what if Danechka is included in the percentage? . . . If not in one, then in another? . . .'

'But where am I going?' he thought suddenly. 'It's strange I must have come for some reason. I came as soon as I had read that letter . . . I was going to Vasilyevsky Island, to Razumikhin's, . . . I remember now. But why? How did the idea of going to see Razumikhin come to enter my head just at this moment? It's very odd!'

He wondered at himself. Razumikhin was one of his old university friends. It should be noted that Raskolnikov had had scarcely any friends at the university. He held himself aloof, never went to see anyone and did not welcome visitors. Very soon, however, he found himself left severely alone. He took no part in the usual assemblies, discussions, or amusements. He worked strenuously, not sparing himself, and for this he was



respected, but he was not liked. He was very poor and superciliously proud and reserved. It seemed to some of his fellow students that he looked down on them all as children, as if he had outdistanced them in knowledge, development, and ideas, and that he considered their interests and convictions beneath him.

With Razumikhin, though, he did make friends, or rather, he did not exactly make friends, but he was more open and communicative with him than with others. With Razumikhin, indeed, it was impossible to be otherwise. He was an unusually lively and talkative fellow, so goodhearted as to seem almost simple. But the simplicity concealed both depth and considerable merit. The best of his fellow students understood this and they all loved him. He was far from stupid, although he was sometimes really rather naive. In appearance he was striking, tall and thin, with black hair, and always badly shaved. He was subject to violent fits of rage, and had a reputation for great physical strength. On one occasion, out at night with a band of boon companions, he felled with one blow an enormous policeman well over six feet tall. He could and did in endless drinking bouts, or refrain from drinking altogether. Sometimes the pranks he played were carried much too far, but he was also capable of being completely serious. Razumikhin was remarkable also in that failure never disconcerted him and adverse circumstances seemed powerless to subdue him. He could have lived on a roof and suffered the severest extremes of hunger and cold. He was very poor, with absolutely no other resources than the money he obtained by doing all sorts of odd jobs. He knew a thousand and one ways of earning money. Once he went a whole winter without any heat at all in his room, affirming that he preferred it, because one sleeps better in the cold. At the present moment he also had been obliged to leave the university, but only for a short time, and he was straining every nerve to improve his circumstances in order to continue his studies. Raskolnikov had not been to see him for the past four months, and he did not even know Raskolnikov's address. Two months or so previously, they had on one occasion nearly come face to face in the street, but Raskolnikov turned aside and crossed to the other side to avoid being seen, and Razumikhin, although he had in fact seen him, walked past, not wanting to worry his friend.

## CHAPTER V

'Yes, I did think not so long ago of going to Razumikhin again to ask him to get me some work, lessons or something,' . . . Raskolnikov began to remember, 'but how can he help me now? Suppose he gets me some lessons, suppose he shares his last copeck with me, if he has such a thing, so that I can buy boots and make my clothes decent enough to go out in to give the lessons . . . hm. What then? What can I do with a few coppers? They will hardly meet my needs now. Really, it is almost comic that I was on my way to see Razumikhin . . .'

The question of why he had been going to see Razumikhin troubled him more than he himself recognized; he looked uneasily for some sinister meaning in this, it would seem, quite natural step.

'Why, did I really think I could settle everything with no more than some help from Razumikhin; did I think I had found a way out of all my difficulties?' he asked himself in some astonishment.

He went on thinking and rubbing his forehead and then, after a long time, unexpectedly and almost of its own accord, an extremely strange idea came into his head.

'Hm . . . I will go,' he said suddenly and composedly, as if he had reached a definite decision. 'I will go to see Razumikhin, of course . . . but not now I will go to him the day after, when *that* is over and done with and everything is different . . .'

Then he realized what he had said.

'After?' he cried, jumping up from the bench; 'but is it going to happen? Can it really be going to happen?'

He left the bench almost running; he had meant to turn back, but now the idea of going home seemed suddenly unbearable: it was there, in that dreadful little cupboard of a place that the thought of it had been maturing in his mind for more than a month. He walked on, without needing where he went.

His nervous shudderings seemed to have turned into a fever; he even felt chilly; in that terrible heat he was cold. Driven by an inner compulsion, he tried to make himself be interested in everything and everybody he met, but with little success. He kept relapsing into abstraction, and when he again raised

his head with a start and looked around, he could remember neither what he had just been thinking of nor which way he had come. In this fashion he walked right across Vasilyevsky Island, came out on the Little Neva, crossed the bridge, and turned on to the Islands. At first the greenery and freshness pleased his tired eyes, accustomed to the dust and lime of the town, and its tall buildings crowding oppressively together. Here there was no stuffiness, no evil smells, no public houses. But these pleasant new sensations soon gave place to painful and irritating ones. Occasionally he would stop before some picturesque *dacha* in its green setting, look through the fence and see in the distance gaily-dressed ladies on balconies or terraces, and children running about the gardens. He took a particular interest in the flowers and looked at them longest of all. Splendid carriages, and ladies and gentlemen on horseback, passed him, and he gazed after them with curious eyes and forgot them before they were out of sight. Once he stopped and counted his money; he found that he had about thirty copecks. 'Twenty to the policeman, three to Nastasya for the letter—that means I gave forty-seven or fifty to the Marmeladovs yesterday,' he calculated, but soon he forgot even why he had taken his money out of his pocket. He thought of it again as he passed a sort of tavern or eating-house, and realized that he was hungry. He went in, drank a glass of vodka and bought a pastry, which he finished eating as he walked along. It was a very long time since he had tasted vodka, and although he had drunk only one glass it began to affect him almost at once. His legs seemed suddenly heavy and he began to feel very sleepy. He turned homewards, but by the time he reached Petrovsky Island he was too exhausted to go on, and he turned aside from the road into some bushes, let himself fall to the ground, and was asleep at once.

A sick man's dreams are often extraordinarily distinct and vivid and extremely life-like. A scene may be composed of the most unnatural and incongruous elements, but the setting and presentation are so plausible, the details so subtle, so unexpected, so artistically in harmony with the whole picture, that the dreamer could not invent them for himself in his waking state, even if he were an artist like Pushkin or Turgenev. Such morbid dreams always make a strong impression on the dreamer's already disturbed and excited nerves, and are remembered for a long time.

Raskolnikov dreamed a terrible dream. He dreamt that he was a child again, back in the little town they used to live in. He was a boy of seven, waking one holiday with his father out to the town. The afternoon was grey and sultry, the place just as he remembered it, except that the dream was more vivid than his recollection. He saw the little town as clearly as though he held it in his hand, there was not a single tree anywhere, except for a little wood very far away, dark against the horizon. A few paces beyond the last gardens of the town stood a large tavern, which always made an unpleasant impression on him, even anguished him, whenever he and his father passed it on their walks. There was always such a crowd there, so much shouting, laughter, and cursing, such hoarse bawling of songs, such frequent brawls, and so many people lounging about outside, drunk, with horrible distorted faces. If ever they met any of these, he would press close to his father, shivering. The unmade road winding past the tavern was always dusty, and the dust just here was always thick. Some three hundred yards farther on it curved to the right round the cemetery. In the cemetery was a stone church with a green cupola, where he came once or twice a year with his father and mother to a requiem in memory of the dead grandmother whom he had never seen. On these occasions they always took with them, wrapped in a napkin, a white dish of rice boiled with sugar and raisins, with a cross of raisins on the top. He loved this church with its ancient icons, most of them without frames, and the old priest with his trembling head. Near his grandfather's grave, which was marked by a stone, was the little grave of his younger brother, who had died at six months old and whom he could not remember. He had been told about his little brother and every time they visited the cemetery he devoutly and reverently crossed himself before the little grave and bowed down and kissed it.

Now he dreamt that he and his father were passing the tavern on their way to the cemetery; he was holding his father's hand and looking fearfully over his shoulder at the tavern. There seemed to be some special festivity going on, which attracted his attention, there was a crowd of townsfolk and peasants and all kinds of rabble, all in their best clothes, and all drunk and bawling out songs. Near the entrance stood a cart, not an ordinary peasant's cart, but one of the huge drays drawn by great cart-horses, which are used for carrying



bales of goods or barrels of liquor. He always loved to watch those massive dray-horses with their long manes and thick legs, plodding along at a steady pace and effortlessly pulling mountainous loads behind them, almost as if they found it easier than drawing an empty cart. The strange thing about this one was that a peasant's small, lean, decrepit old dun-coloured horse was harnessed to it, one such as he had often seen straining under a high-piled load of hay or firewood, especially when the cart was stuck in a rut or in the mire, while the peasant lashed it mercilessly with his whip, sometimes even beating it about the head and eyes. He would be so sorry, so sorry for the poor horse that he almost cried, and mama always used to take him away from the window.

Suddenly there was a din of shouting and singing, and the strutting of balalaikas, as a number of peasants, big men in red and blue shirts, with their coats slung over their shoulders, came out of the tavern roaring drunk. 'Get in, everybody get in!' shouted one, a young man with a thick neck and fleshy face as red as a beetroot, 'I'll take the lot of you! Get in!' There was a burst of laughter and shouting.

'What, with that broken-down old nag?'

'You must be out of your wits, Mikolka, to put that little old mare to that cart!'

'The poor old beast must be twenty years old if she's a day, lads!'

'Get in! I'll take all of you,' shouted Mikolka again, jumping in first himself. He gathered up the reins and stood upright at the front of the cart. 'Matvey has taken the hay,' he shouted from the cart, 'and as for this old mare, lads, she's just breaking my heart. It can kill her for aught I care, she's only eating her head off! Get in, I tell you! I'll make her gallop! She'll gallop, all right!' and he took up the whip, enjoying the thought of beating the old nag.

'Well, get in, then!' laughed the crowd. 'You heard him say he'd get a gallop out of her! She can't have galloped for ten years, I dare say.'

'She's going to now!'

'Come on, lads, all bring your whips. No being sorry for her!'

'That's it; let her have it!'

They all clambered into Mikolka's wagon, with witticisms and roars of laughter. There were six of them, and there was still room for more. They took up with them a fat red-faced

peasant-woman in red cotton, with a head-dress trimmed with beads, and clogs on her feet. She was cracking nuts and laughing. The crowd round about was laughing too, and indeed, who could help laughing at the idea that such a sorry beast was going to pull such a load, and at a gallop? Two of the lads in the cart picked up their whips to help Mikolka. There was a roar of "Gee up!" and the wretched old nag tugged with all her might, but far from galloping she could barely stir at all, but simply scraped with her feet, grunting and flinching under the blows showering on her like hail from the three whips. The laughter in the cart and among the crowd redoubled, but Mikolka lost his temper and began raining blows on the little mare in a passion of anger, as if he really expected her to gallop.

'Let me come as well, lads,' shouted a fellow from the crowd, attracted by the sport.

'Get in, everybody get in,' yelled Mikolka, 'she'll pull you all I'll give it her!' and he lashed away, so furious that he hardly knew what he was doing.

'Papa, papa,' cried the child, 'look what they are doing, papa! They are beating the poor horse!'

'Come away,' said his father. 'They are drunk and playing the fool, the brutes. Come away; don't look!' and he tried to draw the boy away. But he tore himself from his father's grasp and ran heedlessly towards the horse. The poor creature was in a sad state. She was panting and kept stopping and then beginning to tug again, almost ready to drop.

'Beat her to death!' howled Mikolka, 'that's what it's come to. I'll give it her!'

'You're more like a brute beast than a proper Christian!' called an old man in the crowd.

'The very idea of such a horse pulling a load like that!' added another.

'You'll founder the poor old thing,' shouted a third.

'You keep out of this! She's mine, isn't she? I can do what I like with my own. Get in, some more of you! Everybody get in! She's damn well going to gallop! . . .'

Suddenly there was a great explosion of laughter that drowned everything else: the old mare had rebelled against the hail of blows and was lashing out feebly with her hoofs. Even the old man could not help laughing. Indeed, it was ludicrous that such a decrepit old mare should still have a kick left in her.

Two men in the crowd got whips, ran to the horse, one on each side, and began to lash at her ribs.

'Hit her on the nose and across the eyes, beat her across the eyes!' yelled Mikolka.

'Let's have a song, lads' someone called from the wagon, and the others joined in. Somebody struck up a coarse song, a tambourine rattled, somebody else whistled the chorus. The fat young woman went on cracking nuts and giggling.

... The boy ran towards the horse, then round in front, and saw them lashing her across the eyes, and actually striking her very eyeballs. He was weeping. His heart seemed to rise into his throat, and tears rained from his eyes. One of the whips stung his face, but he did not feel it; he was wringing his hands and crying aloud. He ran to a grey-haired, grey-bearded old man, who was shaking his head in reproof. A peasant-woman took him by the hand and tried to lead him away, but he tore himself loose and ran back to the mare. She was almost at her last gasp, but she began kicking again.

'The devil fly away with you' shrieked Mikolka in a fury.

He flung away his whip, stooped down and dragged up from the floor of the cart a long thick wooden shaft, grasped one end with both hands, and swung it with an effort over the wretched animal.

Cries arose: 'He'll crush her!' 'He'll kill her.'

'She's my property,' yelled Mikolka, and with a mighty swing let the shaft fall. There was a heavy thud.

'Lash her, lash her! Why are you stopping?' shouted voices in the crowd.

Mikolka flourished the heavy bar again and brought it down with another great swing on the back of the wretched creature. Her back legs gave way under her, but she staggered up, tugging and jerking one way and the other to get away; six whips rained blows on her from every side, and the shaft rose and fell a third time, and then a fourth, with a rhythmical swing. Mikolka was frenzied with rage at not having killed her with one blow.

'She's tough!' yelled one of the crowd.

'This time she'll go down, for certain, lads. She's finished,' shouted another.

'Take an axe to her! Finish her off at one go' cried a third.

'Oh, may you be bitten to death by mosquitoes!' shrieked Mikolka furiously, dropping the shaft and stooping down again



to drag out an iron crowbar. 'Look out!' he yelled, and crashed it down with all his strength on the poor old mare. The blow was a crushing one, the mare staggered, sank down, and then made another effort to get up, but the crowbar struck another swinging blow on her back, and she fell as if her legs had been cut from under her.

'Finish her,' shouted Mikolka, and jumped down, quite beside himself, from the cart. A few of the young men, as drunk and red in the face as he, snatched up whatever came to hand—whips, staves, the shaft—and ran to the dying mare. Mikolka stationed himself at the side and belaboured her back at random with the crowbar. The wretched animal stretched out her muzzle, drew a deep, laboured breath, and died.

The crowd was still shouting.

'He's done for her!'

'All the same, she didn't gallop!'

'My own property,' cried Mikolka, who, with bloodshot eyes, was standing with the crowbar in his hands and looking sorry that there was no longer anything to beat.

Many voices in the crowd were now calling, 'Shame! You're no better than a heathen!'

The poor little boy was quite beside himself. He pushed his way, striking, through the crowd to the mare, put his arms round the dead muzzle dabbled with blood and kissed the poor eyes and mouth. . . . Then he sprang up and rushed furiously at Mikolka with his fists clenched. At that moment his father, who had been looking for him for a long time, caught him up and carried him out of the crowd.

'Come along, come along,' he said. 'Let us go home.'

'Papa, why did they . . . kill . . . the poor horse?' the boy sobbed, catching his breath. The words forced themselves out of his choking throat in a scream.

'They are drunk, they are playing the fool. It is none of our business. Let us go.' He put his arm round his father, but his breast was convulsed with sobs. He struggled for breath, tried to cry out, and awoke.

He woke panting and sweating, his hair damp with perspiration, and sprang up in alarm.

'I thank God, it was only a dream,' he said, sitting down under a tree and drawing long breaths. 'But why did I dream it? Can I be starting some sort of fever? It was such a horrible dream.'



His whole body felt bruised, and his mind dark and confused. He put his elbows on his knees and propped his head in his hands.

'God!' he exclaimed, 'is it possible, is it possible, that I really shall take an axe and strike her on the head, smash open her skull . . . that my feet will slip in warm, sticky blood, and that I shall break the lock, and steal, and tremble, and hide, all covered in blood . . . with the axe . . .? God, is it possible?'

He was shaking like a leaf.

'But why am I saying this?' he went on, leaning back again as if amazed at himself. 'I must have realized that I should never carry it out, so why have I gone on tormenting myself until now? Yesterday again, yesterday, when I went for that . . . *rehearsal*, I must certainly have been quite sure yesterday that I should never do it . . . Then why am I talking about it now? Why do I still go on harbouring doubts? Yesterday, as I came downstairs, didn't I tell myself that it was vile, disgusting, base, base . . . didn't I turn sick at the very thought of it, *when I was not dreaming*, and run away in terror . . .?'

'No, I shall not do it, I will not do it! Grant that there is no element of doubt in all those calculations of mine, grant that all the conclusions I have come to during the past month are as clear as daylight, as straightforward as arithmetic, all the same I shall never summon up enough resolution to do it. Of course I shall not carry it out, I shall not! . . . Then why, why, am I still . . .?'

He stood up, looked round as if wondering how he came to be there, and walked away to the Tuckov Bridge. He was pale, his eyes glittered, exhaustion filled every limb, but he had suddenly begun to breathe more easily. He felt that he had thrown off the terrible burden that had weighed him down for so long, and his heart was light and tranquil. 'Lord' he prayed, 'show me the way, that I may renounce this accursed . . . fantasy of mine!'

As he crossed the bridge he gazed with quiet tranquillity at the river Neva and the clear red sunset. Although he was so weak, he was not conscious even of being tired. It was as though the sore that had festered in his heart for a month had burst at last. Freedom! He was free now from the evil spells, from the sorcery and fascination, from the temptation.

When, later, he recalled this time and everything that happened in these few days, minute by minute, point by point, feature by feature, he was always struck with superstitious awe

by one circumstance, which, though not really very out of the ordinary, seemed to him afterwards to have determined his fate. He could never understand or explain to himself why, tired and harassed though he was, he went out of his way to cross the Haymarket instead of returning home by the quickest and most direct route. The detour was not a great deal farther, but it was obviously quite unnecessary. Scores of times before, of course, he had gone home without being able to remember which streets he had passed through. But why, he used to ask himself, did such an important and fateful encounter for him take place in the Haymarket—through which he had no reason to go—just at this time, just at this moment of his life, when his mood and the circumstances were exactly those in which the meeting could have so fateful and decisive an influence on his destiny? It was almost as if fate had laid an ambush for him.

It was about nine o'clock when he crossed the market-place. All the dealers were locking up their shops and booths or putting away the wares from their stands and trays, and going home, and so were the shoppers. Numbers of dealers and rag-and-bone men of every kind thronged in the basement cook-shops, the dirty and smelly courtyards of the houses, and especially the public houses in the market-square. Raskolnikov preferred these places and all the neighbouring backstreets and alleys when he went wandering aimlessly about. Here his stars drew no supercilious glances, and he could look as disreputable as he liked without scandalizing anybody. At the corner of Konny Street a dealer in thread, tapes, cotton handkerchiefs, and similar things displayed his wares on two trestle tables. He and his wife, who was a countrywoman, were also preparing to go home, but had lingered to talk to an acquaintance. This was Lizaveta Ivanovna, known to everybody simply as Lizaveta, the younger sister of that same old woman, Anna Ivanovna, the moneylender, whom Raskolnikov had gone to see the day before, to pawn his watch and conduct his *rehearsal*. He had known all about Lizaveta for a long time, and she knew him slightly. She was tall and clumsy made, timid, submissive, and almost feeble-minded; she was about thirty-five years old and unmarried, and she was an absolute slave to her sister, working for her day and night, trembling before her and even submitting to blows from her. Now she was standing irresolutely with the dealer and his wife, holding a bundle and listening to them attentively. They were heatedly explaining

something to her. When Raskolnikov caught sight of her he was filled with a strange feeling of utter astonishment, although there was nothing surprising about such a meeting.

'You ought to decide for yourself, Lizaveta Ivanovna,' said the man. 'Come tomorrow, some time before seven. They will be here too.'

'Tomorrow?' drawled Lizaveta doubtfully, as if she could not make up her mind.

'Eh, that Alena Ivanovna has got you really scared,' babbled the dealer's brisk little wife. 'To look at you, anyone might think you were a little child. And she's not even your real sister, only a half-sister, and look how she's got you under her thumb!'

'This time, don't say anything to Alena Ivanovna about it,' broke in her husband. 'that's my advice, you come without asking her. It's a paying proposition; afterwards even your sister might have to own that.'

'Shall I?'

'You come tomorrow, after six. Some of them will be here; you can decide for yourself.'

'And we'll have a drop of tea,' added his wife.

'All right, I'll come,' said Lizaveta, still rather doubtful, and moved slowly away.

Raskolnikov had already passed on and heard no more. He had gone past them unnoticed, walking quietly and trying not to lose a word. His first astonishment changed gradually into something like terror and a cold shiver ran up his spine. He had learnt, suddenly and quite unexpectedly, that at seven o'clock the next day Lizaveta, the old woman's sister and only companion, would be out, and that meant that at seven o'clock in the evening the old woman *would be at home alone*.

It was only a few steps farther to his lodging. He went in like a man condemned to death. He did not reason about anything, he was quite incapable of reasoning, but he felt with his whole being that his mind and will were no longer free, and that everything was settled, quite finally.

It was clear that even if he waited years for a favourable opportunity to execute his design, it would be impossible to count on so likely a chance of success as had suddenly presented itself at this moment. In any case, he could hardly expect to learn the day before, with greater exactness or less risk, without any dangerous questioning or investigation on his part, that



on the next day at a certain time the old woman on whom the attempt was to be made would be at home alone, quite alone.

## CHAPTER VI

LATER Raskolnikov learnt, by some chance, why the dealer and his wife had asked Lizaveta to come and see them. It was a perfectly usual transaction, with nothing out of the ordinary about it. An impoverished family, lately come to St. Petersburg, wished to dispose of some articles of women's clothing and similar things. It would not have paid them to sell in the market and so they were looking for a dealer. Lizaveta undertook such transactions, selling on commission, and going round arranging business deals, and she had a large clientele because she was honest and never haggled, but named her price and stuck to it. She did not talk much and, as we have said, was timid and meek . . .

Raskolnikov had recently become superstitious. Traces of this superstition remained in him long afterwards, almost ineradicable. And in after years he was always inclined to see something strange and mysterious in all the happenings of this time, as if special coincidences and influences were at work. As long before as the previous winter a fellow student, Pokorev, who was leaving for Kharkov, had mentioned Alena Ivanovna's address to him in conversation, in case he ever needed to pawn anything. For a long time he did not go near her, since he had his lessons and was managing to get along somehow, but six weeks earlier he had remembered the address. He had two things suitable for pawning—his father's old silver watch and a gold ring set with three little red stones, given to him as a keepsake by his sister when they parted. He decided to take the ring, and sought out the old woman; at first sight, before he knew anything about her, he felt an irresistible dislike of her. He took her two rouble notes and on his way home stopped at a miserable little tavern and asked for tea. He sat down, deep in thought; a strange idea seemed to be pecking away in his head, like a chicken emerging from the shell, and all his attention was fixed on it.

At another table near by, a student, who was unknown to him and whom he did not remember ever seeing, was sitting with a young officer. They had been playing billiards and were drinking tea. Suddenly he heard the student talking about the



moneylender Alena Ivanovna, giving the officer her address. This struck Raskolnikov as rather odd: he had just left her, and here they were talking about her. Of course, it was the merest chance, but exactly when he was finding it impossible to rid himself of an extraordinary impression, here was somebody reinforcing it, for the student was beginning to tell his friend some details about this Alena Ivanovna.

'She's quite famous,' he said; 'she always has money to lay out. She's as rich as a Jew, she can put her hands on five thousand roubles at once, and yet she doesn't turn up her nose at the interest on a rouble. A lot of our fellows have been to her. But she's an old bitch . . .'

And he began to recount how spiteful and cranky she was, and how, if payment was only one day overdue, the pledge would be lost. She would lend only a quarter as much as things were worth, she would demand five or even seven per cent. a month, and so on. The student's tongue had run away with him, and, among other things, he informed his hearer that the old woman had a sister, Lizaveta, whom the vicious little thing was always beating and whom she kept in complete subjection and treated as if she were a child, although Lizaveta stood at least five foot ten . . .

'She's another extraordinary creature, you know' cried the student, and burst out laughing.

They began to talk about Lizaveta. The student seemed greatly to enjoy this and kept on laughing, and the officer listened with great interest and asked the student to send this Lizaveta to do his mending. Raskolnikov also learned all about her, not missing one word. Lizaveta was the old woman's younger step-sister (they had different mothers) and was about thirty-five. She worked for her sister day in and day out, did all the cooking and washing in the house, and in addition took in sewing and even went out scrubbing floors, and everything she earned she handed over to her sister. She dared not accept any orders or undertake any work without the old woman's permission. As Lizaveta knew, the old woman had already made her will, leaving to the younger sister only furniture and other chattels, while all the money went to a monastery in N — Province for masses for the eternal repose of her soul. Lizaveta was a woman of the working-class, not educated, and unmarried; she was remarkably tall and extremely ungainly, with big, long, splay feet, shod with down-at-heel

goat-skin shoes, and she always kept herself very clean. But what the student found the most surprising and amusing was that Lizaveta was pregnant . . .

'But I thought you said she was monstrously ugly,' remarked the officer.

'Well, she's very dark-skinned, and looks like a guardsman in disguise, but, you know, she's no monster. She has a nice kind face and eyes—she's even very attractive. The proof is, a lot of people like her. She is so quiet and gentle and mild, and will consent to anything. And she's really got a very nice smile.'

'You like her yourself, don't you?' laughed the officer.

'Because she's an oddity. But I'll tell you what: I swear I could kill that damned old woman and rob her, without a single twinge of conscience,' exclaimed the student hotly.

The officer laughed again, but Raskolnikov found this so strange that he shuddered.

'Let me ask you a serious question,' went on the student, even more heatedly. 'I was joking just now, of course, but look here: on the one hand you have a stupid, silly, utterly unimportant, vicious, sickly old woman, no good to anybody, but in fact quite the opposite, who doesn't know herself why she goes on living, and will probably die tomorrow without any assistance. Do you understand what I am saying?'

'Oh, I follow you,' answered the officer, earnestly studying his companion's vehemence.

'Listen, then. On the other hand you have new, young forces running to waste for want of backing, and there are thousands of them, all over the place. A hundred, a thousand, good actions and promising beginnings might be forwarded and directed aright by the money that old woman destines for a monastery, hundreds, perhaps thousands, of existences might be set on the right path, scores of families saved from beggary, from decay, from ruin and corruption, from the lock hospitals—and all with her money. Kill her, take her money, on condition that you dedicate yourself with its help to the service of humanity and the common good—don't you think that thousands of good deeds will wipe out one little, insignificant transgression? For one life taken, thousands saved from corruption and decay! One death, and a hundred lives in exchange—why, it's simple arithmetic! What is the life of that stupid, spiteful, consumptive old woman weighed against the common

good? No more than the life of a louse or a cockroach—less, indeed, because she is actively harmful. She barters on other people's lives, she is evil, not long since she bit Lizaveta's finger, out of sheer malice, and it almost had to be amputated."

"She doesn't deserve to live, certainly," remarked the officer, "but there you are, that's nature."

"But don't you see, man, nature must be guided and corrected, or else we should all be swamped with prejudices. Otherwise there could never be one great man. They talk of "duty, conscience"—I've got nothing to say against duty and conscience—but what are we to understand by them? Stop! I will put another question to you. Listen."

"No, you stop; I will ask you a question. Listen!"

"Well?"

"Here you've been holding forth and making a regular speech, but tell me this: would you kill the old woman with your own hands, or not?"

"Of course not! For the sake of justice, I . . . This is not a question of me at all!"

"Well, if you ask me, so long as you won't, justice doesn't come into it. Let's have another game!"

Raskolnikov was deeply disturbed. No doubt there was nothing in all this but the most usual and ordinary youthful talk and ideas, such as he had heard often enough in other forms and about other subjects. But why must he listen at this particular moment to that particular talk and those particular ideas when there had just been born in his own brain *exactly, the same ideas*? And why, at the very moment when he was carrying away from the old woman's flat the germ of his idea, should he chance upon a conversation about that same old woman? . . . This always seemed to him a strange coincidence. This casual public-house conversation had an extraordinary influence on the subsequent development of the matter, as if there were indeed something fateful and fore-ordained about it.

When he returned home from the Haymarket he threw himself on the sofa and sat there without moving for an hour. It grew dark, and he had no candles, not that it would have entered his head to light one if he had. Afterwards he was never able to remember whether he had been thinking of anything definite during that hour. At length he felt his recent



chills and fever return, and realized with pleasure that he could lie down where he was. Soon a heavy leaden sleep weighed him down.

He slept unusually long and dreamlessly. Nastasya, coming into his room next morning at ten o'clock, could hardly shake him awake. She had brought him some tea and bread. The tea was once again what remained in her own teapot.

'Goodness, he's still asleep!' she exclaimed indignantly, 'he's always asleep!'

He raised himself with an effort. His head ached; he stood up, took a few steps, and fell back on the sofa again.

'Are you going to sleep again?' exclaimed Nastasya. 'Are you ill, or what?'

He did not answer.

'Do you want any tea?'

'Afterwards,' he said with an effort, closing his eyes again and turning to the wall. Nastasya stood over him.

'Perhaps he really is ill,' she said, turned on her heel and went out.

She came back at two o'clock with some soup. He was lying there as before. The tea was untouched. Nastasya was quite offended and began to shake him roughly.

'Whyever do you still go on sleeping?' she exclaimed, looking at him with positive dislike. He sat up and remained gazing at the floor without a word to her.

'Are you ill or aren't you?' asked Nastasya, and again received no answer.

'You want to go out for a bit,' she said, after a short silence, 'and get a bit of a blow. Are you going to have anything to eat, eh?'

'Later,' he said feebly. 'Clear out!' He waved her away.

She stood there a little longer, looking at him pityingly, and then went out.

After a few minutes he raised his eyes and stared at the tea and soup. Then he took up some bread and a spoon and began to eat.

He ate a little—two or three spoonfuls—but without appetite, and quite mechanically. His head no longer ached so much. When he had eaten, he stretched out once more on the sofa, but he could not go to sleep again and lay without stirring, face downwards, with his head buried in the pillow. He lost himself in a maze of waking dreams, and very strange ones

they were, in the one that recurred most often he was in Africa, in Egypt, at some oasis. A caravan was resting, the camels lying peacefully and the men eating their evening meal; all around, the palms stood in a great circle. He was drinking the water from a stream which flowed babbling beside him, clear and cool, running marvellously bright and blue over the coloured stones and the clean sand with its gleams of gold . . . All at once he distinctly heard a clock strike. He roused himself with a start, raised his head and looked at the window, trying to estimate the time, and then, suddenly wide awake, sprang up as if he had been catapulted from the sofa. He crept to the door on tiptoe, quietly eased it open, and stood listening for sounds from the staircase. His heart was beating wildly. But the staircase was quiet, as though everyone were asleep . . . It seemed to him incredibly strange that he could have gone on sleeping in such utter forgetfulness ever since the previous night, without having made the least preparation . . . And it might have been six o'clock that struck just now . . . An extraordinarily confused and feverish bustle had now replaced his sleepy torpor. He had not many preparations to make. He was straining every nerve to take everything into consideration and let nothing slip his memory, and his heart thumped so heavily that he could scarcely breathe. First of all he must make a loop and sew it into his overcoat, the work of a moment. He groped under his pillow and drew out from among the linen stuffed under it an old unwashed shirt that was falling to pieces. From among its tatters he ripped out a strip about an inch and a half wide and twelve long. He folded this strip in two, took off his only outer garment, a loose summer overcoat of thick stout cotton material, and sewed the two ends of the strip together to the inside, under the left armhole. His hands shook as he sewed, but he contrived them, and when he put the coat on again nothing showed from outside. He had got the needle and thread ready long before, and had kept them on the little table, pinned into a piece of paper. As for the loop, that was an ingenious device of his own, it was meant to hold the axe. He could hardly carry an axe in his hands through the streets. And even if he had hidden it under his coat, he would still have had to support it with his hand, which would be noticeable. But now he need only lay the axe-head in the loop and it would hang peacefully under his arm all the way. With his hand in his pocket he could support the end of the

shaft so that it would not swing; and as the coat was very wide and hung like a sack, nobody could possibly notice that he was holding something through the pocket. He had thought of this loop at least two weeks before.

Having finished this task, he thrust his fingers into the narrow crevice between the bottom of his 'Turkish' divan and the floor, groping under the left-hand corner for the *pledge* he had prepared and hidden there. It was not really a pledge at all, however, but simply a piece of smoothly-planed board, about the size and thickness of a silver cigarette-case. He had found it by chance, on one of his walks, in a yard where there was some sort of workshop in an out-building. On the same occasion he picked up in the street, a little later, a smooth thin iron plate, rather smaller than the wood, apparently broken off something. Laying the two together, he had tied them securely with thread and then wrapped them neatly and carefully in clean white paper and made them into a parcel with thin string tied in a complicated knot that would need a great deal of skill to undo. This was done in order to distract the old woman's attention for a time while she dealt with the knot, and thus enable him to choose his moment. The iron plate had been added to increase the weight, so that she should not immediately recognize that the 'pledge' was made of wood. He had hidden the whole thing under the sofa until he needed it. He had just got it out when he heard someone shouting in the courtyard.

'It went six ages ago.'

'Ages ago! Oh God!'

He flung himself towards the door, listened, seized his hat, and crept as stealthily as a cat down his thirteen stairs. The most important step still lay before him—stealing an axe from the kitchen. He had long since come to the conclusion that he needed an axe to accomplish his purpose. He did possess a folding garden-knife, but he could not rely on a knife, or on his own strength in wielding it, and therefore finally settled on an axe. One noticeable peculiarity characterized all the final decisions he arrived at in this affair, the more settled they were, the more hideous and absurd they appeared in his eyes. In spite of his agonizing internal struggles he could never throughout the whole time believe for one instant in the practicability of his schemes.

If it had somehow come about that the whole project had



been analysed and finally decided down to the last detail, and no further doubts remained, he would very likely have renounced the whole idea for its absurdity, enormity, and impossibility. But there were in fact innumerable doubts and unsettled details. As for where he would obtain the axe, this trifle did not disturb him in the slightest, for nothing could be easier. The fact was that Nastasya was often out of the house, especially in the evening; she was always calling on the neighbours or running out to the shops, and the door was always left wide open, this was the landlady's only quarrel with her. Thus it would only be necessary to slip quietly into the kitchen, when the time came, take the axe, and then an hour later when it was all over, put it back again. One doubt still remained, however: suppose he came back after an hour to return the axe, and found Nastasya back at home? It would, of course, be necessary to go straight past and wait until she went out again, but what if meanwhile she remembered the axe and looked for it, and raised an outcry? That would create suspicion, or at least give grounds for it.

But all these were trifles, about which he had not even begun to think, and there was no time for them now. He had thought about the main point, but he had put the details aside until *he had convinced himself*. This last, however, appeared definitely unrealizable. So at least it seemed to him. He could not, for example, picture himself ceasing at a given moment to think about it, getting up and—simply going there. Even his recent *rehearsal*—that is, his visit for a final survey of the scene, had been no more than a *test*—and far from a serious one, as though he had said to himself: ‘Very well, let us go and try whether it’s just an idle fancy!’—and then immediately failed in the test, spat, and run away, exasperated with himself. And yet it would seem that his analysis, in the sense of a moral solution of the question, was concluded, his casuistry had the cutting edge of a razor, and he could no longer find any conscious objections in his own mind. But in the last resort he simply did not believe himself and obstinately, slavishly groped for objections on all sides, as if he were driven by some compulsion. His reactions during this last day, which had come upon him so unexpectedly and settled everything at one stroke, were almost completely mechanical, as though someone had taken his hand and pulled him along irresistibly, blindly, with supernatural strength and without objection. It was as if a part

of his clothing had been caught in the wheel of a machine and he was being dragged into it.

The first question he had been concerned with — a long time ago now — was why most crimes were so easily discovered and solved, and why nearly every criminal left so clear a trail. He arrived by degrees at a variety of curious conclusions, and, in his opinion, the chief cause lay not so much in the material impossibility of concealing the crime as in the criminal himself; nearly every criminal, at the moment of the crime, was subject to a collapse of will-power and reason, exchanging them for an extraordinarily childish heedlessness, and that just at the moment when judgement and caution were most indispensable. He was convinced that this eclipse of reason and failure of will attacked a man like an illness, developed gradually and reached their height shortly before the commission of the crime, continuing unchanged at the moment of commission and for some time, varying with the individual, afterwards, their subsequent course was that of any other disease. The further question whether the disease engenders the crime, or whether the nature of crime somehow results in its always being accompanied by some manifestation of disease, he did not feel competent to answer.

Having arrived at this conclusion, he decided that he personally would not be subject to any such morbid subversion, that his judgement and will would remain steadfast throughout the fulfilment of his plans, for the simple reason that what he contemplated was 'no crime' . . . We omit the course of reasoning by which he arrived at this latter verdict, since we have already run too far ahead . . . We shall add only that the practical, material difficulties played only a very secondary role in his thinking. 'It will suffice to concentrate my will and my judgement on them, and they will all be overcome, when the time comes, when I have to come to grips with all the details of the affair, down to the most minute . . .' But he made no progress towards action. He continued to have less and less faith in his final decisions, and when the hour struck, everything seemed to go awry, in a haphazard and almost completely unexpected way.

One small circumstance nonplussed him even before he reached the foot of the stairs. As he drew level with his landlady's kitchen door, which stood open as usual, he peered carefully round it to make sure beforehand that the landlady

herself was not there in Nastasya's absence, and if she was not, that her door was firmly closed so that she would not happen to look out and see him when he went in for the axe. But what was his consternation at seeing that Nastasya was at home in her kitchen on this occasion, and busy taking linen from a basket and hanging it on a line. When she caught sight of him she ceased her occupation and turned towards him, watching him as he went past. He turned his eyes away and walked on as if he had not noticed her. But it was all over, he had no axe! It was a terrible blow.

'Where did I get the idea,' he thought, going out through the gate, 'where did I get the idea that she was certain to be out now? Why, why, why, was I so convinced of it?' He felt crushed, even humiliated, and ready to laugh spitefully at himself. . . . He was seething with dull, brutal rage.

He had stopped uncertainly in the gateway. To go out now and walk about the streets for form's sake, and to return to his room, were both equally repugnant to him. 'What an opportunity is lost for ever!' he muttered, standing aimlessly in the gateway, just opposite the porter's dark little room, which also stood open. Suddenly he started. Inside the little room, not two paces away, under a bench on the right-hand side, something shining caught his eye. . . . He looked all round—nobody! On tiptoe he approached the porter's lodge, went down the two steps, and called the porter in a feeble voice 'Yes, he's out' but he must be somewhere near, in the courtyard, since the door is open.' He threw himself headlong on the axe, it was an axe, drew it out from where it lay between two legs under the bench, hung it in the loop on the spot, thrust both hands into his pockets and went out. He had not been seen. 'It was not my planning, but the devil, that accomplished that' he thought, and laughed strangely, extraordinarily heartened by this stroke of luck.

He walked quietly and sedately, without hurrying, so as not to arouse suspicion. He paid little attention to the passers-by, and carefully avoided looking at their faces, trying to be unnoticed himself. Suddenly he remembered his hat. 'My God! I had the money two days ago, and hadn't the sense to spend it on a cap!' and he cursed himself from the bottom of his heart.

Glancing casually into a shop, he saw from the clock that hung on the wall that it was already ten minutes past seven.



He would have to hurry; he wanted to go round about, so as to approach the house from the other side.

Earlier, when he had tried to imagine what all this would be like, he had thought he would be very frightened. But he was not; indeed he was not frightened at all. His mind was even occupied, though not for long together, with irrelevant thoughts.

Passing the Yusupov Gardens, he began to consider the construction of tall fountains in all the squares, and how they would freshen the air. Following this train of thought he came to the conclusion that if the Summer Gardens could be extended right across the Champ de Mars and joined to those of the Mikhal'sky Palace, it would add greatly to the beauty and amenities of the city. Then he suddenly began to wonder why, in big towns, people chose of their own free will to live where there were neither parks nor gardens, but only filth and squalor and evil smells. This reminded him of his own walks in the neighbourhood of the Haymarket, and brought him back to himself. 'What rubbish,' he thought, 'It would be better not to think at all!'

'So it is true that men going to execution are passionately interested in any object they chance to see on the way.' The thought passed through his mind as briefly as a flash of lightning, for he suppressed it at once. . . . But he had arrived; here was the house and the gate. Somewhere a clock struck once. 'What, can it possibly be half past seven? Surely not; time is really flying!'

Luck was again with him as he turned in at the gate. At that very moment, as if by design, a huge load of hay also turned in, just in front of him, and completely screened him while he was passing through the archway. As soon as it had cleared the gateway and was in the courtyard, he slipped past it to the right. On the other side of the cart he could hear several voices shouting and quarrelling, but nobody noticed him and nobody passed him. Many of the windows opening on to the great courtyard stood open, but he could not find the strength to raise his head. The old woman's staircase was near, immediately to the right of the gate. Already he was on the stairs.

Drawing a deep breath and pressing his hand above his wildly beating heart, he once more felt for the axe and settled it in its loop, then began to mount the stairs carefully and quietly, listening at every step. But the staircase was empty at this hour; all the doors were closed and nobody was to be seen.

On the second floor, it is true, the door of an empty flat was open, and painters were at work inside, but they did not even look up. He stopped for a moment, considering, and then went on. 'Of course, it would be better if they were not there, but . . . there are two floors above them.'

But here was the fourth floor, here was the door, here was the empty flat opposite. On the third floor the flat immediately below the old woman's also showed every sign of being empty—the visiting-card tacked to the door had been removed—they had left . . . He was out of breath. For a moment the thought stirred in his mind. 'There is still time to go away.' But he ignored it and began to listen at the old woman's door—dead silence! Then once more he listened down the stairs, long and attentively . . . Then he looked round for the last time, crept close to the door, straightened his clothes, and once again tried the axe in its loop. 'I wonder if I look too pale,' he thought, 'and too agitated. She is mistrustful . . . Wouldn't it be better if I waited a little longer . . . until my heart stops thumping so? . . .'

But his heart did not stop. On the contrary, its throbbing grew more and more violent . . . He could stand it no longer, but stretched his hand slowly towards the bell, and rang it. After a few moments he rang again, louder.

There was no answer. There was no point in going on ringing in vain, and he was not in the mood to do so. The old woman was certainly at home, but she was suspicious and she was alone. He knew something of her habits . . . and he applied his ear to the door again. Either his hearing had grown strangely acute (which did not seem likely), or the sound was really distinctly audible, but at any rate he suddenly heard the careful placing of a hand on the handle of a lock and the rustle of clothing close to the door. Someone was standing silently just inside the door and listening, just as he was doing outside it, holding her breath and probably also with her ear to the door . . .

He purposely shifted his position and audibly muttered something, so as not to give the impression that he was being furtive; then he rang a third time, but quietly and firmly, without betraying any impatience. When he was afterwards able to recall everything clearly and plainly, that minute seemed stamped into his memory for ever; he could not understand whence he had acquired so much cunning, especially as his

mind seemed momentarily to cloud over, and he lost all consciousness of his own body . . . A moment later, he heard the bolt being lifted.

## CHAPTER VII

As before, the door opened the merest crack, and again two sharp and mistrustful eyes peered at him from the darkness. Then Raskolnikov lost his head and made what might have been a serious mistake.

Apprehensive that the old woman might be alarmed at their being alone, and without any hope that his appearance would reassure her, he took hold of the door and pulled it towards him, so that she should not be tempted to lock herself in again. Although she did not pull the door shut again at this, she did not relinquish the handle, so that he almost pulled her out on the stairs. When he saw that she was standing across the doorway in such a way that he could not pass, he advanced straight upon her, and she stood aside startled. She seemed to be trying to say something but finding it impossible, and she kept her eyes fixed on him.

'Good evening, Alena Ivanovna,' he began, as easily as possible, but his voice refused to obey him, and was broken and trembling, 'I have . . . brought you . . . something . . . but hadn't we better come in here . . . to the light? . . . ' And without waiting for an invitation, he passed her and went into the room. The old woman hastened after him; her tongue seemed to have been loosened.

'Good Lord! What are you doing? . . . Who are you? What do you want?'

'Excuse me, Alena Ivanovna . . . You know me . . . Raskolnikov . . . See, I have brought the pledge I promised the other day,' and he held it out to her.

The old woman threw a glance at it, but then immediately fixed her eyes on those of her uninvited guest. She looked at him attentively, ill-naturedly, and mistrustfully. A minute or so went by; he even thought he could see a glint of derision in her eyes, as if she had guessed everything. He felt that he was losing his nerve and was frightened, so frightened that he thought if she went on looking at him like that, without a word, for even half a minute longer, he would turn tail and run away.

'Why are you looking at me like that, as though you didn't



recognize me?' he burst out angrily. 'Do you want it, or don't you? I can take it somewhere else; it makes no difference to me.'

He had not intended to say this, but it seemed to come of its own accord.

The old woman collected herself, and her visitor's resolute tone seemed to lull her mistrust.

'Why be so hasty, my friend? . . . What is it?' she asked, looking at the packet.

'A silver cigarette case; surely I told you that last time?'

She stretched out her hand.

'But what makes you so pale? And your hands are trembling. Are you ill or something?'

'Fever,' he answered abruptly. 'You can't help being pale . . . when you haven't anything to eat,' he added, hardly able to articulate his words. His strength was failing again. But apparently the answer was plausible enough; the old woman took the packet.

'What is it?' she asked, weighing it in her hand and once again fixing her eyes on Raskolnikov.

'A thing . . . a cigarette-case . . . silver . . . look at it.'

'It doesn't feel like silver. Lord, what a knot!' Trying to undo the string she turned for light towards the window, all her windows were closed, in spite of the oppressive heat, moved away from him and stood with her back to him. He unbuttoned his coat and freed the axe from the loop, but still kept it concealed, supporting it with his right hand under the garment. His arms seemed to have no strength in them; he felt them growing more and more numb and stiff with every moment. He was afraid of letting the axe slip and fall . . . His head was whirling.

'Why is it all wrapped up like this?' exclaimed the woman sharply, and turned towards him.

There was not a moment to lose. He pulled the axe out, swung it up with both hands, hardly conscious of what he was doing, and almost mechanically, without putting any force behind it, let the butt-end fall on her head. His strength seemed to have deserted him, but as soon as the axe descended it all returned to him.

The old woman was, as usual, bare-headed. Her thin fair hair, just turning grey, and thick with grease, was plaited into a rat's tail and fastened into a knot above her nape with a

fragment of horn comb. Because she was so short the axe struck her full on the crown of the head. She cried out, but very feebly, and sank in a heap to the floor, still with enough strength left to raise both hands to her head. One of them still held the 'pledge'. Then he struck her again and yet again, with all his strength, always with the blunt side of the axe, and always on the crown of the head. Blood poured out as if from an overturned glass and the body toppled over on its back. He stepped away as it fell, and then stooped to see the face: she was dead. Her wide-open eyes looked ready to start out of their sockets, her forehead was wrinkled and her whole face convulsively distorted.

He laid the axe on the floor near the body and, taking care not to smear himself with the blood, felt in her pocket, the right-hand pocket, from which she had taken her keys last time. He was quite collected, his faculties were no longer clouded nor his head swimming, but his hands still shook. Later he remembered that he had been very painstakingly careful not to get bedaubed . . . He pulled out the keys; they were all together, as he remembered them, on a steel ring. He hurried straight into the bedroom with them. It was a very small room; on one wall was an enormous case of icons, and another was occupied by the big bed, very clean, covered with a silk patchwork quilt. The chest of drawers stood against the third wall. It was strange, but as soon as he began to try the keys in it, and heard their jingling, a convulsive shudder shook him, he longed suddenly to abandon the whole affair and go away. But this lasted only for a moment; it was too late now to retreat. He was even laughing at himself when another, most alarming, idea flashed into his mind, the idea that perhaps the old woman was still alive and might yet recover consciousness. He left the keys and the chest and ran back to the body, seized the axe and brandished it over the old woman again, but did not bring it down. There could be no doubt that she was dead. Stooping down again to examine the body more closely, he saw clearly that the skull was shattered. He stretched out his hand to touch her, but drew it back again; he could see plainly enough without that. By this time the blood had formed a pool on the floor. Then he noticed a cord round the old woman's neck and tugged at it, but it was too strong to snap, and besides, it was slippery with blood. He tried to draw it out from the bosom of her dress, but it seemed

to be caught on something and would not come. Impatiently he raised the axe again, to sever the cord with a blow as it lay on the body, but he could not bring himself to do this, and finally, after struggling with it for two minutes, and getting the axe and his hands smeared with blood, he managed with some difficulty to cut the cord without touching the body with the axe; he took it off, and found, as he expected, a purse hanging there. There were two crosses on the cord, one of cypress-wood and the other of brass, as well as an enamelled religious medal, and beside them hung a small, soiled, chamouis-leather purse, with a steel frame and clasp. It was crammed full; Raskolnikov thrust it into his pocket without examining it and threw the crosses down on the old woman's breast; then, this time taking the axe with him, he hurried back into the bedroom.

With dreadful urgency he seized the keys and began to struggle with them once more. But all his efforts failed to force them into the locks, not so much because his hands were trembling as because his energy was misdirected; he would see, for example, that a key was the wrong one and would not fit, and yet go on thrusting at the lock with it. He pulled himself together and remembered that the big key with toothed wards, hanging with the other smaller ones, could not possibly belong to the chest of drawers, but must be for some trunk or other (as he had thought on the previous occasion), and that perhaps it was there that everything was hidden. He left the chest and looked first of all under the bed, knowing that old women usually keep their trunks there. He was right; there stood an important looking steel-studded trunk of red leather, about thirty inches long, with a rounded lid. The toothed key fitted the lock and opened the trunk. On top, under a white sheet, lay a hare-skin coat with a red lining; under this were a silk dress, then a shawl, and then, at the bottom, what looked like a heap of rags. His first impulse was to wipe his bloody hands on the red lining of the fur coat. 'It is red, so blood will not show on it,' he reasoned, and then suddenly realized what he was doing and thought, with fear in his heart, 'Good God, am I going out of my mind?'

But no sooner had he disturbed the rags than a gold watch slid out from under the coat. Hastily he began turning everything over, and found a number of gold articles thrust in among the rags, bracelets, chains, earrings, pins, and so forth,



probably pledges, some of them perhaps unredeemed. Some were in cases, some simply wrapped in newspaper, but neatly and carefully, with the paper tidily folded and the packets tied with tape. He began to cram them hastily into the pockets of his overcoat and trousers, without opening the cases or undoing the parcels, but he did not manage to collect very many . . .

A footstep sounded in the room where the old woman lay. He stopped and remained motionless as the dead. But all was still, he must have imagined it. Then he distinctly heard a faint cry, or perhaps rather a feeble interrupted groaning, then dead silence again for a minute or two. He waited, crouching by the trunk, hardly daring to breathe; then he sprang up, seized the axe, and ran out of the room.

There in the middle of the floor, with a big bundle in her arms, stood Lizaveta, as white as a sheet, gazing in frozen horror at her murdered sister and apparently without the strength to cry out. When she saw him run in, she trembled like a leaf and her face twitched spasmodically, she raised her hand as if to cover her mouth, but no scream came and she backed slowly away from him towards the corner, with her eyes on him in a fixed stare, but still without a sound, as though she had no breath left to cry out. He flung himself forward with the axe, her lips widened pitifully, like those of a young child when it is just beginning to be frightened and stands ready to scream, with its eyes fixed on the object of its fear. The wretched Lizaveta was so simple, brow-beaten, and utterly terrified that she did not even put up her arms to protect her face, natural and almost inevitable as the gesture would have been at this moment when the axe was brandished immediately above it. She only raised her free left hand a little and slowly stretched it out towards him as though she were trying to push him away. The blow fell on her skull, splitting it open from the top of the forehead almost to the crown of the head, and killing her instantly. Rakolnikov, completely beside himself, snatched up her bundle, threw it down again, and ran to the entrance.

The terror that possessed him had been growing greater and greater, especially after this second, unpremeditated murder. He wanted to get away as quickly as possible. If he had been in a condition to exercise a soberer judgement and see things more clearly, if he could only have recognized all the difficulty

of his position and how desperate, hideous, and absurd it was, if he could have understood how many obstacles to surmount, perhaps even crimes to commit, still lay before him, before he could escape from the house and reach home—very probably he would have abandoned everything and given himself up, not out of fear for himself so much as from horror and repulsion for what he had done. Repulsion, indeed, was growing in his heart with every moment. Not for anything in the world would he have returned to the trunk, or even to the room.

But a growing distraction, that almost amounted to absent-mindedness, had taken possession of him, at times he seemed to forget what he was doing, or rather to forget the important things and cling to trivialities. However, when he glanced into the kitchen and saw a pan half full of water on a bench, it gave him the idea of washing his hands and the axe. His hands were sticky with blood. He put the head of the axe in the water, then took a piece of soap that lay in a broken saucer on the window-sill, and began to wash his hands in the pan. When he had washed them he drew out the axe and washed the blade and then spent some three minutes trying to clean the part of the handle that was blood-stained, using soap to get the blood out. After this he wiped it with a cloth which was drying on a line stretched across the kitchen, and then spent a long time examining it carefully at the window. There were no stains left, but the handle was still damp. With great care he laid the axe in the loop under his coat. Then, as well as the dim light in the kitchen allowed, he examined his overcoat, trousers, and boots. At first glance there was nothing to give him away, except for some stains on his boots. He wiped them with a damp rag. He knew, however, that he had not been able to see very well, and might have failed to notice something quite conspicuous. He stood hesitating in the middle of the room. A dark and tormenting idea was beginning to rear its head, the idea that he was going out of his mind and that he was not capable of reasoning or of protecting himself. Perhaps what he was doing was not at all what ought to be done. — "My God, I must run, I must run!" he muttered and hurried back to the entrance. Here there awaited him a more extreme terror than any he had yet experienced.

He stood still, staring, unable to believe his eyes; the door, the outer door leading to the staircase, the door at which he had rung a short time ago, and by which he had entered, was

at least a hand's-breadth open; all this time it had been like that, neither locked nor bolted, all the time! The old woman had not locked it behind him, perhaps by way of precaution. But, good God, he had seen Lizaveta after that! And how could he have failed to realize that she had come from outside, and could certainly not have come through the wall?

He flung himself at the door and put up the bolt.

'But no, that's not right either! I must go, I must go . . .'

He lifted the bolt clear, opened the door, and stood listening on the landing.

He stood there a long time. Somewhere far below, probably under the gateway, two voices were raised loudly and shrilly in argument. 'What are they doing?' He waited patiently. At last the voices fell silent, as though they had been cut off; 'they' had gone away. He was preparing to descend when suddenly a door on the floor below opened noisily and somebody started down the stairs, humming a tune. 'Why are they making so much noise?' he wondered for a moment. He closed the door again behind him and waited. At last all was quiet; there was not a sound. He was already setting his foot on the stairs when once more he heard footsteps.

When he first heard them, the steps were far away, at the very bottom of the staircase, but he afterwards remembered clearly and distinctly that from the very first sound he guessed that they were certainly coming *here*, to the fourth floor, to the old woman's flat. Why? Was there something special, something significant, about them? The steps were heavy, regular, unhurrying. Already they had reached the first floor, they were coming on, their sound was clearer and clearer. He could hear the newcomer's heavy breathing. Already the steps had passed the second floor. 'They were coming here!' Suddenly he felt as if he had turned to stone, like a sleeper who dreams that he is being hotly pursued and threatened with death, and finds himself rooted to the spot, unable to stir a finger.

At length, when the footsteps had begun the last flight, he started to life, and just managed to slip swiftly and dextrously back from the landing into the flat and close the door behind him. Then he grasped the bolt and slid it gently, without a sound, into its socket. Instinct had come to his aid. When he had done, he stayed quiet, holding his breath, close to the door. The unknown visitor was also at the door. They were standing now, opposite one another, as he and the old woman



had stood, with the door dividing them, when he had listened there a short time ago.

The visitor drew several heavy breaths. 'He must be a big stout man,' thought Raskolnikov, grasping the axe tightly. Everything seemed to be happening in a dream. The visitor seized the bell and rang it loudly.

As soon as its tinny sound had died, Raskolnikov imagined he heard movement inside the room, and for some seconds he listened as seriously as though it were possible. The unknown rang again, waited a little longer and then suddenly began to tug impatiently at the door-handle with all his might. Terrified, Raskolnikov watched the bolt rattling in its socket and waited in numb fear for it to jump clean out. This seemed likely to happen at any moment, so violently was the door shaken. He would have held the bar with his hand, except that *he* might discern it. His head was beginning to spin again. 'I am going to faint!' he thought, but the unknown began to speak and he recovered himself immediately.

'Are they fast asleep in there, or dead, or what, confound them?' the visitor boomed in a resounding voice. 'Hey! Alena Ivanovna, you old witch! Lizaveta Ivanovna, my peerless beauty! Open the door! Oh, confound it all, they must be asleep or something!'

Thoroughly annoyed, he tugged at the bell again with all his might, a dozen times in succession. He was plainly a person of imperious temper and familiar with the place.

At this moment light, hurrying footsteps sounded not very far down the stairs. Somebody else was approaching, whom Raskolnikov had not heard at first.

'Isn't anybody in?' cried the new arrival in loud and cheerful tones to the first visitor, who was still tugging at the bell. 'How are you, Koch?'

'Judging by his voice, he must be very young,' thought Raskolnikov.

'God only knows! I've nearly broken the door down,' answered Koch. 'But how is it that you know me?'

'Surely you remember? The day before yesterday, at Gambinus's, I beat you three times running at billiards.'

'O-o-oh . . .'

'Aren't they here then? That's strange. In fact, it's quite absurd. The old woman's got nowhere to go to. And I am here on business.'

'So am I, old man.'

'Well, what are we to do? Go back, I suppose. And I was expecting to get some money!' exclaimed the young man.

'Of course we must go back, but why make an appointment? The old witch fixed a time with me herself. It's a long way for me to come here, too. And where the devil she can have got to, I don't know. She sits here, day in and day out, the old witch, with her bad legs, and never lifts a finger, and now all at once she goes gallivanting off!'

'Hadn't we better ask the porter?'

'Ask him what?'

'Where she's gone and when she's coming back.'

'Hm . . . the devil! . . . ask him . . . But she never goes anywhere . . .' and he pulled at the handle again. 'The devil! There's nothing for it, we must go.'

'Stop!' exclaimed the young man. 'Look! Do you see how the door resists when you pull it?'

'Well?'

'That means it's bolted, not locked! Can you hear the bar rattling?'

'Well?'

'Don't you understand? That means one of them is at home. If everybody were out, they would have locked the door from outside, not bolted it from inside. But now—do you hear the bolt rattle? But to bolt the door from inside, somebody must be at home. Do you understand? They must be in, but they aren't opening the door.'

'Tck! That's quite right!' exclaimed Koch, surprised. 'Then what on earth are they doing?' And he shook the door again, in a rage.

'Stop!' cried the young man again, 'leave the door alone! There's something very wrong here . . . After all, you rang, and shook the door, and they haven't opened it; so either they've both fainted, or . . .'

'What?'

'I'll tell you what; let's go to the porter and get him to rouse them.'

'Done!' Both started downstairs.

'Stop! Why don't you stay here while I run down for the porter?'

'Why?'

'Well, one never knows!'

'All right . . .'

'You see, I am studying to be an examining magistrate. There is plainly, plai-ainly something wrong here!' cried the young man excitedly, as he ran down the stairs.

Koch, left alone, touched the bell again, so softly that it made only one tinkle; then, as though he were considering the matter and making tests to convince himself once more that the door was held only by the bolt, he began to move the handle, pulling it towards him and letting it go again. Then he stooped down, puffing, and looked through the keyhole, but the key was in it on the inside and consequently nothing could be seen.

Raskolnikov stood clutching his axe, in a sort of delirium. He was even prepared to fight them when they came in. While they were knocking at the door and arranging what they would do, he was more than once tempted to put an end to it all at once by calling out to them from behind the door. Several times he felt like railing and jeering at them, while the door remained closed. 'If only they would be quick!' he thought.

'What the devil? . . .'

The time was passing—one minute, two minutes, and nobody came. Koch was getting restless.

'Oh, the devil! . . .' he exclaimed impatiently, abandoning his watch and starting to hurry downstairs, with his boots clattering on the steps. The sounds died away.

'Oh, God, what am I to do?'

Raskolnikov took off the bolt and opened the door a little. Since he could hear nothing, he walked out without stopping to consider, closed the door behind him as well as he could, and went downstairs.

He had gone down three flights when a great commotion broke out below him. Where could he go? There was nowhere to hide. He was on the point of running back to the flat.

'Hi, stop! You devil! Just wait!'

Down below someone tore out of a flat shouting and did not so much run as tumble down the stairs, yelling at the top of his voice:

'Mitka! Mitka! Mitka! Mitka! Blast your eyes!'

The shout rose to a shriek; its last echoes resounded from the courtyard; it died away. At the same instant several persons talking loudly and rapidly started noisily up the stairs. There



were three or four of them. He could distinguish the young man's voice. 'It's them!'

In complete desperation he went straight towards them: let come what might! If they stopped him, all was lost, if they let him pass, all was still lost: they would remember him. They were already close; only one flight still lay between them and suddenly, salvation! A few steps below him on the right, the door of an empty flat was wide open; it was the second-floor flat in which painters had been working, but now, most opportunely, they had gone. Probably it was they who had run out so noisily a few minutes before. The floors had just been painted, and in the middle of the room stood a tub and an earthenware crock of paint with a brush in it. In a trice he had slipped through the open door and hidden himself against the wall. It was none too soon; *they* had already reached the landing. They turned up the stairs and went on to the fourth floor, talking loudly. He waited a little, tiptoed out and ran downstairs.

There was nobody on the stairs, nobody in the gateway. He walked through quickly and turned to the left along the street.

He knew very well, he was terribly aware, that at this moment they were inside the flat, that they had been astonished to find the door unfastened when it had been closed against them so recently, that they had already seen the bodies and that no more than a minute would pass before they would begin to suspect, and then realize fully, that the murderer had only just left, and had managed to conceal himself somewhere, slip past them, and make his escape; perhaps they would even guess that he had been in the empty flat when they passed it on their way upstairs. All the same, he simply dared not increase his pace, even though it was still nearly a hundred yards to the first turning. 'Haden't I better slip into some gateway and wait on a staircase? No, that would be disastrous! Oughtn't I to get rid of the axe? What about taking a cab? . . . A fatal blunder!'

At last he reached a side-street and, half dead, turned into it; now he knew that he was already half-way to safety; his presence here was less suspicious, and besides there were very many people about and he could lose himself among them like one grain of sand on the sea-shore. But his racking anxieties had taken so much out of him that he could hardly move.

Sweat poured out of him; his neck was quite wet. 'You've had a drop too much!' someone called after him as he came out on the canal.

He no longer knew quite what he was doing, and the farther he went the worse his condition became. Afterwards he remembered, however, that he had been afraid, coming to the canal bank, because there were fewer people about, which made him more conspicuous, and he nearly turned back into the street he had just left. Although he could hardly stand he took a roundabout way and arrived home from an entirely different direction.

Even when he entered his own gateway he had hardly recovered control of himself; at least, he was already on the stairs before he remembered the axe. Now he had to face a very important task—returning it without being seen. He was certainly in no condition to realize that perhaps it would be much better if he did not restore the axe to its former place but threw it away, perhaps later, in some other courtyard.

Everything, however, went without a hitch. The porter's door was closed but not locked, which meant that he was probably at home. But Raskolnikov had so completely lost his powers of reasoning that he went straight to the door of the lodge and opened it. If the porter had asked him what he wanted, he might quite possibly have simply handed him the axe. But the porter was again out and he put the axe in its former place under the bench; he even partly covered it with logs as before. Afterwards, on his way to his room, he met no one, not a soul; even the landlady's door was closed. He went in and flung himself down on the sofa just as he was. He did not sleep, but lay there in a stupor. If anybody had entered the room he would have sprung up at once with a cry. Disjointed scraps and fragments of ideas floated through his mind, but he could not seize one of them, or dwell upon any, in spite of all his efforts . . .

## PART TWO

---

### CHAPTER I

HE lay there a long time. Occasionally he would rouse, and at such moments he would notice that the night was far spent, but it did not enter his head to get up. Finally he saw that it was daylight. He was lying on his back, still in a half-stunned condition. Terrible despairing wails rose shrilly to his ears from the street below; they were, however, only what he was used to hearing below his window between two and three o'clock in the morning. They were what had roused him now. 'Ah, the drunks are being turned out of the pubs,' he thought, 'it must be after two;' and suddenly he leapt from the sofa in one bound. 'What, past two already?' He sat down again and it all came back to him; everything came back in one flash.

In the first few moments he thought he must be going mad. A dreadful chill enveloped him, but this was partly the result of the feverishness that for many weeks had always accompanied his sleep. Now, however, he was seized with such a violent fit of shivering that his teeth chattered uncontrollably, and every limb shook. He opened the door and listened; the whole house was asleep. He looked at himself and at everything in the room with consternation, unable to understand how he could have omitted to fasten his door when he came in the evening before, and have thrown himself down not only without undressing, but even without taking off his hat; it had fallen off and lay on the floor near his pillow. 'If somebody had come in, what would they have thought? That I was drunk? But . . .' He hurried to the window. 'There was enough light to see by, and he began to examine himself from head to foot, and all his clothes, were there no traces? But he could not tell like this, and so, shivering with cold, he undressed completely and examined his clothes again. He scrutinized them minutely, down to the last thread, turning them over and over, and, unable to trust himself, repeated the process three times. But there seemed to be nothing, not a trace, except that the ragged fringes at the bottom of his trouser-legs were stiff and



clotted with dried blood. He took out his big clasp-knife and cut off the fringes. He could find nothing more. Suddenly he remembered that the purse and all the things he had stolen from the old woman's trunk were still in his pockets. Till that moment it had not even occurred to him to take them out and hide them. He had not remembered them even while he was inspecting his clothes. How could that be? He hurriedly began to pull them out and throw them on the table. When he had emptied his pockets and even turned them inside out to satisfy himself that there was nothing left in them, he carried the whole heap into a corner. There, near the floor, the wall-paper was torn where it had come loose from the wall; hastily he crammed everything under the paper, into this hole; it all went in. 'It's all out of sight, even the purse!' he thought joyfully, standing and staring stupidly at the place where the torn paper bulged more than ever. Suddenly he shivered with terror: 'My God!' he whispered in despair, 'what is the matter with me? Can I call that hidden? Is that the way to hide anything?'

The truth was that he had not counted on there being any things of that kind, he had thought only of money, and therefore had not prepared any place to hide things in. 'But now, why on earth am I so pleased now?' he thought. 'Is that the way to hide anything? I really must be losing my reason.' He sat down exhausted on the sofa, and at once an unbearably violent shivering shook him again. Mechanically he took up from where it lay on the chair beside him the old winter overcoat he had worn as a student, which was warm even if ragged, covered himself with it and surrendered himself once more to mingled sleep and delirium.

Not more than five minutes later he sprang up again and rushed back to his clothes. 'How could I fall asleep, with nothing done? I was right, I was right: I haven't taken out that loop yet. I forgot it, but how could I forget such a thing, a clue like that?' He tore out the loop and quickly reduced it to scraps, which he thrust among the linen under his pillow. 'Torn-up pieces of linen will never by any chance arouse suspicion, I think; no, I think not,' he repeated, standing in the middle of the room and with painfully strained attention he began to look all round, on the floor and everywhere else, to see whether he had not forgotten something else. The conviction that everything, even memory, even the simple power of

reflection, was deserting him, had begun to torment him unbearably. 'What if it is beginning already? Can this really be the beginning of my punishment? Look, over there' I thought so" Indeed, the frayed scraps of fringe he had cut off his trousers lay scattered on the floor in the middle of the room for everyone to see. 'But what can be the matter with me?' he wailed again like a lost soul.

Now a strange idea entered his head—perhaps all his clothes were soaked and stained with blood and he could not see it because his mental powers were failing and crumbling away . . . His mind was clouded . . . He remembered suddenly that there had been blood on the purse. 'Ha, so of course there must be blood on my pocket too, because when I pushed the purse in it was still all wet!' He turned his pocket inside out and he was right—there were stains on the lining. 'So I can't have gone completely out of my mind yet, I must still have some understanding and memory left, since I remembered and realized this for myself,' he thought triumphantly, filling his lungs with a deep breath of relief, 'it was only the weakness of fever, a momentary delirium' He tore the lining out of his left-hand trouser-pocket. As he did this a ray of sunlight lit up his left boot. There on the sock, which projected from a hole in the boot—were there marks? He dragged his boot off. 'Yes, there are certainly marks; the whole toe of the sock is soaked with blood,' he must have stepped carelessly into that pool . . . 'But what am I to do with these things? Where can I put the sock and the frayed trouser-ends, and the pocket?'

He gathered them all into his hands and stood in the middle of the room. 'Shall I put them in the stove? But they nearly always begin by rummaging in the stove. Burn them? But what with? I haven't even any matches. No, the best thing is to go out somewhere and throw them all away. Yes, I'll throw them away' he repeated, sitting down again on the sofa, 'and this minute, without a moment's delay! . . .' But instead, his head declined once more towards his pillow; once more a sudden chill congealed his blood; once more he drew his greatcoat over him. For several hours, as he lay there, the thought kept flickering through his brain. 'I must go now, I mustn't put it off; I'll go somewhere and throw them all away, get them out of sight, but quickly, quickly' Several times he tried to tear himself from his couch and get up, but

he could not do it. Finally he was awakened by a loud knocking on his door.

'Open the door! You're not dead, are you? He's always fast asleep!' cried Nastasya, beating on the door with her fist. 'Lying there fast asleep all day like a dog! A dog, that's what he is! Open the door, can't you? It's past ten o'clock.'

'Perhaps he's not at home,' said a man's voice.

'Ah! that's the porter . . . What does he want?'

He sprang up and sat on the edge of the sofa. His heart thumped so heavily that it was painful.

'Who's fastened the door then? See, he's taken to locking his door now! Does he think someone's going to run off with him? Open the door, my lad; wake up!'

'What do they want? Why is the porter here? They must have found out. Shall I resist, or shall I open the door? Better open it! Damnation! . . .'

He half rose, stretched forward, and undid the hook. The room was so small that it was possible to do this without leaving his bed.

He was right; the porter was there with Nastasya.

Nastasya looked at him rather oddly. He was gazing with an imploring and despairing expression at the porter, who silently held out a grey paper folded in two and sealed with wax.

'A summons, from the office,' he said as he handed over the paper.

'What office? . . .'

'I mean the police want to see you; you've to go to their office. Everyone knows what office.'

'The police! . . . Why?'

'How should I know? You've been summoned, so go.' He looked closely at him, glanced round the room, and turned to go out.

'You seem really ill,' remarked Nastasya, who had not taken her eyes off him. The porter also turned his head for a moment. 'You've had a temperature since yesterday,' she added.

He did not answer, but sat holding the unopened paper.

'Don't you get up,' went on Nastasya, feeling sorry for him, as she saw him lowering his feet to the floor. 'You are ill, so don't go; there's no hurry. What's that in your hand?'

He looked down; in his right hand he was still holding the fringe he had cut off, the sock, and the torn pieces of his pocket.



He had slept with them like that. Afterwards, thinking about it, he remembered that when he half woke in his fevered state, he had clutched them tightly in his fingers and so fallen asleep again.

'Look, he's collected a handful of rags and taken them to bed with him as if they were something precious . . .' And Nastasya broke into one of her painfully violent fits of laughter. He whisked everything under the greatcoat and stared fixedly at her. Although he was hardly capable at that moment of making much sense of anything, he felt he would not be treated like this if he were on the point of being arrested . . . 'But - the police?'

'Could you drink some tea? Would you like some? I'll bring it; there's some left . . .'

'No . . . I'm going; I'll go now,' he muttered, struggling to his feet.

'Going?' But you won't even be able to get downstairs!'

'I'm going . . .'

'Oh, all right.'

She followed the porter out. He hurried at once to the window to examine the sock and the scraps of frayed cloth: 'There are marks, but they are not very conspicuous, everything is so dirty and rubbed and discoloured. Nobody would notice anything if they didn't know beforehand. So Nastasya can't have seen anything from where she was, thank God!' Then with a shiver of alarm he opened the paper and read it; he had to spend a long time studying it, but at last he understood. It was the usual summons from the local police headquarters to appear there that same day at half past nine.

'But this is unheard of! I have never had anything to do with the police! And why should it happen just to-day?' he thought, tormented with indecision. 'Oh, Lord, at least let it be over soon!' He could almost have knelt down and prayed, but he laughed at his own impulse; he must put his trust in himself, not in prayer. He began to dress hurriedly. 'If I'm done for, I'm done for! It's all one . . . I'll put the sock on!' he thought suddenly, 'it will get more dirt rubbed into it and all the stains will disappear.' But no sooner had he put it on than he dragged it off with horror and loathing. Then, realizing that he had no other, he took it and put it on again—and again he laughed. 'This is all conditional, all relative, all merely

forms,' flashed into one corner of his mind, while his whole body trembled. 'I did put it on, after all. It all ended with my putting it on!' The laughter gave place immediately to despondency. 'No, I'm not strong enough . . .' he thought. His legs were shaking. 'With fear,' he muttered to himself. He felt dizzy and the fever had given him a headache. 'This is a trap. They want to entice me into a trap and then spring it,' he went on to himself, as he went out on to the landing. 'The trouble is that I am almost demented . . . I might get caught in some stupid lie . . .'

On the way downstairs he remembered that he had left all the things behind the wallpaper, and thought that perhaps he was being got out of the way on purpose for a search to be made, and he stopped. But overwhelming despair and what might perhaps be called a cynical view of disaster made him shrug his shoulders and walk on.

'Only let it be over quickly!'

The heat outside was again overpowering: not so much as a drop of rain had fallen all this time. Again the same dirt and bricks and mortar, the stinking shops and public houses, the drunkards everywhere, the Finnish hawkers, the broken-down old cabs. The blazing sun shone full in his eyes and made them ache and his head was spinning, as it might be expected to do when he, in his feverish state, emerged suddenly into the bright sunny day.

When he came to the turning into *yesterday's* street, he looked down it, at *that* house, with tormented anxiety . . . and turned his eyes away at once.

'If they ask me, I shall probably tell them,' he thought as he drew near the office.

The police office was not far from where he lived, about a quarter of a verst. It had just moved into new quarters on the fourth floor of a new building. He had been in the old office once, a long time ago. As he passed under the gateway he saw a staircase on the right and a peasant coming down it with a book in his hand: 'That must be the porter; so the office must be there,' and he started up, acting on his guess, since he did not want to ask any questions.

'I shall go in, fall on my knees, and tell the whole story,' he thought as he came to the fourth floor.

The staircase was steep and narrow and smelt of dishwater. All the kitchens of all the flats on all four floors opened on to

the staircase, and as all the doors stood open almost the whole day, it was terribly stuffy. Up and down these stairs moved porters with books under their arms, messengers, and various visitors of both sexes. The door into the office also stood wide open. He went in and stopped in the ante-room. Several peasants were always standing there waiting. Here also it was extremely stuffy and in addition the nostrils were assailed by the sickly odour of new paint which had been mixed with rancid oil. He waited a little and then decided to move forward into the next room. All the rooms were very small and low-ceilinged. A terrible impatience drove him farther and farther. Nobody took any notice of him. In the second room some clerks were sitting writing; they were perhaps a little better dressed than he was, but they were odd-looking figures enough. He went up to one of them.

‘What do you want?’

He showed his summons.

‘You are a student?’ asked the other, glancing at the notice.

‘A former student.’

The clerk looked at him, but without any curiosity. He was a man with wildly tousled hair and a preoccupied look.

‘You won’t find out anything from him, because he isn’t interested in anything,’ thought Raskolnikov.

‘Go in there, to the chief clerk,’ said the clerk, and pointed to the inmost room.

He went into this room (the fourth from the ante-room), which was very small and crammed full of people, who looked a little neater and cleaner than those in the other room. Among them were two ladies. One of these, poorly dressed in mourning, was sitting at a table opposite the chief clerk and writing to his dictation. The other, a very stout, showy woman, with a blotchy red complexion, rather ostentatiously dressed, with a brooch on her bosom as big as a saucer, was standing and waiting. Raskolnikov put his summons under the eyes of the chief clerk, who glanced at it, said ‘Please wait,’ and went on with what he was doing.

Raskolnikov breathed more freely. ‘It can’t be that!’ Little by little his resolution was returning, and he earnestly exhorted himself to pluck up his courage and control his nerves.

‘It’s only about some silly formality, or perhaps some trifling indiscretion, and I might have given myself away completely!’



Hm . . . it's a pity there's no air here . . . ' he went on, 'it's stuffy . . . My head seems to be spinning worse than ever, and my thoughts with it . . . '

He was conscious of a terrible inner confusion. He was afraid of losing command of himself. He tried to fix his attention, to think of something quite outside himself, but he could not do it. The chief clerk, however, interested him deeply; he wished he could read his face and guess what he was thinking. He saw a very young man of about twenty-two, with a dark and mobile countenance, who seemed older than his years. His dress was modish and elegant, his pomaded hair was brushed forward from a back parting, and he wore a number of rings on his white well-cared-for hands and a gold chain on his waste. He even exchanged a few words of very passable French with a foreigner who was present.

'Lousa Ivanovna, pray be seated,' he said in passing to the overdressed lady with the red face, who was still standing as if she dared not take it on herself to sit down, although there was a chair at her side.

'Ich danke,' said she, and sat down quietly, with a rustle of silk. Her light-blue dress with its white lace trimming ballooned out round her chair and filled almost half the room. A wave of perfume was wafted from her. But the lady seemed abashed at filling the room with her skirts and her scent, and her uneasy smile mingled timidity and boldness.

The lady in mourning finished her business at last and was getting up to go when an officer entered the room somewhat noisily, with a very dashing and characteristic swagger, threw his cockaded cap on the table and sat down in an armchair. The showily dressed lady jumped up instantly and swept him a curtsy as though she was delighted to see him, but the officer paid not the slightest attention to her, and she did not venture to sit down again in his presence. He was a lieutenant, the police-captain's assistant. The points of his sandy moustaches stood out horizontally; he had remarkably small features, which expressed nothing but a certain insolence. He looked askance and with some displeasure at Raskolnikov; his dress was really too disgraceful and yet his bearing, in spite of its humility, was not in harmony with it. Raskolnikov imprudently returned his gaze with such directness and steadiness that he took offence.

'What do you want?' he cried, apparently astonished that

such a ragamuffin was not struck down by the lightning that flashed from his eyes.

'I was ordered . . . by a summons . . . ' Raskolnikov managed to bring out.

'It concerns the recovery of money from him, from this student,' put in the chief clerk hastily, tearing himself away from his papers. 'Here you are, sir,' and he pointed out a place in a notebook and then tossed it across to Raskolnikov. 'Read it!'

'Money? What money?' thought Raskolnikov. 'But . . . then it really can't be *that*.' He trembled with joy; his heart was suddenly, inexpressibly light. A burden had rolled from his shoulders.

'At what hour, my good sir, were you instructed to come here?' cried the lieutenant, growing for some unknown reason more and more outraged. 'You were told nine o'clock and it is now twelve!'

'It was handed to me only a quarter of an hour ago,' Raskolnikov threw over his shoulder in a loud voice. He also felt suddenly and unexpectedly irritated, and was even enjoying the sensation. 'And it should be enough that I came at all, in my state of illness!'

'Kindly do not shout!'

'I am not shouting; I am speaking quite calmly. It is you who are shouting at me, and I am a student and will not allow anyone to shout at me.'

The officer flared up so violently that for a moment he was unable to speak at all, but only spluttered. He leapt up from his seat.

'Be good enough to ho-o-ld your tongue! Remember where you are! Do not be impertinent, sir!'

'Remember where you are yourself!' yelled Raskolnikov. 'Not only are you shouting, you are smoking a cigarette as well, and that is showing disrespect to everybody here.' This speech gave him inexpressible pleasure.

The chief clerk was looking at them with a smile. The fiery lieutenant was evidently taken aback.

'That, sir, is no affair of yours!' he exclaimed at last in a voice of unnatural loudness. 'Be kind enough to make the declaration required of you. Show him, Alexander Grigoryevich. A complaint has been lodged against you! You will not pay your debts! A fine young spark you are!'

Raskolnikov was no longer listening to him, but had seized avidly on the paper and was trying to find in it the answer to the riddle. He read it through once and then again, but he could not understand it.

'What is this?' he asked the chief clerk

'It is a demand for the recovery of money on a bill. Either you must repay it together with all arrears, penalties, etcetera, or you must sign an undertaking to pay at a given date, with an obligation not to leave the capital before repayment is made, nor to sell your property or conceal your assets. The creditor is entitled to sell your goods or institute judicial proceedings against you.'

'But I . . . don't owe anybody anything'

'That is not our affair. An application has been made to us for the recovery of one hundred and fifteen roubles on an overdue and legally protested note of hand given nine months ago to the widow of Collegiate Assessor Zarnitsyn, and assigned by the widow Zarnitsyna to Civil Councillor Chebarov. You are accordingly invited to enter your reply.'

'But she's my landlady!'

'What if she is?'

The clerk looked at him with a smile of condescending pity but also with a certain air of triumph, as if he were an old hand watching a new recruit coming under fire for the first time and ready to ask 'Well, how are you feeling now?'

But what did I O.U.'s or the recovery of debts matter to him now? Did they merit the slightest concern, or even attention? He stood there reading, listening, answering, even asking questions himself, but all quite mechanically. Triumphant satisfaction in his safety, his escape from imminent looming danger, filled for the time his whole being, to the exclusion of all forebodings, all doubts and questions, all critical analysis, all riddles about the future. It was a moment of full, spontaneous, and purely animal rejoicing. The same moment saw something like the outbreak of a thunderstorm in the office. The lieutenant, still outraged by the want of respect he had met with, blazing with anger and determined to soothe his smarting vanity, had brought all his guns to bear on the unhappy 'elegant lady', who had been smiling at him with the most complete fatuity ever since he came in.

'And you, you so-and-so,' he shouted at the top of his voice (the lady in mourning had already left). 'What happened at



your house last night? You are bringing shame and disgrace on the whole street again. Fighting and drunkenness! You are simply asking for quod! You know perfectly well you've been told, I've warned you myself a dozen times, that you wouldn't get off another time! And yet you go on and on, you . . . !"

The paper slipped from Raskolnikov's grasp and he stared wildly to hear the stylish lady so unceremoniously abused; however, he soon grasped what it was all about and began to find considerable amusement in the whole affair. He listened with great enjoyment, feeling tempted to laugh and laugh and laugh. . . . All his nerves were quivering with tension.

'Iva Petrovich,' began the clerk, but stopped at once and bided his time, knowing from experience that once the lieutenant had taken the bit between his teeth he must be allowed to run his course.

As for the elegant lady, at first she cowered before the storm unleashed on her head, but, strangely enough, the more numerous and outrageous the abuses heaped on her, the more amiable became her look, and the more charming the smile she turned on the thundering lieutenant. She cursed incessantly and tapped the ground with her foot, waiting impatiently until at last she could get a word in.

Words tumbled out of her mouth like peas rattling on a drum; her Russian was glib, but she had a marked German accent.

'Disturbance and brawling in my house has not been, *Herr Kapitän*, and not any kind of *skandal*, but they are coming drunk, and I will tell you everything, *Herr Kapitän*, I am not being to blame. . . . Mine house is respectable, *Herr Kapitän*, and respectable behaviour, *Herr Kapitän*, and never, never, would I any *skandal*. . . . But they are coming quite drunk and after as well they are calling for three bottles, and then one is lifting up his feet and is playing the piano with his feet and that is not good in a respectable house and he has the piano *ganz* broken and that is altogether not manners and I am telling him. And he was taking a bottle and pushing all peoples behind with a bottle. Then I am calling the porter and Karl is coming and he is taking Karl and in the eye hitting and Henrietta also is he in the eye hitting, and mine cheek five times he is hitting. And that is in a respectable house indelicate, *Herr Kapitän*, and I am screaming. And he has the window on the canal opened and is in the window standing and squealing

like a little *schwein*, it is shameful. How is it possible to stand in the window and squeal into the street like a little *schwein*? Wee-wee-wee! And Karl behind him is pulling him out of the window by the coat and here, it is true, *Herr Kapitan*, he has *sein* coat behind torn. And then he is shouting, that *man* *muß* him fifteen roubles to pay. And, *Herr Kapitan*, I myself am paying him *sein* coat five roubles. This is not a respectable guest, *Herr Kapitan*, and he is making a big *skandal*. He is saying to me, I will a big satire over you to print, because in all the newspapers I will all about you write.'

'Do you mean that he is an author?'

'Yes, *Herr Kapitan*, and he is not a respectable guest, *Herr Kapitan*, when in a respectable house . . .'

'Now, that's enough! I've told you again and again, I've told you . . .'

'Ilya Petrovich!' said the clerk again, significantly. The lieutenant hastily glanced at him; the clerk gave a slight shake of the head.

' . . . So, my dear *respectable* Louisa Ivanovna, this is my last word to you, I am telling you for the last time,' continued the lieutenant, 'if such a scandalous scene occurs in your respectable house only once more, you'll find yourself in the jug, as they say in the highest circles. Do you hear? . . . So a man of letters, a writer, got five roubles for his coat-tails in a "respectable house"! These writers are all alike!' and he threw a contemptuous glance at Raskolnikov. 'There was another scene in a public house the day before yesterday, someone who had dined refused to pay, and, says he, "I'll put you in a satire for this!" Another one, last week, grossly insulted the respectable wife and daughter of a State Councillor on a steam-ship. Not long ago one of them had to be turned out of a pastrycook's. That's the sort they are, authors, men of letters, students, public criers . . . pshaw! Now get out! I shall keep an eye on you . . . so take care! Do you hear?'

Louisa Ivanovna with hasty civility curtsied all round and then, still curtsyng, backed towards the door. In the doorway she bumped into a handsome officer with a fresh open countenance and magnificent fair bushy whiskers. This was Nikodim Fornich, chief of police of the district. Louisa Ivanovna curtsied almost to the ground and skipped from the office with little mincing steps.

'Thunderstorms, tornadoes, waterspouts, and hurricanes

again!' said Nikodim Fomich in an amiable and friendly tone to Ilya Petrovich. 'You've got upset again and lost your temper; I could hear you from the stairs.'

'Well, look heah,' answered Ilya Petrovich, with well bred negligence as he took a handful of papers over to another table with his picturesque swagger, 'look at this, sir, this gentleman, an author, I mean a student, or rather an ex-student, won't pay up, his note of hand is overdue, he won't give up his flat, there are constant complaints about him, and he wanted to make a grievance of my smoking in his p-p-presence! His own conduct is disgraceful, and then, sir, just look at him; there he is, a most attractive spectacle, sir!'

'Poverty is no crime, my dear chap; and besides, everybody knows that you are like gunpowder, always ready to explode. I expect you felt he had affronted you in some way,' went on Nikodim Fomich, turning with a friendly air to Raskolnikov, 'and so you let fly yourself. But you were wrong; he is a *deelightful*, a no-o-oble fellow, I assure you, but gunpowder, gunpowder!— he flares up, goes off with a flash and a bang, and it's all over! When it comes to the point, he has a heart of solid gold! His nickname in the regiment was "the Squib" . . .'

'And w-w-what a regiment it was!' exclaimed Ilya Petrovich, mollified by being so pleasantly teased, but still a little sulky.

Raskolnikov felt a sudden desire to say something particularly amiable to all of them.

'Excuse me, captain,' he began easily, turning to Nikodim Fomich, 'put yourself in my place . . . I am ready to beg his pardon if I have been remiss. I am a poor student, ill, and crushed' (he used the word 'crushed', 'by poverty. I have had to give up my studies, because I cannot maintain myself, but I receive some money . . . I have a mother and sister in R— Province . . . They send it to me and I . . . will pay. My landlady is good, but she is so annoyed with me for having lost my lessons and not paying the rent for three months that she does not even send up my dinner . . . I don't understand all this about a bill of exchange! Now she is claiming repayment on this I.O U., but why should I pay, I ask you? . . .'

'But you know that has nothing to do with us . . .' the clerk was beginning again.

'Allow me, allow me, I quite agree with you, but allow me to explain,' interrupted Raskolnikov, still addressing not the chief clerk but Nikodim Fomich, and trying with all his might



to draw in Ilya Petrovich as well, although the latter was obstinately pretending to rummage through his papers and to have no attention to spare for such a contemptible person; 'allow me for my part to explain that I have been living in her house for about three years, ever since I arrived here from the provinces, and formerly . . . formerly . . . well, why shouldn't I confess it?' At the very beginning I gave my promise to marry her daughter, a verbal promise, only verbal . . . She was a young girl, and I liked her . . . although I wasn't in love with her . . . in a word, it was youth . . . and at that time my landlady gave me a good deal of credit, and I led a life which . . . I was very irresponsible . . .'

'These intimate details are not required of you at all, my good sir, and there is no time for them,' Ilya Petrovich was breaking in, roughly and overbearingly, but Raskolnikov stopped him and continued hotly, although he was suddenly finding it difficult to speak.

'But allow me, do allow me to tell you everything . . . now things were and . . . in my turn . . . even though it is unnecessary, I quite agree with you—but a year ago this girl died of typhus, but I stayed on as a lodger, and when my landlady moved into her present flat she told me . . . in a very friendly way . . . that she trusted me completely and everything . . . but would I like to give her a bul for a hundred and fifteen roubles, the total sum she reckoned I owed her?' Allow me, sir: she told me explicitly that as soon as I gave her this paper, she would give me as much more credit as I wanted, and that never, never, for her part—these are her very words—would she make any use of the paper, until I paid of my own accord . . . But now, when I have lost my pupils and have nothing, she presents it for repayment . . . What can I say now?"

'All these sentimental details, my good sir, do not concern us,' interrupted Ilya Petrovich. 'You have to enter a reply and undertake an obligation, and whether you were pleased to be in love or not, and all these tragic bits, have absolutely nothing to do with us.'

'Well, you are rather . . . harsh . . .' murmured Nikodim Fomich, sitting down at a table and beginning to sign papers. He seemed rather uncomfortable.

'Please write,' said the chief clerk to Raskolnikov.

'Write what?' he asked roughly.

'I will dictate to you.'

It seemed to Raskolnikov that the chief clerk's manner to him had become more off-hand and contemptuous since he had made his confession, but strangely enough he had become completely indifferent to anybody's opinion of him, and this change had taken place all in a moment. If he had cared to stop and consider it, he would no doubt have wondered how, a few minutes ago, he could have talked to them as he did and even made a parade of his emotions, and wondered too where those emotions had come from. Now, if the room had suddenly been filled not with police officers but with his closest friends, he could not, he thought, have found a single word to say to them, so empty had his heart become. In his soul he was tormentingly conscious of a dreary feeling of eternal loneliness and estrangement. It was not the abjectness of his outpourings of emotion in front of Ilya Petrovich, nor the lieutenant's triumph over him, that had produced this revulsion. What concern of his were now his own baseness, other people's ambitions, lieutenants, German woman, proceedings for the recovery of debts, police officers, and all the rest of it? If he had heard himself condemned to be burnt at this moment he would hardly have stirred, indeed it is doubtful if he would have paid the slightest attention. Something new and unexpected, something hitherto unknown and undreamt of, had taken place in him. He did not so much understand with his mind as feel instinctively with the full force of his emotions that he could never again communicate with these people in a great gush of feeling, as he had just now, or in any way whatever. Even if they had been his own brothers and sisters, instead of police officers, it would still have been impossible for him to turn to them for any reason or in any circumstances. He had never in his life before experienced so strange and desolating a feeling, and the most painful thing about it was that it *was* a feeling, an immediate sensation, and not knowledge or intellectual understanding.

The chief clerk began to dictate to him the usual form of declaration in such cases, that is: 'I cannot pay, I undertake to do so at a certain date, I will not leave the city, I will not sell or give away any of my property,' and so on.

'But you cannot write properly, you can hardly hold the pen,' the clerk remarked, looking at Raskolnikov with curiosity. 'Are you ill?'

'Yes . . . my head is going round . . . Go on!'

'That is all; sign it.'

The clerk took the document, and busied himself with something else.

Raskolnikov gave back the pen, but instead of getting up to go put both elbows on the table and pressed his hands to his head. He felt as if a nail had been driven into his temples. A strange idea flashed into his mind: he would get up, go over to Nikodim Fomich and tell him all that had happened the day before, down to the last detail, and then go back with them to his room and show them the things in the corner, under the wall-paper. The impulse was so strong that he stood up to carry it out. 'Haden't I better think it over for a minute?' passed through his mind. 'No, better do it without thinking, and be done with it.' Then he stopped, rooted to the ground. Nikodim Fomich was warmly discussing something with Ilya Petr ovich, and the words reached his ears.

'It's quite impossible; we shall have to let them both go. To begin with, everything is against it—why should they call the porter, if they had done it? To call attention to themselves? Or out of cunning? No, that would be altogether too cunning! Finally, both porters and the workman saw the student Pestryakov at the gate when he went in; he had three friends with him, and he stopped at the gate to ask the porter about the people living in the house, still in the presence of his friends. Now, would he have asked about them like that if he had come with any such intention? As for Koch, he had been sitting in the silversmith's downstairs for half an hour before he went up to the old woman's, and he left him at exactly a quarter to eight to go upstairs. Now, consider . . .'

'Excuse me, look at the contradictions in their statements. They assert that they knocked and that the door was fastened, but three minutes later, when they had the porter with them, it was open.'

'That is just the point, the murderer must have been inside, with the bolt up, and they would certainly have found him there if Koch hadn't been fool enough to go for the porter himself. During that interval *he* managed to get downstairs and somehow give them the slip. Koch says "If I had stayed he would have sprung out on me with the axe and killed me too!" and he crosses himself with both hands. He'd like to hold public thanksgiving services, no doubt! Ha-ha-ha!'

'And nobody saw the murderer?'



'How could they? The house is a regular Noah's Ark,' put in the chief clerk, listening from his place.

'It's quite clear, quite clear,' repeated Nikodim Fomich warmly.

'No, it's not at all clear,' insisted Ilya Petrovich.

Raskolnikov picked up his hat and went to the door. But he did not reach it . .

When he came round he saw that he was sitting in a chair, supported by some person on his right, with somebody else on his left holding a dirty tumbler filled with yellowish water; and that Nikodim Fomich was standing in front of him looking at him attentively. He stood up.

'What is it? Are you ill?' asked Nikodim Fomich rather sharply.

'When he was signing his name he could hardly guide the pen,' remarked the chief clerk, sitting down and turning back to his papers.

'Have you been ill long?' cried Ilya Petrovich from his place, where he also was shuffling papers. He also had certainly been over to look at the patient while he was in the faint, but had left him as soon as he recovered consciousness.

'Since yesterday . . ' muttered Raskolnikov in reply.

'Did you go out yesterday?'

'Yes.'

'When you were ill?'

'Yes.'

'At what time?'

'Eight o'clock in the evening.'

'Where, may I ask?'

'Along the street.'

'Short and plain.'

Raskolnikov had answered sharply and jerkily. He was as white as a handkerchief, but he did not drop his dark, inflamed-looking eyes before Ilya Petrovich's glance.

'He can hardly stand, and you . . ' began Nikodim Fomich.

'All right!' said Ilya Petrovich in a peculiar tone. Nikodim Fomich seemed to want to say something more, but, glancing at the chief clerk, who was looking at him fixedly, he was silent. A sudden strange silence fell on them all.

'Well, all right,' concluded Ilya Petrovich. 'We will not detain you any longer.'

Raskolnikov went out. As he did so, he heard animated talk break out behind him, with Nikodim Fomich's inquiring tones

rising above the rest . . . When he reached the street he had quite recovered.

'Search, search, they are going to search at once!' he repeated to himself, hurrying along; 'the scoundrels, they are suspicious!' His former fear enveloped him once again from head to foot.

## CHAPTER II

'WHAT if they have searched already? What if I find them in my room now?'

Here was his room. Nobody, nothing; nobody had been in. Even Nastasya had touched nothing. But good God! how could he have left all those things in the hole?

He flung himself across the room, thrust his hand under the paper, and began pulling out the things and cramming them into his pockets. There were eight articles altogether: two small boxes with earrings or something of the kind in them (he did not examine them closely), then four small morocco cases, a chain wrapped in newspaper and something else, perhaps a decoration, also in newspaper . . .

He distributed them among the pockets of his overcoat and the remaining right-hand pocket of his trousers, trying to make them inconspicuous. He put the purse in with them as well. Then he went out of the room, this time leaving the door wide open.

He walked quickly and resolutely, and although he felt broken with fatigue, his senses were alert. He was afraid of pursuit, afraid that in half an hour, or a quarter, instructions would be issued to follow him; that meant that come what might he must cover up his tracks before then. He must manage to do it, also, while a little strength and power of reasoning still remained to him . . . But where should he go?

He had long since decided to 'throw everything into the canal, so that all traces will vanish and the affair be done with.' He had reached the decision during the night, in his delirium, at a time, he remembered, when he had more than once tried to get up and go 'quickly, quickly and get rid of it all.' But it was not so easy.

He had wandered along the embankment of the Ekaterinsky canal for half an hour or perhaps longer, looking at the ways down to the water as he came across them. But he could

not even dream of fulfilling his purpose here: either there were rafts at the foot of the stairs with women washing linen on them, or boats were moored there, and everywhere there were swarms of people, and besides, he could be overlooked everywhere from the embarkment and it would look suspicious for someone to go down on purpose to throw something into the water. Again, what if the cases did not sink, but floated? Indeed, they were sure to. Everyone would see. Even as it was everybody he met looked at him as if they had some business with him. 'Why is that, or am I just imagining it?' he thought.

Finally it occurred to him that it might be better to go somewhere along the Neva. There were fewer people there and he would be less noticeable; besides, it would be more convenient there, and, most important of all, it was farther away. He felt surprised that he had been wandering for at least half an hour in anguished worry, in dangerous places, before he thought of this. And he had wasted that half-hour in an ill-judged project simply because he had come to a decision in his sleep or in delirium! He was becoming extraordinarily absent-minded and forgetful, and he realized it. Decidedly, he must hurry.

He walked along the Voznesensky Prospect towards the Neva, but another idea came to him on the way. 'Why in the Neva? Why in the water at all? Would it not be better to go somewhere a long way off, perhaps as far as the Islands again, and, in a solitary place in a wood, bury everything under a bush, and perhaps mark the spot?' He could find no fault with this idea, although he felt that he was not at this moment capable of judging clearly and soundly.

He was not destined, however, to reach the Islands, either: emerging from the Voznesensky Prospect into a square, he caught sight on his left of the entrance to a courtyard entirely surrounded by blank walls. Immediately to the right of the gate stretched the long windowless side of a neighbouring four-storied building. To the left, parallel with this wall and also from close by the gate, a wooden hoarding ran in for about twenty paces and then bent round to the left. It was a piece of fenced-off waste land, strewn with various rubbish. Farther in, in the far depths of the yard, the corner of a low, sooty, stone shed, evidently part of some workshop, showed behind the fence.

Apparently there was some carriage-maker's or carpenter's



shop here, or something of the kind; there was a good deal of coal-dust everywhere, nearly down to the gates. 'This would be a place to throw the things and get away,' he thought at once. Seeing nobody in the yard he stepped into the gateway, and immediately saw, just inside by the hoarding, a trench or channel such as is often constructed where there are many factory-hands, handicraftsmen, cab-drivers, and so on, in a building, and above it, on the hoarding, was written in chalk the usual witticism: 'Rubbitch must not be shot hear.' This was good, because it would not look suspicious if he went in and stopped. 'This is just the place to throw everything down in a heap and leave it!'

He looked round once more and had already thrust his hand into a pocket when he saw, close against the outer wall, in a space between the gate and the trench not more than thirty inches across, a great unhewn block of stone, which must have weighed sixty pounds. Beyond the wall was the street, and the sound of passers-by hurrying along the pavement could be heard quite often, but he could not be seen there behind the gate unless someone came right in from the street. This, however, was quite possible and the thought prompted him to make haste.

He bent over the stone, seized it firmly near the top with both hands, exerted all his strength, and turned it over. There was a small hollow under the stone and he threw into it all the things from his pockets. The purse went on top of the other things, and the little hollow did not seem too full. Then he seized the stone and rolled it back again; it settled into its old position, except that it was barely perceptibly higher. He scraped up a little earth and pressed it against the edges of the stone with his foot. No appearance of disturbance remained.

He left the yard and turned towards the square. A violent, almost unbearable rejoicing filled him for a moment as it had done before in the police office. 'My tracks are covered! And who would ever dream of searching under that stone? It may have been there ever since the house was built, and perhaps it will be there for as long again. And even if they found the things, who would think of me? It's all over; there's no evidence,' and he laughed. Yes, afterwards he remembered that he laughed a long, nervous, shallow, noiseless laugh, and went on laughing all the time he was crossing the square. But the laughter ceased as he turned on to Konnogvardeysky

Boulevard, where two days before he had encountered the young girl. Other ideas had come into his mind. He felt a sudden violent repugnance to passing the bench on which he had sat and thought after the girl left, and it seemed to him also that it would be terrible to meet again the moustached policeman to whom he had given the twenty copecks. 'Devil take him!'

As he walked, he looked about him with an air of irritated distraction. All his thoughts were now centred round one most important point, whose importance he fully recognized, and he felt that now he had come face to face with it, for the first time, after these two months.

'Oh, the devil take it all!' he thought in a sudden access of ungovernable irritation. 'If it's begun, it's begun, and to the devil with her, and with the new life! Oh God, how stupid it all is! . . . How much lying and cringing I did today! How loathsomely I fawned on that filthy Ilya Petrovich and played up to him! However, that's not too! I ought to spit on all of them, and on my own behaviour! It's all wrong! It's all wrong! . . .'

Suddenly he stopped, baffled and bitterly disconcerted by a new and entirely unexpected but extraordinarily simple question. 'If you really knew what you were doing, and weren't just blundering along, if you really had a definite and constant objective, how is it that you have never even looked into the purse, and have no idea what you gained, or for what you underwent all those torments and consciously performed such base, vile, and ignoble actions? Indeed, you only wanted to throw the purse into the water, together with the other things, without looking at them either . . . Why is that?'

Yes, it was true, it was all true. He had, however, known it before, and the problem was not new; and when he had made his decision in the night, to throw everything into the water, he had made it without hesitation or reconsideration, but as if it had to be, as if it could not be otherwise . . . Yes, he knew it all, and he remembered everything; indeed, it was all but decided yesterday, in that moment when he crouched above the trunk, and dragged the cases out of it . . . It was indeed so! . . .

'It's because I am very ill,' he morosely decided at last; 'I have been tormenting and torturing myself, and I hardly know what I am doing . . . Yesterday, and the day before, and

all this time, I have been tormenting myself . . . When I am well . . . I shall not torture myself like this . . . But what if I never get quite well again? Oh God, how sick I am of it all! . . .'

He went on walking. He longed to find some distraction, but he did not know what to do or how to begin. A new and irresistible sensation of boundless, almost physical loathing for everything round him, an obstinate, hateful, malicious sensation, was growing stronger and stronger with every minute. He loathed everyone he met—their faces, their walk, their gestures. He thought that if anybody were to speak to him, he would spit and snarl at them like an animal . . .

When he came out on to the embankment of the Little Neva, on Vasilievsky Island near the bridge, he stopped. 'Why, he lives there, in that house,' he thought. 'How does it come about that I have somehow arrived at Razumikhin's? It's just like the way it happened before . . . I wonder, though, whether I really meant to come here, or simply walked along and came out here by chance? It makes no difference; . . . the day before yesterday . . . I said I should come here on the day after *that*, and here I am! As if I could possibly not come!'

He went up to the fifth floor, where Razumikhin lived, and found him at home, busy writing in his little room. They had not seen each other for four months. Razumikhin opened the door; he was wearing a dressing-gown worn to tatters, and slippers on his bare feet, and he was unkempt, unshaven, and unwashed. He looked astonished.

'What brings you here?' he exclaimed, eyeing his friend from head to foot; then he stopped and whistled.

'Are things as bad as that? And you, my dear chap, used to be the smartest of us all,' he added, glancing at Raskolnikov's rags. 'But sit down; you must be tired.' When his visitor sank on to an oilcloth-covered sofa, in even worse condition than his own, Razumikhin realized that he was ill.

'You are seriously ill, do you know that?' He tried to feel his pulse, but Raskolnikov snatched his hand away. 'Don't! . . .' he said. 'I have come . . . it is like this: I haven't any papers . . . I should like . . . however, I don't want any papers . . .'

'Do you know, you are delirious,' remarked Razumikhin, who was watching him closely.

'No, I'm not . . .' Raskolnikov got up. When he came up to Razumikhin's room he had somehow not thought of how he would have to come face to face with him. Now it had taken



him only a moment's trial to realize that he was less inclined than ever to enter into personal relations with anybody on the face of the earth. Gail welled up in him. He felt choked with rage at himself as soon as he crossed Razumikhin's threshold.

'Good-bye!' he said abruptly, and made for the door.

'Since you're here, stay a little. Don't be so freakish!'

'Don't' . . . 'repeated Raskolnikov, again snatching his hand away.

'What the deuce did you come for, then? Have you gone clean off your head? You know, this is . . . almost an insult. I won't put up with it.'

'Well, listen. I came to you because I didn't know anyone else who might help me . . . to begin . . . because you're the nicest of the lot, I mean the most sensible, and can judge . . . But now I see that I don't want anything, do you hear, anything at all . . . I want nobody's help or pity . . . I myself . . . alone . . . Oh, that's enough! Leave me in peace!'

'Stop a minute, chimney-sweep! You're quite mad! Do as you like, as far as I'm concerned. Look. I haven't any pupils myself, and much I care; but there's a bookseller, Kheruvimov, in the Rag Market, and he's as good as lessons any day. I wouldn't exchange him for the chance of teaching in five rich merchants' houses. He does a bit of publishing, and is bringing out some little books on the natural sciences—and how they sell! The titles alone are worth I don't know what! You've always maintained that I was stupid, let me tell you, my dear fellow, there are some people even stupider than I! Now he's sneaked into the Movement; he himself doesn't understand the first thing, but needless to say I urge him on. Here are two sheets and a bit of German text—in my opinion it is the saliest sort of charlatanism—the question discussed, in one word, is whether a woman is a human being or not, and, of course, it is triumphantly proved that she is. Kheruvimov is bringing it out as a contribution to the Woman question.' I am doing the translation; he will stretch the two and a half sheets to about six, we shall add half a page of grandiloquent titles, and issue it at half a rouble. It will pass! I get six roubles a sheet for the translation, that means fifteen for the whole thing, and I have had six roubles in advance. When we have finished this, we shall begin on another about whales, and afterwards there are some very boring pieces of gossip marked out in the second part of the *Confessions*, and we will translate

them, someone or other has told Kheruvimov that Rousseau is in his way a sort of Racinchev. Of course, I don't contradict him; he can go to the devil. Well, would you like to translate the second sheet of *Woman I Love a Horse-Bug*? If you would, take the text now, and pens and paper—they are all supplied—and take three roubles, because I had an advance on the whole thing, both the first and the second sheet, and that means three roubles are due as your share. When you have finished, you get the three roubles more. And there's one other thing, please don't think I am only trying to do you a good turn. On the contrary, as soon as you came in I began to see how use you could be to me. I began with my spelling is bad, and in the second page, my German is sometimes very weak, so that I am reduced to making up most of it myself, combining myself with the idea that it is probably an improvement. But who knows? Perhaps I'm not improving it, but spelling it. Are you going to take it or not?

When a word Raskolnikov picked up the sheets of German text and the three roubles and went out. Raskolnikov looked after him in surprise. Raskolnikov had already reached the First Line when he turned a round on his heel, clumped once more to Raskolnikov's room, laid the papers and the money on the table, still without a word, and was gone.

'You must be having made something' roared Raskolnikov, losing his temper at last. 'What sort of game do you think you are playing? You tackle even me. What the devil did you come for, anyway?'

'I don't want . . . translations . . . I'm tired Raskolnikov, are you listening to what I say?'

'Then what the devil do you want?' cried Raskolnikov. Raskolnikov went on down in silence.

'Hi, you! Where do you live?'

There was no answer.

'Well, then, be damned to you! . . .'

But Raskolnikov had already reached the street. He was on the Nikolaevsky Bridge before he came to himself again, as a consequence of a very unpleasant incident. The driver of a carriage laid his whip heavily across his back, because he had almost fallen under the horses' feet, in spite of the coachman's repeated cries. The blow so enraged him that, leaping for the parapet (for some unknown reason he had been walking in the middle of the roadway), he ground his teeth victoriously with a

clicking noise. Of course, there was laughter and comment from the passers-by.

'Serve him right!'

'An unmitigated scoundrel!'

'It's a well-known trick; they pretend to be drunk and get under the wheels on purpose; and you are responsible.'

'That's the way they make a living, my dear sir . . .' Just then, as he stood by the parapet gazing uselessly and angrily after the retreating carriage and rubbing his back, he felt some money being thrust into his hand. He looked and saw an elderly woman of the merchant class, in a Russian head-dress and goat-skin shoes, and a young girl, who seemed to be her daughter, wearing a hat and carrying a green parasol. 'Take it, in the name of Christ' He took the money—it was a twenty-copeck piece—and they passed on. His dress and appearance might well have induced them to take him for a beggar, someone who picked up farthings in the streets, but for the gift of so much as twenty copecks he was probably indebted to the pity aroused by the blow from the whip.

He clasped the money in his hand, walked a few steps, and turned his face towards the Neva, looking towards the Palace. There was not a cloud in the sky and the water, unusually for the Neva, looked almost blue. The dome of the cathedral, which is seen at its best from this point, not more than twenty paces towards the chapel from the centre of the bridge, shone through the clear air, and every detail of its ornament was distinct. The sting of the lash had abated, and Raskolnikov forgot the blow; a disquieting but vague idea occupied his whole mind. He stood for a long time gazing steadily into the distance; this spot was particularly familiar to him. A hundred times, while he was at the university, had he stopped at this very place, usually on his way home, to fix his eyes on the truly magnificent view and wonder each time at the confused and indescribable sensation it woke in him. An inexplicable chill always breathed on him from that superb panorama, for him a deaf and voiceless spirit filled the splendid picture . . . Each time he marvelled at his gloomy and mysterious impression, and then, mistrustful of himself, deferred consideration of the riddle to some future time. Now he was sharply reminded of his former questionings and perplexities, and it seemed to him that the recollection did not come by chance. It appeared to him strange and marvellous that he should have stopped in



the very same place as he used to do, as if he really imagined he could think the same thoughts now as then, and be interested in the same ideas and images as had interested him once . . . not long ago. This was almost laughable, and yet his heart was constricted with pain. In some gulf far below him, almost out of sight beneath his feet, lay all his past, all his old ideas, and problems, and thoughts, and sensations, and this great panorama, and his own self, and everything, everything . . . He felt as if he had soared upwards and everything had vanished from his sight . . . He made an involuntary gesture with his hand, and became aware of the twenty-copeck piece squeezed in his fist. He unclasped his hand and stared at the money, then flung it into the water with a sweep of his arm; then he turned away and walked homewards. He felt that he had in that moment cut himself from everybody and everything, as if with a knife.

It was evening when he reached home, so that he must have been walking for about six hours. How and by what route he went back he could never afterwards remember. He undressed and lay down, shuddering like an overdriven horse, pulled his winter overcoat over him, and fell instantly asleep.

It was dusk when he was startled awake by a terrible cry. God, what was that shriek? He had never before heard such a babble of unnatural noises, such howling and wailing, grinding of teeth, tears, blows, and curses. He could never even have imagined such ferocity and frenzy. He raised himself in a panic, and sat on his bed in a torment of fear. The sounds of struggling, wailing, and cursing grew louder and louder. Suddenly, to his utter amazement, he recognized his landlady's voice. She was howling, shrieking, and wailing, the words tumbling out of her mouth in an indistinguishable spate; she seemed to be imploring someone to stop, for she was being unmercifully beaten, out there on the stairs. Her assailant, hoarse with rage and fury, was also pouring out a stream of unrecognizable words, stuttering with haste. Raskolnikov began to tremble like a leaf; he knew that voice, it was the voice of Ilya Petrovich. Ilya Petrovich here, and beating his landlady! He was kicking her, thumping her head on the stairs—that was clear, the noises, the howls, the blows, revealed it. What was it? Had the world come to an end? He could hear a crowd gathering on the landings and all up the stairs; there were voices, outcries, footsteps running up and down the stairs,

raps, doors slamming. 'But what is it for? What is it all about? How could it possibly be happening?' he repeated to himself, seriously wondering if he had gone mad. But no, he could hear it too plainly for that. But then, if he were not mad, they must be coming here, this moment, 'because . . . it must be all on account of . . . yesterday . . . Oh God!' He thought of fastening his door, but he could not raise his arm . . . and besides it would be no use! Fear crept like ice round his heart, tortured his nerves, numbed his spirit . . . The uproar, which had probably lasted for ten minutes, died down gradually; his landlady groaned and lamented still, Ilya Petrovich went on cursing and threatening . . . At last he too seemed quiet; no more was heard of him; 'Good Heavens! Can he possibly have gone away?' Yes, the landlady was going too, still groaning and weeping . . . that was her door slamming . . . The crowd was melting away into the different flats — exclaiming, arguing, calling to one another in voices that now rose to a scream, now sank to a whisper. There must have been very many of them; practically everybody in the house had come running. 'But, good God, how can all this have really happened? And why, why, did he come here?'

Raskolnikov fell back exhausted on his sofa, but he could not close his eyes again; he lay there for half an hour, in the grip of such anguish, such an intolerable feeling of limitless terror, as he had never before experienced. Suddenly a bright light illuminated the room; Nastasya had come in with a candle and a plate of soup. She looked at him and, seeing that he was not asleep, put the candle on the table and began to set out the things she had brought, bread, salt, a spoon, and the plate.

'I suppose you've had nothing to eat since yesterday. You've been wandering about all day, and you've got a fever.'

'Nastasya . . . why were they beating the landlady?'

She stared at him.

'Who was?'

'Just now . . . half an hour ago, Ilya Petrovich, the chief police officer's assistant, on the staircase . . . Why was he beating her like that? And . . . why did he come?'

Nastasya studied him silently for a long time, frowning. He found her scrutiny very unpleasant, even frightening.

'Nastasya, why don't you say something?' he asked at last hesitantly, in a weak voice.

'It's the blood,' she answered at last quietly, as if she were talking to herself.

'Blood! . . . What blood? . . . ' he mumbled. He had turned pale, and moved closer to the wall. Nastasya went on looking at him in silence.

'Nobody was beating the landlady,' she said again in a severe, decided voice. He looked at her, hardly breathing.

'I heard it myself. . . I wasn't asleep . . . I was sitting here . . . ' he said, even more hesitantly. 'I listened for a long time . . . The assistant chief of police came . . . Everybody came on to the stairs, out of all the flats . . . '

'Nobody came. It's your blood that makes a noise. It's when it hasn't got any outlet, and it begins to get all clotted, and then you begin to get visions . . . Are you going to have something to eat, eh?'

He did not answer. Nastasya still stood near him, with her eyes fixed on him.

'Give me a drink . . . dear Nastasya.'

She went downstairs and returned in a minute with water in a white earthenware mug; but he hardly knew what happened next. He only remembered swallowing a few drops of cold water and spilling some on his chest. Then came complete unconsciousness.

### CHAPTER III

HE was not entirely unconscious throughout the whole time of his illness; he lay in a fever, delirious and sometimes half-conscious. Afterwards he could remember a good deal about it. At one time it seemed to him that he was surrounded by many people, who wanted to carry him away somewhere, and that they were wrangling and quarrelling over him. Then suddenly he was alone in the room; everybody had gone out, they were afraid of him, and only occasionally opened the door a crack to look in at him. They would threaten him, hatch out plots among themselves, laugh and jeer at him. He remembered Nastasya's being with him often; he could also distinguish a man, who seemed very well known to him, but who it was he could not think, and he worried and even wept over this. Once it would seem to him that he had lain there for a month; another time, that it was still the same day as he fell ill. About *that* about *that* he had quite forgotten; but he was conscious all



the time that he had forgotten something that he ought not to forget, and he tortured himself, racked his brains to remember, groaned, fell into mad rages or into the grip of terrible, unbearable fear. Then he tried to drag himself up, to run, but somebody always restrained him by force, and he would fall back into helplessness and oblivion. At last he came completely to himself.

This was one morning at ten o'clock. At this hour, when the weather was clear, the sunlight always fell in a long streak across the right-hand wall of his room and lit up the corner near the door. Near his bed stood Nastasya with somebody else, quite unknown to him, who was watching him with great curiosity. This was a bearded young man in a caftan, who looked like a superior workman. The landlady was peering round the half-open door. Raskolnikov raised himself.

'Who is this, Nastasya?' he asked, pointing to the man.

'Look, he's come round!' said she.

'He's come round,' echoed the visitor. Realizing that he was conscious, the landlady, who had been looking round the door, concealed herself by closing it. She was always very shy, and avoided conversations and explanations. She was about forty, stout and heavy, and quite good looking, with black eyes and hair; she had the good nature of the fat and lazy, but her shyness was altogether excessive.

'Who are . . . you?' Raskolnikov went on, turning to the man himself. At this moment, however, the door was opened wide again, and Razumikhin, stooping a little because of his height, came in.

'This place is no better than a ship's cabin,' he exclaimed as he came in; 'I always bump my head. And they call it a lodging! Well, my dear fellow, you've come round, have you? I've just heard it from Pashenka.'

'He's just this minute come to,' said Nastasya.

'Just this minute come to,' assented the strange man, with a slight smile.

'And who might you be, sir?' asked Razumikhin, turning to him. 'Allow me to present myself, Vrazumikhin, not Razumikhin' as I am usually called, but Vrazumikhin, a student and a gentleman, and this is my friend. Well, sir, and who are you?'

'I am the foreman-clerk in the merchant Shelopaev's counting-house, sir, and I am here on business, sir.'

'Be good enough to sit down here,' and Razumikhin sat down himself on the other side of the little table. 'I'm glad you've come to yourself, my dear chap,' he went on, addressing Raskolnikov. 'You've hardly eaten or drunk anything for three days. It's true they did give you tea in a spoon. I brought Zosimov to see you twice. Do you remember him? He examined you carefully, and said at once that it was nothing much—you've just been a bit queer in the head. Some sort of nonsensical nervous trouble, and the wrong sort of food, he says, not enough beer and horse-radish, that made you ill, but it's nothing—it will pass, and you'll be all right again. He's a clever chap, Zosimov. His treatment was capital.' He turned to the workman again. 'Well, I don't want to detain you; would you care to explain your business? Observe, Rodya, this is the second time someone has been here from their office, only before it was not this man but somebody else, and I had a talk with him. Who was it who came here before?

'Let's see; that would be the day before yesterday. Yes. It were Alexey Semenovitch; he belongs to our office, too.'

'I suppose he is a bit more competent than you; don't you think so?'

'Yes, sir; he be just that, a bit sounder, like.'

'Admirable! Well, go on.'

'Well, through Afanasy Ivanovich Vakhrushin, who I don't doubt you've heard of, more than once, and by request from your mama, sir, there is money coming to you through our office, sir,' began the workman, addressing Raskolnikov direct. 'In case you was to have come to yourself, sir, by now—thirty-five roubles is what I have to hand over, sir, Semen Semenovitch having been notified to that effect by Afanasy Ivanovich by request of your mama as aforesaid. Are you informed of it, sir?'

'Yes, . . . I remember . . . Vakhrushin,' said Raskolnikov thoughtfully.

'You hear: he knows the merchant Vakhrushin,' exclaimed Razumikhin. 'Who says he's not come to himself? By the way, I observe that you are also a very competent man. Well, it does one good to hear such wise and intelligent speeches.'

'That's the very man, sir, Vakhrushin, Afanasy Ivanovich, and by request of your mama, who in the manner aforesaid has already once remitted money through him, he did not refuse this time, sir, and notified Semen Semenovitch as of that date

to transfer to you thirty-five roubles, sir, in anticipation of better, sir.' \*

'Well, "in anticipation of better" is the best thing you have said yet; although that about "your mama" isn't bad, either. Well, what is your opinion—is he or isn't he in full possession of his faculties, eh?'

'It isn't my opinion that matters but only on account of the receipt he would have to be, sir.'

'He'll manage to scribble it somehow. What's that you've got, a receipt-book?'

'Yes, sir, here it is, sir.'

'Give it here. Now, Rodya, raise yourself up a little. I'll help you. Just sign "Raskolnikov" for him. Come, take the pen; money is sweeter to us just now, brother, than honey.'

'I don't want it,' said Raskolnikov, pushing away the pen.

'You don't want what?'

'I am not going to sign.'

'What the devil? A receipt is absolutely necessary.'

'I don't want . . . the money . . .'

'Oh, it's the money you don't want, is it? Now there, my dear fellow, you lie, as I can bear witness!—Don't worry, please, this is only because he . . . is wandering again. He is quite capable of that even when he is wide awake . . . You are a man of discernment; we will guide his hand and he will sign. Let us set about it . . .'

'Oh, I can come another time, after all, sir.'

'No, no. why should we trouble you? You are a man of sense and judgement . . . Well, Rodya, don't detain your visitor . . . you can see he is waiting,' and he prepared in all seriousness to guide Raskolnikov's hand.

'No, don't, I'll do it myself . . . ' said he, and he took the pen and wrote his signature in the book. The man laid the money on the table and departed.

'Bravo! And now, my dear fellow, do you want something to eat?'

'Yes, I do,' answered Raskolnikov.

'Have you got any soup?'

'Yesterday's,' answered Nastasya, who had been standing there all the time.

'Made with potatoes and rice?'

'Yes, potatoes and rice.'

'I know it by heart. Shing it in, and bring tea as well.'



'Very well.'

Raskolnikov watched everything with deep astonishment and dull, unreasoning fear. He made up his mind to say nothing, but wait to see what came next. 'I don't think I'm delirious,' he thought; 'it seems real enough . . .'

Two minutes later Nastasya returned with the soup, and explained that the tea would not be long. With the soup appeared two spoons, two plates, and a complete set of condiments: salt, pepper, mustard for the beef, and other things that had not been seen on his table, in such neat order, for a long time past. The tablecloth was clean.

'It wouldn't be a bad idea, Nastasyushka, if Praskovya Pavlovna were to order a couple of bottles of beer. We could do with them.'

'Well, that's cool!' grumbled Nastasya, as she went to do his bidding.

Raskolnikov still watched with close attention. Meanwhile Razumikhin sat down beside him on the sofa, as clumsy as a bear, encircled his friend's head with his left arm (although he could quite well have raised himself), and with his right carried a spoonful of soup to his mouth, first blowing on it once or twice so that it should not be too hot. The soup was in fact only luke-warm. Raskolnikov eagerly swallowed a spoonful, then a second and a third. After a few more mouthfuls, Razumikhin stopped, explaining that he must consult Zosimov about any more.

Nastasya came in, carrying two bottles of beer.

'Would you like some tea?'

'Yes, I should.'

'Roll up some tea as well, Nastasya; I think he can have tea without waiting for the doctor's permission. But here's the beer!' He moved across to his chair, drew soup and beef towards him and began to eat with as much appetite as though he had not broken his fast for three days.

'I have been having dinner here at your place every day, Rodya, my dear fellow,' he muttered as clearly as a mouth stuffed with beef would allow, 'and Pashenka, your nice little landlady, has provided it; she delights to feed me. I, of course, do not demand it; but I don't, as a matter of fact, raise any objections either. But here is Nastasya with the tea. How quick she can be! Nastenka, would you like some beer?'

'Get away with you!'

'A drop of tea, then?'

'I don't mind.'

'Pour it out. Wait, I will pour it for you myself. You sit down.'

He took command of the teapot and poured out a cup, and then another. Then he abandoned his luncheon and crossed again to the sofa. As before, he put his left arm round the sick man's head, raised him, and began to feed him teaspoonfuls of tea, again blowing on them fervently and incessantly, as if this process of blowing were the most important and salutary part of the treatment. Raskolnikov remained silent, making no protest, although he felt that he was quite strong enough to sit up without any outside assistance, and that he had sufficient command of his limbs not only to hold a spoon or cup but even, perhaps, to walk. But a strange, all but feral cunning prompted him to conceal how strong he was, to be low, even to pretend, if it proved necessary, that he had not completely recovered his understanding, and meanwhile to listen and try to find out what was going on. He could not, however, quite master his repugnance, when he had swallowed a dozen spoonfuls of tea, he jerked his head free, pettishly pushed away the spoon, and lay back again on his pillow. A real pillow, filled with down and covered with a clean pillowcase, now lay under his head, he noticed this as one more of the things he must try to understand.

'Pashenka must send up some raspberry jam today, to make a drink for him,' said Razumikhin, sitting down at the table and applying himself again to the soup and beer.

'And where is she supposed to get raspberries?' asked Nastasya, balancing her saucer on the tips of her outstretched fingers and drinking her tea 'through a piece of sugar'.

'She will get them, my dear girl, from the shop. You see, Rodya, a great many things have been happening here that you don't know about. When you ran away in such a scoundrelly fashion and wouldn't tell me your address, I got so furious that I decided to seek you out and punish you. I set about it the very same day. I walked all over the place, and made inquiries everywhere. I couldn't remember your present address, which is not surprising, since I never knew it. About your last lodgings I could recollect only that they were near Five Corners, in Kharlamov's house—and then afterwards it turned out not to be Kharlamov's at all, but Buch's—what

mistaken ideas about sounds we get sometimes' Well, I got very annoyed. I got annoyed, and so, next day, I thought I might as well try the Register of Addresses, and just imagine: they found you for me inside two minutes. They've got you down there.'

'Me!'

'Of course; and yet while I was there they simply couldn't find General Kobelev. Well, to cut a long story short, as soon as I stumbled on this place, I got to know all your affairs; all of them, brother, all of them. Nastasya here knows that; I made the acquaintance of Nikodim Fomich, of the porter, and of Mr. Zametov, Alexander Grigoryevich, the chief clerk at the police office here, and had Ilya Petrovich pointed out to me; lastly I got to know Pashenka, and that was the crowning point; Nastasya here knows . . .'

'You got round her,' murmured Nastasya, with a mischievous smile.

'You ought to put that sugar *in* your tea, Nastasya Nikiforovna.'

'Go on with you, you dog!' cried Nastasya, bursting out laughing. 'Besides, I'm Petrovna, not Nikiforovna,' she added as soon as she could for laughing.

'We appreciate your confidence. Well, my dear chap, not to waste words, I wanted to get rid at one sweep of all the cobwebs of prejudice here, to galvanize everybody, as it were, but Pashenka was too much for me. I didn't expect that she would be so . . . sweet and charming . . . eh, brother? What do you think?'

Raskolnikov did not answer, but he kept his anxious eyes fixed on his friend, as they had been throughout. Not in the least disconcerted by his silence, Razumikhin went on, exactly as if he had received a reply and were expressing his agreement with it: 'Yes, she is indeed a very nice, good creature, in all respects.'

'Well, you are a one!' exclaimed Nastasya, who seemed to derive inexplicable enjoyment from this conversation.

'It's a pity, my dear fellow, that you didn't understand how to deal with the situation at the very beginning. The way you handled her was wrong. You know, she is, shall I say, a most unexpected character. But we can talk of that later . . . Only how on earth did things reach such a pass that she dared to stop sending up your dinner? And that bill of exchange? You must surely have been out of your mind, to sign a thing like that.



And then that proposed marriage, when her daughter, Natalya Fyodorovna, was still alive . . . I know everything! But I see that I have touched a sensitive spot. I am an ass. You must forgive me. But talking of stupidity—don't you think Praskovya Pavlovna is not nearly as stupid as she might appear at first sight, eh, brother?"

'Yes . . .,' Raskolnikov let fall, looking away, but conscious that the conversation had better be kept going.

'That's true, isn't it?' exclaimed Razumikhin, visibly pleased to have received an answer, 'but she's not clever either, is she? She's a quite, quite unexpected character. I tell you, my dear fellow, I have lost my head a little . . . She must be forty. She admits to thirty-six, and she's certainly not overstating it. However, I swear my relations with her are purely platonic, though more complicated than any of your algebraic formulas could ever be—completely incomprehensible, in fact. But this is all beside the point, the fact is, that when she realized you were no longer a student, had lost your pupils, and had no decent clothes, and that since her daughter's death you could no longer be looked on as a member of the family, she took fright, and when you for your part skulked in a corner, and would take up none of the threads of your former life, she decided she must get rid of you. She had nourished this intention a long time but she didn't want to say good-bye to that bill of exchange. Besides, you had assured her that your mama would pay it . . .'

'It was very wrong of me to say that . . . My mama has barely enough money to keep her from having to accept charity . . . and I lied so that I should be allowed to remain here and . . . get my food,' said Raskolnikov loudly and distinctly.

'Yes, that was very sensible of you. Only the snag is, that this Mr. Chebarov, a man of business and a Civil Councillor, turned up. Without him, Pashenka would have been altogether too bashful to do anything; but men of business are not shame-faced, and of course his first question was "Is there any hope of realizing on the bill?"' Answer: "Yes, because there is a mama who will come to Rodenka's rescue with her pension of a hundred and twenty-five roubles, if it means going without enough to eat herself, and a sister who would sell herself into slavery for him." That was enough for him . . . Now, don't get restless! My dear fellow, I've ferreted out all your secrets now; you did right to open your heart to Pashenka, when you were

practically one of the family, and what I am saying now is in pure affection . . . This is what happens: the sensitive and honest man opens his heart, and the business man listens and takes it all in, so that he can swallow up the honest fellow. Well, she hands over this bill of yours in payment for something to this Chebarov and he makes a formal claim on it and is not to be put off. When I learnt all this, I would have liked to give him a piece of my mind, simply to relieve my feelings, but at that time Pashenka and I were on very harmonious terms, and I got the business stopped, at its source, by undertaking that you would pay. You understand, my dear fellow, I vouched for you. Chebarov was summoned and paid ten roubles on the nail, and we got the paper back, I have the honour to present it to you;—now they rely on your word alone. Here it is—take it! Now it has no force.'

Razumikhin laid the note of hand on the table; Raskolnikov glanced at it and, without saying a word, turned to the wall. The gesture jarred even on Razumikhin.

'I see, brother,' he went on after a moment's pause, 'that I have made a fool of myself again. I wanted to entertain you and amuse you with my chatter, but it seems I've only annoyed you!'

'Was it you that I didn't recognize in my delirium?' asked Raskolnikov after another short silence, without turning his head.

'Yes, it was, and you got very excited about it, especially once when I brought Zametov with me.'

'Zametov? . . . The chief clerk? . . . What for?' Raskolnikov swung round and fixed his eyes on Razumikhin.

'What makes you . . .? Why are you so alarmed?' He wanted to get to know you; it was his own wish, because we had talked so much about you . . . Who else do you suppose I could have learned so much from? He's a good chap, a fine fellow . . . in his own way of course. We are friends now, we see each other nearly every day. I've moved into this district, you know. Didn't you know? I've only just removed. I've been at Louisa's a couple of times with him, too. You remember Louisa, don't you—Louisa Ivanovna?'

'Did I say anything when I was delirious?'

'Of course you did. You were out of your mind.'

'What did I say?'

'Good heavens! What did you say? What anyone says when

they're raving. Well, my dear fellow, don't let's lose any more time—to business!"

He got up and seized his cap.

"What did I say?"

"You're repeating yourself, you know. Are you worrying about some secret or other? Don't be afraid; the Countess was never mentioned. But you talked about some bulldog, and about ear-rings, and a chain, and Krestovsky Island, and some porter, and Nikodim Fomich, and a lot about Ilya Petrovich, the assistant chief of police. Besides that, you were very interested in your own sock, very. You were whining: "Give it me, that's all I want." Zametov himself looked for your socks everywhere, and handed you that rubbish with his own fair hands, washed in scent and covered with rings. Only then did you calm down, and you held the rubbish in your hand for days together; we couldn't get it away from you. It must still be there somewhere under your blankets. And then again you asked for the fringe from your trousers, and so tearfully! We questioned you about it: what sort of fringe did you mean? But we couldn't make anything out . . . Well, now to business. Here are the thirty-five roubles, I am taking ten of them, and I'll render you an account in an hour or two. At the same time, I'll let Zosimov know, though he ought to have been here long ago anyhow; it's twelve o'clock. And you, Nastenka, while I'm out you must come and inquire frequently whether he wants something to drink or anything like that. And I'd tell Pashenka myself what is wanted. Good-bye!"

"He calls her Pashenka! Sly rogue!" said Nastasya after him. She opened the door and listened, but soon grew tired of this and ran downstairs herself. She seemed very anxious to find out what he was saying to the landlady, and it was evident that she herself was quite charmed with Razumikhin.

The door had hardly closed behind her when the sick man flung off the bedclothes and jumped up like one possessed. He had been waiting with feverish, burning impatience for them to go, so that as soon as they were out of the way he could apply himself to what he had to do. But what? what had he to do? He seemed to have clean forgotten. "Oh Lord, tell me just one thing; do they know everything or not? What if they know it all already and were only pretending, mocking me while I lay here, and what if they come in now and say that



they have known everything for a long time, and they were only . . . ? What shall I do now? I've forgotten! I knew a moment ago, but now it's gone! . . .

He stood in the middle of the room and looked round in an agony of indecision, he went to the door, opened it, and listened, but that was not it. Suddenly, as if he had remembered, he rushed to the corner where the wallpaper was torn, looked it over carefully, thrust his hand into the hole and rummaged there, but that was not it either. He went to the stove, opened it, and sought among the ashes; the bits of fringe from his trousers and the pieces of his torn pocket still lay there as he had thrown them; so nobody had looked there! Then he remembered the sock that Razumikhin had been talking about. Yes, here it was on the sofa, under the blanket, but it was so much more rubbed and dirty since that time that Zametov could certainly not have noticed anything.

'Ah, Zametov! . . . the office! . . . Why have I been summoned to the office? And where is the summons? Bah! . . . I am getting confused, that was before! I examined the sock then, as well, and now . . . now I have been ill. But why did Zametov come here? Why did Razumikhin bring him? . . . ' he murmured weakly, sitting on his sofa again. 'But what is this? Am I still delirious, or is all this real? It seems real enough . . . Ah, I remember: I must run away, run away at once, I must, I absolutely must, fly. But . . . where? And where are my clothes? My boots are not here! They've been taken away! Someone has hidden them—now I understand! Ah, here is my coat—they overlooked that! And here is the money on the table, thank God, and the I.O.U. . . . I will take the money and go away, and take other lodgings, where I shall not be found! . . . Yes, but the Register of Addresses? They'll find me! Razumikhin will find me. It would be better to run away altogether . . . a long way . . . to America, and be damned to them! I must take the bill as well . . . it will come in useful there. What else? They think I'm ill! They don't even know that I can walk, he-he-he! . . . I could tell by their eyes that they knew everything! It only I can get downstairs! But what if they have someone watching there, a police guard? What is this, tea? Ah, there's some beer left too, half a bottle, and cold!'

He seized the bottle, in which there still remained a whole glassful of beer, and drank it off in one gulp, as if he were trying to extinguish the fire in his breast. Before a minute had

passed, the beer had gone to his head, and a slight and somehow pleasurable shudder ran up his spine. He lay down and drew the blankets over him. His thoughts, disjointed and feverish enough before, now grew more and more confused, and soon a light and pleasant sleep enveloped him. Enjoying his new comfort, he found a place for his head on the pillow, wrapped himself closer in the thick soft quilt that covered him now instead of his torn old coat, sighed softly, and sank into a deep, sound, and healing sleep.

He awoke at the sound of somebody entering the room, opened his eyes and saw Razumikhin, who had opened the door and now stood on the threshold, hesitating whether to come in or not. Raskolnikov sat up abruptly and looked at him as if he were trying to recollect something.

'Oh, you're not asleep. Well, here I am! Nastasya, bring the parcel!' Razumikhin shouted down the stairs. 'You shall have an account at once . . .'

'What time is it?' asked Raskolnikov, looking round in alarm.

'You've had a capital sleep, my dear chap; it's evening, it must be six o'clock. You have slept for more than six hours . . .'

'Heavens! How could I? . . .'

'What is all this about? It's good for you. What is your hurry? Have you got an appointment, or something? We have all time before us. I've been waiting for three hours; I looked in a couple of times, but you were asleep. I called on Zosimov twice, but he wasn't in. It doesn't matter, he will be coming . . . I've been out attending to my own small affairs, too. You know I finished moving today, with my uncle. I have an uncle with me now, you know . . . Well now, to the devil with all that, let's get to business . . . Give the parcel here, Nastenka. Now we will . . . But how do you feel now, my dear fellow?'

'I am all right; I am not ill . . . Razumikhin, have you been here long?'

'I've just told you; I've been waiting three hours.'

'No, but before?'

'What do you mean, before?'

'Since when have you been coming here?'

'But you know I told you not long since; surely you remember?'

Raskolnikov thought. Recent happenings came back to him

dimly, as in a dream. He could not remember without help, and he looked inquiringly at Razumikhin.

'Hm,' said his friend, 'you've forgotten. I had a sort of idea, just now, that you were not quite yourself yet . . . But the sleep has done you good . . . Really, you look much better. That's fine! Well, let's get on! You'll remember presently. Look at this, old man.'

He began to undo the parcel, which obviously interested him greatly.

'This, my dear fellow, is a matter which has been very close to my heart, believe me. Because we must make a man of you. We'll begin at the top. Do you see this cap?' he began, drawing out of the parcel a cap which, while it looked quite decent, was very ordinary and cheap. 'Won't you try it on?'

'Afterwards—later,' said Raskolnikov, waving it irritably away.

'Oh no, my dear chap, don't refuse; it will be too late afterwards, and I shall not sleep all night, because I had to guess at the size when I bought it. Just right!' he exclaimed triumphantly, measuring it; 'exactly the size! What to put on your head, my dear chap, is the very first consideration in dress; it is a kind of introduction. My friend Tolstyakov has to take off his lid when he goes into a public lavatory, when everybody else wears his hat. Everybody thinks he does this out of servility of spirit, but it is simply because he is ashamed of the bird's nest he wears on his head; he is a very shame-faced man! Now, Nastenka, here you have two head-coverings—this "Palmerston"' for some unknown reason he applied this name to Raskolnikov's battered old round hat, which he had taken from the corner), 'and this jeweller's piece. Put a price on it, Rodya; what do you think I gave for it? Nastasyushka?' he added, turning to her when he saw that he would get no answer.

'Twenty copecks, I expect,' answered Nastasya.

'Twenty copecks! You're a fool!' he exclaimed, offended. 'Nowadays even you would fetch more than that. Eighty copecks, and that only because it's second-hand! It's true, there's a guarantee with it: if you wear this one out, next year you get another free, as true as I'm standing here! Well, now we come to the United States, as we used to call them at school. I warn you, I am proud of the trousers!' and he spread out before Raskolnikov a grey pair, of light-weight wool; 'not a



hole, not a mark, and though they have been worn, they are quite serviceable. The waistcoat is the same, a plain one as fashion decrees. As for their having been worn, that really is all the better—it makes them softer, not so stiff. . . . You see, Rodya, in order to get on in the world it is enough, in my opinion, to observe the seasons; if you don't ask for asparagus in January, you will save yourself a few roubles; so in relation to the things I've bought. It is summer now, and I've bought summer things, because anyway autumn will demand warmer materials and you will have to throw these away. . . . all the more because by that time they will have fallen to pieces of themselves, either from striving after elegance or from inner disorganization. Well, how much do you think for these?—Two roubles and twenty-five copecks! And with the same guarantee, remember: if they wear out you get new ones next year for nothing! At Fedyaev's shop they always deal on those terms, when once you've paid for something, it lasts the rest of your life, because you'll never go there again! Well, now we come to the boots—what do you think of them? Of course, you can see they're not new, but they are good for two or three months, because the workmanship and materials are foreign: the Secretary at the English Embassy sold them last week; he had only worn them for six days, but he badly needed the money. Price, one rouble fifty copecks. Lucky, wasn't I?"

"Maybe they're the wrong size," remarked Nastasya.

"The wrong size! And what is this?" and he pulled out of his pocket Raskolnikov's grey wrinkled boot, worn into holes and plastered with dried mud. "I took a sample with me, and they established the right size for me from this monstrous object. So far, everything had gone swimmingly. But about the linen. . . . Here to begin with, are three saris, the material is coarse, but they have the proper fashionable fronts. . . . Well, in sum: eighty copecks for the cap, two roubles and twenty-five copecks for the rest of the clothes, total three roubles five copecks; one and a half roubles the boots—because they are really very good ones—total four roubles and fifty-five copecks, and five roubles for all the linen—I got it at the wholesale price—grand total exactly nine roubles fifty-five copecks. Be good enough to accept the change, forty-five copecks in copper, and now, Rodya, you are completely fitted out again, because, in my opinion, your overcoat is not only still serviceable, but

even has a certain aristocratic air; that is what it means to order your clothes from Scharmer! Socks and other things of that sort I leave to you; we have twenty-five roubles left, and you need not worry about Pashenka or the rent; I told you your credit was inexhaustible. Now, my dear fellow, do just change your linen, otherwise some infection might perhaps linger in your shirt . . .

'Drop it! I don't want to!' Raskolnikov, who had listened with distaste to the strained playfulness of Razumikhin's account of his purchases, waved the suggestion away . . .

'My dear chap, this is impossible! What have I been wearing out shoe-leather for?' insisted Razumikhin. 'Nastasya, don't be modest, help him! There we are!' and in spite of Raskolnikov's resistance, he changed his linen for him. Raskolnikov fell back on his pillow and said nothing for a minute or two.

'They take so long to go away and leave me alone,' he thought. 'Where did the money come from for all this?' he asked at last, with his eyes on the wall.

'The money? Well, I'm hanged! It's your own money, of course. There was a man here from Vakhrushin's a little while ago; your mama sent it; surely you haven't forgotten that as well?'

'Now I remember . . .' said Raskolnikov, after pondering in moody silence for a long time. Razumikhin frowned and looked at him uneasily.

The door opened, and a tall heavy man came in. It seemed to Raskolnikov that there was something familiar about his appearance.

'Zosimov! At last!' cried Razumikhin joyfully.

## CHAPTER IV

ZOSIMOV was tall and stout, with a pale, puffy, clean shaven face and straight flaxen hair. He wore spectacles, and there was a heavy gold ring on one of his fat, swollen fingers. He must have been about twenty-seven years old. He was dressed in a modish loose light overcoat and light-coloured summer trousers, and his clothes gave a general impression of being loose, fashionable, and spick and span; his linen was irreproachable, and his watch-chain massive. His manner was

languid, a mingling of lethargy and studied ease, his pretentiousness, which he strove to conceal, was nevertheless nearly always apparent. His acquaintances found him ponderous, but opined that he knew his business.

'I've been to your place twice, my dear fellow . . . You see, he's come round!' exclaimed Razumikhin.

'Yes, yes, I see; well, how are we now, eh?' said Zosimov, looking hard at his patient and sitting down on the sofa at his feet, where he lounged as comfortably as the circumstances allowed.

'He's still under the weather,' continued Razumikhin, 'he almost cried when we changed his linen just now.'

'That's quite understandable, and you could have put it off till later, if he didn't want . . . The pulse is capital. The head still aching a little, eh?'

'I'm all right; I am quite well!' said Raskolnikov obstinately and irritably, raising himself with flashing eyes; but he fell back again on his pillow at once and turned to the wall. Zosimov watched him.

'Very good . . . everything is as it should be,' he pronounced in his drawling voice 'Has he eaten anything?'

They told him, and asked what the patient could be given.

'Anything at all . . . Soup, tea . . . He shouldn't have mushrooms or cucumbers, of course, nor beef . . . and . . . well, no need to go on talking now.' He exchanged glances with Razumikhin 'No more medicine or anything; tomorrow I will see . . . perhaps today it might . . . well, yes . . .'

'Tomorrow evening I shall take him for a walk,' Razumikhin decided. 'We will go to the Yusupov Gardens, and afterwards to the "Crystal Palace".'

'I should not move him tomorrow, or . . . perhaps a little . . . well, we shall see then.'

'It's a great disappointment I am having a house-warming today, only two steps away; I wish he could be there. If he could just lie on the sofa among us! You will be there? See you don't forget; you promised.'

'Perhaps later, if I can. What arrangements have you made?'

'Nothing much tea, vodka, herrings, a few patties. Just a few old friends.'

'Who, exactly?'



'Well, they're all from round about here, and, to be accurate, all new acquaintances—except perhaps my old uncle, and even he is new, he only arrived in St. Petersburg yesterday, to settle some small business matters. This is the first time I've seen him for five years.'

'Who is he?'

'Oh, he's vegetated all his life as a district postmaster . . . he has a small pension—he is sixty-five. He's hardly worth mentioning . . . All the same I'm very fond of him. Porfiry Petrovich will be coming; he is the examining magistrate here . . . he's a graduate of the College of Jurisprudence. You must know him.'

'Is he also some connexion of yours?'

'A very distant one. What are you frowning about? Just because you got severely talked to once, aren't you going to come?'

'Much I care for him!'

'All the better. Well, then there are some students, a teacher, one civil servant, one musician, an officer, Zametov . . .'

'Please tell me what you, or he either,' Zosimov nodded at Raskolnikov, 'can possibly have in common with someone like Zametov . . .'

'Oh, these grumblers! You and your principles! . . . you are fixed on your principles as though they were springs; you can't so much as turn round by your own volition. I think he is a good man—that's my principle and I don't want to know any more. Zametov is a wonderful man.'

'He has an itching palm.'

'Well, if he has, what of it? What does it matter?' exclaimed Razumikhin, suddenly growing unnaturally irritated; 'was I commending him for looking after himself? I said that in his way he is a good man! And I put it to you straight, look at it all ways—are there so many good people left? I am convinced that nobody would give more than a baked onion for *my* guts, and then only if you were thrown in into the bargain! . . .'

'That's not enough; I'd give two for you myself . . .'

'But I'd only give one for you! Go on, be witty! Zametov is still only a boy and I go very gently with him, because he ought to be won over, not repulsed. If once you repulse a man, you can't set him right, and it is still more so with a boy. With a boy you must go twice as carefully. Oh, you progressive

blockheads! You understand nothing! It is not the man you respect, but the office, and so you insult yourselves . . . And if you want to know, perhaps it was a common interest in one particular affair that brought us together.'

'I should like to know what.'

'Well, it's that affair of the house-painter . . . We're going to get him out! There'll be no trouble about it now. The thing is quite, quite clear! We need only put on a bit more pressure.'

'What painter are you talking about?'

'What, haven't I told you about it? I must have. No, wait a bit, I only told you the beginning . . . you know, about the murder of that old woman, the pawnbroker, some official's widow . . . well, now there's a painter involved in it . . .'

'Yes, I had heard about the murder before you told me, and I am interested in it . . . partly, on account of something . . . and I saw it in the papers . . . But now . . .'

'That Lizaveta was killed too!' broke out Nastasya to Raskolnikov. She had remained in the room all the time, near the door, listening.

'Lizaveta?' Raskolnikov's murmur was barely audible.

'Yes, Lizaveta, you know, the dealer. She used to come downstairs. She once mended a shirt for you.'

Raskolnikov turned to the wall, selected one of the white flowers, with little brown lines on them, on the yellowish paper, and began to count how many petals it had, how many serrations on each petal and how many little brown lines. He felt his arms and legs grow numb as if they were no longer there. He did not stir, but looked fixedly at the flower.

'Well, what about the painter?' Zosimov interrupted Nastasya's chatter with marked displeasure. She sighed and said no more.

'They've got him down as a murderer!' went on Razumikhin hotly.

'Have they any evidence?'

'The devil take evidence! However, as far as evidence goes, their evidence isn't evidence at all. That is what we must demonstrate. It's exactly, point for point, the way they took those—what's their names—Koch and Pestryakov . . . at the beginning and suspected them. Pah! How stupidly these things are managed, even a quite disinterested onlooker finds it revolting! . . . It's possible that Pestryakov will be coming to

my place today . . . By the way, Rodya, you know about this, it happened before your illness, just the day before you fainted in the office when they were talking about it . . .'

Zosimov looked curiously at Raskolnikov, who did not move. Then he remarked:

'Do you know, Razumikhin, I shall have to have a look at you too: what a fussy old woman you are, though!'

'Perhaps I am. All the same, we'll get him out of it!' exclaimed Razumikhin, banging the table with his fist. 'What is the most offensive aspect of all this? Not that what they say is untrue; it is always possible to forgive untruth; untruth is valuable, because it leads to truth. No, what is vexatious is that they set up their falsehood and fall down and worship it! I respect Porfiry, but . . . For example, what led them astray in the very first place? The door was fastened, but when they came back with the porter, it was open: therefore Koch and Pestryakov murdered her. That's their logic for you.'

'Don't get so heated; they were simply detained; after all, one can't . . . By the way, I must have met this Koch, didn't it turn out that he bought up unredeemed pledges from the old woman, eh?'

'Yes, he's a scoundrel. He buys up notes of hand as well. He'll do anything for a profit. But to the devil with him! I'll tell you what makes me so angry. Can you understand this? I am angry with their routine, their antiquated, banal, hide-bound routine . . . Here, in this one case, an entirely new avenue can be opened up. By psychological data alone it can be shown how one must proceed to find the right trail. "We," they say, "have facts!" But facts aren't everything; at least half the case consists in what you do with the facts!'

'And do you know what to do with the facts?'

'Yes, and it is impossible to keep silent when you feel, when you know by instinct, that you could help matters, if . . . oh! . . . Do you know the details of the case?'

'I am waiting to hear about the painter.'

'Yes, of course! Well, listen to the story: on the third morning after the murder, while they were still fussing about with Koch and Pestryakov (although they could account for every step; the evidence was overwhelming), a most unexpected fact came to light. A certain peasant, Dushkin, proprietor of a



tavern opposite that very house, appeared in the office with a jeweller's case with gold earrings in it, and told a long story: "The day before yesterday, in the evening, at approximately eight o'clock" (the day and the hour, notice) "there came into my place a workman, a painter called Mikolay, who had been in before, and brought me this here little box with these gold earrings with little stones in them, and asked me to lend him two roubles on them—and when I asked him where he got them he said he picked them up in the street. I didn't ask him any more questions"—this is what Dushkin said—"but I gave him a note"—a rouble, that is—"because I thought if it's not me it will be somebody else, and it comes to the same thing, he'll drink it all, and it will be better if I keep the things safe bind, safe bind, and if something happens, or I hear anything, I can hand them in." Well, of course, that's all a pack of rut-bush—he lies like a trooper—because I know this Dushkin, and he does some pawnbroking himself, and he's a bit of a fence too, and he never cheated Mikolay out of a thirty-rouble article in order to hand it over. No, he simply lost his nerve. Well, now, dash it, listen. This is Dushkin speaking again: "This here peasant, Mikolay Dementyev, is someone I have known since we was kids; he's from our Government and District, Zaraysk—because I come from Ryazan. Mikolay isn't what you'd call a drunkard, but he likes a drop, and we knew that he was working in that very house, painting, with Mitrey, and he and Mitrey come from the same place. And when he got the note he changed it at once, drank two glasses of vodka, took his change, and went, and I never saw Mitrey with him that time. Next day we heard that Alena Ivanovna and her sister Lizaveta Ivanovna had been murdered with an axe, and we used to know her, and I got to feeling doubtful about them earnings—because we knew the deceased used to lend people money on their things. So I went in the house to see them and I made inquiries, very careful, but by bit and quiet-like, and first of all I asked if Mikolay was there. And Mitrey says Mikolay was off on a spree, he didn't come home till daylight, and he was drunk, but he only stayed ten minutes and then went off again, and Mitrey hadn't laid eyes on him since and he was having to finish the job by himself. And the job was on the same staircase as the murder, on the second floor. Well, I listened to all that, but I didn't say nothing to nobody, not then"—this is still Dushkin—"but I found out everything I

could about the murder and went back home, but I still felt just as doubtful. And this morning, at eight o'clock—that was on the third day, you understand—"I see Mikolay coming in, not so to say sober, but not very drunk, he could understand what anyone said to him. He sits down on the bench, and not a word out of him. Besides him there wasn't nobody in the house just then except one stranger, and another man, someone I knew, asleep on a bench, and my two boys. 'Have you seen Mitrey?' says I—"No", says he, 'I haven't.' 'And you haven't been here?'—"Not since the day before yesterday", says he—"And where did you sleep last night?"—"On the Sands, near the barges."—"And where", says I, 'did you get those earrings?'—"I found them in the street"—but he don't say that in a likely sort of way, and he don't look at us—"And you've heard, I suppose," says I, 'that such and such happened that evening, at the very time, on that there staircase?'—"No", says he, 'I haven't'—and he listens with his eyes popping out of his head, and then he turns as white as chalk. Well, I tells him all about it, and then I looks and there he's took his hat and got up to go. Well, I tries to keep him—"Wait a bit, Mikolay," says I, 'aren't you going to finish your drink?'—and I gives the lad a signal to hold the door shut, and comes out from behind the counter, but he up and out into the street, running he were, and into an alley, and that's the last I sees of him. Well that settled all my doubts; he's the sinner, sure enough . . ."

"I should think so! . . ." said Zosimov.

"Stop, hear me out. Naturally they were off hot-foot after Mikolay; they detained Dushkin and searched his place, and the same with Mitrey; they turned the barges inside out—and a couple of days later they brought in Mikolay himself, he was detained near the toll-gate, at an inn. He had gone in, taken off his silver cross and asked for a glass of vodka for it. They gave it to him. A few minutes later a woman went into the cow-shed, and saw him through a crack, in the cart-shed next door. He had tied his girdle to a beam and made a noose in it, he was standing on a block of wood and was just about to put his neck in the noose; the woman yelled bare murder, and people ran in. "So that's it"—"Take me," said he, "to such-and-such a police station; I will confess everything." Well, they took him with due ceremony to such-and-such a station, here, I mean. Then it was this, that, who? how? how old are you? "twenty-two" and so on and so forth.

Question: "When you were working with Mitrey, didn't you see anybody on the stairs at such-and-such a time?" Answer. "Well, of course, somebody may have gone past, but we had something better to do than watch them." "And didn't you hear anything, any sort of noise, or something of that sort?" — "We didn't notice anything special." "And didn't you know, Mikolay, on that same day, that a certain widow had been robbed and murdered, with her sister, on a certain day at a certain time?" "I hadn't the least idea! I first heard of it from Afanasy Pavlovich, two days later, in a pub." "Where did you get the earrings?" "I found them in the street." — "Why didn't you turn up at your work next day?" "Because I went off on a binge." "Where did you go to?" "Here and there." "Why did you run away from Dashkin?" — "Because I was very much afraid." "What were you afraid of?" — "People saying I had done it." "How could you be afraid of that if you knew you were quite innocent?" . . . Believe me, or believe me not, Zosimov, that question was put in exactly those words; I know it for a fact; my information is reliable! Well, I ask you!

"Well, all the same, there is some evidence."

"I'm not talking about the evidence now. I'm talking about the question, about the way they understand reality! Well, never mind . . . And so they pressed and pressed and squeezed and squeezed, until he confessed. "It wasn't in the street," says he, "but in the flat Mitrey and I were working in, that I found them." "How did that happen?" — "It was like this; we'd been painting all day, Mitrey and I, right up to eight o'clock, and we were just getting ready to leave, and Mitrey grabbed a brush and daubed my face with paint, full in the mug, and then ran away with me after him. I was running after him yelling blue murder, and just as I got to the bottom of the stairs, near the gate, I ran slap into the porter and some gentlemen. I don't remember how many gentlemen he had with him — and the porter began shouting at me, and the other porter shouted as well, and then the porter's wife came out and began shouting too. Then a gentleman came in through the gate, with a lady, and he cursed us as well, because me and Mitrey were lying right across the gateway; I'd grabbed Mitka's hair and got him down, and I was punching him, and Mitka, who was underneath, got me by the hair as well, and started punching me, but it was only fun, just a friendly



rough-and-tumble, no hard feelings. Then Mitka got away and ran off up the street and I ran after him, but I couldn't catch him. So I went back to the flat by myself, to straighten up a bit. I began putting things straight, and waiting for Mitka in case he came back. Then in the entrance, by the door, up against the wall in a corner, I stepped on this box. I looked and saw it lying there wrapped in a bit of paper. I took off the paper and saw there were some little tiny hooks on the box, so I undid the hooks, and there were the earrings . . . "

'Behind the door, just behind the door? Did you say behind the door?' exclaimed Raskolnikov, raising himself slowly on his arms and staring with troubled, terrified eyes at Razumikhin.

'Yes . . . what then? What is the matter? Why do you ask?' Razumikhin also got up from his place.

'Nothing,' answered Raskolnikov in a barely audible voice, sinking back again and once more turning his face to the wall. There was a short silence.

'He must have dropped off; he's half asleep,' said Razumikhin at length, with a questioning look at Zosimov, who shook his head slightly.

'Well, go on!' he said, 'what happened next?'

'What next? As soon as he saw the earrings he immediately forgot about the flat and Mitka, seized his hat and ran to Dushkin and, as you know, got a rouble out of him, told him the lying story about finding them in the street, and went off on his spree. Concerning the murder he had asserted earlier "I hadn't the least idea, I only heard about it two days later." "And why haven't you come forward before this?"—"From fear"—"Why did you try to hang yourself?"—"I hinking"—"Thinking what?"—"That they would pin it on me." Well, that's the whole story. Now, what do you think they have made of all that?'

'What should I think? There is a trail there, not much of one, but it's there. Facts. You wouldn't have had them let your painter go free?'

'But they flatly accuse him of the murder now! They haven't the slightest doubt about it . . .'

'Fudge! You're getting excited. What about the earrings? You must agree that if those earrings got into Nikolay's hands from the old woman's trunk just at that very time—you must agree there's got to be some explanation of how they got there. It's no trifle, in such circumstances.'

'How they got there? How they got there?' exclaimed Razumikhin, 'Is it possible that you, a doctor, whose first duty is to study mankind, and who have better opportunities for studying human nature than most people—Is it possible that in all this you do not discern the nature of this Nikolay? Is it possible you don't see, at the very first glance, that everything he said at his interrogation is the sacred truth? The things came into his hands just exactly as he says they did. He stepped on the box and picked it up!'

'The sacred truth! But didn't he himself admit that he lied to begin with?'

'Listen to me. Listen carefully—the porter, and Koch, and Pestryakov, and the second porter, and the first porter's wife, and a woman who was with her in the porter's lodge at the time, and Civil Councillor Kryukov, who got out of a cab at the moment and entered through the gate with a lady on his arm—all these eight or ten witnesses testify with one voice that Nikolay brought Dmitri to the ground, with himself on top, and pummelled him, and that Dmitri seized his hair and punched back. They were lying across the way and blocking the entrance; curses rained on them from all sides, but they, "like two small boys"—in the witnesses' own words—lay there one on top of the other, squealing, scuffling, and laughing, both of them yeling with laughter the whole time and with the most comical grimaces, and then chased one another out into the street like children. Do you hear that? Now note carefully: the bodies upstairs were still warm, do you hear, warm—that's how they were found. If those two, or Nikolay alone, had committed the murder and then broken into the trunk and raked it, or if they had merely had some share in the robbery, then ask yourself just one question—is a mood such as theirs, shrieks and yells of laughter, childish horseplay in the gateway, compatible with axes and blood, with evil cunning, and wariness, and with robbery? They had just done murder, not more than five or ten minutes before—that emerges from the fact that the bodies were warm—and suddenly abandoning the bodies and leaving the flat wide open, although they knew people had just been there, and leaving their spous behind somewhere, they began rolling about on the ground like small children, laughing uproariously and attracting attention to themselves—and there are ten witnesses who all agree on it!'

'It's certainly strange; of course, it's impossible, but . . .'

'No, my dear chap, not *but*; if the earrings found in Nikolay's possession on that day and at that time really constitute the most important factual evidence against him—it has been fully explained, however, by his testimony, and consequently is still *disputed evidence*—then we must take into consideration also the facts in his favour, especially as they are *irresistible* facts. But do you think, from the character of our judicial authorities that they will accept, or are capable of accepting, a fact of that kind—based solely on a psychological impossibility, a mental disposition—as irresistible evidence, demolishing all incriminating material evidence of whatever kind? No, they will not accept it, they will not have it on any account, because they have found a box and because a man tried to hang himself, "which he could not have done unless he had known he was guilty!" That is the fundamental question, that is why I get excited! Try to understand!

'Well, I can see you are excited. Stop a minute; I forgot to ask you: what is there to show that the box and the earrings really came from the old woman's trunk?'

'It has been proved,' answered Razumikhin with apparent reluctance, frowning, 'Koch recognized the thing and indicated the borrower, and he proved conclusively that it really was his.'

'That's bad. Now another thing: did no one see Nikolay when Koch and Pestryakov went upstairs, and can't it be proved somehow?'

'That's just it, nobody did see him,' answered Razumikhin with some annoyance, 'and that is bad; even Koch and Pestryakov didn't notice them as they went past on their way upstairs, although their testimony would not mean very much now. "We saw," they say, "that the flat was open, and that work must be going on in it, but we did not pay any attention to it as we passed and we cannot recollect clearly whether there were workmen in it at the time, or not"'

'Hm. It comes to this, that the only thing in their favour is that they were pummelling each other and laughing. Let us grant that it is powerful evidence, but . . . Let me ask you now: how do you explain the whole episode? How can you account for the finding of the earrings, if he really found them, as he testifies?'

'How do I account for it? There is nothing to account for;



it's as clear as daylight. At any rate, the path the investigation must follow is plain and evident, and it is precisely the box that has demonstrated it. The real murderer dropped those earrings. He was upstairs, behind a locked door, when Koch and Pestryakov knocked. Koch acted like a fool and went downstairs; then the murderer slipped out and also started downstairs, because there was no other way out for him. On the way down he hid from Koch, Pestryakov, and the porter in the empty flat, at the exact time when Dmitri and Nikolay had run out of it, and stood behind the door. When the porter and the others had gone past up the stairs, he waited until the sound of steps had died away and went calmly down at the very moment when Dmitri had run out into the street with Nikolay, the little crowd had dispersed, and nobody was left in the gateway. He may even have been seen, without being noticed; plenty of people go past. He dropped the box out of his pocket while he stood behind the door, and did not notice because he had other things to think about. But the box shows quite clearly that it was there that he stood. That's all there is to it!"

"Clever! No, my dear chap, that's clever! It is altogether too ingenious!"

"But why, why?"

"Simply because it is too neatly dove-tailed . . . like a play."

"Oh!" Razumikhin began, but at that moment the door opened and a new personage came in, a stranger to everybody in the room.

## CHAPTER V

THIS was a gentleman no longer young, starchy and pompous, with a wary and irritable face, who began by stopping in the doorway and looking round with offensively-unconcealed astonishment in his eyes, which seemed to be asking: "Where on earth have I got to?" Mistrustfully, and with a certain pretence of being shocked and outraged, he scanned Raskolnikov's crowded, low-ceilinged 'ship's cabin'. With the same astonishment he transferred his gaze to Raskolnikov himself, lying undressed, unwashed, and unkempt on his wretched dirty sofa and returning his look with one equally steady. Then,

with the same stowness, he began to examine the tousled, unshaven, and dishevelled Razumikhin, who did not move from his place but in his turn looked straight at the visitor with an expression of arrogant inquiry. The tense silence lasted for a minute, but then, as was to be expected, there was a slight alteration in the atmosphere. Realizing, perhaps, from some slight but quite definite indications that an exaggerated rigidity of bearing would accomplish precisely nothing in this 'snaps' cabin, the newcomer turned with a softer but still rather stiff courtesy towards Zosimov and asked, articulating every syllable with great distinctness:

'Rodion Romanovich Raskolnikov, a student or former student?'

Zosimov stirred sluggishly and would perhaps have answered if Razumikhin, who had not been asked, had not anticipated him:

'There he is on the sofa! What do you want?'

The familiarity of this shook the starchy gentleman; he was even on the point of speaking to Razumikhin, but he managed to stop himself just in time and hastily turned back to Zosimov.

'That is Raskolnikov!' drawled Zosimov, gesturing towards the patient, and he yawned, opening his mouth prodigiously wide and keeping it open for a prodigiously long time. Then he slowly inserted his fingers into his waistcoat pocket, drew out an enormous bulging gold hunter, opened it, looked at it, and returned it equally slowly to its place.

Raskolnikov himself was still lying on his back in silence, with his eyes fixed steadily but vacantly on his visitor. His face, now that he had turned away from the engrossing flower on the wallpaper, was extraordinarily pale and had an expression of intense suffering, as though he had just undergone a painful operation or been subjected to torture. But gradually the newcomer began to awaken in him an ever-intensifying chain of emotions, first attention, then perplexity, then mistrust, and even almost fear. When, however, Zosimov pointed him out as Raskolnikov, he sat up abruptly with a start and said in a defiant but feeble and broken tone:

'Yes! I am Raskolnikov! What do you want?'

The visitor looked at him closely and replied importantly.

'Peter Petrovich Luzhin. I flatter myself that my name is not unknown to you.'

Raskolnikov had been expecting something quite different, and he looked at him duly and thoughtfully without answering, as though this were absolutely the first time he had heard Peter Petrovich's name.

'What? Have you really not yet received a letter with some mention of me in it?' asked Peter Petrovich, a little deflated.

In answer to this, Raskolnikov let himself sink back on his pillow, put his hands behind his head, and turned his eyes to the ceiling. Anxiety showed in Luzhin's face. Zosimov and Razumikhin studied him with even greater curiosity than before, and he seemed at last quite put out of countenance.

'I supposed, indeed I counted on it,' he mumbled, 'that a letter, posted more than ten days, in fact almost a fortnight, ago . . .'

'I say, why should you keep on standing by the door?' interrupted Razumikhin. 'If you have something to say, sit down; you and Nastasya get in each other's way there. Move aside, Nastasyushka, and let him pass! Come this way, here's a chair. Squeeze your way in.'

He pushed his chair away from the table, freeing a narrow space between the table and his knees and waited in a rather awkward posture for the visitor to 'squeeze his way' through the narrow opening. He had chosen his moment so well that it was impossible to refuse, and the visitor hastily pushed past him, stumbling, to the chair, and sat down, looking suspiciously at Razumikhin.

'Don't be upset,' the latter rattled on; 'Rodya has been ill for the past five days, and delirious for three of them, but he is much better now and has even recovered his appetite. This is his doctor here, who has just been having a look at him, and I am a friend of his, another former student, and I am looking after him, so don't be embarrassed, but take no notice of us and go on with your business.'

'I thank you. But shall I not be disturbing the patient with my presence and conversation?' said Peter Petrovich, addressing Zosimov.

'N-no,' drawled Zosimov, with another yawn; 'you may even entertain him.'

'Oh, he's been in his right senses for a long time, in fact since this morning,' continued Razumikhin, whose familiarity seemed to spring from such genuine simple-heartedness that Peter Petrovich began to reconsider his mistrustful attitude,



perhaps partly because this impudent ragamuffin had after all introduced himself as a student.

'Your mama . . .' began Luzhin.

'Hm!' commented Razumikhin loudly. Luzhin looked at him inquiringly.

'I didn't mean anything. Go on . . .'

Luzhin shrugged his shoulders.

' . . . Your mama had already begun a letter to you during my sojourn in their neighbourhood. When I arrived here, I purposely allowed some days to elapse before seeking you out, so that I might come to you with full assurance that you had been apprised of everything; but now, to my astonishment . . .'

'I know, I know!' broke in Raskolnikov impatiently, with an expression of irritation. 'So you're the bridegroom, are you? Well, I know about it . . . That's enough!'

Although Peter Petrovich was decidedly offended, he said nothing, but sat visibly striving to understand what all this could mean. There was a minute's silence.

Meanwhile, Raskolnikov, who had turned slightly towards him when he answered, was again gazing at him earnestly, with enhanced curiosity, as though he had not examined him properly before or had been suddenly struck by some new aspect of his appearance; he even raised himself from his pillows to do so. Peter Petrovich's general appearance had indeed something rather special and striking about it, something which justified the appellation of 'bridegroom' flung at him so unceremoniously. To begin with, it was evident, it was even conspicuous, that he had made strenuous use of his few days in the capital in order to get himself fitted out and spruced up in anticipation of his bride's arrival, a harmless and pardonable activity enough. Even his own consciousness of the gratifying change for the better in himself, though perhaps too self-satisfied, might be forgiven in the circumstances, for Peter Petrovich was enrolled among the bridegrooms. All his clothes were newly come from the tailor, and they were all very good, even if they were perhaps a little too new and too obviously designed for a particular purpose. His elegant, spick-and-span round hat testified to the same purpose—he treated it somewhat too respectfully, nursing it carefully in his hands. A coquettish pair of real French black-coloured gloves also betrayed the same purpose, if only by the fact that he did not wear them but carried them in his hand for show. In Peter Petrovich's dress

light and youthful colours predominated. He was wearing a handsome light-brown summer jacket, light-weight bright-coloured trousers and waistcoat, newly-purchased thin linen, a stock of the finest cambric, with pink stripes; and it must be said that all this suited Peter Petrovich well enough. Even without the help of his youthful clothes, his fresh and handsome face looked younger than his forty-five years. His cheeks were very pleasantly shaded by dark mutton-chop whiskers, which thickened into a handsome bushiness on each side of his shiningly clean-shaven chin. His hair, receding ever so slightly from his forehead, had been combed and curled by a barber, but this circumstance did not make him look comical or foolish, as is so often the case, since curled hair usually makes a man look like a German at his wedding. If there was anything displeasing or unsympathetic in this sedate and quite good-looking countenance it arose from quite other causes. When he had completed his unceremonious scrutiny of Mr. Luzhin, Raskolnikov sank back on his pillow with a malicious smile and resumed his former study of the ceiling.

But Mr. Luzhin was now firmly in control of himself and had apparently decided to ignore all this strange behaviour for the present.

'I regret, with complete and absolute sincerity, that I find you in this state,' he began again, breaking the silence with an effort. 'If I had known of your illness I should have called on you sooner. But, you know, the cares of business' . . . I have besides an extremely important case in the Senate.' I do not mention those other cares which you may easily guess at. I expect your people, I mean your mama and sister, at any moment . . .'

Raskolnikov stirred and seemed about to say something; his face showed some perturbation. Peter Petrovich stopped and waited, but as nothing followed he went on:

'At any moment I have found them quarters for the time being . . .'

'Where?' asked Raskolnikov feebly.

'Not at all far from here, in Bakaleev's house . . .'

'That's on Voznesensky Prospect,' interrupted Razumikhin; 'there's a cheap hotel occupying two floors of the building; the merchant Yushin runs it; I've been there.'

'Yes, it's a hotel . . .'

'It is a horrible place, dirty and stinking, and its character

is suspect; there have been various incidents, and God knows who lives there. What took me there was a disgraceful affair. It is cheap, though.'

'I, of course, could not command such information, since I am myself a newcomer,' retorted Peter Petrovich, nettled. 'I have taken, however, two completely and absolutely clean little rooms, and since it is for an extremely short space of time . . . I have already found out real, that is to say, our future flat,' he went on, turning to Raskolnikov, 'it is being made ready for us. Meanwhile I myself live very inconveniently in rooms, very near here at Mrs. Lippewechsels, in the lodgings of my young friend Andrey Semenovitch Lebezyatnikov, it was he who told me of the Bakaleev house . . .'

'Lebezyatnikov?' said Raskolnikov slowly, as if remembering something.

'Yes, Andrey Semenovitch Lebezyatnikov. He is employed in one of the Ministries. Do you know him?'

'Yes . . . no . . .'

 answered Raskolnikov.

'Excuse me, I thought from your question that you did. I was at one time his guardian . . . a very nice young man . . . and interested in public affairs . . . I am always glad to meet young people; you learn from them what is new.' Peter Petrovich looked hopefully round at everybody.

'In what respect?' asked Razumikhin.

'In the most serious, so to say, in the most essential respect,' eagerly responded Peter Petrovich, as if glad of the question. 'You see, it is ten years since I was last in St. Petersburg. All these new ideas, reforms, theories, have penetrated even to us in the provinces, but to see the whole picture and see it clearly, one must be in the capital. Well, sir, my meaning was that one sees most and learns most from study of the younger generation. And I confess I was glad . . .'

'Why, exactly?'

'Your question is very far-reaching. I may be mistaken, but it seems to me that I find a clearer point of view, a more, so to say, critical approach, greater practical ability . . .'

'That is true,' put in Zosimov.

'Nonsense! There's no practical ability,' Razumikhin caught him up. 'Practical ability has to be laboriously acquired, it doesn't drop out of the clouds. And for almost two hundred years we've had nothing to do with practical affairs. Plenty of ideas wandering about, no doubt,' he went on to Peter



Petrovich, 'and a desire to be good, a rather childish one, perhaps, and integrity can be found too, in spite of the enormous number of knaves among us; but there's no practical ability.' Practical men, men of business ability, wear white collars, and are prosperous.'

'I do not agree with you,' objected Peter Petrovich, with evident enjoyment. 'Some people go to extremes. There are irregularities, but we must be lenient: the extremes testify to zeal for the cause, and to the anomalous circumstances in which the cause finds itself. If too little has been done, there has not after all been much time. I do not speak of means. In my personal opinion, if you like, something definite has been accomplished, new, beneficial ideas have been propagated, and new and wholesome writings disseminated, in place of the old fantastic and romantic ones; literature has been given a tinge of maturity, many harmful prejudices have been rooted out and held up to ridicule . . . In a word, we have irrevocably severed ourselves from the past, and that, in my opinion, is an achievement, sir . . .'

'What a parrot! He's trying to make a good impression,' pronounced Raskolnikov suddenly.

'What?' asked Peter Petrovich, who had not caught this, but he received no answer.

'That is all very just,' Zosimov hastened to interpose.

'Is it not true, sir?' went on Peter Petrovich, with a friendly glance at Zosimov. 'You yourself will agree,' he turned again to Razumikhin, with a hint of triumphant superiority in his manner, and only just saved himself from adding 'young man', 'that there is some advance or, as they say now, progress, at least in the name of science and economic truth . . .'

'Commonplaces!'

'No, sir! If, for example, in earlier times it was said to me: "Love your neighbour" and I acted on it, what was the result?' continued Peter Petrovich, with perhaps excessive haste. 'The result was that I divided my cloak with my neighbour and we were both left half-naked, for according to the Russian proverb: "If you run after two hares, you will catch neither." Science, however, says: love yourself first of all, for everything in the world is based on personal interest. If you love yourself alone, you will conduct your affairs properly, and your cloak will remain whole. Economic truth adds that the more private enterprises are established and the more, so to say, whole

cloaks there are in a society, the firmer will be its foundations and the more will be undertaken for the common good. That is to say, that by the very act of devoting my gains solely and exclusively to myself, I am at the same time benefiting the whole community, and ensuring that my neighbour receives something better than half a torn cloak, and that not by private, isolated bounty, but as a consequence of the general economic advancement. The idea is simple, but, unfortunately, has been too long in finding acceptance, obscured as it is by vaporous ideals and misguided enthusiasms; a certain keenness of intellect, it would seem, is necessary to realize . . .'

'Excuse me, my own intellect is not very keen,' interrupted Razumikhin brusquely, 'and therefore we will stop there, if you please. There was after all some purpose in my remarks, but for three years I have been so sick of this kind of self-congratulatory babbling, this ceaseless inexhaustible flow of platitudes, these monotonous repetitions over and over again of the same old commonplaces, that I swear I blush even to hear them all aired again. You, of course, were anxious to produce a good impression by displaying your knowledge, and that is pardonable; I do not condemn you for it. I, though, only wanted to find out what sort of person you were, because, you see, so many varieties of opportunists have hitched themselves on to the common cause, and so distorted everything they touched in their own interests, that they have besouled the whole cause. Well, enough of that.'

'My dear sir,' Mr. Luzhin was beginning, bridling with an extraordinary assumption of dignity, 'are you trying, and with such lack of ceremony, to imply that I . . .'

'Oh, really, really' . . . How could I? Let us have done with this.' Razumikhin cut him short, and abruptly resumed his former conversation with Zosimov.

Peter Petrovich proved wise enough to accept this explanation. In a minute or two, however, he decided to go.

'I hope that this acquaintance of ours, now that it has been initiated,' he said to Raskolnikov, 'will grow closer, when you are restored to health, in view of the circumstances known to you . . . I particularly wish you a speedy recovery . . .'

Raskolnikov did not even turn his head. Peter Petrovich prepared to rise.

'The murderer was certainly a client,' affirmed Zosimov.

'Quite certainly,' agreed Razumikhin. 'Porfiry does not

betray his ideas, but all the same he is interrogating those who pawned things with her . . .'

'Interrogating them?' asked Raskolnikov loudly.

'Yes. What then?'

'Nothing.'

'How does he get hold of them?' asked Zosimov.

'Koch has indicated some of them; the names of others were written on the wrappings of their pledges, and some came of themselves when they heard . . .'

'Well, he must be a canning and experienced rascal. What audacity! What resolution!'

'That is exactly what he isn't!' interrupted Razumikhin. 'That is where you all go wrong. I say he was clumsy and inexperienced, this was probably his first attempt. Postulate a shrewd and calculating rogue, and the whole affair is most improbable. But suppose him to have been inexperienced, and it emerges that it was nothing but chance that saved him from disaster, and what cannot chance accomplish? Perhaps he did not even foresee the obstacles he would meet with! And how did he manage the affair? He took ten or twenty roubles' worth of things, stuffed his pockets with them, rummaged in the old woman's trunk among old rags and in the top drawer of the chest of drawers, in a box, there was found fifteen hundred roubles in cash, besides some notes. He didn't even know how to commit robbery, he could only murder! It was the first attempt, I tell you, the first attempt; and he lost his head. And it was not calculation but chance that saved him.'

'You seem to be talking of the recent murder of an old woman,' put in Peter Petrovich, addressing Zosimov. He was already standing with his hat and gloves in his hand, but waiting for a chance to let fall a few more words of wisdom before he left. He evidently went to some trouble to make a favourable impression, and his vanity had conquered his good sense.

'Yes. Have you heard of it?'

'I have heard it talked of.'

'Do you know the details?'

'I cannot say that I do; what interests me is something different, the whole problem, so to say. I do not speak of the increase in crime among the lower classes during the past five years or so, nor of the unbroken series of cases of robbery and



arson everywhere; for me the strangest thing is that even in higher social circles crime is increasing in the same way, and, so to say, on parallel lines. In one place we hear of a former student assaulting a postmaster; in another, people of prominent social position have been forging notes; in Moscow, they have caught a whole band of counterfeiters of tickets in the last lottery—and one of the leading spirits was a Reader in Universal History; somewhere else one of our Embassy Secretaries has been murdered for mysterious financial reasons . . . And if now this old pawnbroker woman has been killed by one of her clients, that means he must be a person of some social standing, for peasants do not pawn articles of value. How are we to explain this depravity, so to say, among the civilized elements of our society?"

"Many economic changes . . ." responded Zosimov.

"How are we to explain it?" put in Razumikhin "It can be explained precisely by our too deeply ingrained lack of practical ability."

"How is that, sir?"

"Well, what did that Reader of yours in Moscow answer when he was asked why he had counterfeited tickets? "Everybody else gets rich by various means, and we wanted to get rich too, as quickly as we could " I don't remember the exact words, but the idea was to do it at other people's expense, as quickly as possible, and without labour. They were used to having everything found for them, to being in leading-strings, to being spoon-fed. When the great hour struck, they revealed what they were . . ."

"But what about morals? And, so to say, principles?"

"What are you making so much fuss about?" broke in Raskolnikov unexpectedly. "It has worked out in accordance with your own theory."

"How do you mean, in accordance with my theory?"

"Carry to its logical conclusion what you were preaching just now, and it emerges that you can cut people's throats . . ."

"Oh, come, that's nonsense!" exclaimed Luzhin

"No, that is not so!" said Zosimov.

Raskolnikov was pale, his upper lip trembled, and he was breathing with difficulty.

"There is reason in all things," continued Luzhin haughtily; "an economic idea is not yet an invitation to murder, and if only we assume . . ."

'Is it true,' broke in Raskolnikov again, in a voice trembling with fury, with an undertone of pleasure in being insulting, 'is it true that you told your fiancée, at the very time when you had received her consent, that your greatest reason for rejoking . . . was that she was poor . . . because it is better to take a wife out of poverty, so that you can dominate over her afterwards . . . and reproach her with the benefits you have heaped on her . . .?'

'My dear sir!' exclaimed Luzhin, in furious irritation. He was blushing and confused. 'My dear sir . . . such a distortion of my meaning! Excuse me, but I am obliged to say openly that the rumours which have reached you, or rather which have been conveyed to you, have not the slightest foundation in fact, and I . . . suspect I know who . . . in a word . . . this shaft . . . in one word, your mama . . . With all her excellent qualities she seemed to me, even before this, to have a somewhat emotional and romantic turn of mind . . . Nevertheless, I was a thousand leagues from supposing that she could put so fantastically perverted a construction on the matter . . . And finally . . . finally . . .'

'Do you know what?' exclaimed Raskolnikov, raising himself on his pillow and fixing him with keen and glittering eyes; 'do you know what?'

'What, sir?' Luzhin paused and waited, with an offended and inquiring expression. The silence lasted for a few seconds.

'This, that if you ever again . . . dare to say so much as a single word . . . about my mother . . . I shall throw you downstairs!'

'What is the matter with you?' cried Razumikhin.

Luzhin turned pale and bit his lip. 'Ah, so that is it, sir! Let me, sir, tell you,' he began deliberately, and exerting all his strength to control himself, but choking with anger nevertheless, 'I realized your hostility from the first, but I remained here on purpose, so as to learn still more. Much may be forgiven a sick man and a relative, but now, sir . . . you . . . never . . .'

'I am not ill!' exclaimed Raskolnikov.

'So much the worse, sir!'

'Take yourself off, and to the devil with you!'

But Luzhin was already leaving without waiting to finish what he was saying, making his way once more between table and chair; Razumikhin stood up this time to let him pass.

He went out without a glance at anybody, without so much as nodding to Zosimov, who had for some time been making signs to him to leave his patient alone. As he stooped to go through the door, he lifted his hat with exaggerated care to shoulder level, and the very curve of his back seemed to express resentment at being so shockingly insulted.

'Can people really behave like that?' said Razumikhin, shaking his head in perplexity.

'Go away, go away, all of you!' exclaimed Raskolnikov in a frenzy. 'You torture me; will you leave me alone? I am not afraid of you! I am not afraid of anyone, not of anyone, now! Get out! I want to be alone, alone, alone, alone!'

'Come on!' said Zosimov, signing to Razumikhin.

'Well . . . but ought we to leave him like this?'

'Come on!' repeated Zosimov firmly, and went out. Razumikhin waited a moment in doubt, and then ran to overtake him.

'It might make matters worse, if we crossed him,' said Zosimov on the stairs. 'He must not be irritated . . .'

'What is the matter with him?'

'If only he could be given some sort of push in the right direction, that would be the thing. He had plenty of energy just now . . . You know, he has something on his mind' . . . Something immovable, weighing him down . . . That is decidedly what I am very much afraid of.'

'But there's this fellow, perhaps, this Peter Petrovich. You could tell from what they said that he is marrying Rodya's sister, and that Rodya had a letter about it, just before his illness . . .'

'Yes; the devil prompted him to come just now, he may have upset everything. But did you notice that he was quite indifferent and had nothing to say to anything, except one thing that seemed to rouse him thoroughly: this murder . . .?'

'Yes, yes,' agreed Razumikhin, 'I did notice it. He is both interested and scared. It was that they startled him with in the police office, the day he fell ill; he fainted.'

'You must tell me more about it this evening, and then I shall have something to tell you. He interests me, very much. I shall go back in half an hour to see how he is . . . There won't be any inflammation, though . . .'

'Thank you! Meanwhile, I will wait at Pashenka's and keep an eye on him through Nastasya . . .'



After they had gone, Raskolnikov eyed Nastasya anxiously and impatiently, but she lingered over her departure.

'Will you drink your tea now?' she asked.

'Later! I'm sleepy! Go away!'

He turned with a jerk to the wall, Nastasya went out.

## CHAPTER VI

No sooner had she gone than he got up, fastened the door by its hook, unwrapped the parcel of clothes Razumuklin had brought, and began to dress. Strangely enough, he had now become quite calm; the half-insane ravings of a short time before and the panic fear of the past days had alike vanished. This was the first minute of a strange, sudden tranquillity. His movements were neat and precise, and revealed a resolute purpose.

'Today, today . . .' he muttered to himself. He was aware however, that he was still weak, but an inner tension, so acute that it had resulted in calmness and unshakeable resolution, had endowed him with added strength and self-confidence, he hoped, though, that he would not collapse in the street. When he had finished dressing in the new clothes, he looked at the money lying on the table, hesitated for a moment and put it in his pocket. There were twenty-five roubles. He took also all the small coins, the change from the ten roubles spent by Razumuklin on clothes. Then he quietly undid the lock and went out of the room and down the stairs, glancing through the open kitchen door as he went past; Nastasya was standing with her back to him, stooping to blow out his landlady's samovar. She did not hear anything. And indeed who would have suspected that he would go out? A minute later he was in the street.

It was about eight o'clock and the sun was going down. The heat was still as oppressive as before, but he greedily breathed the dusty, to all-smelling, contaminated air of the town. His head began to feel ever so slightly dizzy; a wild kind of energy flared up in his sunken eyes and pallid wasted face. He did not know, or stop to think, where he was going; he knew only one thing; that he must finish with all *this* today, once and for all, and at once; that otherwise he would not go back home, because *he would not live like this!* But how finish

with it? What was he to do? Of this he had no conception, and he refused to think about it. He banished thought. Thought was a torment. He merely knew instinctively that everything must be changed, one way or another; 'somehow, no matter how,' he repeated with desperate, obstinate self-reliance and resolution.

By force of habit, he turned towards the Haymarket, following the usual course of his former walks. Before he reached the Haymarket he came upon a black-haired young man standing in the road before a grocer's shop, grinding out a sentimental ballad on a barrel-organ. He was accompanying a fifteen-year-old girl, who stood before him on the pavement, dressed like a young lady in a crinoline and short mantle, wearing gloves and a straw hat with a flame-coloured feather; all these things were old and worn out. In a coarse, grating, but fairly strong and pleasing voice, she was singing her ballad in the hope of getting a copeck or two from the shop. Raskolnikov stopped near them and listened with two or three bystanders, then took out a five-copeck piece and put it in the girl's hand. She broke off her song abruptly on the very highest and tenderest note and shouted roughly to her companion, 'That will do!' and both trudged away to the next shop.

'Do you like street-singing?' asked Raskolnikov of a passer-by, no longer young, and with the look of an idler, who had been standing by him near the organ-grinder. The man looked oddly at him, in great astonishment. 'I do,' went on Raskolnikov, with an expression as though he were speaking of something much more important than street-singing; 'I like to hear singing to a barrel-organ on a cold, dark, damp autumn evening—it must be damp—when the faces of all the passers-by look greenish and sickly; or, even better, when wet snow is falling, straight down, without any wind, you know, and the gas-lamps shine through it . . .'

'I don't know, sir . . . Excuse me . . .,' muttered the gentleman, frightened alike by the question and by Raskolnikov's strange appearance, and he crossed to the other side of the street.

Raskolnikov went straight on and came to the corner where the dealer and his wife, who had been talking that time to Lizaveta, were usually to be found, they were not there this time. Recognizing the place, he stopped and addressed a lad in a red shirt, who stood yawning at the door of a corn-chandler's shop.

'There is a trader who does business here at the corner, with his wife, a woman from the country, isn't there?'

'All sorts of people do business here,' answered the lad, disdainfully measuring him with his eyes.

'What is he called?'

'What he was christened.'

'Surely you are from Zaraysk, aren't you? Or what Government?'

The lad looked at Raskolnikov again.

'We haven't Governments, your Excellency, in our parts, only Districts; and it was my brother who was smart and went away to work, but I stayed at home, so I don't know, sir. Pardon me, your Excellency, in your generosity.'

'Is that an eating-house, upstairs there?'

'It's a public house, and it has billiards; you can find princesses\* there . . . Tra-la-la!'

Raskolnikov crossed the square. At the corner a dense crowd was standing; they were all country people. He made his way into the thick of them, looking at people's faces. He felt somehow drawn to talk to everybody. But the peasants took no notice of him; they were all gathered in little clusters, talking noisily. He stopped, thought a moment, and went down the right-hand pavement towards Voznesensky Prospect. Once clear of the square, he came into a lane.

He had often before walked through this short street, which curved round from the square into Sadovaya Street. Recently, whenever he had felt sick of things, he had been drawn to roam about all these parts, 'so as to feel even more nauseated'. Now, however, he was not thinking of anything as he turned into the street. There is in it a large building, all given up to various establishments for eating and drinking; women were constantly coming out of them, dressed as if they were 'just running out to a neighbour's', with bare heads and no outer garments over their dresses. Here and there they gathered in groups on the pavement, mostly near the entrances to the lower floor, where one might go down a couple of steps into various places of entertainment. In one of these at the moment there was a clatter and hubbub that filled the street, a guitar strummed, and somebody was singing, all was merriment. There was a big group of women crowding round the entrance, some were sitting on the steps and some on the pavement, others stood talking together. In the road near by lounged a drunken soldier



with a cigarette, swearing loudly; he seemed to be intending to go in somewhere, but to have forgotten where. One ragamuffin was abusing another, and a man was lying dead-drunk across the pavement. Raskolnikov stopped near the big group of women. Some of them were talking in hoarse voices; they were all in cotton dresses and goatskin shoes, and their heads were bare. Some of them were over forty, but some were only about seventeen: most of them had black eyes.

The singing and all the noise and hubbub down there attracted him . . . From the street he could hear, through the laughter and squealing, somebody dancing with reckless abandonment, beating time with his heels, to the accompaniment of the guitar and the thin remote falsetto of the singing. He listened intently, thoughtfully, sombrely, stooping down to look curiously into the entrance. The thin voice of the singer flowed out to him:

‘Oh, my fine and darling bobby,  
Do not beat me so unjustly!’—

Raskolnikov strained desperately to hear the words, as though they were of supreme importance.

‘Shall I go in?’ he thought, ‘People are laughing—drunk of course. But wouldn’t it be a good idea to get drunk myself?’

‘Won’t you come in, kind gentleman?’ asked one of the women, in a voice that had not yet grown completely husky but was still fairly clear. She was young and alone of the whole group—not unattractive.

‘Hello, here’s a pretty girl!’ he answered, straightening up to look at her.

She smiled, very pleased at the compliment.

‘You’re very nice-looking yourself,’ said she.

‘How thin, though!’ commented another in a bass voice. ‘Have you just been discharged from the hospital, or something?’

‘You lot are all trying to look like generals’ daughters, but every one of you’s got a snub nose!’ broke in a peasant who had just come up, with a sly grinning mask of a face. He was tipsy and his jacket hung unbuttoned. ‘High jinks, eh?’

‘Now you’ve come, you can just go away again!’

‘I’m going! Toothsome dainties you are!’

He stumbled down the steps.

Raskolnikov moved on.

'Listen, fine gentleman!' one of the wenches called after him.  
'What?'

She grew confused.

'Kind gentleman, I shall always be glad to pass an hour with you, but not now. I shouldn't like to have you on my conscience. Give me six copecks to buy a drink, like a kind lover!'

Raskolnikov pulled some coins out of his pockets, three five-copeck pieces.

'Oh, what a kind-hearted gentleman!'

'What is your name?'

'Ask for Duklida.'

'Well really, what sort of behaviour is that?' said one of the group, motioning with her head towards Duklida. 'I simply don't know how she can ask for money like that! I'm sure I should sink through the ground with shame . . .'

Raskolnikov looked at her curiously. She was a pock-marked woman of about thirty, covered with bruises, and her lip was swollen. Her censure was uttered in a quiet and serious manner.

'Where was it,' Raskolnikov thought, as he walked on, 'where was it that I read of how a condemned man, just before he died, said, or thought, that if he had to live on some high crag, on a ledge so small that there was no more than room for his two feet, with all about him the abyss, the ocean, eternal night, eternal solitude, eternal storm, and there he must remain, on a hand's-breadth of ground, all his life, a thousand years, through all eternity—it would be better to live so, than die within the hour? Only to live, to live! No matter how—only to live! . . . How true! Lord, how true! How base men are! . . . And he is worse who decries them on that account!' he added, a minute later.

He came out into another street. 'Ah! The "Crystal Palace"!' Razumikhin was talking about it. Only what on earth do I want here? Yes, to read! . . . Zosimov said he had seen something in the newspapers . . .'

'Have you newspapers here?' he asked, entering a very well-ordered and spacious tavern, consisting of several rooms, all rather empty. Two or three customers were drinking tea, and in one of the farther rooms a group of four or five men sat drinking champagne. Raskolnikov thought Zametov was one of them, but from so far away he could not be sure.

'What does it matter?' he thought.

'Vodka, sir?' asked the waiter.

'I'll have tea. And bring me some newspapers, old ones, for the last five days or so; it'll be worth a tip to you.'

'Yes, sir. Here is today's, sir. And vodka, sir?'

The tea and the old newspapers appeared. Raskolnikov sat down and began to search through them. 'Izler . . . Izler . . . Azteks . . . Azteks . . . Izler . . . Bartola . . . Massamo . . . Azteks . . . Izler . . . Pah, where the devil . . . ? Ah, here are the news items: Woman Falls Downstairs . . . Vodka Causes Workman's Death . . . Fire on the Sands . . . Fire in Peterburgsky Quarter' . . . Another Fire in Peterburgsky Quarter . . . Another Fire in Peterburgsky Quarter . . . Izler . . . Izler . . . Izler . . . Izler . . . Massamo . . . Ah, here . . .'

At last he had found what he was looking for, and he began to read; the lines danced before his eyes, but he read the whole report and turned eagerly to the succeeding numbers for later additions. His hands, as he turned over the pages, shook with feverish impatience. Suddenly somebody sat down next to him at his table. He looked up. It was Zametov, Zametov himself, looking exactly the same, with his rings and his watch-chain, with his dark, curly hair neatly parted and pomaded, in his fashionable waistcoat, his rather shabby frock-coat and his not very fresh linen. He seemed cheerful; at any rate his smile was cheerful and good-natured. His swarthy face was a little flushed with champagne.

'Hello, you here?' he began, in a puzzled tone, and as if they had been acquainted for ages, 'and it was only yesterday that Razumikhin was telling me you were still delirious. Very odd! You know I went to see you . . .'

Raskolnikov had known he would come over to him. He laid the newspapers aside and turned to Zametov. There was a smile on his lips, with a hint of irritable impatience in it.

'I know you did,' he answered, 'I heard about it. You looked for my sock . . . You know, Razumikhin raves about you. He says you took him to Louisa Ivanovna's—you know, the one you were doing your best for, that time; you kept winking at that Lieutenant Squib, and he just wouldn't understand, do you remember? Yet it hardly seemed possible not to understand—it was clear enough, . . . eh?'

'But what a hot-head he is!'

'Who, the Squib?'

'No, your friend Razumikhin . . .'



'You do pretty well for yourself, Mr. Zametov; you get into the very nicest places for nothing. Who was that pouring champagne into you just now?'

'Well, we were . . . just having a drink . . . It did flow pretty freely.'

'Just a bonus! You turn everything to account!' Raskolnikov laughed. 'Never mind, my dear boy, never mind,' he added, slapping Zametov on the back, 'I am not talking like this from spite, "but in pure affection, playfully", as that workman of yours said, when he was punching Mitka, in that case of the old woman.'

'How do you know that?'

'Perhaps I know more than you do.'

'What a queer chap you are, to be sure . . . I suppose you are still very ill. You ought not to be out . . .'

'I seem strange to you?'

'Yes. What are those newspapers you are reading?'

'Newspapers.'

'There is a lot in them about fires.'

'No, I'm not reading about the fires.' He looked mysteriously at Zametov; a mocking smile played about his mouth once more. 'No, not about the fires,' he went on, with a wink. 'Admit, my dear young man, that you are dreadfully anxious to know what I was reading about.'

'I am not anxious at all; I was only asking. Isn't that allowed? Why do you keep on . . .?'

'Listen, you're an educated man, aren't you, a literary man?'

'I reached the sixth class in high school,' answered Zametov with some dignity.

'The sixth! Well, my fine young cock-sparrow! With your hair all combed and curled, and your rings— you're a rich man! Pah, what a pretty little fellow!' Raskolnikov broke into a nervous laugh, straight into Zametov's face. He started back, not so much affronted as struck with astonishment.

'Dear me, how strange you are!' repeated Zametov, very seriously. 'I think you must still be delirious.'

'Delirious? That's a lie, cock-sparrow! . . . So I'm strange, am I? But, you're very curious about me, aren't you, very curious?'

'Yes, very.'

'Well, shall I tell you what I was reading about, what I had

been looking for? You see, of course, how many issues I have had brought. Suspicious, isn't it?"

'Well, tell me.'

'All ears, are you?'

'What do you mean, all ears?'

'I'll tell you that later, but now I will declare to you . . . no, better, I'll "confess" . . . No, that's not right either: I will "make a statement", and you shall take it down—that's it! So, I state that I was reading . . . that I was interested in . . . that I was looking for . . . that I was searching . . . ' Raskolnikov screwed up his eyes and waited . . . 'I was searching—and that is why I came here—for something about the murder of the old woman, the moneylender,' he brought out at last, almost in a whisper, bringing his face very close to Zametov's. Zametov looked steadily back at him, without stirring or moving his face away. Afterwards, what seemed strangest about it all this to Zametov was this silence that lasted for a full minute, while they remained looking at one another without moving.

'What does it matter what you were reading?' he exclaimed in a fit of exasperated perplexity. 'And what has it to do with me? What is all this about?'

'It was that same old woman,' Raskolnikov went on in the same whisper, without flinching at Zametov's exclamation, 'that you had begun to talk about, you remember, in the office, when I fainted. Now do you understand?'

'What is all this? What do you mean—"understand"?' said Zametov, almost alarmed.

Raskolnikov's fixed and serious expression was transformed in an instant, and he broke out into the same nervous laughter as before, as if he had not the strength to control himself. And in a flash he remembered, with an extraordinary intensity of feeling, another instant, when he had stood behind a door with an axe, while the bolt rattled, and outside the door people were swearing and trying to force a way in, and he was suddenly filled with a desire to shriek out, to exchange oaths with them, stick out his tongue at them, mock at them, and laugh, laugh, laugh.

'Either you are mad, or . . . ' said Zametov, and then stopped as though struck by some thought which had come unexpectedly into his mind.

'Or? Or what? Well, what? Tell me, can't you?'

'Nothing' answered Zametov angrily. 'We're talking nonsense!'

Both were silent. After his unexpected paroxysmal outburst of laughter, Raskolnikov had become thoughtful and melancholy. He leaned his elbows on the table and propped his head on his hand. He seemed to have completely forgotten Zametov. The silence lasted for some time.

'Why don't you drink your tea? It will be cold,' said Zametov.

'What? Oh, my tea? — All right . . .' Raskolnikov took a gulp from his glass, put a piece of bread in his mouth, and then, looking at Zametov, seemed suddenly to remember what he was doing and rose himself, at the same time, the original derisive smile returned to his face. He went on drinking tea.

'Recently there has been a great increase of swindling,' said Zametov. 'I read not so long ago in the *Moscow Journal* that a whole gang of counterfeiters had been caught. There were quite a lot of them. They had been forging notes.'

'Oh, that was a long time since. I read about it a month ago,' answered Raskolnikov calmly. 'So you think of them as swindlers, do you?' he added with a smile.

'What else could you call them?'

'Them? They were children, greenhorns! They collected fifty people for an undertaking like that! Is it credible? Three would almost have been too many, and even then each one of them would have had to have more faith in the others than he had in himself! Otherwise it would only need one to babble in his cups and the whole thing would go smash! Greenhorns! They hired unreliable people to change the notes at the bank, is that the sort of job to entrust to the first person who comes along? Well, suppose that, raw beginners as they were, they had succeeded, suppose each of them had managed to change a million roubles' worth of counterfeiters, what about afterwards? — the rest of their lives? Each one dependent on every other for the whole of his life! Better to hang yourself! But they didn't even know how to change their stuff — here is one changing it in a bank, and when he is handed five thousand his hands tremble. He counts over four thousand, but he takes the rest on trust, without counting, thrusts it into his pocket, and makes off. Well, suspicion is aroused. And everything is ruined because of one fool! No, really it's impossible.'

'For his hands to tremble?' Zametov took him up. 'No, that



is possible, sir. I'm quite convinced that it is possible. Sometimes you just can't stand it.'

'What, that?'

'You, no doubt, could? Well, I couldn't! Run into such awful danger for a fee of a hundred roubles! Take a fake note—where?—into a banking office, where they specialize in just such matters—no, I should have to turn tail. Wouldn't you?'

Raskolnikov again suddenly felt the urge to 'suck out his tongue'. An occasional shiver ran down his spine.

'I shouldn't behave like that,' he began long-windedly. 'This is how I should change it: I should count over the first thousand, very carefully, three or four times, looking at every note; then I should start on the second thousand and begin counting it, then when I got to the middle, I should take out some fifty-rouble note and hold it up to the light, turn it over and hold it up to the light again—isn't it a bad one? "I'm afraid of bad money," say I; "a relative of mine once lost twenty-five roubles like that"—and I should tell the whole story. Then when I began to count the third thousand—"No, wait a moment; I think I miscounted the seventh hundred in that last thousand"—; the doubt would grow, I should leave the third thousand and go back to the second—and so on with all five. And when I had finished, I should take a note out of the fifth thousand and another from the second, hold them up to the light again, look doubtful, "please give me others in exchange for these"—and I should have got the cashier into such a stew that he would be acting to get rid of me. Well, finally, it would all be done, I should go and open the door—but no, excuse me, I should go back again to ask some question or get some explanation. That's how I should do it!'

'Pah, what terrible things you say!' said Zametov laughing. 'Only all this is only talk, and in reality you would be sure to trip up. I tell you, it seems to me impossible, not only for you and me, but even for a desperate and experienced man, to answer for himself in such a matter. Here's an example close at hand—an old woman has been murdered in our quarter of the city. Here, then, was a desperate rogue, running the most appalling risks in broad daylight and only saved by a miracle—but all the same, his hands trembled; he didn't succeed in carrying out his robbery—he couldn't stand it; it's clear from what we know of the case . . .'

Raskolnikov seemed almost offended.

'Clear, is it? Catch him then, go on!' he cried, taking a malicious pleasure in provoking Zametov.

'He'll be caught, all right.'

'Who'll do it? You? You'll catch him? You'll soon get tired of trying. I'll tell you what you regard as the most important thing—is a man spending freely or not? Here's someone who hadn't any money, and now he's suddenly begun to spend—it must be him! Any child could demolish that argument if he wanted to!'

'But that's just it—that's exactly what they all do,' answered Zametov; 'commit a cunning murder, risk their lives—and then straight into the pub! It is throwing money about that gets them caught. Not everybody is as clever as you, you know. Of course, you wouldn't run off to the pub, would you?'

Raskolnikov frowned and stared at Zametov.

'I suppose you've developed a taste for my methods, and would like to know what I would have done in this case as well?' he threw out, sounding rather displeased.

'Yes, I should,' answered Zametov firmly and gravely. His manner and tone seemed indeed to have grown too serious.

'Very much?'

'Yes, very much.'

'Good. This is how I should have acted,' began Raskolnikov. Once again his face was close to Zametov's, once again he kept his eyes fixed on him, once again he spoke in a whisper, that this time made his hearer shudder. 'This is what I should have done. I should have taken the money and the things and as soon as I left the place, before I went anywhere else, I should have gone to some place that was not overlooked, but had fence all round, and where there was almost nobody about—perhaps a market garden or something of that sort. I should have looked into this yard earlier and found a stone weighing a pound or more somewhere in a corner near the fence—let there, perhaps, from the building of a house; I should have lifted the stone—there would have to be a little hollow under it—and in the hollow I should have put all the things and the money. I should have put them in and rolled the stone over them so that it looked the same as before, I should have pressed it down with my foot, and then I should have gone away. And for a year, for two years, I should not have taken away anything, perhaps for three years—well, now look for your murderer! Vanished into thin air!'

'You're mad!' said Zametov, also for some reason in a whisper, and recoiled suddenly from Raskolnikov. The latter's eyes were glittering, he had grown shockingly pale, and his upper lip trembled and twitched. He leaned as near as possible to Zametov and began moving his lips, but no sound came from them; they remained like this for half a minute. He knew what he was doing, but he could not restrain himself. A terrible word trembled on his lips, as the bolt had trembled *then* on the door—now, now, the bolt will give way; now, now, the word will sap out; oh, only to say it!

'And what if it was I who killed the old woman and Lizaveta?' he said suddenly, and came to his senses.

Zametov looked at him wildly, and went as white as a sheet. He smiled crookedly.

'Can it really be so?' he said, in a barely audible tone. Raskolnikov looked furiously at him.

'Admit that you believed it! Yes! You did, didn't you?'

'Not at all! Now less than ever!' said Zametov hastily.

'You're caught at last! The cock-sparrow is caught! If you believe it now less than ever, that means that you believed it before!'

'No, certainly not!' exclaimed Zametov, in evident confusion. 'Was that why you startled me, just to lead up to this?'

'So you don't believe it? But what did you begin to talk about that time as soon as I had left the office? And why did Lieutenant Squib interrogate me after I fainted? Here! he called to the waiter, getting up and taking his cap 'how much?'

'Thirty copecks altogether, sir,' answered the waiter, hurrying up.

'Here are twenty besides for yourself. Look what a lot of money!'—and he held out to Zametov his shaking hand full of notes. 'Red notes, blue notes, twenty-five roubles. Where does it come from? And where have the new clothes appeared from? Of course, you know I hadn't a copeck. No doubt my landlady has already been questioned . . . Well, that's enough. *Assez causé!* Good-bye, until our next . . . most delightful . . . meeting! . . .'

He went out, shaking all over, with a feeling of wild hysteria mingled with almost unendurable pleasure; and yet his mood was gloomy, and he felt terribly weary. His face was distorted as if he had had some kind of seizure. His fatigue increased rapidly. His energies seemed now to be aroused and summoned



up in a moment, at the slightest stimulus, with the first sensation of irritation, and to fail with the same suddenness, as rapidly as his emotion waned.

Zametov, left alone, sat where he was for a long time, in great perplexity. Raskolnikov had unexpectedly overturned all his ideas on a certain point and enabled him to come to a definite conclusion.

'Ilya Petrovich is a blockhead!' he decided finally.

As Raskolnikov opened the door into the street he ran straight into Razumikhin on the steps. Neither saw the other even when a pace separated them, so that they almost rammed their heads together. They stood for some time, measuring each other with their glances. Razumikhin was in a state of utter amazement, but suddenly anger, real anger, flashed menacingly in his eyes.

'So this is where you are,' he shouted at the top of his voice. 'You're supposed to be in bed, and you've run away. And I was ready to look for you under the sofa, and all the attics have been searched! Nastasya very nearly got a beating on your account . . . And this is where he is! Ronka, what does this mean? Tell me the truth! Confess! Do you hear?'

'It means that I was bored to death with all of you, and I want to be alone,' calmly answered Raskolnikov.

'Alone! When you can't walk yet, and your ugly mug is as white as a sheet, and you're panting for breath! Idiot! . . . What were you doing in the "Crystal Palace"? Own up at once!'

'Will you let me pass?' said Raskolnikov, and tried to walk past him. At this, Razumikhin, quite beside himself, seized him fiercely by the shoulders.

'Let you pass? You dare to say that to me? Do you know what I shall do with you this minute? I shall pick you up bodily, tie you into a bundle, carry you home under my arm, and put you under lock and key!'

'Listen, Razumikhin,' began Raskolnikov quietly and apparently quite calmly, 'can't you see that I don't want your kindness? Why will you persist in trying to do good to people who spit on it, . . . people who seriously find your kindness beyond endurance? Tell me, why did you seek me out at the beginning of my illness? For all you know, I might have been glad to die. Surely I've shown you clearly enough today that you annoy me, that I'm . . . sick of you! What you are ready

I am so glad to hear from you and all your family. I hope you are all well. I have been thinking about you very much lately. I wish I could see you all again. I love you all very much.

[illegible]

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

[illegible]

'No.'

'Rubbish!' exclaimed Razumikhin impatiently. 'You don't know what you'll do; you can't answer for yourself! And you don't understand any of this . . . I've quarrelled violently with people like this a thousand times and gone running back to them again . . . You begin to be ashamed of yourself . . . and go back to the fellow! Now remember, Pochinkov's, third floor . . .'

'Really, it almost looks as if you would allow anyone to beat you, Mr. Razumikhin, for the satisfaction of doing him good.'

'Who? Me? I should twist his nose if he so much as dreamt of it . . . Pochinkov's, number 47, in Babushkin's flat . . .'

'I shall not come, Razumikhin,' Raskolnikov turned and walked away.

'I bet you will!' called Razumikhin after him. 'Otherwise you . . . otherwise I don't want anything to do with you. Hi, stop! Is Zametov here?'

'Yes.'

'Did you see him?'

'Yes.'

'And talk to him?'

'Yes.'

'What about? All right, go to the devil, don't tell me then! Pochinkov's house, 47, Babushkin's, remember!'

Raskolnikov reached Sadovaya Street and turned the corner. Razumikhin looked after him thoughtfully. At last he flung out his hands and turned to go in, but half-way up the steps he paused.

'Devil take it!' he said to himself, almost aloud: 'he talks sensibly enough and as if . . . Really, I'm a fool too! As if lunatics didn't talk sensibly! And I imagine Zosimov was afraid of something like this!' He rapped his forehead with his finger. 'Well, what if . . . oh, how could I let him go alone? Perhaps he'll drown himself . . . Oh, I missed my cue there! It won't do!'

And he ran back in pursuit of Raskolnikov, but the trail was cold already. He spat, and returned at a brisk pace to the 'Crystal Palace' to question Zametov as soon as possible.

Raskolnikov went straight to the Voznesensky Bridge, stopped in the middle of it, leaned both elbows on the parapet, and gazed along the canal. After parting from Razumikhin he



had felt so weak that he was hardly able to drag himself so far. He longed to sit down somewhere, or even lie down, in the street. Leaning over the water he looked mechanically at the last pink reflections of the sunset, at the row of buildings growing dark in the thickening dusk, at one distant window, high up in some roof along the left bank, that shone for an instant with flame as the last ray of the dying sun caught it, at the darkening water of the canal. Into the water he peered attentively, until at last red circles began to revolve before his eyes, the houses spun round, the passers-by, the carriages, the embankments, all reeled and swung dizzily. Suddenly he started, saved perhaps from another fainting fit by a strange and ugly sight. He felt someone standing beside him, on his right, and looked up; it was a tall woman wearing a kerchief on her head, with a long, yellow, hollow-checked face and red-rimmed, sunken eyes. She was looking straight at him, but apparently without seeing him. With an abrupt movement she rested her right hand on the parapet, raised her right foot and threw it over the railing, followed it with her left, and flung herself into the canal. The filthy water parted and engulfed her for a moment, but then she rose to the surface and drifted gently with the current, face downwards, with her head and legs in the water and her skirt ballooning under her like a pillow.

'She's drowned herself!' cried a dozen voices, people began running up and clustering on both banks and crowding on the bridge round Raskolnikov, who found himself hemmed in and squeezed from behind.

'Oh Lord, that is our Afrosinyushka!' shrieked a woman's tearful voice somewhere near by. 'Oh, good heavens! Save her! Oh, kind friends, pull her out!'

Shouts arose from the crowd. 'A boat, get a boat!'

But there was no need for a boat; a policeman ran down the steps leading to the edge of the canal, threw off his greatcoat and boots, and jumped into the water. His task was not very difficult; the water carried the woman to within two paces of the foot of the stairs, he seized her clothing with his right hand, and with his left clutched a pole held out to him by a colleague; and the drowning woman was quickly pulled out. They laid her on the granite slabs of the landing-place. She speedily recovered consciousness and sat up, sneezing and sniffling and senselessly trying to dry her hands on her wet clothes. She said nothing.

'She's drunk herself to ruination, friends, to ruination,' — thus was the same woman's voice, now near Afrosinyushka; 'not long since she tried to hang herself as well; they got her down, though. I had to go to the shop just now, and I left a little girl to look after her — and look what a terrible thing happens! She's a respectable working woman; we live close by, the second house from the corner, just here . . .'

The crowd was dispersing, the police were still busy with the woman, someone shouted a reference to the police-station. . . . Raskolnikov had looked on with a strange feeling of indifference and detachment. Now he felt repelled . . . 'No, it's disgusting . . . water . . . no good,' he muttered to himself. 'Nothing will happen. I needn't expect anything . . . What can the police do? . . . And why isn't Zametov in the office? it's open at ten o'clock . . .' He turned his back to the parapet and looked round him. 'Well, all right then?' he said decidedly, moved away from the bridge and turned towards the police-station. His heart was empty and numb. He did not want to think about anything. Even his dejection had passed, and there was no trace of the energy with which he had left the house 'to make an end of it'. Complete apathy had taken its place.

'Well, after all, this is one way out' he thought, as he walked slowly and amply along the embankment. 'I shall be finished with it, all the same, because I will it . . . But is it really a way out? Well, it doesn't matter! I shall have my hand's-breadth of ground — ha! What an end, though! Is it really the end? Shall I tell them or shall I not? Oh . . . the devil! I am tired; oh, to lie down somewhere, or sit . . . soon! The most shameful thing is that I carried it out so stupidly . . . Well, to hell with that, too! Pah, what nonsense runs in my head . . .'

To get to the office he had to go straight on and take the second turning to the left, and then it was only a few steps further. But as he came to the first turning he stopped and reflected a moment, turned into the lane, and took a round-about route, through two more streets, perhaps aimlessly, perhaps to prolong the journey if only by a minute and gain a little more time. He walked along with his eyes on the ground. Suddenly it was as if someone whispered in his ear. He raised his head and saw that he was standing by *that* house, near the gates. It was the first time he had been there since *that* evening.

An irresistible and inexplicable desire drew him on. He turned in, passed through the gateway, went into the first

entrance on the right and began to ascend the familiar staircase towards the first floor. The steep, narrow stairs were very dark. On every landing he stopped and looked about with curiosity. The window-frame on the first landing had been removed: 'It wasn't like this then,' he thought. On the second floor was the flat where Nikolashka and Mitya had been working. 'Shut up, and the door is newly painted; it must be to let.' Here was the third floor . . . and the fourth . . . 'Here it is!' Perplexity seized him: the door of the flat was open, and there were people in it; he could hear their voices. This was something entirely unexpected. After a short hesitation, he mounted the last steps and went into the flat.

This flat also was being redecorated, and the workmen were inside. This circumstance astonished him; for some reason he had expected to find everything just as he had left it, perhaps even with the corpses in the same places on the floor. But now with its bare walls and empty rooms it seemed somehow strange. He went over to the window and sat down on the sill.

There were only two workmen, both young fellows, but one much younger than the other. They were putting new paper, white, with small lilac-coloured flowers, on the walls, in place of the old, rubbed, faded paper. For some reason Raskolnikov violently disapproved of this, and he looked with hostility at the new paper, as though he could not bear to see everything changed.

The workmen were apparently late and were now hurriedly rolling up the paper ready to go home. They had hardly noticed Raskolnikov's entrance. They were talking about something. Raskolnikov crossed his arms and listened to them.

'She comes in to me, like, in the morning,' the elder of the two was saying, 'ever so early, all dressed up to the nines. "What's all this?" says I, "why do you come parading and strutting up and down in front of me, peacocking about?" So she says: "From now on, Tit Vasilyevich, I want to seem just right to you." So that's how it is, you see! And dressed up! Just like a magazine!'

'What do you mean, uncle, a magazine?' asked the younger. 'Uncle' was evidently his mentor.

'Well, a magazine, little brother, is pictures, like, coloured ones, and the tailor gets them sent to him every Saturday from



foreign parts, and they are to show people what to wear, both men and women, see? Drawings, I mean. The men, they're mostly drawn in them short little overcoats, but as for the women, brother, such finery as they have, as you'd give a week's pay just to see them!"

"The things there are in this here St. Petersburg!" enthusiastically exclaimed the younger man; "there's everything you could possibly think of."

"Yes indeed, little brother, you can find everything," stated the other instructively.

Raskolnikov got up and went into the other room, where the trunk, the bed, and the chest of drawers used to stand. The room seemed very small without the furniture. The wallpaper was unchanged; in the corner the place where the icon-stand had been was sharply outlined on it. He looked round and then returned to the window. The older workman was following his movement with a sidelong look.

"What do you want, sir?" he asked abruptly, addressing him. Instead of answering, Raskolnikov stood up again, went out into the passage, and pulled at the bell. The same bell, the same tinny sound! He pulled it again, and then a third time, listening and remembering. The old tormenting frightening sensation began to bring back ever clearer and more vivid memories, he shuddered at every tinkle, and yet he felt more and more pleasure in the sound.

"What do you want? Who are you?" cried the workman, coming out to him. Raskolnikov went in again.

"I want to take the flat," he said. "I am looking round."

"People don't take flats at night; besides, you ought to apply to the porter."

"I see the floor has been washed; are you going to stain it?" went on Raskolnikov. "Isn't there any blood?"

"What blood?"

"There was an old woman murdered, and her sister. There was a great pool of blood here."

"What sort of man are you?" cried the workman uneasily.

"I?"

"Yes, you?"

"You want to know, do you? . . . Well, let's go to the police office, I'll tell you there . . ."

The workman looked at him, puzzled.

'It's time we went, sir; we're late. Come on, Aleshka. We've got to lock up,' said the older workman.

'Let's go, then,' answered Raskolnikov indifferently and he went out first and walked slowly downstairs. As he came out under the gateway, he called: 'Hi, porter!'

Several people were standing by the gate, watching the passers-by in the street: there were both porters, a country-woman, a man in a long robe, and some others. Raskolnikov went straight towards them.

'What do you want?' answered one of the porters.

'Have you been to the police office?'

'I was there just now. Why do you want to know?'

'Was it open?'

'Yes, it was.'

'Was the assistant there?'

'Some of the time. Why?'

Raskolnikov did not answer, but stood beside him, thinking. 'He came to look at the flat,' said the older workman, coming up to them.

'What flat?'

'The one we're working in. "Why," says he, "has the blood been washed out? There was a murder done here," he says, "and I've come to take the flat." And then he begins ringing the bell, and almost pulls it out. Then he says "Come to the police-station and I'll tell you all about it." Wouldn't take no for an answer!'

The porter, frowning and perplexed, studied Raskolnikov.

'And who are you?' he asked menacingly.

'I am Rodion Romanovich Raskolnikov, a former student, living at Shat's house, here in the lane, not far away, in flat 14. Ask the porter . . . he knows me.' All this was said in a languid and preoccupied tone, while Raskolnikov kept his eyes fixed on the darkening street.

'And what did you go to the flat for?'

'To look at it.'

'What is there to look at there?'

'Why don't you take him to the police?' broke in the man in the long robe, and then was silent again.

Without moving his head, Raskolnikov turned his eyes towards the man, examined him carefully, and then said in the same quiet and languid tone: 'Let us go.'

'You ought to take him' asserted the man, more boldly.

'Why was he asking about *that*? Has he got something on his mind, eh?'

'Perhaps he's drunk, perhaps he isn't, God knows!' muttered the workman.

'What's it got to do with you?' exclaimed the porter again, beginning to grow really angry. 'Why do you keep on insisting?'

'Are you afraid to go to the police, then?' asked Raskolnikov jeeringly.

'Why should I be? Why do you keep on about it?'

'He's up to something!' exclaimed the peasant-woman.

'Why do you talk to him?' shouted the other porter, a huge peasant with his tunic hanging open and a bunch of keys on his belt. 'Clear out' . . . You're up to some game or other, all right . . . Get out!'

And seizing Raskolnikov by the shoulder, he flung him out so roughly that he almost fell. He recovered himself, however, looked silently back at all of them, and went on his way.

'A queer customer,' said the workman.

'Folks is all queer nowadays,' said the peasant-woman.

All the same, he ought to have been taken to the police,' added the man in the long robe.

'We don't want to get mixed up in anything,' said the big porter decidedly. 'It's quite sure he's up to something. He was asking for trouble, of course, but if you get yourself mixed up in something, you don't get clear so easily . . . we know!'

'Well, shall I go, I wonder, or not?' thought Raskolnikov, stopping in the middle of the road at a crossing and looking round as if he expected to hear the deciding word from somebody. But no response came from any quarter; everything was blank and dead, like the stones he trod on, dead for him, and for him alone . . . Suddenly at some distance, two hundred paces farther on, at the end of the street, in the gathering darkness, he made out voices, shouts, a crowd of people . . . Some sort of carriage was standing in the middle of them . . . Lights flashed . . . What is it? Raskolnikov turned to the right and approached the crowd. He was ready to grasp at anything, and he smiled coldly as he thought of this, because his mind was firmly made up to go to the police, and he knew with certainty that all would soon be over.



## CHAPTER VII

IN the middle of the street stood some gentleman's elegant carriage, harnessed to a pair of spirited grey horses; there were no passengers and the coachman had got down from the box and was standing beside it; someone was holding the horses' heads. A great many people were crowding round, with policemen in the forefront. One of them, with a lighted lantern in his hand, was stooping down to throw the light on something lying on the ground under the wheels. There were constant cries, exclamations, sighs, the coachman seemed half-dazed, and kept repeating every so often—

'What a terrible thing! Oh Lord, how terrible!'

Raskolnikov pressed through the crowd as opportunity offered, and at length saw the object of all the commotion and curiosity. On the ground, plainly unconscious, lay a man who had been crushed beneath the horses' hooves; he was very poorly dressed but his clothes, which were now covered with blood, had once been 'respectable'. Blood was flowing from his face and head, and his head was terribly battered and mutilated. It was evident that his injuries were very serious.

'Oh Lord!' lamented the coachman, 'how can you guard against such things?' It isn't as if I was driving very fast, or didn't call out to him, but I was going quite gently and slowly. Everybody saw it: they can all bear me out. He was too drunk to walk straight, that's how it was. I saw him crossing the street, and he was staggering about and nearly falling. I shouted, three times altogether, and pulled in the horses; but he went and fell right under their feet! I don't know if he did it on purpose, or if he was just too unsteady on his legs . . . my horses are young and skittish—they shied, and he screamed—they got more frightened . . . that's how this awful thing happened.'

'That's just how it was!' testified a voice in the crowd.

'He shouted, that's true, he called out to him three times,' said another.

'Exactly three times, everybody heard him!' exclaimed a third.

The coachman, however, was not very distressed or frightened. It was evident that the carriage belonged to some rich and influential personage, who was awaiting its arrival

somewhere, the police, of course, were anxious to facilitate this. It remained only to carry the injured man to the police-station and then to the hospital. Nobody knew his name.

Meanwhile Raskolnikov had worked his way through the crowd and was bending nearer. Suddenly, the light of the lantern fell on the unfortunate man's face, and he recognized him.

'I know him, I know him!' he cried, pushing to the very front, 'he is a retired government clerk, called Marmeladov. He lives here, close by, in Kozel's house . . . Get a doctor at once, I will pay, look!' He pulled some money out of his pocket and showed it to the policeman. He was surprisingly agitated.

The police were pleased to have learnt the identity of the injured man. Raskolnikov gave his own name and address as well, and urged them, with as much vehemence as though it were a question of his own father, to carry the unconscious Marmeladov to his own room.

'Here it is, only three doors away,' he said pleadingly, 'in the house of Kozel, the German, a rich man . . . He was probably going home, drunk, now. I know him . . . He is a drunkard . . . He has a family there, a wife and children, and there is a daughter besides. Why take him all the way to the hospital, when there's actually a doctor in the house? I will pay . . . At any rate he'll be looked after by his own people, and at once, but he would die before you got him to the hospital . . .'

He even managed to thrust something inconspicuously into the policeman's hand, the proceeding he suggested was, however, clearly lawful, and, in any case, here assistance was nearer. Helpers were found, and the injured man was lifted and carried away. Kozel's house was some thirty paces away. Raskolnikov walked behind, supporting the head and indicating the way.

'This way, this way' The head must go first up the stairs; turn round . . . that's it. I will pay, I shall be most grateful,' he murmured.

Katerina Ivanovna, as usual, as soon as she had a free moment, had immediately taken to pacing her little room, from the window to the stove and back, with her crossed arms pressed to her breast, talking to herself and coughing. Lately she had taken to talking more and more often to her elder daughter, the ten-year-old Polenka, who, although she understood only a little, yet knew very well that her mother needed

her, and therefore always followed her with her great wise eyes and strove her utmost to pretend she understood everything. This time Polenka was undressing her little brother, who had been ailing all day, in order to put him to bed. While he waited for her to change his shirt, which had to be washed during the night, the little boy sat silently in a chair, upright and motionless with a solemn face, and with his little legs stretched out in front of him, squeezed tightly together, heels presented to the room and toes outspread. He was listening to what mama said to his sister, with pouted lips and eyes starting out of his little head, sitting exactly as all good little boys ought to sit when they are being undressed for bed. The still smaller little girl, in absolute rags, stood near the screen waiting her turn. The door to the stairs stood open, to get rid of at least some of the clouds of tobacco-smoke which escaped from the other rooms and constantly drove the poor consumptive into long and torturing fits of coughing. Katerina Ivanovna seemed to have grown even thinner during the past week, and the red stains on her cheeks burned even brighter than before.

'You wouldn't believe, Polenka, you can't even imagine,' she said as she walked about the room, 'how happily and in what luxury we lived at home with my papa, and now that drunkard has destroyed me, and he will destroy all of you too! Papa was a Civil Colonel, and he almost became Governor, there was only one step higher for him, so that everybody used to come and say to him "We already look upon you, Ivan Mikhaylovich, as our Governor." When I—cough—when I—cough, cough, cough—"oh, accursed life!" she exclaimed, spitting out phlegm and clutching at her chest, 'when I—ch, at the last ball... at the Marshal's... when Princess Bezzemelnaya saw me... she gave me the blessing, later, when I married your papa, Polya... she asked at once: "Isn't that the nice girl who did the shawl dance at the end of term?"... (That tear must be mended; take your needle and darn it at once, as I taught you, or else tomorrow'—cough—"tomorrow"—cough, cough, cough—"it will tear further!" she cried in a paroxysm of coughing) 'Prince Shchegolskoy—he was a Gentleman of the Bedchamber—had just arrived from St. Petersburg... he danced the mazurka with me, and he wanted to come next day and make an offer; but I thanked him in the most complimentary terms and told him that my heart had long belonged to another. That other was your father, Polya;



papa was terribly angry . . . Is the water ready? Well, give me the shirt . . . and where are the socks? . . . Lida,' and she turned to her little daughter, 'you will have to sleep without a shirt tonight, somehow . . . and put your stockings with it . . . They must all be washed together . . . Why doesn't that drunken ragamuffin come? He's worn his shirt till it's like a duster or something, and it's all torn . . . I want to do them all at once, so that I need not tire myself out two nights running Lord!'—cough, cough, cough, cough. 'Again! What is this?' she shrieked, seeing the crowd in the entrance and the people crowding into her room with some sort of burden. 'What is this? What are they carrying? Oh God.'

'Where shall we put him?' the policeman was asking, looking round. They had carried Marmeladov, unconscious and covered with blood, into the room.

'On the sofa. Lay him straight on the sofa, with his head this way,' said Raskolnikov.

'He was run over in the street—drunk!' shouted someone from the entrance.

Katerina Ivanovna stood there pale and panting. The children were terrified. Little Lida shrieked, rushed to Polenka and put her arms round her, shaking all over.

When Marmeladov had been laid down, Raskolnikov turned to Katerina Ivanovna.

'For God's sake, be calm; don't be alarmed,' he said quickly. 'He was crossing the road, a carriage ran over him; don't be anxious, he will recover consciousness. I told them to bring him here . . . I have been here, you remember . . . He will come round. I will bear the expense.'

'He's been asking for this!' shrieked Katerina Ivanovna in despair, and rushed to his side.

Raskolnikov quickly saw that this woman was not one of those who instantly swoon away. In an instant a pillow, which nobody had thought of before, appeared under the unfortunate man's head; Katerina Ivanovna began to undress and examine him, busying herself over him without losing her head. She forgot about herself, bit her trembling lips and stifled the cries that tried to escape from her throat.

Raskolnikov meanwhile persuaded somebody to run for the doctor. The doctor, it appeared, lived in the next building but one.

'I have sent for the doctor,' he assured Katerina Ivanovna.

'Do not worry, I will pay him. Isn't there any water?' . . . And give me a napkin, or a towel, or something, quickly; we don't know yet what his injuries are . . . He is hurt, but not killed, be assured of that . . . We shall see what the doctor says.'

Katerina Ivanovna hastened to the window; there, in a corner, a large earthenware bowl full of water stood on a broken chair, ready for the nocturnal washing of her husband's and the children's linen. This washing Katerina Ivanovna did with her own hands at least twice a week, and sometimes oftener, for things had got to such a pass that they had practically no change of linen left, but each member of the family had only one garment of each kind. Katerina Ivanovna could not tolerate dirt, and was willing to wear herself out with work that was beyond her strength, at night, while everybody was asleep, so as to be able to dry the wet things by morning and give them back clean, rather than see dirt in the house. She lifted the bowl to carry it to Raskolnikov but almost fell with the weight. He had already found a towel, and he dampened it in the water and began to wash the blood from Marmeladov's face. Katerina Ivanovna stood there with her hands clasped to her breast, drawing her breath painfully. She was herself in need of help. Raskolnikov began to understand that he had perhaps done wrong in persuading them to bring the injured man here. The policeman also seemed doubtful.

'Polva' cried Katerina Ivanovna, 'run to Sonya at once. If she isn't at home, never mind, say that her father has been run over and she is to come at once . . . when she gets in. Quickly, Polva.' Here, put a kerchief on your head.

'Run as fast as ever you can' shouted the little boy from his chair, and resumed at once his silent upright pose, with his eyes round, his legs stretched in front of him, and his toes spread out.

Meanwhile the room had grown so full that there was not an inch of floor space left. The police had gone, except one who stayed behind for a time, trying to drive out again the people who had thronged in from the stairs. Practically everyone of Mrs. Lippewecnsel's lodgers, besides, had flocked out of the inner rooms, crowding at first into the doorway, and then pouring in a mass into the room itself. Katerina Ivanovna flew into a passion.

'You might at least leave people to die in peace' she cried to the crowd; 'what sort of side-show do you think you've found? With cigarettes!'—cough, cough, cough—'wearing your

hats, too' . . . There is one with his hat on' . . . Get out! Show some respect at least for the dying!"

Coughs choked her, but the rebuke had been effective. They even seemed a little afraid of Katerina Ivanovna; the lodgers, one after another, began to press back towards the door, with that strange inward glow of satisfaction which is always found, even among his nearest and dearest, when disaster suddenly strikes our neighbour, and from which not one of us is immune, however sincere our pity and sympathy.

Voices, however, outside the door, were heard referring to the hospital and contending that people ought not to upset the house for nothing.

"People ought not to die" flashed Katerina Ivanovna, and was in the act of pulling open the door, to let loose a storm on their heads, when she ran into Mrs. Lippewechsel herself in the doorway. The landlady had only that moment heard of the accident and was hastening to restore order. She was an untidy and quarrelsome person.

"*Ach, mein Gott*" she exclaimed, flinging up her hands. "Your drunk husband has a horse trampled. He should in the hospital! It iss mine house!"

"Amalia Ludwigovna! I beg of you to consider what you are saying," began Katerina Ivanovna in a lofty manner (she always adopted this tone in speaking to her landlady, so that the latter should not 'forget her place', and even now she could not deny herself this pleasure). "Amalia Ludwigovna . . ."

"I haf told you, once for all, you should not dare to say to me Amaly Ludwigovna; I am Amaly-Ivan!"

"You are not Amaly-Ivan, but Amalia Ludwigovna, and since I am not one of your base flatterers, like Mr. Lebezyatnikov, who is laughing outside the door now" and indeed laughter and a cry of "They're at it again!" could be heard just outside the door, "I shall always address you as Amalia Ludwigovna, although I really cannot understand why that designation is displeasing to you. You may see for yourself what has happened to Semen Zakharovich: he is dying. Permit him at least to die in peace. I must request you to close that door immediately and allow no one to enter. Otherwise, I assure you, tomorrow your conduct shall be brought to the notice of His Excellency the Governor himself. The Prince knew me in my girlhood, and he remembers Semen Zakharovich, to whom he did many kindnesses, very well. It is well



known that Semen Zakharovich had many friends and patrons, whom he himself abandoned in his honourable pride, being conscious of his unhappy falling, but now we are being helped by a noble-hearted young man' she indicated Raskolnikov 'of means and influential connexions, whom Semen Zakharovich knew as a child, and be assured, Amala Ludwigovna . . .'

All this poured out in an ever-increasing torrent of eloquence, until a fit of coughing cut short Katerina Ivanovna's oratory. At the same moment the dying man recovered consciousness and groaned, and she hurried to him. He opened his eyes and they rested, without recognition or understanding, on the figure of Raskolnikov standing close to him. He was drawing deep, laboured breaths at long intervals; blood trickled from the corners of his mouth, drops of sweat stood on his forehead. He did not know Raskolnikov, and his eyes began to wander uneasily. Katerina Ivanovna's look was stern and sad, and tears were flowing from her eyes.

'Oh God, his whole chest is crushed in! Look at the blood, the blood!' she said in despair. 'We must take off all his outer things! Turn yourself a little, Semen Zakharovich, if you can,' she cried to him.

Marmeladov recognized her.

'A priest!' he murmured hoarsely.

Katerina Ivanovna walked away to the window and leaned her forehead against the frame, exclaiming in desperation.

'Oh, accursed life!'

'A priest!' said the dying man again, after a moment of silence.

'They've go-o-one!' shrieked Katerina Ivanovna; he heard the clamour and was silent. His timid anxious glance sought her out, she had returned to his side and stood by his pillow. He seemed a little calmer, but not for long. Soon his eye fell on little Lida—his favourite, who stood in the corner shivering as though with fever and watching him with her wondering eyes childishly intent.

'But . . . but . . . ' he indicated her uneasily. He was trying to say something.

'What is it this time?' cried Katerina Ivanovna.

'Bare-footed! bare-footed!' he murmured, with his half-conscious eyes fixed on the little girl's bare legs and feet.

'Be quiet,' exclaimed Katerina Ivanovna irritably. 'You know why she goes barefoot!'

'Thank God, the doctor!' exclaimed Raskolnikov, overjoyed.

The doctor, a neat little old man, a German, came in looking about him with an air of mistrust; he went up to the injured man, felt his pulse, carefully touched his head, and with Katerina Ivanovna's help, unbuttoned his blood-soaked shirt and laid bare his chest. It was all crushed, trampled, and lacerated; several ribs on the right side were broken. On the left, immediately over the heart, was a great yellowish-black mark, left by the cruel blow of a hoof. The doctor frowned. The policeman explained that the unfortunate man had been caught by the wheel and dragged along the roadway for some thirty yards.

'It is surprising that he ever recovered consciousness at all,' whispered the doctor softly to Raskolnikov.

'What is your opinion?' asked he.

'He is dying now.'

'Is there really no hope?'

'None at all! He is on the point of death . . . The head is very badly injured, too . . . Hm. Perhaps I might let some blood . . . but . . . it would do no good. He will certainly be dead in five or ten minutes.'

'But surely you ought at least to try it?'

'Perhaps so . . . However, I warn you that it will be quite useless.'

Now steps were heard approaching again, the crowd in the entrance parted, and the priest, a little old man with grey hair, appeared on the threshold carrying the sacrament. A policeman had gone for him from the scene of the accident. The doctor immediately made way for him, exchanging a significant glance with him as he did so. Raskolnikov begged the doctor to stay, if only for a short time. He shrugged his shoulders and remained.

They all stood aside. The dying man's confession was very short and it is doubtful if he had any clear idea of what was happening; he was capable of uttering only vague broken sounds. Katerina Ivanovna took Lidochka, lifted the little boy from the chair, knelt down in the corner by the stove and made the children kneel in front of her. The little girl only shivered; but the boy, on his little bare knees, raised his hand, crossed himself, and bowed to the ground, knocking his forehead on the floor, a process which seemed to afford him great satisfac-

tion. Katerina Ivanovna was biting her lips to keep back the tears: she also was praying; occasionally she straightened the little boy's shirt, and once, without rising from her knees or ceasing her prayers, she managed to take a shawl from the chest of drawers and throw it round the little girl's shoulders, which were almost bare. Meanwhile the door from the inner rooms began to open again under the pressure of the curious, and in the little lobby the onlookers were crowding thicker and thicker, from every flat on the staircase; but they did not cross the threshold of the room. A single candle lighted the scene.

At this moment Polenka, who had been for her sister, hurriedly pushed through the crowd in the entrance. She came in, out of breath with running, took off her kerchief, looked round for her mother, went to her and said: "She is coming! I met her in the street." Her mother made her kneel down next to her. Out of the crowd, noiselessly and timidly, appeared a young girl, and her sudden appearance was strange in that room, in the midst of poverty, rags, death, and despair. Her own clothes were ragged enough, but her tuppenny-ha'penny finery, in the taste and style of her special world of the streets, testified clearly and shamelessly to the purpose for which it had been chosen. Sonva stopped in the lobby, near the door, but without crossing the threshold of the room, utterly forlorn and apparently unconscious of her surroundings; she seemed forgetful alike of her garish fourth-hand silk dress, indecently out of place here with its ridiculous long train and immense crinoline blocking the whole doorway, of her light-coloured boots, of the sunshade she carried with her, although it was useless at night, and of her absurd little round straw hat with its bright flame-coloured feather. From under this hat, worn with a boyish tilt to one side, looked out a thin, pale, frightened little face: the mouth hung open and the eyes stared in terrified fixity. Sonva was small, about eighteen years old, thin but quite pretty, with fair hair and remarkable blue eyes. She kept them fixed on the bed and the priest; she was breathless with the speed of her arrival. At length the whispering among the crowd, or some of the words said, seemed to reach her ears, she cast down her eyes, took a step across the threshold and stood inside the room, but still very near the door.

The confession had been made and the sacrament administered. Katerina Ivanovna again approached her husband's



bed. The priest moved away, but turned before he left to say a word of exhortation and solace to Katerina Ivanovna.

'And what shall I do with these?' she interrupted sharply and irritably, indicating the little ones.

'God is merciful. Put your trust in the help of the Most High,' began the priest.

'Ah! Merciful, but not to us!'

'That is sinful, wicked!' he remarked, shaking his head.

'And what is this?' exclaimed Katerina Ivanovna, pointing to her husband.

'It may be that those who were the involuntary cause of your distress will be willing to compensate you, if only for the loss of income . . .'

'You do not understand me!' irritably exclaimed Katerina Ivanovna, waving her arms. 'Why should there be any compensation? He was drunk and he crawled under the feet of the horses himself! And what income? All I had from him was suffering. He was a drunkard and threw away everything we had in drink! He robbed us and took the money to the public house, he spent their lives and mine in the public house! Thank God he is dying! Our loss will be less!'

'You must forgive in the hour of death. This is sinful, madam, such sentiments are a grievous sin!'

Katerina Ivanovna was busying herself over the injured man, giving him something to drink, wiping the sweat and blood from his face, straightening his pillow, and only occasionally finding time for a word to the priest in the midst of her activities. Now she turned on him, almost beside herself.

'Oh Lord! Those are only words, nothing but words! Forgive! Today, if he had not been run over, he would have come home drunk, with his only shirt dirty and ragged, and gone to bed to sleep like a log, while I splashed a bout in water till the dawn, washing his old clothes and the children's and drying them out of the window, and as soon as it was light I should have had to sit down and mend them—that is how my night would have been spent . . . So why even talk of forgiveness? I have forgiven him!'

A terrible, deep-seated cough cut short her words. She spat into a handkerchief and thrust it towards the priest, painfully clutching her breast with the other hand. The handkerchief was full of blood . . .

The priest bowed his head and said nothing.

Marmeladov was in the last agony; he did not move his eyes from Katerina Ivanovna's face, bent over him once more. He kept trying to say something to her; moving his tongue with an enormous effort, he even managed to utter some inarticulate words, but Katerina Ivanovna, understanding that he wanted to ask her forgiveness, immediately exclaimed peremptorily:

'Quiet! Don't! . . . I know what you want to say!' The dying man was silent; but then his wandering glance fell on the door, and he saw Sonya.

Until that instant he had not noticed her; she stood in a shadowy corner.

'Who is that? Who is it?' he asked suddenly in a hoarse panting voice, full of agitation, with his alarmed gaze directed to the door, where his daughter was standing. He even tried to raise himself.

'Lie down! Lie down!' exclaimed Katerina Ivanovna.

But with unnatural strength he managed to prop himself on his arm. His wild unmoving gaze remained fixed for some time on his daughter, as though he did not recognize her. Indeed, he had never before seen her in such a costume. Suddenly he did recognize her, humiliated, crushed, ashamed in her gaudy finery, submissively waiting her turn to take leave of her dying father. Infinite suffering showed in his face.

'Sonya! Daughter! Forgive me!' he cried, and tried to stretch out his hand towards her, but without its support he fell and crashed down headlong from the sofa; they rushed to lift him up, and laid him down again, but he was going. Sonya uttered a feeble cry, ran forward, put her arms round him, and almost swooned in that embrace. He died in her arms.

'He brought his fate on himself!' cried Katerina Ivanovna, when she saw her husband's corpse. 'And what shall I do now? How am I to bury him? And how shall I feed them, tomorrow?'

Raskolnikov went up to her.

'Katerina Ivanovna,' he began, 'last week your late husband told me the story of his life and everything connected with it. You may be sure that he spoke of you with great respect and appreciation. From that evening when I learnt how devoted he was to all of you, and how he loved and honoured you especially, Katerina Ivanovna, from that evening, in spite of his unfortunate weakness, we were friends . . . Permit me now to . . . contribute . . . towards the repayment of a debt to my departed friend. Take this . . . it is twenty roubles, I think—

and if it can be of any assistance to you, then . . . I . . . in short, I will come again—I will certainly come again . . . perhaps I may look in tomorrow . . . Good-bye!"

And he hurried out of the room, pushing his way towards the stairs as quickly as he could, through the crowd, among them he suddenly collided with Nikodim Fomich, who had been informed of the accident and had decided to make the necessary arrangements in person. They had not met since the scene in the office, but Nikodim Fomich recognized him at once.

"Oh, is that you?" he asked.

"He is dead," answered Raskolnikov. "The doctor has been here, and a priest; everything is in order. Do not distress a very unhappy woman, who is a consumptive besides. Encourage her if you can . . . You are a good man, I know . . ." he added with a smile, looking straight into his eyes.

"But what is this? You are soaked with blood," remarked Nikodim Fomich, examining by the light of a lantern some fresh stains on Raskolnikov's waistcoat.

"Yes, I am . . . I am all over blood-stains!" said Raskolnikov, with a peculiar look, then he smiled, nodded his head, and turned down the stairs.

He went down quietly, without hurry; he was in a fever again, but unconscious of the fact, and full of a strange new feeling of boundlessly full and powerful life welling up in him, a feeling which might be compared with that of a man condemned to death and unexpectedly reprieved. Half-way down the stairs he was overtaken by the priest returning home; Raskolnikov silently let him pass, and they exchanged bows without speaking. Then, when he was descending the last few stairs he heard hurried steps behind him. Someone was running after him. It was Polenka, hurrying down behind him and calling: "Listen! Listen!"

He turned to her. She ran down the last flight of stairs and stopped just in front of him, one step higher. A dim light came from the courtyard. Raskolnikov looked at her nice thin little face smiling at him and looking at him with childish cheerfulness. She had run after him with a message which evidently gave her great pleasure.

"Listen, what is your name? . . . And next, where do you live?" The words came in a rush, in a breathless little voice.

He laid both hands on her shoulders, finding a certain



happiness in looking at her. It seemed to him a very pleasant thing to do, though he did not know why.

'Who sent you?'

'It was my sister Sonya,' answered the little girl, with a still more cheerful smile.

'There, I knew it was your sister Sonya.'

'Mama sent me as well. When Sonya was just sending me, mama came as well and said "Run as quick as you can, Polenka!"'

'Do you love your sister Sonya?'

'I love her better than anybody,' said Polenka with great firmness, and her smile grew suddenly serious.

'And will you love me?'

By way of answer, he saw the child's little face brought near to him and her full little lips naively protruded to kiss him. Suddenly her thin little match-sticks of arms were wound tightly round his neck, her head rested on his shoulder, and the little girl began to cry quietly, pressing her face harder and harder against him.

'It is so sad for poor papa,' she said after a minute, hiding her tear-stained little face and wiping her eyes with her hands. 'Such dreadful things have been happening lately,' she added unexpectedly, with that particularly sedate expression that children strive to adopt when they want to talk like the 'grown-ups'.

'And did papa love you?'

'He loved Lidochka best of all,' she announced very seriously, without a smile, just like a grown-up, 'because she is little, and because she's delicate besides, and he always used to bring her presents: but he taught us to read, and he taught me grammar and scripture,' she added with pride, and mama didn't say anything, only we knew she liked it, and papa knew, and mama wants to teach me French, because it is time for me to be educated.'

'And do you know how to pray?'

'Why, of course we do! We have for a long time. I am a big girl, so I pray to myself, but Kolya and Lidochka pray aloud with mama. First they say "Hail, Mary," and then another prayer: "O God, forgive sister Sonya and bless her" and then "O God, forgive our other papa and bless him," because our old papa is dead, and this one is our other one, and we pray for the old one too.'

'Polechka, my name is Rodion; pray for me too sometimes: "and thy servant Rodion" just that.'

'I will pray for you all my life,' said the little girl passionately, and then suddenly laughed again, threw herself on him, and hugged him tightly once more.

Raskolnikov told her his name and address, and promised to return the next day without fail. When she left him she was rapturously happy. It was about eleven o'clock when he went out into the street. Five minutes later he was standing on the bridge, on the exact spot where the woman had thrown herself into the water.

'Enough!' he said decidedly and solemnly. 'Away with illusions, away with imaginary terrors, away with spectres! . . . Life is! Was I not living just now? My life did not die with the old woman! May she rest in peace and—enough, old woman, your time has come! Now comes the reign of reason and light and . . . and freedom and power . . . now we shall see! Now we shall measure our strength!' he added arrogantly, as though he were addressing some dark power and summoning it up. 'After all . . . I am very weak at this moment, but . . . I think all my illness has gone. I knew it would, when I came out just now. By the way, Pochinkov's house is only a couple of steps away. I should have to go to Razumikhin's even if it were much farther than that . . . Let him win his bet' . . . Let him laugh, even—it doesn't matter, let him! . . . Strength, strength is what I need; nothing can be done without strength; and strength must be gained by strength—that is something they do not know,' he added proudly and self-confidently, and he left the bridge, though he could hardly put one foot before the other. His pride and self-confidence grew with every minute; in each succeeding minute he was a different man from what he had been in the preceding one. But what had happened that was so special? What had so transformed him? He himself did not know; it had come to him suddenly, as to a man clutching at a straw, that even for him it was 'possible to live, that life was still there, that his life had not died with that old woman.' Perhaps he had been in too much haste to reach this conclusion, but of this he did not think.

'But I asked for "thy servant Rodion" to be remembered in their prayers,' flashed through his mind, 'well, that's just in case!' he added, and laughed at his own childish quibbling. He was in excellent spirits.

He found Razumikhin easily; the new lodger was already known in Pochinkov's, and the porter showed him the way at once. From half-way upstairs he could already distinguish the clatter and lively talk of a large gathering. The door to the staircase stood open; he could hear voices raised in discussion. Razumikhin's room was fairly large, and there were about fifteen people in it. Raskolnikov stopped in the little hall. There, beyond a partition, two servants of the landlord's were busy with two large samovars, various bottles and plates, and dishes of patties and *zakuski* brought from the landlord's kitchen. Raskolnikov sent in for Razumikhin, who came running out, delighted. At the first glance it was evident that he had had much more than usual to drink, and although he practically never got drunk, this time he showed some signs of being affected.

'Listen,' said Raskolnikov hurriedly, 'I only came to say that you've won your bet and that it is true nobody knows what he may do. But I can't come in; I feel too faint to stand. So—hail and farewell! Come and see me tomorrow, though . . .'

'Do you know what? I'll see you home. When you say yourself that you are weak, then . . .'

'What about your guests? Who is that, with curly hair, who just looked this way?'

'That? God knows! Some acquaintance of my uncle's, I suppose, or perhaps he just came without waiting to be invited. I shall leave my uncle with them; he is invaluable, it is a pity you can't make his acquaintance now. But to the devil with all of them! I can't be bothered with them just now; besides, I need some fresh air. My dear chap, you came in the nick of time; another two minutes and I swear I'd have got into a fight! They talk such confounded nonsense . . . You can't imagine what heights of idiotic nonsense a man can finally soar to! But of course you can imagine it—don't we talk rot ourselves? Well, let them talk it if they want to, later on they'll talk sense, no doubt . . . Sit down a minute; I'll get Zosimov.'

Zosimov showed some eagerness as he hurried over to Raskolnikov, and a noticeable and rather odd curiosity. Soon his face cleared.

'You must get some sleep without delay,' he pronounced, having examined his patient as well as he could, 'and take a dose of medicine before you go to bed. Will you take it? I got it ready a short time ago . . . it's a powder.'



'Two if you like,' answered Raskolnikov.

The powder was taken on the spot.

'It is a good idea for you to take him home yourself,' remarked Zosimov to Razumikhin; 'we shall see what happens tomorrow, but things are not at all bad today: there is a decided change since a little time ago. Well, we live and learn . . .'

'Do you know what Zosimov whispered to me just now, as we came out?' blurted Razumikhin, as soon as they were in the street. 'I am telling you this straight out, my dear chap, because he is a fool. Zosimov told me to talk freely to you on the way and make you do the same, and then tell him about it afterwards, because he has an idea . . . that you . . . are mad, or pretty near it. Just imagine that! To begin with, you are three times as clever as he, in the second place, if you aren't a lunatic, why should you care what rubbish he has got into his head?, and in the third place, that lump of flesh specializes in surgery, but now he's cracked on the subject of mental diseases. What set him definitely on your track was the conversation you had today with Zametov.'

'Did Zametov tell you about it?'

'Everything, and he did quite right. I understood all the ins and outs of it then, and so did Zametov . . . Well, in one word, Rodya . . . the point is . . . I'm just a shade drunk just now . . . But that doesn't matter . . . the point is, that that idea . . . you understand? . . . really had got into their heads . . . you understand? That is, none of them dared say it aloud, because it's such ridiculous balderdash, and especially after they'd arrested that painter, it put the extinguisher on all that for good. But why were they such fools? I gave Zametov a bit of a drubbing at the time—this is between ourselves, my dear chap; please don't even hint that you know about it; I have noticed that he is very touchy; it was at Louisa's. But today, today everything has become clear. It was principally Ilya Petrovich. He took advantage of your faint that time in the office, but even he was ashamed of it afterwards; I know for a fact . . .'

Raskolnikov listened avidly. Razumikhin had drunk enough to make him let things out.

'I fainted because it was stuffy and smelt of paint,' said Raskolnikov.

'Why bother to explain? And it wasn't only the paint; your

collapse had been coming on for a whole month. Zosimov will bear witness! Only how cut up that boy is now, you simply can't imagine! "I am not worth his little finger," he says—Yours, that is. He's not a bad chap sometimes, my dear fellow. But the lesson, the lesson you gave him today in the "Crystal Palace"—that put the finishing touch on. You know, you gave him a fright at first, you worked him up into a fever, you almost made him convinced again of all that monstrous rubbish and then suddenly—you stuck your tongue out at him! "There you are," says you, "you've been caught!" Perfect. He's crushed, he's overwhelmed! You're a master, I swear it: that's just what they need! Oh, why wasn't I there? He was waiting terribly impatiently for you just now. Porfiry would like to know you, too . . .

'And . . . he as well . . . But why am I supposed to be mad?'

'Well, not exactly mad. It seems, my dear fellow, I've been letting out too much . . . He was struck, you see, by the fact that only this one point interested you . . . Now it is clear why you were interested, knowing all the circumstances . . . and how this irritated you at the time and got mixed up with your illness . . . I'm a little drunk, my dear fellow, only he has some idea of his own, though God knows what it is . . . I told you he's mad on the subject of mental illness. But you needn't give a damn . . .'

Both were silent for some moments.

'Listen, Razumikhin,' began Raskolnikov, 'I want to tell you something frankly: I've just been at a dead man's house—a clerk who has died . . . I gave all my money to them . . . and besides, I have just been kissed by a creature who, even if I had killed anybody, would still . . . in a word, I saw another creature . . . with a flame-coloured feather . . . but, however, I am wandering, I am very weak, give me your arm . . . the staircase is just here.'

'What is the matter? What is it?' asked Razumikhin anxiously.

'My head feels a little dizzy, but that isn't it, it is that I feel so sad, so sad!—Like a woman . . . really! Look, what is that? Look, look!'

'What do you mean?'

'Don't you see? There is a light in my room, do you see?—through the crack . . .'

They were standing at the foot of the last flight, level with

the landlady's door, and they could indeed see from below that there was a light in Raskolnikov's room.

'Strange. Perhaps it's Nastasya,' remarked Razumikhin.

'She is never in my room at this hour, and besides she must be in bed long since, but . . . it is all one to me! Good-bye!'

'What do you mean? I am seeing you home. I shall go in with you!'

'I know you will, but I want to shake your hand and say good-bye to you here and now. Well, give me your hand, and good-bye!'

'What is the matter with you, Rodya?'

'Nothing. Come; you will be a witness . . .'

They began to climb the stairs, and the idea came into Razumikhin's mind that Zosimov might be right. 'Oh, dear! I've upset him with my chatter!' he muttered to himself. Suddenly, as they approached the door, they heard voices in the room.

'What can this be?' cried Razumikhin.

Raskolnikov reached the door first and opened it wide, opened it and stood rooted on the threshold.

His mother and sister were sitting on his sofa, where they had been waiting for him for an hour and a half. Why was it that their arrival was the last thing he expected, and that they were the last thing he had thought of, in spite of the news, repeated that very day, that they were coming, were on the way, would soon arrive? All through that hour and a half they had plied Nastasya with questions in turn, until they had heard everything in the fullest detail. She was standing before them now. They were almost beside themselves with fright when they heard that 'he ran away today', a sick man and certainly, from what they had been told, delirious. 'Oh God, what has become of him?' They had both been crying, and both had suffered untold agonies during that hour and a half of waiting.

A cry of rapturous joy greeted Raskolnikov's appearance. Both flung themselves towards him. But he stood like one dead, a sudden, unbearable thought had struck him like a clap of thunder. He did not lift his arms to embrace them; he could not. His mother and sister clasped him in their arms, kissed him, laughed, cried . . . He took a step forward, faltered, and fell to the ground in a swoon.

Agitation, cries of alarm, groans . . . Razumikhin, who had



been standing on the threshold, rushed into the room and seized the invalid in his powerful arms, and Raskolnikov found himself on the sofa in an instant.

'It is nothing, nothing!' cried Razumikhin, 'it is only a faint, a trivial matter! Only just now the doctor said that he was much better, that he was quite well! Water! Look, he's coming to himself now! He's quite come round, see! . . .'

And seizing Dunechka's hand so forcibly that he almost twisted it off, he made her stoop down to see that 'he's quite come round'. Raskolnikov's mother and sister both looked at Razumikhin with tenderness and gratitude as though he were Providence itself; they had learnt from Nastasva what this 'brilliant young man' as Pulkheria Alexandrovna Raskolnikova herself termed him in intimate conversation with Dunya that evening, had been to their Rodya throughout his illness.

## PART THREE

---

### CHAPTER I

RASKOLNIKOV sat up on the sofa.

He made a feeble gesture to Razumikhin to cut short his flow of warm but incoherent reassurances to his mother and sister, took a hand of each, and sat for a minute or two looking silently from one to the other. This look frightened his mother. It showed not only an emotion so intense as to be painful, but also a sort of insane fixity. Pulkheria Alexandrovna burst into tears. Avdotya Romanovna was pale, her hand trembled in her brother's.

'Go home . . . with him,' he said in a broken voice, indicating Razumikhin, 'until tomorrow; tomorrow, everything . . . When did you arrive?'

'This evening, Rodya,' answered Pulkheria Alexandrovna; 'the train was terribly late. But, Rodya, nothing could induce me to leave you now. I will spend the night here beside you . . .'

'Don't torment me!' he said, with an irritated gesture.

'I will stay with him!' exclaimed Razumikhin; 'I will not leave him for an instant. As for those people at my place, they can go to the devil for all I care; and if they want to take offence, they can. Anyhow, my uncle is there to look after them.'

'Oh, how can I thank you?' Pulkheria Alexandrovna was beginning, clasping Razumikhin's hand once more, but Raskolnikov interrupted her again.

'I can't stand this, I can't stand it,' he repeated fretfully; 'don't torture me! Enough! Please go away! . . . I can't stand any more!'

'Come, mama; let us at any rate leave the room for a short time,' whispered Dunya, frightened. 'You can see we are too much for him.'

'And am I not even to look at him, after three years?' wept Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

'Wait!' said he, stopping them again. 'You keep on interrupting and my mind gets confused . . . Have you seen Luzhin?'

'No, Rodya, but he knows that we have arrived. We have

heard, Rod'ya, that Peter Petrovich was good enough to call on you today,' said Pulkheria Alexandrovna rather timidly.

'Yes . . . he was good enough . . . Dunya, I told Luzhin I should throw him downstairs, and sent him packing . . .'

'Rod'ya, what are you saying? You really . . . you don't mean to say . . . ' began Pulkheria Alexandrovna, startled. But she looked at Dunya and stopped.

Avdot'ya Romanovna, with her eyes fixed on her brother, waited. Nastasya had already told them as much of the quarrel as she could understand or convey to them, and both had awaited this moment in a torment of doubt and anxiety.

'Dunya,' went on Raskolnikov with an effort, 'I will not have this marriage, and so, tomorrow, the first words you say to Luzhin must be to dismiss him. Then we need never so much as speak of him again.'

'Oh, my God!' exclaimed Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

'Think what you are saying, brother' began Avdot'ya Romanovna, flaring up. But she controlled herself at once. 'Perhaps you are not fit just now, you are tired,' she said gently.

'Raving? No . . . You are marrying Luzhin *for my sake*, and I do not accept the sacrifice. So before tomorrow write him a letter . . . dismissing him. Give it to me to read in the morning, and let that be the end of it.'

'That I cannot do,' exclaimed the young woman, offended. 'What right . . . ?'

'Dunetchka, you are quick-tempered yourself, stop now: tomorrow . . . Can't you see . . . ' exclaimed her mother in fresh alarm, hastening to Dunya. 'Oh, we had better go.'

'He's raving!' exclaimed the tipsy Razumikhin, 'or how would he dare? He'll have got that bee out of his bonnet by tomorrow . . . He really did turn him out today. That's true enough. But then, the other fellow lost his temper too . . . He was holding forth here, showing off his knowledge, but he went away with his tail between his legs . . .'

'So it is true,' exclaimed Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

'Till tomorrow, brother,' said Dunya compassionately, 'let us go, mama . . . Good-bye, Rod'ya.'

'Listen, sister,' he repeated, with all the strength remaining to him, as she went, 'I am not raving: this marriage is an infamy. I may be infamous, but you should not . . . one is enough . . . ; though I am infamous, I would disown such a sister. It is either me or Luzhin. Go now . . .'



'You must be out of your mind! You're behaving like a tyrant!' shouted Razumikhin, but Raskolnikov did not answer, perhaps because he was not strong enough. He lay down and turned towards the wall, completely exhausted. Avdotya Romanova looked questioningly at Razumikhin; her black eyes were flashing and Razumikhin was quelled by her glance. Pulkheria Alexandrovna seemed rooted to the spot.

'I can't possibly leave!' she whispered, almost desperate, to Razumikhin. 'I will stay here somewhere. . . Take Danya home.'

'And ruin everything!' said Razumikhin, losing his temper, but also speaking in a whisper. 'Come out at least on to the stairs. Give us a light, Nastasya! I solemnly assure you,' he went on, still in a half-whisper, although they were now outside the room, 'that not long since he came very near to striking us, the doctor and me! Do you understand? the doctor himself! And the doctor yielded and left, so as not to annoy him, and I stayed downstairs on guard. But he got dressed and slipped out. And he will slip out again in the night if you upset him, and do himself some injury. . . .'

'Oh, what are you saying?'

'Besides, Avdotya Romanovna can't be in an hotel-room without you. Think what sort of place you are staying in! Surely that scoundrel Peter Petrovich would have done better to look for respectable lodgings for you. . . . You know I am a little drunk and that is why I . . . became abusive; don't pay any. . . .'

'But I shall go to the landlady here,' insisted Pulkheria Alexandrovna, 'and beg her to give Danya and me a corner for tonight. I cannot leave him like this, I cannot!'

While she spoke she was standing on the landing outside the landlady's door. Nastasya stood on a lower step holding a light for them. Razumikhin was extraordinarily excited. Half an hour before, when he had been taking Raskolnikov home, although he had been, as he was prepared to admit, too talkative, he had felt cheerful and fairly fresh, in spite of the enormous amount he had drunk during the evening. Now his state was one almost of exaltation, and it seemed as though all the vodka he had drunk had mounted to his head again, and with redoubled force. He stood with the two ladies, clasping a hand of each, exhorting them and setting forth his arguments with amazing clarity, and, apparently for greater conviction, squeez-

ing their hands more painfully tight, as if in a vice, with every word, while his eyes devoured Avdotya Romanovna, who seemed not at all disconcerted by this. Once or twice the pain made them try to free their hands from his huge bony ones, but he was so far from realizing what was the matter that he only pulled them more strongly towards him. If they had bidden him throw himself then and there head-first down the stairs to serve them he would have obeyed instantly, without argument or question. Pulkheria Alexandrovna, preoccupied with anxiety for her Rodka, although she felt that this was a very eccentric young man and was squeezing her hand much too painfully, was unwilling, since she regarded him as having been sent by Providence, to attach any importance to all his little eccentricities. But Avdotya Romanovna, although she was equally anxious for her brother, and although she was not of a timorous disposition, felt something very like consternation, and even fear, when she met the wild, flashing, fiery glance of her brother's friend, and only the boundless confidence inspired by Nastasya's account restrained her impulse to run away, dragging her mother with her. She understood also that they might perhaps find it impossible to run away from him now. However, after some ten minutes she found herself much more composed. Razumikhin had the faculty, whatever his mood, of revealing his whole being in one moment, so that everybody knew at once what sort of person he was dealing with.

'You can't go to the landlady; it would be a most terribly stupid thing to do' he cried, trying to convince Pulkheria Alexandrovna. 'Although you are his mother, if you stay it will drive him to distraction, and then God knows what will happen. Listen, I'll tell you what: Nastasya shall sit with him now, and I will take you both home, because you can't go through the streets alone here in St. Petersburg, in that respect . . . Well, never mind that! . . . Then I shall hurry straight back here, and I give you my word of honour that within a quarter of an hour I will bring you back a report of how he is, whether he is asleep or not, and so on. Then, listen! I shall go instantly to my rooms—I have some guests there, but they are all drunk,—get Zosimov—that is the doctor who is attending him, he is there too, but he isn't drunk; he never gets drunk!—take him to Rodka and then straight on to you. That means you will have two accounts of him—and one of them from the doctor,

you understand, from the doctor himself, that's not at all the same thing as one from me! If the news is bad, I promise faithfully I will bring you back here myself, and if it is good, then you can go to bed. I will spend the night here, but in the passage, so that he won't even hear me, and I will tell Zosimov to sleep in the flat too, so as to be within easy reach. Well, which will be better for him just now, you or the doctor? You know the doctor will be more use, much more use. Well then, go home! You can't go to the landlady; I can, but you can't: she won't allow it, because . . . because she's a fool. She is jealous of Avdotya Romanovna because of me, if you want to know, and of you as well . . . But especially of Avdotya Romanovna . . . She is a completely, an entirely unexpected character! However, I am a fool, too . . . Never mind! Let us go! Do you trust me? Well, do you trust me or not?"

"Come along, mama," said Avdotya Romanovna. "I am sure he will keep his promise. He has saved my brother's life already, and if the doctor will really agree to spend the night here, what could be better?"

"See, you . . . you . . . you understand me, because you are an angel!" exclaimed Razumikhin rapturously. "We are going! Nastasya! Upstairs this instant and sit with him, with a light; I shall be back in a quarter of an hour . . ."

Pulkhera Alexandrovna was not completely convinced, but she raised no further objections. Razumikhin took them both by the arm and drew them down the stairs. However, he worried her a little, too: "he may be kind and efficient, but is he in a condition to fulfil his promise? Look at the state he's in! . . ."

"Ah, I understand; you think I'm drunk!" said Razumikhin, divining her thoughts and breaking in on them. His enormous strides took him along the pavement at such a pace that the ladies could hardly keep up with him, but he did not notice this. "Nonsense!" that is . . . I am drunk, fool that I am, but that is not the point. I am not drunk with wine. But, as soon as I saw you, it went to my head . . . But never mind me! Don't pay any attention; I am talking rot; I am beneath you . . . I am infinitely far beneath you! . . . When I have taken you home, I shall pour a couple of buckets of water over my head, from the canal here, and I shall be all right . . . If only you knew how I love you both! Don't laugh, and don't be angry! . . . You may be angry with everybody else, but not with me.



I am his friend, and that means I am yours. I want that so much . . . I had a presentiment . . . last year, there was a moment when . . . However, it can't have been a presentiment at all, because now I feel as if you had fallen from the skies. Perhaps I shan't sleep all night . . . Not long since, Zosimov was afraid he might go out of his mind . . . That is why he must not be irritated . . .'

'What are you saying?' exclaimed the mother.

'Did the doctor really say that?' asked Avdotya Romanovna, alarmed.

'Yes, he did, but it is wrong, quite wrong. He gave him some medicine, a powder, I saw it, and then you arrived . . . Ah! . . . It would have been better if you had arrived tomorrow! We did right to come away. And in an hour's time Zosimov will give you a report about everything. *He* is very far from drunk! And I shall no longer be drunk . . . Why did I get so worked up? Because those damned fellows drew me into an argument. I have taken an oath not to agree . . . They talk such rot! I almost came to blows with them. I have left my uncle presiding there . . . Well, would you believe it they demand complete impersonality, they find the highest enjoyment in it! If one could only not be oneself, if one could be less like oneself than anything! That is what they consider to be the most complete progress. And if it were only their own nonsense they talked, but . . .'

'Listen!' interrupted Pulkheria Alexandrovna diffidently, but this seemed only to increase his fervour.

'What do you think?' cried Razumikhin in a still louder tone. 'Do you think I am annoyed because they talk nonsense? Rubbish! I like people to talk nonsense. It is man's unique privilege, among all other organisms. By pursuing falsehood you will arrive at the truth! The fact that I am in error shows that I am human. You will not attain to one single truth until you have produced at least fourteen false theories, and perhaps a hundred and fourteen, and that is honourable enough in its fashion; but we can't even produce our errors out of our own heads. You can talk the most mistaken rubbish to me, and if it is your own, I will embrace you! It is almost better to tell your own lies than somebody else's truth; in the first case you are a man, in the second you are no better than a parrot! Truth remains; but life can be choked up; there have been instances. Well, what are we all now? We are all, without exception,

children in the kindergarten, in respect of science, progress, thought, invention, ideas, desires, liberalism, judgement, experience, and everything, everything, everything, everything! We have been content to rub along on other people's ideas – we have rusted away! That is so, isn't it? What I say is true, isn't it?' exclaimed Razumikhin, shaking and squeezing both ladies' hands. 'Isn't it?'

'Oh, good gracious, I don't know,' said poor Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

'Yes, yes, it's true enough . . . although I don't agree with everything you say,' said Avdotya Romanovna seriously, and exclaimed sharply with pain as he gripped her hand tighter than ever.

'True? You say it's true? Well, after this you . . . you . . .', he cried rapturously, 'you are a fountain of kindness, purity, reason and . . . perfection! Give me your hand, give it me . . . and give me yours too; I must kiss your hands on my knees, here and now!'

And he fell on his knees on the pavement, which fortunately was deserted at this hour.

'Stop, I beg you! What are you doing?' cried Pulkheria Alexandrovna in the greatest alarm.

'Get up, get up!' said Dunya, laughing and alarmed at the same time.

'Not until you have given me your hands! There! I have done; you see I have got up. Let us go on! I am a miserable dolt; I am far beneath you, I am drunk, and I am ashamed . . . I am not worthy to love you, but to worship you is every man's obligation unless he is no more than a brute beast! And I have fulfilled that obligation . . . Here is your hotel, and on this account, at least, Rodion was right to turn Peter Petrovich out! How dared he send you to such a place? It is disgraceful! Do you know what sort of people are received here? And you his betrothed! You are engaged to him, aren't you? Well, I must tell you after this that your fiancé is a scoundrel! . . .'

'Mr. Razumikhin, you forget yourself . . .' Pulkheria Alexandrovna was beginning.

'Yes, yes, you are right, I have forgotten myself, and I apologize,' said Razumikhin, recollecting himself, 'but . . . but . . . you must not be angry with me for saying what I did! Because I am speaking sincerely, and not for a reason that . . . hm! . . . that would be ignoble; in one word, it is because in

you I . . . him' . . . well, let it be. I need not. I will not say why, I dare not! . . . But all of us saw, when he came in, that that man does not belong to our world. Not because when he came he had had his hair curled at the barber's, not because he was in a hurry to display his intellectual powers, but because he is a spy and a profiteer, because he is quite plainly a Jew and a mountebank. Do you suppose him to be intelligent? No, he is a fool, a fool! Well, is he a match for you? Good God, no! You see, ladies,' and he stood still on the stairs leading up to the hotel, 'although those guests of mine are all drunks, they are honest, and although we do err, because after all I err too, yet by pursuing our errors we arrive at last at the truth because we are on the right path, but Peter Petrovich . . . is not on the right path. Although I was cursing them right and left just now, I respect them all; and though I don't respect him, I like even Zametov, because he's only a puppy! Even that idiot Zosimov, because he's honest and he knows his job . . . Well, that's enough; everything has been said, and forgiven. It has been forgiven, hasn't it? Well, come along. I know this corridor, I've been here; just here, in number three, there was a scandal! . . . Well, where are you? What number? Eight? Well, lock your door for the night, and don't let anybody in. I shall be back with news in a quarter of an hour, and then again half an hour later with Zosimov. You'll see! Good-bye! I'm off!

Oh dear, Danechka, what will come of this?' said Pelhheria Alexandrovna, turning to her daughter, full of fear and anxiety.

'Don't worry, mama,' answered Danva, taking off her hat and cloak. 'It was God Himself who sent that man to us, although he comes straight from some drinking bout. I am sure we can rely on him. And everything he has already done for my brother . . .'

'Oh, Danechka, God only knows if he will come. And how could I bring myself to leave Rodva' . . . This is not at all, not at all, how I expected to find him! How forbidding he looked, as though he were not glad to see us . . .'

There were tears in her eyes.

'No, mama, that is not true. You didn't observe closely, you were crying all the time. He has been completely upset by this serious illness, that is the reason for it all.'

'Oh, this illness! Something terrible will come of it, something terrible!' said her mother, timidly searching her daughter's



eyes, so as to read all her thoughts, and already half-comforted because Dunya was defending Rodya, which must mean that she had forgiven him. And trying to probe her still further, she added 'I am sure he will change his mind to-morrow.'

'And I am sure he will say the same to-morrow . . . about that,' Avdotya Romanovna cut her short. Here was of course the rub, because this was the point which Pulkheria Alexandrovna now feared to discuss. Dunya went up to her mother and kissed her, and received a silent hug in return. Then her mother sat down to wait anxiously for Razumikhin's arrival, and timidly followed Dunya's movements as she walked about the room with folded arms, deep in thought. This thoughtful pacing from corner to corner was a habit with Avdotya Romanovna, and at such times her mother feared to break in on her reflections.

Razumikhin's sudden, drunk-inspired passion for Avdotya Romanovna was of course comical, but seeing her, especially now, as she paced the room with folded arms, pensive and sad, many might perhaps have found other excuses for him besides that of his condition. Avdotya Romanovna was remarkably good-looking, tall, extremely well-made, strong, self-assured, as her every gesture showed, without in the least detracting from the grace and tenderness of her movements. In face she resembled her brother, but it would have been possible to call her a beauty. Her hair was brown, of a slightly lighter shade than her brother's, and her sparkling, almost black eyes were proud and yet at times extraordinarily tender. Her complexion was pale, but not sickly; her face shone with freshness and health. Her mouth was a trifle small, and her dewy scarlet lower lip projected very slightly, like her chin—the only irregularity in that beautiful face, which gave it a rather self-willed look and perhaps a touch of superciliousness. Her expression was rather serious and pensive than merry, but then, how well a smile became that face, and how well her young, free, merry laughter became her! It was understandable that Razumikhin, hot-headed, frank, single-minded, honest, as strong as a hero of legend, and drunk into the bargain, should have lost his head from the first moment, since he had never seen anybody like her. Besides, chance dictated that he should first see Dunya in a radiant moment of love and rejoicing at the reunion with her brother. Later, he saw

her lower lip tremble with indignation in response to the arrogant ferocity of Rodya's commands—and he could resist no longer.

He had spoken no more than the truth in his tipsy babbling there on the staircase when he said that Raskolnikov's eccentric landlady, Praskovya Pavlovna, would be jealous not only of Avdotya Romanovna, but perhaps even of Pulkheria Alexandrovna herself. Although Pulkheria Alexandrovna was forty-three, her face retained traces of its former beauty, and besides, like almost all women who preserve into old age their clarity of mind, the freshness of their impressions, and the pure, honest ardour of their hearts, she seemed much younger than her years. Let it be said in parenthesis that the preservation of these things is the only way to keep beauty even in old age. Her hair was beginning to grow grey and thin, little radiating wrinkles had long since appeared round her eyes, her cheeks were hollow and withered with cares and anxieties, but it was still a beautiful face. It was like a portrait of Dunetchka twenty years later, without the expressive pout of the lower lip. Pulkheria Alexandrovna was sentimental, but not cloyingly so, diffident and yielding, but only up to a certain point. She would yield much, consent to much, even to things running counter to her convictions, but there always remained a limit of honesty, principle, and firm conviction which nothing could induce her to overstep.

Exactly twenty minutes after Razumikhin left them came two quiet but hurried taps on the door: he had returned.

'I am not coming in; there is not time!' he said hastily, when the door was opened. 'He is sleeping like a baby, soundly and peacefully, and with luck he will sleep for ten hours. Nastasya is with him; I have told her not to leave him until I get back. Now I am going to get hold of Zosimov; he will report to you and then you can get some sleep yourselves. I can see you are completely worn out.'

And he set off along the corridor.

'What an efficient and . . . devoted young man,' exclaimed Pulkheria Alexandrovna, extremely delighted.

'He seems a very nice person,' answered Avdotya Romanovna warmly, as she resumed her pacing about the room.

Nearly an hour later steps were heard in the corridor and there was another knock at the door. Both the women were waiting, this time in complete reliance on Razumikhin's

promise; and indeed he had succeeded in bringing Zosimov. Zosimov had immediately agreed to leave the party and go to see Raskolnikov, but he had come to the ladies' room very unwillingly, mistrusting the assurances of the drunken Razumikhin. But his self-esteem was at once appeased, and even flattered, he realized that they had been waiting for him as for an oracle. He sat with them for exactly ten minutes, and managed to convince and reassure Pulkheria Alexandrovna. He spoke with extreme sympathy, but with reserve and forceful seriousness, the picture of a twenty-seven-year-old doctor at an important consultation, not deviating by a single word from the subject or showing the least desire to enter into more private and personal relations with the two ladies. Although he remarked Avdotya Romanovna's brilliant good looks as soon as he went in, he made an immediate effort not to notice her at all during the rest of his visit, and addressed himself exclusively to Pulkheria Alexandrovna. All this gave him immense inward satisfaction. He had found his patient, he said, in a very satisfactory condition. According to his observations, the illness had some psychological causes in addition to the bad material conditions the patient had been living in for the past few months; 'it is, so to say, a product of many complex moral and material influences, anxieties, apprehensions, worries, certain ideas . . . and other things.' Without looking directly at Avdotya Romanovna he perceived that she was listening with special attentiveness, and became more expansive on this subject. To Pulkheria Alexandrovna's timid and uneasy question about 'some suspicions of mental disturbance', he answered, smiling calmly and frankly, that his words had been exaggerated; that, of course, he had observed in his patient a certain fixed idea, some indication of monomania—since he, Zosimov, was particularly interested in this extremely absorbing branch of medicine—but it must be remembered that practically up to that day the patient had been delirious, and . . . and, of course, the arrival of his family would have a salutary, strengthening, and settling effect—'if only new shocks can be avoided,' he added significantly. Then he got up, bowed sedately but affably, and, accompanied by blessings, fervent gratitude, and prayers, went out, after pressing the little hand that Avdotya Romanovna held out to him of her own accord, extremely pleased with his visit and still more so with himself.



'We will have a talk tomorrow; now you simply must go to bed,' insisted Razumikhin, as he left with Zosimov. 'I shall be here with a report tomorrow as early as possible.'

'But what a delightful girl that Anyotya Romanovna is!' remarked Zosimov, almost licking his lips, as they emerged into the street.

'Delightful? Did you say delightful?' roared Razumikhin, flinging himself on Zosimov and seizing him by the throat. 'If you ever dare . . . Do you understand? Do you understand?' he cried, snaking him by the collar and pinning him against the wall. 'Do you hear me?'

'Let me go, you drunken devil!' said Zosimov, struggling free, and then, when Razumikhin had let him go, looked closely at him and began to roar with laughter. Razumikhin stood before him with dangling arms, lost in grave and sombre thoughts.

'Of course, I am an ass,' he said, brooding like a thunder-cloud, 'but then . . . so are you.'

'Well, no, brother; not at all. I don't cherish any impossible dreams.'

They walked along in silence, and it was only as they approached Raskolnikov's flat that Razumikhin, very troubled, spoke again.

'Listen,' he said to Zosimov, 'you're a good chap, but besides all your other bad qualities, you're a womanizer, as I know, and a filthy one. You're a weak and spineless scoundrel, you're capricious, you're self-indulgent, you can't refuse yourself anything, and I call all that filthy, because it leads you straight into the muck. You've grown so soft that I confess I simply can't understand how you can still be a good and even selfless doctor. You sleep on a feather-bed and you a doctor and yet you'll get out of bed to go to a patient. In three years' time you won't do that any more . . . Well, let it go; that isn't the point, but this is: you will spend tonight in the landlady's flat—it took some doing, but I persuaded her—and I in the kitchen; so you'll have the chance of getting more intimately acquainted! Not in the way you think! There's not even a suggestion of that here, brother!'

'I'm not thinking anything!'

'This woman, brother, is all modesty, reticence, shyness, and resolute chastity, and yet at the same time, a few sighs, and she is as melting as wax, yes, as wax. Preserve me from her, for

all the devils in hell! A fetching creature! . . . I will repay you, with my life if need be!"

Zosimov laughed more heartily still.

"Well, you are worked up, aren't you? But why me?"

"I assure you it won't be much trouble; you can talk any sort of sloppy nonsense you like, so long as you sit beside her and talk. Besides, you're a doctor; begin curing her of something I swear you won't regret it. She has a piano, and you know I strum a little; I've got a song there, a genuine Russian one: "I weep scalding tears." She likes real Russian songs well, so it began with the songs, and you are a virtuoso on the pianoforte, a *maestro*, a Rubinstein . . . I swear you won't regret it!"

"Why, have you given her some sort of promise or something? You've put something in writing perhaps? Did you promise to marry her?"

"No, no, nothing of the sort, absolutely nothing! And she is not like that at all; Chebarov approached her . . ."

"Well then, just drop her!"

"No, that's impossible!"

"Why is it impossible?"

"Well, it just is, and that's all about it! There is a certain element of charm in this business, my dear chap."

"Well, why did you try to make a conquest of her?"

"I didn't; perhaps I was even conquered myself, fool that I am; but it's absolutely all one to her whether it's you or me, so long as there is someone to sit beside her and sigh. Here, my dear chap . . . I don't know how to express it to you, but here . . . well, you know a lot about mathematics, and you still study it, I know . . . well, begin to go through the integral calculus with her—I swear I'm not joking, I'm perfectly serious—it makes absolutely no difference to her; she will look at you and sigh, for a whole year together. I, among other things, talked to her at great length, two days running, about the Prussian Chamber of Nobles (because what can one talk to her about?) and she only sighed and glowed! Only don't begin to talk about love—she's so painfully shy—well, and look as if you couldn't tear yourself away—well, that's enough. You'll be terribly comfortable; just like home—read, sit, lie on the sofa, write . . . You can even kiss her, if you're careful."

"But why should I do all this?"

"Oh, I don't seem able to explain it to you anyhow! Look—

you two are just like one another! I thought of you before, in fact . . . You will end up that way anyhow, and isn't it all one to you whether it's sooner or later? Here, my dear chap, is the beginning of a feather-bed existence—yes, and more than that! Here you will get drawn in; here is the end of the world, an anchorage, a peaceful haven, the central point of the earth, the three fishes on which the world is based, the essence of pancakes, of rich pies, of the evening samovar, of peaceful sighs and warm jackets and warm stoves to lie on—just as if you were dead and yet still alive—all the advantages of both states at one and the same time! Devil take it, my dear chap, I've been running on, and it's time we went to bed. I sometimes wake up in the night; if I do I will go in and take a look at him. But it doesn't matter, it's unnecessary; everything is all right. Don't bother specially, but if you like, you go in and see him as well. But if you notice anything, delirium, for example, or a temperature or anything, wake me at once. But there won't be anything . . .'

## CHAPTER II

NEXT day, Razumikhin awoke at eight o'clock in a serious and troubled mood. Many new and unforeseen perplexities seemed to have sprung up in him that morning. He had not before so much as dreamed that he would ever experience such an awakening. He remembered every detail of the previous day, and knew that something out of the ordinary had happened to him, that he had received an impression of a kind that he had never known before, and quite unlike all others. At the same time he clearly realized that the dream that had set his imagination aflame was in the highest degree unrealizable, so much so that he was ashamed of it, and quickly transferred his attention to other, more urgent, anxieties and problems inherited from that 'thrice-accursed yesterday'.

His most horrifying recollection was of how 'ignobly and disgustingly' he had behaved, not only in being drunk, but in taking advantage of a young girl's situation to abuse her fiancé in front of her, out of stupid and hastily conceived jealousy, when he knew nothing either of their mutual relationship and obligations or, properly speaking, of the man himself. And what right had he to condemn him so hastily and rashly? Who had appointed him the judge? Surely such a being as



Avdotya Romanovna was not capable of giving herself to an unworthy man for money? Therefore there must be some worth in him. The hotel? But really, how could he know what sort of place it was? After all, he was having a flat got ready . . . Pah, how ignobly he had behaved! And what sort of justification was there in the fact that he had been drunk? That was a stupid excuse, which made him seem still baser. *In vino veritas*, and here the whole truth had come out, 'that was, all the foulness of his boorish, jealous heart had come out!' And was it in any way permissible for him, Razumikhin, to cherish any such dream? What was he in comparison with this girl—he, the drunken scoundrel and braggart of yesterday? 'Is such a ridiculous and cynical comparison possible at all?' He crimsoned at the thought, and at the same time suddenly recollected how yesterday, on the stairs, he had told them that the landlady would be jealous of Avdotya Romanovna on his account. This was quite unbearable. With a wide swing of his arm he struck the stove with his fist, hurting his hand and dislodging a brick.

'Of course,' he muttered to himself after a minute, in a mood of self-abasement, 'of course, I can't gloss over or efface all this nastiness, now or ever . . . and so I must not even think of it, but appear before them in silence and . . . fulfil my obligations . . . also in silence and . . . and not ask forgiveness, but say nothing, and . . . and now, of course, everything is ruined!'

All the same, when he dressed he made a more elaborate toilet than usual. He had no other clothes, and even if he had, would perhaps not have put them on, would 'purposely' not have put them on. But in any case he could not go on being a dirty and slovenly cynic, he had no right to offend other people's susceptibilities, especially when they needed him and had invited him to come and see them. He brushed his clothes carefully. His linen was always presentable, in this respect he was particularly clean and neat.

This morning he washed with great care—he got soap from Nastasya, and washed his hair, his neck, and, with especial pains, his hands. When, however, it came to the question of whether he should shave his stubble or not (Praskovya Pavlovna still kept the excellent razor that had belonged to her late husband, Mr. Zarnitsyn) it was decided, somewhat emphatically, in the negative: 'Let it stay as it is! What if they

should think that I shaved because . . . they certainly will think so! I would not have that for the world!’

And . . . and the chief thing was, he was very coarse and dirty, and had the manners of the pot-house, and . . . and suppose he knew that he, in however small a degree, was a decent fellow . . . well, what was there to be proud of in being a decent fellow? Everybody ought to be decent, and more besides and . . . he remembered he had been involved in some things . . . not exactly dishonourable, but all the same! . . . And what designs he had had! . . . Him . . . ‘And to put all this beside Avdotya Romanovna’ Oh, the devil! Well, let it be so I shall be purposely dirty, bawdy, and drunken, and be hanged to it! I shall be worse still! . . .’

Zosimov, who had spent the night in Praskovya Pavlovna’s drawing-room, found him in the midst of this monologue.

He was going home, and was in a hurry to take a look at his patient. Razumikhin reported that he was sleeping like a top. Zosimov gave orders that he was not to be disturbed until he awoke of his own accord. He promised to look in himself between ten and eleven.

‘If only he is at home,’ he added. ‘It’s the very devil when you have no control over your own patient, and yet you’re supposed to treat him. Do you know whether *he* is going there, or *they* are coming here?’

‘They here, I think,’ answered Razumikhin, who had understood the drift of the question. ‘and they will, of course, have family matters to talk of. I shall leave them. You, as the doctor, have naturally more rights than I have.’

‘But I’m not their confessor either; I shall just come and then go away; I have plenty of other things to do.’

‘One thing worries me,’ interrupted Razumikhin, frowning. ‘Yesterday, when I was drunk, I let slip various foolish things to him on our way home . . . various . . . among other things, that you were afraid that he . . . might have a tendency to madness.’

‘You let that out to the ladies yesterday, as well.’

‘I know it was idiotic! I ought to be whipped!’ But tell me, had you really a definite idea?’

‘Oh, that’s nonsense; what definite idea?’ You yourself described him as a monomaniac when you called me in . . . Well, yesterday we added fuel to the flames, you did, I mean, with those stories . . . about that painter; a good subject of

conversation, when perhaps it was that that threw him off balance in the first place! If I had known exactly what happened in the office that time, and that some scoundrel had . . . offended him with that suspicion . . . hm . . . I shouldn't have allowed such talk yesterday. You know these monomaniacs can make an ocean out of a puddle and believe the most fantastic illusions to be real. As far as I remember, had the business become clear to me yesterday from that story of Zametov's. All right. I know a case of a hypochondriac, a man of forty, who could not endure an eight-year-old boy's merry chatter at table, day after day, and killed him! And here you have a man all in rags, an impudent scoundrel of a police officer, an illness just coming on, and a suspicion of that kind! To a hypochondriac who is delirious! In the face of exceptional, lunatic, vanity! And here, perhaps, lies the point of departure of the illness! Well, the devil only knows! . . . By the way, this Zametov is really a nice lad, only . . . hm . . . there was no need for him to repeat all that. He's a terrible babbler.'

'But whom did he tell? You and me.'

'And Porfiry.'

'Well, what if he did tell him?'

'By the way, have you any influence with them, his mother and sister? They ought to be very careful with him today . . .'

'They can be persuaded,' reluctantly answered Razumikhin.

'And why did he behave as he did towards that Luzhin? I shouldn't think she could be averse to a man with money . . . they haven't got a bean, have they?'

'Why all these questions?' exclaimed Razumikhin irritably. 'How should I know whether they have a bean or not? Ask them yourself and perhaps you will get to know . . .'

'Pal, how stupid you are sometimes! You are still feeling the effects of yesterday's drinking. Good-bye; thank your Praskovya Pavlovna from me for her hospitality. She locked herself in and didn't answer the good morning I gave her through the door, but she was up at seven o'clock, for her samovar was carried through the passage from the kitchen . . . I wasn't considered worthy of the honour of seeing her . . .'

At exactly nine o'clock Razumikhin presented himself at Bakaleev's hotel. The ladies had been awaiting him with febrile impatience for a very long time. They had got up at about seven o'clock or even earlier. When he went in he was glowering like a thunder-cloud, and he made his bows



awkwardly, and immediately grew furious at himself, of course. He had reckoned without his hosts; Pulkheria Alexandrovna positively flung herself upon him, seized both his hands, and seemed on the point of kissing them. He looked timidly at Avdotva Romanovna, but even that proud face bore in that moment such an expression of gratitude and friendship, such whole-hearted and to him unexpected esteem instead of the mocking glances and involuntary ill-concealed scorn he expected that he might almost have felt easier if he had been met with abuse, as it was, he was almost sheepish. Fortunately, there was a theme of conversation at hand, and he turned quickly to it.

Having learnt that her son 'was not yet awake', but that 'all was well', Pulkheria Alexandrovna declared that this was all for the best, 'because she very, very, very much wanted to talk things over first.' There followed a question about whether he had breakfasted, and an invitation to join them, since they had waited for him before having breakfast. Avdotva Romanovna rang the bell, which was answered by a slovenly ragamuffin. Tea was ordered and, after a long interval, served, but in such a dirty and unseemly fashion that the ladies were ashamed. Razumikhin started an energetic tirade against the place, but, remembering Luzhin, stopped in confusion, and was very glad when Pulkheria Alexandrovna began to ply him with endless questions.

He talked for three-quarters of an hour, continually interrupted and cross-questioned, and managed to communicate as much as he knew of the more important and essential facts of Rodion Romanovich's life during the past year, ending with a circumstantial account of his illness. He left out, however, a good deal which he felt it wiser to omit, including the scene in the police office and its consequences. His story was eagerly listened to, but when he thought he had finished, and satisfied his hearers, he found that as far as they were concerned he had hardly begun.

'Tell me, tell me, what do you think . . . oh, excuse me, I don't even yet know your name,' began Pulkheria Alexandrovna hurriedly.

'Dmitri Prokofich.'

'Well, Dmitri Prokofich, I should very, very much like to know . . . how, in general . . . he now regards subjects . . . that is, I mean . . . how can I express it? Perhaps I had better say,

what are his likes and dislikes? Is he always so irritable? What are his desires, his dreams, if I can put it like that? What things influence him now? In one word, I should like . . .'

'Oh, mama, how can anybody answer all that in one breath?' said Dunya.

'Oh, dear, you know I didn't in the least expect to find him like this, not in the least, Dmitri Prokofich.'

'That is very natural,' answered Dmitri Prokofich. 'I have no mother, but my uncle comes here every year, and nearly every time he doesn't even recognize my appearance, and he is a clever man; well, a lot of water has flowed under the bridges in your three years of separation. But what can I tell you? I have known Rodion for a year and a half; he is moody, melancholy, proud, and haughty; recently and perhaps for much longer than I know, he has been morbidly depressed and over-anxious about his health. He is kind and generous. He doesn't like to display his feelings, and would rather seem heartless than talk about them. Sometimes, however, he is not hypochondriacal at all, but simply inhumanly cold and unfeeling. Really, it is as if he had two separate personalities, each dominating him alternately. Sometimes he is dreadfully taciturn; he has no time for anything — people are always interfering with him — but he spends all his time lying there doing nothing. He never jests, not because he lacks the sharpness of wit for it, but because he has no time for such trifles. He doesn't hear people out. He is never interested in the same things as other people at any given moment. He sets a terribly high value on himself, not, I think, without some justification. Well, what else? . . . I think your arrival will have a most salutary effect on him.'

'God grant it may!' cried Pulkheria Alexandrovna, tormented by Razumikhin's account of her Rodya.

Now at last Razumikhin looked more cheerfully at Avdotya Romanovna. He had glanced at her often as he talked, but fleetingly, turning his eyes away again after a moment. Avdotya Romanovna had listened attentively, now sitting at the table, now getting up and walking about the room in her usual fashion, with folded arms and compressed lips; occasionally she put in a question, without interrupting her thoughtful pacing. She too had a habit of not hearing people out to the end. She wore a dark-coloured dress of thin material with a small diaphanous white scarf knotted round her neck. Razumikhin

noticed many indications that the two women were in extremely poor circumstances. Had Avdotya Romanovna been arrayed like a queen, he would probably not have feared her at all; now, perhaps just because she was so poorly dressed and because he was conscious of the narrowness of their circumstances, his heart was filled with apprehension, and he became nervous of the effect of every one of his words and gestures. This served to increase his embarrassment and self-distrust.

'You have told us many curious things about my brother's character and . . . told them in an impartial manner. That was right; I had thought you positively worshipped him,' said Avdotya Romanovna with a smile. 'It seems likely, too, that he ought to have some woman near him,' she added reflectively.

'I did not say that, but perhaps you are right; only . . .'

'What?'

'He really does not love anyone; perhaps he never will,' said Razumikhin.

'You mean he is not capable of loving?'

'You know, Avdotya Romanovna, you are terribly like your brother, in every way!' he blurted out, to his own surprise. Immediately, remembering what he had just been saying about her brother, he was covered with confusion and as red as a lobster. Looking at him, Avdotya Romanovna could not help laughing.

'You may both be mistaken about Rodya,' put in Pulkheria Alexandrovna, rather shocked. 'I am not talking about just now, Dunechka. What Peter Petrovich writes in this letter . . . and what you and I suppose . . . may be untrue, but you can't imagine, Dmitri Prokofich, how capricious and —what shall I say?—cranky, he is. I never could understand his nature, even when he was only fifteen years old. I am convinced that he might suddenly do something with himself now that no other man would think of doing . . . There's no need to look far for an example: do you know how surprised and stunned I was, indeed it almost killed me, when he took it into his head that he was going to marry that . . . what's her name? . . . the daughter of this Mrs. Zarnitsyna, his landlady?'

'Do you know the details of the story?' asked Avdotya Romanovna.

'Would you not think,' continued Pulkheria Alexandrovna warmly, 'that my tears, my entreaties, my illness, my possible



death from grief, our poverty, would have stopped him? No, he would have trampled coolly over every obstacle. But surely, surely he loves us?’

‘He himself never said anything to me about that affair,’ answered Razumikhin cautiously, ‘but I have heard something about it from Mrs. Zarnitsyna, who is not a very communicative person either, and what I did hear was perhaps a little strange . . .’

‘But what, what did you hear?’ asked both women together.

‘Well, nothing very particular, really. I only learnt that this marriage, which had been completely settled and was only prevented from taking place by the bride’s death, was very much against the wishes of Mrs. Zarnitsyna herself . . . They say the bride, besides, was not even pretty, in fact they say she was very plain . . . and very sickly and . . . and odd . . . but apparently she had some good qualities. She certainly must have had, otherwise it is quite incomprehensible . . . She had no dowry, either, but he would never take a dowry into account . . . It is very difficult to form a judgement of such a case.’

‘I am sure she had many virtues,’ remarked Avdotya Romanovna shortly.

‘God forgive me, but I was glad when she died, although I don’t know which of them would have destroyed the other; would he have ruined her, or she him?’ concluded Pulkheria Alexandrovna. Then, cautiously, with many hesitations and repeated glances at Dunya, who obviously found them displeasing, she resumed her questions about the scene of the day before between Rodya and Luzhin. This incident plainly worried her more than anything else; she seemed alarmed and agitated by it. Razumikhin told the whole story again in detail, and this time added his own conclusions; he directly accused Raskolnikov of intentionally offending Peter Petrovich, and found his illness but small excuse for him.

‘He planned it before his illness,’ he added.

‘I think so too,’ said Pulkheria Alexandrovna, with a dejected air. But she was struck by the discreet and even respectful tone of Razumikhin’s references this time to Peter Petrovich, and so was Avdotya Romanovna.

Pulkheria Alexandrovna could not refrain from asking: ‘So that is your opinion of Peter Petrovich?’

‘I could hold no other of your daughter’s future husband,’

answered Razumukhin, firmly and warmly, 'and I don't say that only out of ordinary politeness, but because . . . because . . . well, for one reason alone, that Avdotya Romanovna has chosen him of her own free will. And if I was so abusive about him yesterday it was because I was filthily drunk and . . . mad besides; yes, mad, out of my mind; I had completely lost my senses . . . and today I am ashamed of it!' He blushed and said no more. Avdotya Romanovna had also coloured, but she did not break the silence. She had not uttered a word from the moment Luzhin was first spoken of.

Meanwhile Pulkheria Alexandrovna, without her support, was evidently in a state of indecision. At length, stumbingly, with her eyes fixed on her daughter, she explained that one thing was worrying her extremely.

'You see, Dmitri Prokofich,' she began . . . 'Shall I be quite frank with Dmitri Prokofich, Danechka?'

'Of course, mama,' said Avdotya Romanovna seriously.

'This is how it is,' her mother hurried on, as if a weight had been lifted from her shoulders by this permission to communicate her trouble. 'Very early this morning we received a note from Peter Petrovich, in answer to ours yesterday informing him of our arrival. You see, yesterday he ought to have met us at the station, as he promised. Instead of that, he sent some sort of servant to meet us, give us the address of this hotel, and bring us here. Peter Petrovich had instructed him to tell us that he would come here himself this morning. Instead of that this note arrived from him. The best thing would be for you to read it: here is the point that most worries me . . . you will see at once what that point is and . . . tell us your frank opinion, Dmitri Prokofich. You understand Rodya's character best, and are best able to advise us. I must warn you that Danya made her mind up at once, but I don't yet know what to do and . . . I waited for you.'

Razumukhin opened the note, which bore the previous day's date, and read the following:

'Dear Madam, Pulkheria Alexandrovna,

'I have the honour to inform you that, owing to difficulties which arose unexpectedly, I was unable to meet you on the platform, but sent for that purpose a very competent person. I must equally deprive myself of the honour of seeing you this morning, owing to pressing business in the Senate and in order

not to impede the family reunion of yourself with your son and Avdotya Romanovna with her brother. I shall have the honour of calling upon you and paying my respects no later than tomorrow at exactly eight o'clock in the evening, and I venture to add my earnest and, I may say, imperative request that Rodion Romanovich shall not be present at our meeting, since he was atrociously and uncivilly offensive to me on the occasion of my visit to him yesterday on his bed of sickness, and besides I personally having to seek an essential and circumstantial explanation of a certain point with you, a matter of which I desire to know your interpretation. I have the honour hereby to give you previous notification that if, despite my request, I do meet Rodion Romanovich, I shall find myself obliged to withdraw immediately, and the consequences must be on your own head. I write this on the supposition that Rodion Romanovich, who appeared so ill at my visit, had completely recovered in the space of two hours, and that he may therefore be able to leave his abode and visit you. I am confirmed in this by the evidence of my own eyes, having seen him in the flat of a certain drunkard, who had been run over and was dying, to whose daughter, a notoriously ill-conducted female, he gave almost twenty-five roubles, on the pretext of funeral expenses, which surprised me greatly, knowing with what pains you had acquired this sum. In conclusion, I present my respectful compliments to Avdotya Romanovna and beg you to accept the assurance of the devoted esteem of

Your humble servant  
P. Luzhin.'

'What am I to do now, Dmitri Prokofich?' said Pulkheria Alexandrovna, almost in tears. 'How can I suggest to Rodya that he should not come? Yesterday, he was so insistent that Peter Petrovich should be dismissed, and now we are told that he himself is not to be received! And when he learns of it, he will come on purpose, and . . . what will happen then?'

'Do whatever Avdotya Romanovna has decided,' answered Razumikhin promptly and calmly.

'Oh dear! She says . . . God only knows what she says, and she will not explain why! She says it will be best, or rather not exactly best, but for some reason she thinks it is absolutely essential, for Rodya to make a point of coming here at eight o'clock, and for them to meet . . . But I didn't want to show



him this letter at all, but to arrange some subterfuge with your help, so that he should not come . . . because he is so easily upset . . . And I don't understand at all who this drunkard was who died, or who this daughter is, or how he could give her the last of his money . . . which . . .'

'Which cost you so dear, mama,' added Avdotya Romanovna.

'He was not himself yesterday,' said Razumikhin thoughtfully. 'If you knew what he did in the restaurant, although it was clever enough . . . hm' Something was said about some dead man and some girl or other as we were walking home, but I didn't understand a word of it . . . However, yesterday I myself was . . .'

'Best of all, mama, let us go and see him, and then I am sure we shall see at once what to do. And besides it is quite time—good heavens, it's nearly eleven o'clock!' Dunya exclaimed, glancing at the magnificent gold and enamel watch which hung on a thin Venetian chain round her neck and which was very much out of harmony with the rest of her attire. 'A present from her fiancé,' thought Razumikhin.

'Oh, it is time we went, quite time, Dunechka!' exclaimed Pulkheria Alexandrovna, with restless anxiety. 'He will think we are angry about yesterday, because we are so long in coming. Oh dear!'

She bustled about as she spoke, putting on her hat and cloak. Dunechka also put on her things. Her gloves were not only shabby, but worn into holes, as Razumikhin noticed, and yet the obvious poverty of their dress gave both ladies that look of special dignity which is always found in those who have the art of wearing poor clothes well. Razumikhin looked reverently at Dunechka and was proud to be her escort. 'That queen,' he thought, 'who mended her own stockings in prison, certainly looked a real queen at that moment, perhaps even more so than in her state appearances and triumphs.'

'Oh dear!' exclaimed Pulkheria Alexandrovna, 'I little thought I should dread a meeting with my own son, with my dear, darling Rodya, as I do now' . . . I dread it, Dmitri Prokofich!' she added, with a faint-hearted expression.

'Don't be afraid, mama,' said Dunya, kissing her. 'Rather trust him, I do.'

'Oh dear! So do I, but I did not sleep all night!' cried the poor woman.

They went out.

'You know, Dunechka, when I got a little sleep, towards morning, I dreamt of the late Marfa Petrovna . . . She was all in white . . . and she came up to me and took my hand, and shook her head severely, so severely, as though she were blaming me for something . . . Does that forebode good or evil? Oh dear me, Dmitri Prokofich, you don't know yet: Marfa Petrovna is dead!'

'No, I didn't know. Who is Marfa Petrovna?'

'It was very sudden! Imagine . . .'

'Afterwards, mama,' put in Dunya. 'After all, he doesn't even know who Marfa Petrovna was.'

'Oh, don't you? I thought you knew all about it. You must forgive me, Dmitri Prokofich; I have completely lost my wits this last day or two. The fact is that I look on you as our special Providence, and so I am convinced that you know everything. I think of you as one of the family . . . Don't be angry with me for saying so. Oh, good heavens! What is the matter with your right hand? Have you hurt it?'

'Yes, I have,' murmured the beatified Razumikhin.

'Sometimes I speak too directly from the heart, and Dunya criticizes me . . . But, good God, what a cubby-hole he lives in! I wonder if he is awake yet. And that woman, his landlady, calls it a room! Listen! You say he doesn't like to show his feelings, so perhaps I shall annoy him with my . . . weakness . . . Won't you teach me to deal with him, Dmitri Prokofich? You know, I am completely at a loss.'

'Don't question him closely about anything if you see that he is frowning and, in particular, don't ask him many questions about his health; he doesn't like it.'

'Oh, Dmitri Prokofich, how hard it is to be a mother! But here are the stairs. . . How horrible they are!'

'Mama, you are quite pale, calm yourself, darling,' said Dunya, putting her arm round her mother. 'He ought to be happy to see you, and yet you torment yourself so,' she added, with flashing eyes.

'Wait. I will go ahead and see if he is awake.'

The ladies quietly followed Razumikhin up the stairs, and when they came level with the landlady's door on the fourth floor, they saw that it was ajar and that two lively black eyes were watching them through the narrow opening from the dark interior. When their glances met, however, the door was suddenly slammed with such a noise that Pulkheria Alexandrovna almost cried out with fright.

## CHAPTER III

'He is better, he is better!' called out Zosimov cheerfully, as they went in. He had arrived some ten minutes earlier, and was sitting in his old place on the end of the sofa. Raskolnikov sat at the opposite end, fully dressed and even carefully washed and combed, as he had not been for a long time. The room seemed to fill up at once, but Nastasya managed nevertheless to crowd in behind the visitors and settled herself to listen.

Raskolnikov really was almost well, especially in comparison with the previous day, but he was still very pale, abstracted, and gloomy. He looked like a man who has been wounded or suffered intense physical pain; his brows were knitted, his lips compressed, his eyes sunken. He spoke rarely and reluctantly, as if under compulsion or to fulfil an obligation, and there was a certain amount of restlessness in his movements.

He needed only a sling or a finger-stall to look exactly like a man with a poisoned finger or a painfully injured arm, or something of that nature.

Even his pale and gloomy countenance, however, lit up for a moment at the entrance of his mother and sister, but this served only to give him an expression of more intensely concentrated torment instead of the diffused anguish that had been there before. The light soon faded, but the torment remained, and Zosimov, watching and studying his patient with all the youthful zeal of the doctor who has only lately begun to practise, was surprised to see that when his family came in he showed not so much gladness as a weary, hidden determination to endure for an hour a new torture, which could not be avoided. He saw afterwards how almost every word of the conversation that followed seemed to touch some sore place in his patient and irritate it, at the same time he was surprised by the way in which yesterday's monomaniac, who had been goaded almost to raving madness by the smallest word, now managed to control himself and conceal his feelings.

'Yes, I myself can tell that I am almost well again,' said Raskolnikov, greeting his mother and sister with a kiss that made Pulkheria Alexandrovna radiant. 'And I don't say that as I said it yesterday,' he added as he turned to Razumikhin and warmly pressed his hand.

'I am really quite astonished at him today,' began Zosimov,



who was very pleased to see the newcomers, since in ten minutes he had completely lost the thread of his conversation with his patient. 'In two or three days, if this continues, he will be just as he was, I mean as he was a month ago, or two . . . or perhaps even three. This, you see, has been coming on for a long time. . . hasn't it?' 'Confess now that perhaps you were to blame,' he added with a cautious smile, as though he still feared to irritate his patient.

'Very likely,' answered Raskolnikov coldly.

'I am saying this,' continued Zosimov expansively, 'because your complete recovery now depends chiefly on yourself. Now that it is possible to talk to you, I should like to impress on you that it is essential to remove the original, so to speak, radical causes whose influence caused the inception of your unhealthy condition, and then you will be cured, if not, things will get even worse. I do not know what these fundamental causes were, but they must be known to you. You are intelligent and must certainly have kept yourself under observation. It seems to me that the beginning of your disorder coincided with your leaving the university. You cannot remain without occupation, and therefore hard work and a goal kept firmly before you would, I think, be of great help to you.'

'Yes, yes, you are quite right. I shall re-enter the university as soon as possible, and then everything . . . will run smoothly . . .'

Zosimov, who had begun dispensing this sage advice partly for its effect on the ladies, was naturally rather disconcerted when, at the end of his discourse, he looked at the person he had been addressing and saw a distinctly mocking expression on his face. However, this lasted only for a moment. Pulkheria Alexandrovna immediately began to express her thanks to him, especially for his visit to their hotel the previous night.

'What, did he go to see you during the night?' asked Raskolnikov, somewhat disturbed. 'So you didn't get any sleep after your journey?'

'Oh, Rodva, that all happened before two o'clock. Danya and I never went to bed before two o'clock at home.'

'I don't know how to thank him either,' went on Raskolnikov, frowning and looking down. 'Setting aside the question of money—you will excuse me for mentioning it—', turning to Zosimov. 'I do not even know how I have deserved such special attention from you. I simply can't understand it . . .'

and . . . and it distresses me not to understand; I am quite open with you.'

'Do not worry,' said Zosimov, with a forced laugh. 'Suppose yourself to be my first patient. We doctors who have just begun to practise love our first patients like our own children, some of us indeed almost fall in love with them. And you know I am not very rich in patients.'

'I say nothing about him,' added Raskolnikov, indicating Razumikhin, 'but he has had nothing from me, either, but insults and trouble.'

'What nonsense! You're in a very sentimental mood today, aren't you?' exclaimed Razumikhin.

If he had had more penetration he would have seen that it was very far from being a sentimental mood, but something like the very opposite. But Avdotya Romanovna noticed it. Her eyes followed her brother with anxious attention.

'Of you, mama, I dare not even speak,' he went on, as if it were a lesson he had been studying since morning. 'It is only today that I am able to form some idea of the torments you must have suffered yesterday, waiting for me to return.' So saying, he suddenly held out his hand to his sister, smiling. In that smile there gleamed this time a flash of genuine, unfeigned emotion. Dunya grasped his hand and pressed it warmly, with joy and gratitude. This was the first time he had made any overture to her since the previous day's disagreement. Their mother's face shone with pride and happiness at the sight of the silent but definite reconciliation between the brother and sister.

'Now that's what I absolutely love him for!' murmured Razumikhin, who was always prone to exaggeration, flinging himself round in his chair. 'He is always capable of such gestures! . . .'

'And how well everything becomes him,' thought his mother; 'what noble impulses he has, and how simply and delicately he resolved yesterday's difficulty with his sister, merely by holding out his hand at that moment with such a nice look . . . And what fine eyes he has, and how handsome he is! . . . He is even better-looking than Dunechka . . . But, oh dear, what clothes; how badly he is dressed! Vasya, the errand-boy in Afanasy Ivanovich's shop, is better dressed! . . . Oh, if only, if only I could spring to his side, put my arms round him, and weep—but I am afraid, afraid . . . oh Lord, he is so . . . now,

indeed, he speaks kindly, but I am afraid! But what am I afraid of? . . .'

'Oh, Rodya, you would not believe,' she hastened to reply to his last remark, 'how . . . unhappy Dunechka and I were yesterday! Now, when it is all over and done with, and we are all happy again. I can tell you about it. Imagine we came running here, almost straight from the train, to take you in our arms, and the woman—oh, there she is! Good morning, Nastasya' . . . She broke it to us suddenly, that you were ill with delirium tremens and that in your fever you had just slipped away from the doctor, and out of the house, and that they were looking for you. You would not believe the effect this had on us. I remembered at once the tragic end of Lieutenant Potanchikov, whom we used to know, a friend of your father's—you will not remember him, Rodya—who also had delirium tremens, and who ran out of the house in just the same way, and fell into a well in the courtyard, and they could not recover his body until the next day. And of course we exaggerated things still more. We were on the point of hurrying away to find Peter Petrovich, so that with his help at least . . . because you know we were alone, quite alone,' she wailed pitifully, and then suddenly stopped short, remembering that it was rather dangerous to talk of Peter Petrovich, in spite of the fact that 'everybody was quite happy again'.

'Yes, yes. . . it was all of course. . . very trying. . .' muttered Raskolnikov in answer, but with so absent-minded and inattentive an air that Dunechka looked at him puzzled.

'What the deuce was it I wanted to say besides?' he continued, making an effort to remember. 'Oh, yes: please, mama, and you too, Dunechka, don't think I was unwilling to come to you this morning, but waited for you to come here first.'

'There is no need to say that, Rodya' . . . cried Pulkheria Alexandrovna in surprise.

'Is he saying these things from a sense of duty, I wonder?' thought Dunechka. 'He is asking forgiveness and making friends again, as though it was part of his job, or as though he had got a lesson by heart.'

'I meant to come as soon as I woke up, but the state of my clothes delayed me; I forgot yesterday to tell her . . . Nastasya . . . to wash out the blood. . . I have only just got dressed.'

'Blood? What blood?' asked Pulkheria Alexandrovna, alarmed.



'It's just . . . don't worry. I got it because while I was wandering about yesterday. I was still a bit light-headed. I came into contact with a man who had been run over. . . a certain clerk. . .'

'Light-headed?' But you remember everything,' interrupted Razumishin.

'Yes, that's true,' answered Raskolnikov, rather uneasily. 'I remember everything, down to the smallest detail, and yet if you were to ask me why I did something, or went somewhere, or said something, I don't think I could give a clear explanation.'

'That is a very well-known phenomenon,' Zosimov joined in. 'Sometimes actions are performed very skilfully, most cleverly, but the aims of the actions, and their origin, are confused, and depend on various moral influences. It is like a dream.'

'Perhaps it is a good thing that he supposes me to be more or less mad,' thought Raskolnikov.

'But something else that may perhaps take place with people who are quite well,' remarked Dunichka, with a worried look at Zosimov.

'A very true observation,' he answered. 'In that sense, indeed, all of us are very frequently, more or less deranged, with the slight difference that the "lacks" are a little more deranged than we, and therefore we must inevitably draw the distinction. But a completely harmonious person, it is true, is hardly to be found. In tens, or perhaps hundreds, of thousands you will meet with only one, and then not a very good specimen. . .'

The word 'deranged', carelessly let drop by Zosimov, growing eloquent on his favourite theme, caused Dunichka to wrinkle anxiously. Raskolnikov, sitting abstractedly with a strange smile on his pale lips, seemed to pay no attention, but pursued his own train of thought.

'Well, what about this man who was run over?' I interrupted you,' exclaimed Razumishin hastily.

'What?' Raskolnikov mused himself. 'Yes . . . well. I got blood on me when I helped to carry him into the flat. . . By the way, mama, I did something unforgivable yesterday, I must really have been out of my senses. Yesterday I gave away all the money you sent me . . . to his wife . . . for the funeral. She is a widow now, a pathetic creature, consumptive . . . three hungry little orphans . . . in an empty house . . . and there is

another daughter . . . Perhaps you would have given her the money yourself, if you had seen . . . But I had no right whatever to do so, I confess, especially as I knew how you had obtained the money. If you want to help people you must have the right, or else "*Crevez, chiens, si vous n'êtes pas contents!*"' He laughed. 'Is that right, Dunya?'

'No, it is not,' answered Dunya firmly.

'Bah! You too . . . have your own plans! . . .' he muttered, looking at her almost with hatred and with a mocking smile. 'I ought to have considered that . . . Well, it's praiseworthy; it is better for you . . . you come to a certain limit and if you do not overstep it, you will be unhappy, but if you do overstep it, perhaps you will be even more unhappy . . . However, this is all rubbish!' he added irritably, annoyed at having allowed himself to be diverted. 'I only wanted to say, that I ask your forgiveness, mama,' he finished harshly and abruptly.

'Don't go on, Rodya I am sure that everything you do is right!' said his mother.

'Don't be too sure,' he answered, with a wry smile. A silence followed. There had been something strained alike in all this talk and the silence, the reconciliation, and the forgiveness, and everybody was conscious of it.

'It is as though they were afraid of me,' thought Raskolnikov, looking frowningly at his mother and sister. The longer Pulkheria Alexandrovna kept silent, indeed, the more timid she became.

The thought occurred to him that it was when they were absent that he really loved them.

'You know, Rodya, Marfa Petrovna is dead!' Pulkheria Alexandrovna broke the silence.

'Who is Marfa Petrovna?'

'Good gracious! Marfa Petrovna Svidrigaylov! I wrote you a great deal about her.'

'Oh, I remember . . . So she is dead? Really?' said Raskolnikov, looking as if he had just started awake. 'Can she really be dead? What did she die of?'

'Just think, she had a stroke,' Pulkheria Alexandrovna hurried on, pleased at his interest, 'and exactly at the time when I was sending you my letter, in fact on the very same day! Imagine, that horrible man seems to have been the cause of her death as well! They say he beat her dreadfully!'

'Did they really live like that?' he asked, turning to his sister.

'No; quite the contrary, really. He was always very patient and very polite with her. There were many times when he was even too indulgent with her, during those seven years . . . Then suddenly he somehow lost patience.'

'So he's not so horrible after all, if he restrained himself for seven years? Apparently you stand up for him, Dunechka.'

'No, no, he's a horrible man! I can't imagine a worse,' answered Dunya, almost with a shudder. She frowned and relapsed into thought.

'It happened in the morning,' Pulkheria Alexandrovna hurried on. 'Immediately afterwards she ordered the carriage so as to drive into town after dinner, because she always drove into town when such things happened; they say she made a very good meal . . .'

'In spite of her beating?'

' . . . Well, that was always her . . . habit, and as soon as she had dined, she went for her bathe immediately, so as not to be late for the drive . . . You see, she was taking some sort of bathing cure, they have a cold spring there, and she bathed in it regularly every day. As soon as she entered the water she had a stroke!'

'I should think so!' said Zosimov

'And he had beaten her severely?'

'Really that makes no difference,' replied Dunya.

'Hm! But, mama, why have you such a passion for trivial gossip?' said Raskolnikov, with sudden unexpected irritation.

'Oh, my dear, I really didn't know what to talk about,' burst out Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

'Are you all afraid of me, or something?' he asked with a twisted smile.

'Actually, that is true,' said Dunya, looking directly and severely at her brother. 'As she came upstairs, mama was so terrified that she was crossing herself.'

His face twitched convulsively.

'Oh, why did you say that, Dunya? Please don't be angry, Rodya . . . How could you, Dunya?' said Pulkheria Alexandrovna in confusion. 'Here I was thinking, all the way in the train, how we should see each other, and how we should tell one another all about everything . . . and I was so happy, I hardly noticed the journey. But what am I saying? I am happy now, too . . . You shouldn't have said that, Dunya! It makes me happy just to see you, Rodya . . .'



'Don't go on, mama!' he murmured in confusion, pressing her hand without looking at her. 'There'll be plenty of time for us to talk to our hearts' content!'

Then he faltered and turned pale; again that same terrible feeling of deadly cold swept through him; again he realized clearly and vividly that he had just uttered a dreadful lie, that not only would it now never be given to him to talk to his heart's content but that now he could never talk *at all*, to anybody. The impact of this tormenting idea was so strong that for a moment he completely lost himself, and he stood up and, without a glance at anybody, made for the door.

'What are you doing?' exclaimed Razumikhin, seizing his arm.

He sat down again and looked round; they were all looking at him in wonder and perplexity.

'Why are you all so tiresome?' he exclaimed suddenly. 'Say something! Don't just sit there! Well, say something! Let us talk. Did we come together just to sit and say nothing? . . . Say something or other!'

'I thank God! I thought we were going to have a repetition of yesterday,' said Pulkheria Alexandrovna, crossing herself.

'What is the matter, Rodya?' asked Avdotya Romanovna mistrustfully.

'Oh, nothing. I just remembered something,' he answered, and laughed.

'Well, if that's all, it's all right! Otherwise I would have thought . . . ' murmured Zosimov, getting up. 'However, it is time I went; I will look in again, perhaps . . . if I find you in . . . '

He made his bows and went out.

'What a nice man!' remarked Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

'Yes; nice, excellent, well-educated, intelligent . . . ' said Raskolnikov, talking with great rapidity and with a vivacity he had not previously shown. 'I can't remember where I met him, before my illness . . . But I did meet him somewhere, I think . . . Here is another nice man,' and he nodded towards Razumikhin. 'Do you like him, Danya?' he asked with a sudden inexplicable burst of laughter.

'Yes, very much,' answered Dunya.

'Oh, what a . . . swine you are!' said Razumikhin, blushing and painfully embarrassed. He stood up. Pulkheria Alexandrovna smiled slightly and Raskolnikov roared with laughter.

'Where are you going?'

'I . . . I must go as well.'

'There is absolutely no need for you to go; stay here!' Zosimov has gone, so you must go. Well, don't . . . What time is it? Is it twelve yet? What a charming little watch you have, Dunya! But why are you all silent again? You are leaving me to do all the talking! . . .'

'It was a present from Marfa Petrovna,' answered Dunya.

'It was very expensive, too,' added Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

'Ah! . . . It is almost too big for a lady's watch.'

'I like them like that,' said Dunya.

'So it isn't a gift from her fiancé,' thought Razumikhin, feeling for some unknown reason very pleased.

'And I thought it was a present from Lazhin,' remarked Raskolnikov.

'No, he hasn't given Dunechka anything yet.'

'Ah! . . . Do you remember, mama, that I fell in love and wanted to get married?' he said, looking at his mother, who was struck by the strange manner and tone in which he spoke of it.

'Oh, my dear, yes!' Pulkheria Alexandrovna exchanged glances with Dunechka and Razumikhin.

'Hm! Yes! What can I tell you about her? I don't remember much. She was not very strong,' he went on, with his eyes again fixed on the ground, and absorbed, as it were, in his thoughts. 'she was always ailing, she liked to give to beggars; she was always dreaming of a convent, and once she burst into tears when she began to talk to me about it. Yes, yes . . . I remember . . . I remember very well. She was . . . very plain. I don't really know what attracted me to her; I think it may have been that she was always ill . . . If she had been lame as well, or hump-backed, I might very likely have loved her even more . . .' (He smiled thoughtfully. 'It was simply . . . a sort of spring fever . . .')

'No, it wasn't only that,' said Dunya vigorously.

He looked at his sister with earnest attention, but seemed not to hear or perhaps not to understand her words. Then, with an air of profound melancholy, he rose, crossed to his mother, kissed her, and returned to his seat.

'You still love her,' said Pulkheria Alexandrovna, moved.

'Her? Still? Oh, yes . . . you are talking of her! No. That might all belong to another world . . . and it is a long time ago. Yes, and everything round me seems as if it were happening somewhere else . . .'

He peered at them.

'Even you . . . it is as if I were looking at you from a thousand miles away . . . But God only knows why we're talking about this. And why keep on asking questions?' he added irritably, and was silent, again deep in thought and biting his nails.

'What a dreadful room you have, Rodva, just like a coffin,' said Pulkheria Alexandrovna, breaking the oppressive silence. 'I'm sure it is responsible for at least half your depression.'

'Room?' said he absently. 'Yes, the room made a big contribution . . . I've thought of that too . . . But if you knew what a strange idea you have just expressed, mama!' he added abruptly, with a mysterious smile.

It wanted but a little more for the company of the family from whom he had been separated for three years, and the intimate tone of the talk combined with the impossibility of finding any subject at all of real conversation, to become absolutely unbearable. There was, however, one urgent matter that simply must be settled, one way or another, that day; he had made up his mind on that point when he woke up. Now he was glad to turn to it as a way of escape from the present difficulties.

'Listen, Dunya,' he began drily and seriously. 'Of course I beg your forgiveness for yesterday, but I think it my duty to remind you that I do not intend to give way on the main point. You must choose between me and Luzhin. I may be no good, but you ought not to do this. It must be one or the other. If you marry Luzhin I shall immediately cease to call you sister.'

'Rodva, Rodva! This really is yesterday all over again,' cried Pulkheria Alexandrovna, distressed. 'And why will you persist in saying you are no good? That I cannot bear. It was just the same yesterday . . .'

'Brother,' said Dunya firmly, and as drily as her brother, 'there is a mistake here on your part. I have been thinking about it since last night and trying to find the mistake. It is all bound up with the fact that you seem to suppose I am sacrificing myself for somebody. That is quite wrong. I am marrying simply for my own sake, because I find things difficult; of course I shall be pleased if I am able to be of some assistance to my family, but that is not the most important factor in my decision . . .'



'She is lying' he thought, biting his nails in vicious anger. 'She is proud, and unwilling to admit that she wanted to be able to confer benefits on me. Pure arrogance! Oh, ignoble natures! Their love is like hate. . . Oh, how I hate them all.'

'In short, I am marrying Peter Petrovich,' continued Dunechka, 'because it is the lesser of two evils. I am prepared to fulfil honourably all that he expects of me, and so I am not deceiving him. . . Why did you smile just now?'

She coloured and anger flashed from her eyes.

'You will fulfil everything?' he asked, smiling bitterly.

'Within certain limits. The manner and form of Peter Petrovich's proposal showed me at once what he required. Of course he values himself somewhat too highly, but I hope he values me as well. . . Why are you laughing again?'

'And why are you blushing again? You are lying, sister, you are lying deliberately, out of pure feminine obstinacy, just to get your own way in spite of me. . . You cannot have any respect for Luzhin; I have seen him and spoken to him. Therefore you are selling yourself for money, and so, in any case, you are acting basely, and I am glad that you can at any rate blush.'

'That isn't true; I am not lying' cried Dunechka, losing all her composure. 'I am not going to marry him without the conviction that he will value and esteem me; I am not going to marry him without being sure that I can respect him. Fortunately I can convince myself of that with great certainty, and this very day. And such a marriage is not ignoble, as you call it! And if you were right, if I had really decided on a base action, would it not be pitiless cruelty on your part to talk to me as you have done? Why should you demand from me a heroism which, perhaps, you yourself are not capable of? That is tyranny, despotism! If I destroy anybody it will be myself and nobody else. . . I have not killed anybody! . . Why are you looking at me like that? Why are you so pale? Rodya, what is the matter? Rodya, dear!'

'Oh dear, he is going to faint, and it is your fault!' cried Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

'No, no. . . rubbish. . . it's nothing! . . My head felt a little dizzy. It's not a faint. . . You are obsessed with the idea of fainting! Hm! yes. . . what the deuce was I saying? . . Yes! how do you propose to convince yourself today that you can respect him and that he. . . respects you, wasn't it? . . as you

said you would? I think you said today, or did I mishear you?"

'Mama, show my brother Peter Petrovich's letter,' said Dunechka.

Pulkheria Alexandrovna, with a trembling hand, gave him the letter. He took it curiously. Before opening it, however, he gave Dunya a look of sudden amazement.

'Very odd!' he said slowly, as if suddenly struck by a new idea. 'Why am I making so much fuss? Why all this clamour? You must marry whom you please!'

His words seemed to be meant for himself, but he spoke them aloud, and he continued to look at Dunya for some time, as if he were perplexed.

At last, still with the same expression of wonder, he opened the letter and began to read it slowly and carefully. He read it through twice. Pulkheria Alexandrovna was extremely agitated, and all of them expected something extraordinary.

'I find it very surprising,' he began, after some reflection, as he returned the letter to his mother; his words were not addressed to anyone in particular. 'He is a business man, a lawyer, and his conversation is even . . . pretentious, and yet his letter is really illiterate'.

There was a general stir; this was quite unexpected.

'Well, but they all write like that,' said Razumikhin abruptly.

'Have you read it?'

'Yes.'

'We showed it to him, Rodya, we . . . asked his advice just now,' began Pulkheria Alexandrovna, in some confusion.

'It is only the special legal style,' broke in Razumikhin. 'All legal documents are still written like that.'

'Legal? Yes, it is a legal or a business style . . . It is not perhaps very illiterate, but it is not highly literary; it is commercial!'

'Peter Petrovich does not try to conceal the fact that he has not had an expensive education; he is proud of being a self-made man,' remarked Avdotya Romanovna, rather hurt by her brother's new tone.

'Well, if he is, he has some reason to be; I don't deny it. You, sister, seem to be offended because all I got out of the letter was such a frivolous remark, and you think I talked about trivialities simply out of spite, to crow over you. On the contrary, there came into my mind, in connexion with the style, an idea that is quite vital in the present case. There is one very

clear and significant expression there: "on your own head be it," and there is besides the threat of leaving immediately if I come. That threat of leaving is exactly the same as a threat of abandoning you both if you don't obey him, and that after bringing you to St. Petersburg. Well, do you think it is possible to take the same offence at such an expression from Luzhin as if he' he gestured towards Razumikhin 'had written it, or Zosimov, or any of us?"

'N-no,' answered Dunechka, more cheerfully. 'I knew quite well that it was too naively expressed, and that he is perhaps not a very accomplished writer . . . You were quite right, brother. I did not even expect . . .'

'It is expressed in legal language, and in legal language it must be written like that, but the result was blunter and coarser than he perhaps wished. However, I must disillusion you a little: there is another expression in that letter that is a libel on me, and a very mean one. Yesterday I gave some money to a widow, ill with consumption and crushed by misfortune, not "on the pretext of funeral expenses" but straightforwardly for the funeral; and I did not put it into the hands of the daughter, a girl, as he says, "of notorious character" and whom I saw yesterday for the first time in my life, but into those of the widow herself. In all this I see a too hasty desire to vilify me and make mischief between us. Again we have it legally expressed, that is, with too plain a disclosure of the object and with altogether naive hastiness. He is an intelligent man, but intelligence alone is not nearly enough when it comes to acting wisely. It all gives us a picture of the man, and . . . I do not think that he values you highly. I tell you this solely for your own good, because I sincerely wish you well . . .'

Dunechka did not answer, her decision had already been made; she was only waiting for the evening.

'Then what have you decided, Rodya?' asked Pulkheria Alexandrovna, now even more worried than before by his sudden new *business-like* way of speaking.

'What do you mean: "decided"?"

'Well, Peter Petrovich writes that you must not be there and that he will go away . . . if you come. So . . . will you be there?"

'It is obviously not for me to decide but firstly for you, if you are not offended by Peter Petrovich's demand, and secondly for Dunya, if she also is not offended. I shall do what you think best,' he added drily.



'Danechka has already decided, and I fully agree with her,' Pulkheria Alexandrovna hastened to say.

'I decided to request you, Rodya, to urge you, not to fail to be with us at this meeting,' said Danya. 'Will you come?'

'Yes, I will come.'

'And I will ask you to come at eight o'clock as well,' she said, turning to Razumikhin. 'Mama, I am inviting him also.'

'Quite right, Danechka. Well,' added Pulkheria Alexandrovna, 'let it be as you have decided. It is a relief to me too; I don't like lying and pretending; it will be better if we speak the truth honestly . . . Let Peter Petrovich be angry or not, just as he likes!'

## CHAPTER IV

At that moment the door opened quickly, and a young woman came in and looked timidly round. They all turned towards her with surprise and curiosity. Raskolnikov did not recognize her at first. It was Sofya Semenovna Marmeladova. He had seen her for the first time on the previous day, but at such a time, in such circumstances, and in such a dress that what remained in his mind was a memory of an entirely different person. Today he saw a simply and even poorly dressed girl, still very young, hardly more than a child, with a modest and becoming manner and a bright but rather frightened face. She was wearing a very simple house-dress and an old and unfashionable hat; but she still carried a sunshade, as she had done the day before. When she saw a room unexpectedly full of people, her embarrassment was so great that she quite lost her head and made a motion to withdraw.

'Oh . . . is that you?' said Raskolnikov in extreme astonishment, and himself became suddenly embarrassed.

It came at once into his mind that his mother and sister already knew a little, from Luzhin's letter, of a girl of 'notorious' conduct. He had but just now been protesting against Luzhin's libellous statement and asserting that he had seen the girl only once, and now suddenly she herself had entered the room. He remembered also that he had not made any protest against the expression: 'notoriously ill-conducted'. All these ideas flashed in a confused way through his brain. But looking more closely at her he saw that this debased creature was so humbled that he was filled with pity. When she seemed

about to run away in terror it was as if something turned over inside him.

'I didn't expect you,' he said hastily, stopping her with a look. 'Please sit down. I suppose you have come from Katerina Ivanovna. Excuse me, not here; sit there . . .'

When Sonya came in, Razumikhin, who had been sitting on a chair close to the door, stood up to let her pass. Raskolnikov had at first meant to indicate to her the place at the end of the sofa where Zosimov had sat, but recollecting that it was too *familiar* a place, since the sofa served as his bed, hurriedly pointed to Razumikhin's chair instead.

'And you sit here,' he said to Razumikhin, putting him in Zosimov's place.

Sonya sat down, almost shaking with fright, and looked timidly at the two ladies. It was plain that she herself did not know how she could sit down in their presence. This thought so terrified her that she sprang up again, and in the greatest embarrassment addressed Raskolnikov.

'I . . . I . . . called for a moment; excuse me for disturbing you,' she began, stammering. 'I have come from Katerina Ivanovna; she had nobody to send . . . Katerina Ivanovna wanted me to beg you most earnestly to come tomorrow morning to the funeral . . . after the mass . . . at the Mitrophanyevsky Cemetery, and afterwards at our . . . at her place . . . for some refreshment . . . Please do her the honour . . . She told me to ask you to come.'

Sonya stumbled and stopped speaking.

'I will certainly try . . . certainly,' answered Raskolnikov, who had remained standing, and he too stumbled in his speech so that he could not finish. 'Do please sit down,' he added abruptly; 'I must speak to you. Please . . . perhaps you are in a hurry . . . but be good enough to spare me two minutes . . '

He moved a chair forward. Sonya sat down again and again threw a quick, timid, embarrassed look at the ladies and again cast down her eyes.

Raskolnikov's pale face flushed; he shuddered violently and his eyes burned.

'Mama,' he said in a firm and insistent tone, 'this is Sofya Semenovna Marmeladova, the daughter of that unfortunate Mr. Marmeladov, whom I saw run over yesterday, and of whom I have already told you . . .'

Pulkheria Alexandrovna looked at Sonya with narrowed

eyes. Although she was disconcerted by Rodya's challenging and insistent glance, she could not deny herself that satisfaction. Dunechka fixed her serious, perplexed gaze on the poor girl's face and watched her steadily. When she heard herself introduced Sonya seemed about to raise her eyes, but became even more embarrassed than before.

'I wanted to ask you,' said Raskolnikov, turning quickly to her, 'how things went with you today. I hope you were not disturbed . . . for example, by the police.'

'No, everything was all right . . . After all, the cause of death was all too clear, we were not worried, but now the lodgers are getting annoyed.'

'Why?'

'Because the body has been there a long time . . . of course the weather is very hot and there is a smell . . . so today, towards vesper time, it will be taken to the cemetery chapel, until tomorrow. At first Katerina Ivanovna did not want that, but now she sees herself that it is necessary . . .'

'Today, then?'

'She asks you to do us the honour of being at the church tomorrow for the funeral, and afterwards at her home for the dinner.'

'Is she arranging a dinner?'

'Yes, just something cold; she particularly wanted me to thank you for having helped us yesterday . . . without you we should have had nothing for the funeral.' Her lips and chin began to quiver, but she mastered her emotion and again sat with downcast eyes.

While they talked Raskolnikov had been watching her closely. She had a thin, a very thin, angular, and pale little face, with rather irregular features and a pointed little nose and chin. She could not have been called even pretty, but her blue eyes were so clear and bright, and, when they lighted up, her whole expression was so simple-hearted and good, that one was involuntarily charmed with her. Her face and her whole person had moreover one characteristic feature: in spite of her eighteen years she seemed almost a little girl still, much younger than her age, little more than a child, indeed, and sometimes there was something almost comically youthful about her movements.

'But surely Katerina Ivanovna could not contrive everything, and even plan a meal afterwards, on such a small



sum?" asked Raskolnikov, obstinately prolonging the conversation.

'The coffin will be very simple . . . and everything will be simple, so it will not cost much . . . Katerina Ivanovna and I have reckoned it all out, and there will be enough left for us to honour his memory with some refreshment . . . and Katerina Ivanovna wants that very much . . . You can't . . . it is a comfort to her . . . she is like that, as you know . . .'

'I understand, I understand . . . of course . . . Why are you looking round my room? Mama here says it is like a coffin.'

'You gave us all you had yesterday!' she burst out in answer, in a fierce rapid whisper, and then fixed her eyes once more on the floor. Her lips and chin quivered again. She had been struck from the first by the poverty of Raskolnikov's surroundings, and now these words seemed to tear themselves from her of their own volition. A silence followed. Dunechka's eyes brightened, and even Pulkheria Alexandrovna looked kindly at Sonya.

'Rodya,' she said, getting up from her seat, 'we shall, of course, dine together. Come, Dunechka . . . You, Rodya, ought to go for a little walk, and then lie down and rest, and afterwards come to us as soon as you can . . . I am afraid we have tired you out . . .'

'Yes, yes, I will come,' he answered hastily, standing up. 'However, I have something to do . . .'

'But surely you don't intend to stay and dine by yourself?' cried Razumikhin, looking with astonishment at Raskolnikov. 'Why do you say that?'

'Yes, yes, I will come, of course, of course . . . But stay here a minute. You don't need him just now, do you, mama? I am not taking him away from you?'

'Oh no, no! But you will be kind enough to come to dinner, Dmitri Prokofich?'

'Please come,' requested Dunya.

Razumikhin, beaming, bowed his farewells. There followed a moment of sudden strange embarrassment.

'Good-bye, Rodya, or rather *au revoir*, I don't like saying "good-bye" Good-bye, Nastasya . . . oh, I've said it again!'

Pulkheria Alexandrovna meant to bow to Sonya as well, but somehow she did not manage it, and hurried from the room.

But Avdotya Romanovna waited, as it were, her turn, and, as she followed her mother past Sonya, made her a deep and courteous bow. Sonya, confused, bowed hastily with a

startled air, and an almost painful feeling was reflected in her face, as if Avdotya Romanovna's politeness and attention were oppressive and even tormenting to her.

'Good-bye, Danya!' cried Raskolnikov, from the entrance, 'give me your hand!'

'But I did, don't you remember?' answered Dunya, turning to him with awkward tenderness.

'Well, give it me again, then!'

And he squeezed her fingers tightly. Dunechka smiled at him, blushed, quickly withdrew her hand and, also radiantly happy, followed her mother.

'Well, this is splendid!' he said to Sonya, coming back into the room, and looking at her with an expression of serenity 'Heaven rest the dead, but the living must live! Mustn't they, mustn't they? That is so, isn't it?'

Sonya looked in astonishment at the sudden brightening of his face. He watched her closely and in silence for some moments; in those moments all her father had told him about her passed through his mind . . .

'Oh dear, Dunechka!' said Pulkheria Alexandrovna, as soon as they reached the street, 'I am almost glad to have come away; it is somehow a relief. Well, could I ever have thought yesterday, in the train, that I should be glad for such a reason?'

'I tell you again, mama, that he is still ill. Can you not see it? Perhaps it was worrying on our account that first upset him. We must make allowances, and we can forgive many, many things . . .'

'You didn't make many allowances yourself!' broke in Pulkheria Alexandrovna hotly and jealously. 'You know, Dunya, I looked at the two of you, and you are the absolute image of him, not so much in face as in mind; you are both of a melancholic temper, both moody and hasty, both arrogant, both generous . . . I suppose it is not possible that he is an egoist, eh, Dunechka? . . . But when I think what is going to happen this evening, my heart quite fails me!'

'Don't worry, mama. What must be, will be.'

'But, Dunechka, only think of our situation now! What if Peter Petrovich withdraws?' incautiously said poor Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

'What will he be worth if he does?' answered Dunechka sharply and scornfully.

'We did right to come away now,' Pulkheria Alexandrovna hastily interrupted. 'He had something to do. It will be good for him to go out and get a breath of air . . . it's terribly close in his room . . . but where can one get fresh air here? Even in the streets it is like an unventilated room . . . Stop; move out of the way' You will be crushed; they are carrying something. Why, it is actually a pianoforte' How they push' . . . I am very much afraid of that girl, too . . .'

'What girl, mama?'

'You know, that Sofya Semenovna, who was there just now . . .'

'But why?'

'I have a presentiment, Dunya Believe me or not, as soon as she came in, I instantly thought there was something there, something very important . . .'

'There is nothing there at all' exclaimed Dunya, irritated 'You and your presentiments, mama! He has only known her since yesterday, and when she came in now he didn't recognize her.'

'Well, you'll see' . . . She worries me You'll see, you'll see' I was quite frightened: she looked at me she looked at me with such eyes that I could hardly sit still, you remember, when he began to introduce her. It seems very odd to me: look at the way Peter Petrovich writes about her, and yet he introduced her to us, to you as well! So he must be interested in her!'

'It doesn't matter what he writes! People said things, and wrote them, about us as well, have you forgotten that? I am sure she is . . . nice, and that all that is . . . rubbish!'

'God grant it!'

'And Peter Petrovich is a wretched scandal-monger!' snapped Dunechka suddenly.

Pulkheria Alexandrovna winced, and the conversation dropped.

'This is what I want to say to you . . .' said Raskolnikov, taking Razumikhin over to the window.

'Then I will tell Katerina Ivanovna that you will come . . . ' said Sonya hastily, preparing to leave.

'One moment, Sofya Semenovna; we have no secrets, you are not in the way . . . I should like another word with you . . . Well, now,' he broke off without finishing his sentence, and



turned to Razumikhin. 'I think you know this . . . what's his name? . . . Porfiry Petrovich?'

'Naturally! He's a relative of mine. What is all this?' said Razumikhin, suddenly curious.

'Well, he is now in charge . . . of that case . . . about that murder . . . you were saying so yesterday . . . isn't he?'

'Yes . . . well?' Razumikhin was all agog.

'He was asking for the people who pawned things with her, and there are two pledges of mine there, not worth much, but they are my sister's ring, that she gave me as a keepsake when I came here, and my father's silver watch. They are only worth five or six roubles altogether, but I value them for their associations. Well, what ought I to do now? I don't want to lose them, especially the watch. Just now I was trembling for fear my mother should ask to see the watch, when we were talking about Dunechka's. It is the only thing we have left of my father's. It would make her ill if it were lost. Women! So tell me what to do. I know I shall have to report it to the police. But wouldn't it be better to go to Porfiry himself? What do you think? Something must be done about it as soon as possible. Mama will ask about it before dinner, see if she doesn't!'

'Certainly not to the police, but definitely to Porfiry' exclaimed Razumikhin, extraordinarily excited. 'Well, how pleased I am! Why are we waiting here? Let us go at once; it's only a step and he is sure to be in.'

'Very well . . . let us go . . .'

'He will be very, very, very pleased to meet you. I have told him a lot about you at different times . . . I was talking about you only yesterday. Come on! . . . So you knew the old woman? Precisely! . . . This has all turned out splen-did-ly! . . . Oh, yes . . . Sofya Ivanovna . . .'

'Sofya Semenovna,' Raskolnikov corrected him. 'Sofya Semenovna, this is my friend Razumikhin, and he's a very good chap . . .'

'If you have to go now . . .' began Sonya, still more embarrassed, and not looking at Razumikhin.

'Yes, we will go' decided Raskolnikov. 'I will call on you later today. Only tell me, Sofya Semenovna, where do you live?'

He was not exactly confused, but he spoke as if he were in a hurry, and avoided her eyes. Sonya, blushing, gave him her address. They all went out together.

'Aren't you going to fasten the door?' asked Razumikhin, descending the steps behind them.

'I never do . . . Though I've been meaning to buy a lock for two years,' he added carelessly. 'They are fortunate people who have nothing to lock up, aren't they?' he said to Sonya, laughing.

They stopped in the gateway of the house.

'Do you go to the right, Sofya Semenovna? By the way, how did you find me?' he asked, but as if he really wished to say something quite different. He wanted to look into her clear, quiet eyes, but somehow seemed unable to do so.

'Why, you told Polechka the address yesterday!'

'Polya? Oh, yes . . . Polechka! That is . . . the little . . . that is your sister? So I gave her my address?'

'Have you forgotten?'

'No . . . I remember . . .'

'And I heard about you from my poor father that time . . . Only then I did not know your surname, and he didn't know it either . . . But when I got here today, since I got to know your name yesterday . . . I asked: where is there a Mr. Raskolnikov living here? . . . I didn't know that you were a lodger, like me . . . Good-bye . . . I will tell Katerina Ivanovna . . .'

She was terribly pleased to have got away at last, she hurried along with downcast eyes, to get out of their sight as soon as she could, to cover as quickly as possible those twenty paces before she could turn the corner and be alone at last, and walk rapidly along looking at nobody, noticing nothing, but thinking, remembering, re-creating every word that had been said and every circumstance of her visit. Never, never, had she felt anything like this. A whole new world rose indistinct and unexplored before her eyes. She remembered suddenly that Raskolnikov himself meant to call on her today, perhaps this morning, perhaps almost immediately.

'Only not today, please not today!' she murmured with a sinking heart, as if she were pleading with someone, like a frightened child. 'Oh, good heavens! He is coming to see me . . . into that room . . . he will see . . . oh, heavens!'

Certainly she was in no state to notice at that moment a gentleman, unknown to her, who was assiduously following on her heels. He had accompanied her ever since she came out of the gate. When the three of them stopped to talk for a moment in the street, this passer-by, walking round them, had

started as he unexpectedly caught Sonya's words: 'and I asked where does Mr. Raskolnikov live?' He gave all three a quick but searching glance, especially Raskolnikov, whom Sonya was addressing; then he took note of the house. It was all done in a moment, as he passed by, and then, trying not to attract any attention, he went on, shortening his step as though expecting somebody. He was waiting for Sonya; he had seen that they were saying good-bye and that Sonya was going straight home.

'But where to? I have seen that face somewhere,' he thought. 'I must find out.'

When he came to the corner he crossed to the other side of the street, turned, and saw that Sonya was coming the same way, noticing nothing. When she reached the corner, she also turned into the street. He followed her along the opposite pavement, not taking his eyes off her, after some fifty yards he crossed again to Sonya's side of the street, caught her up, and followed five paces behind her.

He was a man of about fifty, rather tall, stout, with wide sloping shoulders that gave him a round-shouldered look. He was stylishly but comfortably dressed, and had the air of a great gentleman. He carried an elegant cane, with which he tapped the pavement at every step, and his gloves were newly cleaned. His broad face, with its high cheek-bones, was pleasant enough, and his complexion had a fresh colour that did not belong to St. Petersburg. His hair, which was very fair, was still thick, and had only the merest touch of grey in it; his thick, wide, spade-shaped beard was even lighter in colour than his hair. His blue eyes had a cold, watchful, considering look; his lips were very red. He was altogether remarkably well-preserved, and looked much younger than his years.

When Sonya reached the Canal they had the pavement to themselves. Watching her, he had noticed that she was thoughtful and abstracted. Sonya reached the house she lived in and turned in at the gate, he followed her, seeming rather surprised. In the courtyard, she turned to the right, towards the corner where her staircase was. 'Oh' murmured the stranger, and began to ascend the steps behind her. It was only now that Sonya noticed him. She went up to the third floor, turned along the corridor, and rang at the door of Number 9, which bore the inscription in chalk: *Kapernaumot, Tailor*. 'Oh' repeated the stranger, full of amazement at this strange coincidence,



and rang at Number 8, next door. The doors were about five yards apart.

'You live at Kapernaumov's' he said, looking at Sonya and laughing. 'He mended a waistcoat for me yesterday. I live here, next door to you, at Madam Gertrude Karlovna Resselch's. How strangely things turn out!'

Sonya looked attentively at him.

'We are neighbours,' he continued with a certain peculiar gaiety. 'I have been in the town only two days. Well, good-bye till we meet again.'

Sonya did not answer; the door opened and she slipped inside. She felt somehow ashamed and shy.

On the way to see Porfiry, Razumikhin was in a peculiarly excited state.

'This is splendid, my dear chap!' he repeated several times, 'and I am glad! I am glad!'

'But why are you glad?' wondered Raskolnikov to himself

'I didn't know that you too had pawned things with the old woman. And . . . and . . . was this long ago? I mean, is it long since you were there?'

'What a naïve simpleton he is!'

'When? . . .' Raskolnikov stopped, considering. 'I think I was there two or three days before her death. However, I am not going to redeem the things now,' he said hastily, with special solicitude for the things; 'why, I've only got one rouble in silver again . . . thanks to my cursed delirious state yesterday . . .'

He laid special stress on the last words.

'Oh, yes, yes, yes.' For some reason Razumikhin seemed in a hurry to agree with everything. 'So that is one reason why you were . . . so thunder-struck then . . . and you know, when you were delirious you kept talking about some rings and chains or other! . . . Yes, yes . . . It is clear, everything is clear now.'

'Listen to that! That idea must have taken firm root among them. Why, this man here would go to the stake for me, and here he is, rejoicing because it is *cleared up* why I mentioned rings in my delirium! That must have confirmed the ideas they were all cherishing! . . .'

'Shall we find him in?' he asked aloud

'Yes, we shall find him,' said Razumikhin. 'He's a splendid chap, brother, you will see! He's a little awkward. I don't mean that he's not well-bred; when I say he is awkward I mean it in another respect. He is an intelligent fellow, very

intelligent, he's nobody's fool, but he is of a rather peculiar turn of mind . . . He is incredulous, sceptical, cynical. He likes to mislead people, or rather to baffle them . . . Well, it's an old and well-tried method . . . He knows his business, knows it very well . . . Last year he investigated and solved a case, another murder, where the scent was practically cold. He is very, very anxious to make your acquaintance.'

'But why should he be?'

'I don't mean in order to . . . You see, recently, since you fell ill, I have been driven to talking about you a great deal . . . Well, he listened . . . and when he heard you were studying law and that circumstances prevented you from finishing the course, he said it was a great pity. And I gathered . . . I mean from all this taken together, not just that one thing; yesterday Zametov . . . You know, Rodya, I talked a lot of nonsense yesterday, when I was drunk, as we walked home . . . and, my dear fellow, I am afraid you may have exaggerated it, you see . . .'

'What do you mean? That I'm supposed to be mad? Well, perhaps it's true.'

He gave a forced smile.

'Yes, yes . . . I mean, hang it, no! . . . Well, everything I said (about other things as well) was rubbish, and just because I was drunk.'

'Why apologize? I am so bored with the whole thing!' exclaimed Raskolnikov, with exaggerated irritation, which was, however, partly feigned.

'I know, I know, I understand. You may be sure I understand. I am ashamed even to speak of it . . .'

'In that case, don't!'

They were silent. Razumikhin's mood was one of wild excitement, and Raskolnikov recognized it with loathing. He was, besides, disturbed by what Razumikhin had just said about Porfiry.

'I shall have to make the most of my illness,' he thought, with a pale face and a thumping heart, 'and as naturally as I can. The most natural seeming thing would be not to call attention to it at all. To refrain by an obvious effort! No, an effort would be unnatural again . . . Well, we shall see . . . how things turn out . . . presently . . . Is it a good thing or not, that I have come? The moth flying into the candle of itself. My heart is thumping, and that is not a good thing! . . .'

'It's in this grey house,' said Razumikhin.

'The most important thing is, does Porfiry know or doesn't he, that I was in that old witch's flat yesterday . . . and asked about the blood? I must get to know that at the very outset: I must find out from his face, as soon as I go in; o-ther-wise . . . I'll find out, if it's the end of me!'

'Do you know,' he said, turning to Razumikhin with a mischievous smile, 'I have noticed today, my dear fellow, that you have been in a state of extraordinary excitement ever since this morning? Isn't that true?'

'Excitement? I am not in the least excited,' lied Razumikhin.

'No, my dear fellow, I'm right. It's quite noticeable. You were sitting on the edge of your chair, as I've never seen you do before, and twitching as if you had cramp. You kept jumping up for no reason at all. One minute you were angry, the next your ugly mug became as sweet as sugar-candy. You even blushed: you blushed especially red when you were invited to dinner.'

'No such thing! It's a lie! . . . What makes you talk like this?'

'And why are you squirming like a schoolboy? What the devil? You're blushing again!'

'What a beast you are, though!'

'What are you getting embarrassed about? Romeo. Just wait: I'll repeat this today, somewhere! Ha, ha, ha! It will amuse mama . . . and somebody else . . .'

'Listen, listen! Listen to me, this is serious! Really, this . . . what next? The devil!' wound up Razumikhin, full of confusion and cold with fright. 'What are you going to tell them? I, brother . . . Pah! What a cad you are!'

'Just like a June rose! And how well it becomes you, if you only knew. A Romeo six feet tall. And how carefully you have washed today: why, you even cleaned your nails, didn't you? When did that happen before? And as true as I'm alive, you've put pomade on your hair! Bend down.'

'You cad!'

Raskolnikov laughed so heartily that he seemed quite unable to control himself; thus they entered Porfiry Petrovich's flat in a gust of laughter. This was what Raskolnikov wanted: from inside they could be heard laughing as they came in, and still guffawing in the hall.

'Not one word here, or I'll . . . brain you!' whispered Razumikhin furiously, gripping Raskolnikov's shoulder.



## CHAPTER V

RASKOLNIKOV was already going in. He entered looking as if it cost him a great effort to prevent his laughter from bursting out again. Razumikhin, with a thoroughly disconcerted and savage mien, as red as a peony, stumbled shamelaceally after him, lanky and ungainly. His face and his whole appearance were really funny enough at that moment to justify Raskolnikov's laughter. Without waiting to be introduced, Raskolnikov bowed to their host, who was standing in the middle of the room looking inquiringly at them, and shook hands with him, still obviously struggling violently to subdue his hilarity sufficiently to get out a word or two introducing himself. But hardly had he succeeded in regaining a straight face than he glanced again, as if involuntarily, at Razumikhin, and broke down once more: the smothered laughter burst out all the more uncontrollably for the powerful restraint he had put on it before. The extraordinary fury with which Razumikhin met this hearty-seeming laughter lent the whole scene an air of unaffected merriment and, what was more important, naturalness. As if on purpose, Razumikhin added still more to the effect.

'Damn it all!' he roared, waving his arm and bringing down with a crash and a jingle a small round table on which stood a glass of tea.

'Why wreck the furniture, gentlemen? You are damaging Government property,' cried Portiry Petrovich cheerfully.

This, then, was the scene. Raskolnikov stood there still holding his host's hand, still laughing, but conscious of having gone far enough and waiting for the right moment to stop naturally. Razumikhin, his confusion completed by the fall of the table and the breaking of the tumbler, looked grimly at the fragments, spat, turned abruptly to the window and stood looking out but seeing nothing, with his back to the room and a terrible scowl on his face. Portiry Petrovich was laughing, and seemed willing to go on laughing, but it was plain that some explanation must be given to him. On a chair in the corner Zametov had been sitting. He had risen when the visitors entered, and now waited, with his lips stretched into a smile but with perplexity and even incredulity in his eyes as he watched the scene, looking at Raskolnikov in particular with something like

bewilderment. His unexpected presence affected Raskolnikov unpleasantly.

'I shall have to take that into consideration, too,' he thought.

'Please excuse me,' he began, with forced embarrassment, 'Raskolnikov . . .'

'Not at all. I am pleased to see you, and your entrance was pleasing too . . . Well, isn't he going to say "Good morning"?' said Porfiry Petrovich, with a gesture of his hand towards Razumikhin.

'I really haven't the least idea why he's so furious with me. I only said, as we were coming here, that he was like Romeo, and . . . proved it, and that was all, I think.'

'He must have a very serious reason for getting so angry over a word,' laughed Porfiry.

'There speaks the detective' . . . The devil take the lot of you!' snapped Razumikhin, and then, beginning to laugh himself, with a suddenly cheerful face, went up to Porfiry Petrovich.

'Enough of this! We're all fools. To business! My friend here, Rodion Romanovich Raskolnikov, of whom you have heard, in the first place wants to make your acquaintance, and in the second place has a small piece of business to do with you. Hullo! Zametov! How do you come to be here? Do you know each other? Have you been acquainted long?'

'This is something new!' thought Raskolnikov anxiously.

Zametov seemed a little disconcerted, but not extremely so.

'We met yesterday at your place,' he said easily.

'That means Heaven has spared me the trouble, last week, Porfiry, he was pestering me to give him an introduction to you, and now you have managed it between you without me . . . Where do you keep your tobacco?'

Porfiry Petrovich was informally dressed, in a dressing-gown and slippers trodden down at the heel, his linen was spotless. He was a man of about thirty-five, rather short and stout, and somewhat paunchy. He was clean-shaven, and the hair was cropped close on his large round head, which bulged out at the back almost as if it were swollen. His fat, round, rather snub-nosed, dark-skinned face had an unhealthy yellowish pallor, and a cheerful, slightly mocking expression. It would have seemed good-natured were it not for the expression of the eyes, which had a watery, glassy gleam under lids with nearly white eyelashes, which twitched almost as

though he were continually winking. The glance of those eyes was strangely out of keeping with his squat figure, almost like a peasant-woman's, and made him seem more to be reckoned with than might have been expected at first sight.

As soon as he heard that his visitor had a 'small piece of business' to do, Porfiry Petrovich invited him to sit on the sofa, installed himself on the other end, and fixed his eyes on him with an air of expecting a speedy exposition of the matter, and that kind of concentrated and almost too serious attention that we find so disconcerting and overwhelming, especially from a new acquaintance, and particularly when the subject we are expounding is, in our own eyes, utterly out of proportion with the extraordinarily weighty consideration it receives. Raskolnikov, however, explained his business shortly and coherently, in clear and exact terms, and felt pleased that he had succeeded fairly well in keeping his eyes on Porfiry. Porfiry Petrovich did not once take his own eyes from his guest. Razumikhin, sitting at the opposite side of the table, followed with restless impatience, constantly turning his eyes from one to the other and back again, which all looked a little silly.

Raskolnikov silently cursed him for a fool.

'You ought to make a statement to the police,' said Porfiry, looking very business-like, 'to the effect that, having learnt of a certain occurrence of this murder, that is you desire in your turn to inform the examining magistrate in charge of the investigation that such-and-such things belong to you and that you wish to redeem them . . . or words to that effect . . . but they will write it for you.'

'The fact is that at the present time . . .' began Raskolnikov, trying to seem as embarrassed as possible, 'I am not exactly in funds . . . and even such a trilling sum is not possible for me . . . You see, I should merely like to report now that the things are mine, and that when I have the money . . .'

'That doesn't matter,' answered Porfiry Petrovich, receiving these financial explanations with some coldness; 'if, however, you prefer it, you may write direct to me, to the same effect; that is, having learnt of so-and-so, and offering the information that certain things are yours, you request . . .'

'Can this be done on unstamped paper?' hastily interrupted Raskolnikov, once more interesting himself in the financial side of the matter.

'Oh, yes. Stamped paper is not necessary at all!' Suddenly,



with an openly mocking expression, he screwed up his eyes as if he were winking. Perhaps, however, this was only Raskolnikov's imagination, for it lasted only for a moment. At any rate there had been something, and Raskolnikov could have sworn he had been winked at, God alone knew why.

'He knows!' flashed through his brain like lightning.

'Excuse me for troubling you with such trifles,' he went on, a little disconcerted; 'my things aren't worth more than five roubles altogether, but they are especially dear to me for the sake of the people from whom I had them, and I confess I was very much afraid, when I heard . . .'

'Yes, you positively flew up in the air yesterday, when I let out to Zosimov that Porfiry was questioning the people who had pawned things' agreed Razumikhin with evident purpose.

This was unendurable. Raskolnikov could not restrain himself from turning on him a flashing glance from black eyes burning with rage. But he immediately recollected himself.

'You are laughing at me, my dear fellow, aren't you?' he said, with artfully contrived irritation. 'I confess that I am perhaps too concerned with what you think is rubbish; but I ought not to be considered selfish—or greedy on that account, and in my eyes those two trifling trinkets may be anything but rubbish. I told you just now that that almost worthless silver watch was the only thing left of my father's. You may laugh at me, but my mother has come to see me'—he turned abruptly to Porfiry—'and if she knew'—here he turned quickly back to Razumikhin, trying hard to make his voice tremble—'that that watch was lost, she would be in despair! Women!'

'But really, that's not so! I didn't mean that at all! Quite the contrary,' exclaimed Razumikhin indignantly.

'Have I done well? Did it seem natural? Wasn't it too exaggerated?' Raskolnikov asked himself anxiously. 'Why did I say "women" like that?'

'So your mother has come to see you?' inquired Porfiry Petrovich for some reason.

'Yes.'

'When was this?'

'Yesterday evening.'

Porfiry was silent, as if considering.

'Your things could not possibly be lost in any event,' he went on coldly and quietly. 'Indeed, I had been expecting you here for some time.'

And as though he had said nothing out of the ordinary, he busied himself with procuring an ash-tray for Razumikhin, who was mercilessly scattering cigarette-ash on the carpet. Raskolnikov started, but Porfiry, still concerned over Razumikhin's cigarette, did not appear to see him.

'Wha-at? Expecting him? Do you mean to say you knew he had pawned things *there*?' exclaimed Razumikhin.

Porfiry Petrovich turned back to Raskolnikov.

'Both of your things, the watch and the ring, were in *her* room, wrapped in a piece of paper with your name clearly written on it in pencil, together with the dates on which she had them from you . . .'

'How do you come to be so observant?' began Raskolnikov with an awkward laugh, trying hard to look him straight in the eye; he could not refrain from adding:

'I made that remark just now because there must have been so many people who pawned things . . . that it would be difficult for you to remember them all . . . But you, on the contrary, seem to remember them all so clearly, and . . . and . . .'

'Stupidity! Weakness! Why did I say that?'

'But almost all of them are known now, and in fact you were the only one who had not come to us,' answered Porfiry, with a barely perceptible shade of mockery.

'I have not been very well.'

'I had heard so. I had even heard that something had seriously upset you. You are rather pale even now.'

'Not at all . . . on the contrary, I am quite well!' broke in Raskolnikov rudely and angrily. His sudden change of tone came from the bad temper seething uncontrollably within him. 'If I speak in anger I shall give myself away,' flashed again through his mind. 'But why do they torment me? . . .'

'Not very well!' interposed Razumikhin; 'what an understatement! Until yesterday he was practically raving . . . Would you credit it, Porfiry, he was barely on his feet again, and as soon as Zosimov and I turned our backs yesterday, he got dressed, slipped away secretly, and went running about the streets till almost midnight? And all this, I tell you, in absolute delirium! Imagine it! A most extraordinary thing!'

'Really, *in absolute delirium*? Please tell me about it,' said Porfiry, shaking his head like a peasant-woman.

'Rubbish! Don't believe him! However, you don't need me to tell you; you don't believe him anyway,' burst out

Raskolnikov with excessive rage. But Porfiry Petrovich did not appear to hear these strange words.

'How could you have gone out, unless you were delirious?' asked Razumikhin, suddenly growing heated. 'Why did you go out? What for? . . . And why do it by stealth? Had you any sane idea in your head? Now that all danger is past, I can speak straight out.'

'They got on my nerves yesterday,' said Raskolnikov, turning to Porfiry with an unpudently provocative smile, 'and I ran away from them to take rooms where they would not find me; I took a lot of money with me. Mr. Zametov there saw it. What do you say, Mr. Zametov, was I in my right mind or not, yesterday? Settle the argument for us.'

At that moment he would have liked to strangle Zametov, he could not bear the way he sat there in silence and looked at him.

'In my opinion, you talked very sensibly, even cleverly, only you were too irritable,' declared Zametov drily.

'Nikodim Fomich was telling me today,' put in Porfiry Petrovich, 'that he met you very late last night at the home of a clerk who had been run over . . .'

'Well, just take that clerk now!' Razumikhin took him up. 'Weren't you out of your mind there? Giving the widow every penny you had for the funeral! Well, if you wanted to help you might have given them fifteen or even twenty roubles, so long as you left yourself at any rate three or so, but you simply flung away the whole twenty-five!'

'Perhaps I have found a treasure somewhere, that you know nothing about. Yesterday I felt generous . . . Mr. Zametov knows I found a treasure! . . . Be good enough to excuse us,' he added, turning with trembling lips to Porfiry, 'for taking up half an hour of your time with such wrangling over trifles. It must be very boring for you.'

'Not at all, sir! On the contrary, on the co-ontrary! If only you knew how you interest me! It is interesting both to see and to hear . . . and I admit I am very glad you have at last brought yourself to come and see me . . .'

'What about some tea? My throat is dry!' cried Razumikhin.

'An excellent idea! Perhaps everybody will join us? And wouldn't you like . . . something a little stronger first?'

'Off with you!'

Porfiry Petrovich went out to order tea.



Raskolnikov's thoughts were whirling like a tornado. He felt exasperated.

'What is most significant is that they don't even attempt concealment; there is no standing on ceremony! How did you come to talk about me to Nikodim Fomich, if you knew nothing of me? It comes to this, they don't even want to hide that they are after me like a pack of hounds! They spit in my face quite openly!' He was trembling with fury. 'Well, go straight to the point, don't play with me like a cat with a mouse! That is really uncivilized, Porfiry Petrovich, and perhaps I won't put up with it any longer — I will stand up and blurt out the whole truth in your faces; you shall see how I despise you! . . . He was breathing with difficulty. 'But what if it is all my imagination? What if it is a delusion, what if I am quite mistaken, and it is simply my inexperience that makes me lose my temper and fail to keep up this wretched role I am playing? Perhaps it was all unintentional? All their words are quite ordinary, but there is something in them. . . . All of them might be said at any time, but still there is something. Why did he say so directly "in *her* room"? Why did Zametov add that I talked *coolly*? Why do they take the tone they do? Yes. . . . the time. . . . Razumikhin just sat there, why didn't he notice anything? That innocent boob never does notice anything. I'm feverish again! . . . Did Porfiry wink at me, or not? What nonsense; why should he wink? Are they trying to work on my nerves, I wonder, or are they just laughing at me? Either it's all a deception, or they *know*! . . . Even Zametov is insolent. . . . or isn't he? He has thought things over since last night. I thought he would! He is at home here, and yet it is his first visit. Porfiry doesn't think of him as a visitor, he sits with his back to him. They're as thick as two thieves, and undoubtedly *because of me*! I am certain they were talking of me before we arrived. . . . Do they know about that flat? I wish they would get on with things! . . . When I said I had run away to take a flat, he let it pass, he didn't take me up. But it was clever of me to bring in that about the flat, it will be useful later on. . . . In *dearum*? says he. . . . Ha, ha, ha. He knows everything about yesterday evening! But he didn't know my mother had come! . . . And that old hag had written down the date with her pencil! . . . Oh no! I shall not give myself away! Really, you have no facts yet, all this is only supposition! No, produce some facts! Even the flat is not evidence, but *dearum*; I know

what to tell them . . . Do they know about the flat? I shan't go away without finding out! Why did I come? But I am getting agitated, and that, perhaps, is evidence! Pah, how easily I get upset! But perhaps that's a good thing: I am playing a sick man . . . He is sounding me out. He will get me muddled. Why did I come?"

The thoughts went racing through his head.

It was only a few moments before Porfiry Petrovich returned. He seemed to have grown suddenly cheerful.

'Since your party yesterday, my dear chap, my head . . . In fact I hardly know whether I'm standing on it or my heels,' he began in a quite different tone, smiling at Razumikhin.

'Well, did you find it interesting? I had to leave you at the most interesting point, didn't I? Who won?'

'Nobody, of course. We had arrived at discussing the eternal verities, and we were just floating round in the clouds.'

'Imagine, Rodya, what we were discussing yesterday—is there or is there not such a thing as crime?' I told you we were talking damned nonsense.'

'What is there surprising in that? It's an ordinary social question,' answered Raskolnikov absently.

'The question was not put like that,' answered Porfiry.

'Not quite like that, it's true,' agreed Razumikhin at once, beginning to harry and grow excited, as usual. 'Look, Rodion! Listen and tell us your opinion. I want you to. Yesterday I had done my very best with them, and I was waiting for you to turn up; I had told them you were coming . . . It began with the Socialists' view. You know what that is: crime is a protest against the unnatural structure of society—and only that, nothing more, and no other causes are admissible—and that's all' . . .'

'That's not true,' cried Porfiry Petrovich. He was growing visibly more animated, and he kept laughing as he looked at Razumikhin, making him grow still hotter.

'N-nothing else is admitted!' interrupted Razumikhin hotly; 'it is perfectly true. I will show you some of their little books: they explain everything by the "deleterious influence of the environment"—and that's all! Their favourite cliché . . . From that it follows that if society is properly organized all crimes will instantly disappear, since there will be nothing to protest against, and everybody will immediately become law-abiding. Nature is not taken into account, nature is banished,

nature is not supposed to exist! In their philosophy, it is not humanity, following the path of historical, *living*, development to the end, that will finally evolve into the perfect society, but, on the contrary, a social system, devised by some mathematician's brain, will instantly reorganize humanity, make it righteous and innocent in a flash, with greater speed than any living process, and without the aid of living historical development! That is why they are instinctively hostile to history: "there is nothing in it but infamy and stupidity" and their explanation of everything is simply stupidity alone. That is why they do not like the living process of life, they have no use for the *living soul*. The living soul demands life, the living soul will not submit to mechanism, the living soul must be regarded with suspicion, the living soul is reactionary! But their social system, although it smells of carrion, can be made from india-rubber—and it will be nicely slavish, it will have no will, it will not be alive, it will never rebel! And the result of it all is that their whole effort is directed to nothing but bricklaying and the arrangement of rooms and corridors in a phalanstery. The phalanstery is ready; but nature is not ready for a phalanstery; it wants life, the living process is not yet fulfilled, it is too early for the churchyard. You cannot divert the course of nature by logic alone! Logic can anticipate three possibilities, but there are millions of them! Cut out all the millions and you bring it all down to the question of comfort! A very easy solution of the problem! It is temptingly clear-cut, and there is no need to think! That is the main point—you needn't think. The whole mystery of life can be put on two sheets of printed paper!

'There's an outburst for you, a regular drum-roll! We must hold him down,' laughed Porfiry. 'Just imagine,' he added, addressing Raskolnikov, 'it was like this yesterday evening, only there were six voices all going in one room, and everybody was fuddled with punch—can you picture it? No, brother, you are mistaken: "environment" means a great deal in crime, I assure you.'

'I know that, but tell me this: a man of forty assaults a ten-year-old girl—was it his environment that made him do it?'

'Well, perhaps it was, strictly speaking,' remarked Porfiry with astonishing authority; 'a crime against a little girl may very well be explained by "environment".'

Razumikhin was all but foaming at the mouth.



'Listen, would you like me to deduce for you this minute,' he shouted, 'that you have white eyelashes simply because the great tower of Ivan the Great is two hundred and fifty feet high, and reason it out clearly, accurately, progressively and even with a shade of liberalism? I will do it! Would you like to bet I can't?'

'Done! Let us listen to his deduction!'

'Damn it all, he's a complete hypocrite!' cried Razumikhin, jumping up and waving his arms. 'It's not worth while talking to you! Of course, he's doing all this on purpose; you don't know him yet, Rodion! Yesterday he took their part as well, just so as to make fools of everybody. And good Lord, the things he said yesterday! And they were delighted with him! . . . He's quite capable of keeping this up for a couple of weeks. Last year, for some reason, he assured us he was going into a monastery: he persisted in it for two months! Not long ago he took it into his head to announce that he was getting married, and that everything was ready for the wedding. He even got new clothes, and we were all congratulating him. He hadn't got a fiancée or anything else; it was all a fraud!'

'There you're wrong again! I had got the new clothes before. It was because of the new clothes that I thought of fooling you all.'

'Are you really so fond of mystification?' asked Raskolnikov carelessly.

'Don't you think I am? Just wait, I will take you in too—ha, ha, ha! No, do you see, I will tell you the whole truth. Apropos of all these questions—crimes, environments, little girls—I have just remembered—(but it always interested me) an article of yours: "Concerning Crime". . . or some such title, I forget; I don't remember. I had the pleasure of reading it two months ago in *Periodical Discourses*.'

'My article? In *Periodical Discourses*?' asked Raskolnikov, mystified. 'I certainly wrote an article six months ago, when I left the university, in connexion with some book, but I sent it to *Weekly Discourses*, not *Periodical Discourses*.'

'It came out in *Periodical Discourses*.'

'Of course, *Weekly Discourses* has ceased to exist, that is why they did not print it at the time . . .'

'That is true; but when it ceased publication, *Weekly Discourses* was merged with *Periodical Discourses*, and so your article appeared there two months ago. Didn't you know?'

Raskolnikov had indeed known nothing about it.

'Good gracious, but you can ask them to pay you for your article! But what an odd character you are! You live so isolated that you don't know even things like this, that directly concern you. It is a fact, though.'

'Bravo, Rodka! I didn't know either!' exclaimed Razumikhin. 'I shall hurry to the reading-room this very day and ask for the number. Two months ago? What was the date? It doesn't matter, I can find out. Here's a fine trick! Fancy saying nothing about it!'

'But how did you get to know the article was by me? It was signed with an initial.'

'Quite by chance, only a few days ago. Through the editor, I know him. I was very interested.'

'I surveyed, I remember, the psychological condition of the criminal throughout the commission of the crime.'

'Yes, and you insist that the act of committing a crime is always accompanied by some morbid condition. Very, very original, but... it was not that part of your article that specially interested me, but a certain idea, put forward towards the end, which you unfortunately do not elucidate, but merely refer to in passing... In a word, you introduce, if you remember, a hint to the effect that there are persons who are able, or rather, not who are able but who have every right, to commit any wrong or crime, and that laws, so to say, are not made for them.'

Raskolnikov smiled at this forced and deliberate perversion of his idea.

'What? What is this? A right to commit crime? But I suppose not because of "unfavourable environment"?' inquired Razumikhin, with something approaching alarm.

'No, no, not altogether because of it,' answered Porfiry. 'The point is that in his article people are divided into two classes, the "ordinary" and the "extraordinary" The ordinary ones must live in submission and have no right to transgress the laws, because, you see, they are ordinary. And the extraordinary have the right to commit any crime and break every kind of law just because they are extraordinary. I think that is what you say, if I am not mistaken.'

'How can it be? He can't possibly have said that!' muttered the puzzled Razumikhin.

Raskolnikov smiled again. He had at once grasped what they were driving at, and what they wished to push him into

saying. He could remember his article, he decided to accept the challenge.

'That is not quite what I say,' he began simply and modestly. 'I admit, however, that you have given an almost correct exposition of it, or even, if you like, a completely faithful one . . .' (He found it almost pleasurable to agree that the account was quite faithful.) 'The only difference is that I do not in the least insist that the extraordinary people are absolutely bound and obliged to commit offences on any and every occasion, as you say I do. I hardly think any such article would have been allowed to be published. I simply intimate that the "extraordinary" man has the right . . . I don't mean a formal, ethical right but he has the right in himself, to permit his conscience to overstep . . . certain obstacles, but only in the event that his ideas which may sometimes be salutary for all mankind require it for their fulfilment. You are pleased to say that my article is not clear, I am ready to elucidate it for you, as far as possible. Perhaps I am not mistaken in supposing that is what you want. Well, then. In my opinion, if the discoveries of Kepler and Newton, by some combination of circumstances, could not have become known to the world in any other way than by sacrificing the lives of one, or ten, or a hundred or more people, who might have hampered or in some way been obstacles in the path of those discoveries, then Newton would have had the right, or might even have been under an obligation . . . to *remove* those ten or a hundred people, so that his discoveries might be revealed to all mankind. It does not follow from this, of course, that Newton had the right to kill any Tom, Dick, or Harry he fancied, or go out stealing from market-stalls every day. I remember further that in my article I developed the idea that all the . . . well, for example, the law-givers and regulators of human society, beginning with the most ancient, and going on to Lycurgus, Solon, Mahomet, Napoleon and so on, were without exception transgressors, by the very fact that in making a new law they *ipso facto* broke an old one, handed down from their fathers and held sacred by society, and, of course, they did not stop short of shedding blood, provided only that the blood (however innocent and however heroically shed in defence of the ancient law) was shed to their advantage. It is remarkable that the greater part of these benefactors and law-givers of humanity were particularly blood-thirsty. In a word, I deduce that all of them, not



only the great ones, but also those who diverge ever so slightly from the beaten track, those, that is, who are just barely capable of saying something new, must, by their nature, inevitably be criminals—in a greater or less degree, naturally. Otherwise they would find it too hard to leave their rut, and they cannot, of course, consent to remain in the rut, again by the very fact of their nature, and in my opinion they ought not to consent. In short, you see that up to this point there is nothing specially new here. It has all been printed, and read, a thousand times before. As for my division of people into ordinary and extraordinary, that I agree was a little arbitrary, but I do not insist on exact figures. Only I do believe in the main principle of my idea. That consists in people being, by the law of nature, divided *in general* into two categories—into a lower (of ordinary people), that is, into material serving only for the reproduction of its own kind, and into people properly speaking, that is, those who have the gift or talent of saying *something new* in their sphere. There are endless subdivisions, of course, but the distinctive characteristics of the two categories are fairly well marked. The first group, that is the material, are, generally speaking, by nature staid and conservative, they live in obedience and like it. In my opinion they ought to obey because that is their destiny, and there is nothing at all degrading to them in it. The second group are all law-breakers and transgressors, or are inclined that way, in the measure of their capacities. The aims of these people are, of course, relative and very diverse, for the most part they require, in widely different contexts, the destruction of what exists in the name of better things. But if it is necessary for one of them, for the fulfilment of his ideas, to march over corpses, or wade through blood, then in my opinion he may in all conscience authorize himself to wade through blood—in proportion, however, to his idea and the degree of its importance—mark that. It is in that sense only that I speak in my article of their right to commit crime.

You will remember that we really began with the question of legality. There is, however, not much cause for alarm: the masses hardly ever recognize this right of theirs, and behead or hang them (more or less), and in this way, quite properly, fulfil their conservative function, although in following generations these same masses put their former victims on a pedestal and worship them (more or less). The first category are always the masters of the present, but the second are the lords of the

future. The first preserve the world and increase and multiply, the second move the world and guide it to its goal. Both have an absolutely equal right to exist. In short, for me all men have completely equivalent rights, and *vive la guerre éternelle*—until we have built the New Jerusalem; of course!

'You do believe in the New Jerusalem, then?'

'Yes, I do,' answered Raskolnikov firmly; he said this with his eyes fixed on one spot on the carpet, as they had been all through his long tirade.

'A-and you believe in God? Forgive me for being so inquisitive.'

'Yes, I do,' repeated Raskolnikov, raising his eyes to Porfiry.

'A-a-and do you believe in the raising of Lazarus?'

'Y-yes. Why are you asking all this?'

'You believe in it literally?'

'Yes.'

'Ah . . . I was curious to know. Forgive me. But, returning to the previous subject—they are not always put to death. Some, on the contrary . . .'

'Triumph during their lifetime? Oh, yes, some achieve their ends while they still live, and then . . .'

'They begin to mete out capital punishment themselves.'

'If necessary, and, you know, it is most usually so. Your observation is very keen-witted.'

'Thank you. But tell me: how do you distinguish these extraordinary people from the ordinary? Do signs and portents appear when they are born? I mean to say that we could do with rather greater accuracy here, with, so to speak, rather more outward signs: please excuse the natural anxiety of a practical and well-meaning man, but couldn't there be, for example, some special clothing, couldn't they carry some kind of brand or something? . . . Because, you will agree, if there should be some sort of mix-up, and somebody from one category imagined that he belonged to the other and began "to remove all obstacles", as you so happily put it, then really . . .'

'Oh, that very frequently happens! This observation of yours is even more penetrating than the last.'

'Thank you.'

'Not at all. But you must please realize that the mistake is possible only among the first group, that is, the "ordinary" people (as I have called them, perhaps not altogether happily). In spite of their inborn inclination to obey, quite a number of

them, by some freak of nature such as is not impossible even among cows, like to fancy that they are progressives, "destroyers", and propagators of the "new word", and all this quite sincerely. At the same time, they really take no heed of *new people*; they even despise them, as reactionary and incapable of elevated thinking. But, in my opinion, they cannot constitute a real danger, and you really have nothing to worry about, because they never go far. They might sometimes be scourged for their zeal; try, to remind them of their place, there is no need even for anyone to carry out the punishment: they will do it themselves, because they are very well conducted—some of them no one another this service, and others do it for themselves with their own hands. . . . And they impose on themselves various public penalties besides—the result is beautifully edifying, and in short, you have nothing to worry about. . . . This is a law of nature.'

'Well, at least you have allayed my anxieties on that score a little, but here is another worry—please tell me, are there many of these people who have the right to destroy others, of these "extraordinary" people? I am, of course, prepared to bow down before them, but all the same you will agree that it would be terrible if there were very many of them, eh?'

'Oh, don't let that trouble you either,' went on Raskolnikov in the same tone. 'Generally speaking, there are extremely few people, strangely few, born, who have a new idea, or are even capable of saying anything at all *new*. One thing only is clear, that the ordering of human births, all these categories and subdivisions, must be very carefully and exactly regulated by some law of nature. This law is, of course, unknown at present, but I believe that it exists, and consequently that it may be known. The great mass of men, the common stuff of humanity, exist on the earth only in order that at last, by some endeavour, some process, that remains as yet mysterious, some happy conjunction of race and breeding, there should struggle into life a being, one in a thousand, capable, in however small a degree, of standing on his own feet. Perhaps one in ten thousand (I am speaking approximately, by way of illustration) is born with a slightly greater degree of independence, and one in a hundred thousand with even more. One genius may emerge among millions, and a really great genius, perhaps, as the crowning point of many thousands of millions of men. In short, I have not been able to look into the retort whence all this



proceeds. But a definite law there must be, and is; it cannot be a matter of chance.'

'What's the idea? Are you both joking or something?' exclaimed Razumikhin at last. 'You are amusing yourselves at one another's expense, aren't you? Sitting there and poking fun at one another! Are you serious, Rodya?'

Raskolnikov did not answer, but silently lifted towards him his pale and almost sorrowful face. And it seemed to Razumikhin that Porfiry's open, obtrusive, provocative, and *unmannerly* causticity contrasted strangely with that calm and melancholy face.

'Well, my dear fellow, if this is really serious, then . . . Of course you are right when you say that it is not new, but similar to what we have heard and read thousands of times; but what is really *original* in it—and what I am sorry to say, belongs only to you—is that you uphold bloodshed as a *matter of conscience* and even, if you will forgive my saying so, with great fanaticism . . . This, therefore, is the main idea of your article. This *moral* permission to shed blood is . . . seems to me more terrible than official, legal, licence to do so . . .'

'You are quite right. It is more terrible,' Porfiry responded.

'No, you got carried away somehow! That is where the mistake lies. I will read it . . . You were carried away! You cannot think so . . . I will read it.'

'You will not find all this in the article; it is only hinted at there,' said Raskolnikov.

'Yes, yes.' Porfiry was restless. 'I am almost clear now about how you look upon crime, but . . . please forgive me for being so importunate (I am ashamed to be troubling you so much) but, you see, although you greatly reassured me just now about mistaken confusion between the two categories . . . I keep worrying about various practical cases! Suppose somebody, some young man, fancies he is a *Lycurgus* or Mahomet—a future one, of course—and grant that he is to remove all obstacles to that end . . . "I have in front of me," says he, "a long campaign, and money is necessary for it" . . . Well, he begins to acquire supplies for the campaign . . . you know what I mean?'

Zametov in his corner suddenly snorted. Raskolnikov did not even raise his eyes to him.

'I must admit,' he replied quietly, 'that such cases must in

fact occur. The rather stupid and conceited, especially the young, are particularly liable to rise to that bait.'

'You do see it. Well, what then?'

'This,' smiled Raskolnikov. 'I am not to blame for it. It does happen, and it always will. He' (he nodded towards Razumikhin, 'said just now that I uphold bloodshed. What then? Society after all is only too well supplied with the weapons of exile, prison, the examining magistrate, hard labour . . . what is there to worry about? Hunt out your thief' . . .'

'Well, and if we find him?'

'It serves him right.'

'Logical enough. And what about his conscience?'

'What concern is it of yours?'

'Well, on the grounds of humanity.'

'Any man who has one must suffer if he is conscious of error. That is his punishment—in addition to hard labour.'

'Well, but the real geniuses,' asked Razumikhin, frowning, 'those to whom you have granted the right to kill, ought surely not to suffer at all, even for the spilling of blood?'

'Why do you say "ought"? There is no question either of permitting or of forbidding it. Let them suffer, if they feel pity for the victims . . . Suffering and pain are always obligatory on those of wide intellect and profound feeling. Truly great men must, I think, experience great sorrow on the earth,' he added, suddenly thoughtful, as though to himself.

He raised his eyes, looked pensively at them all, smiled, and took up his cap. He was too tranquil, compared with his state when he came in, and he felt conscious of it. Everybody stood up.

'Well, grumble at me if you like, be angry if you like; I can't help it,' began Porfiry Petrovich again. 'Let me ask one more little question (I am troubling you a great deal! ; I should like to bring in just one little idea, solely so as not to forget . . .'

'Very well; tell me your little idea,' said Raskolnikov, standing waiting before him, pale and serious.

'It is this . . . really, I hardly know how best to express it . . . it is a very trifling little idea . . . Psychological . . . Well, this is it: when you were composing your article—surely it could not be, he, he, that you did not consider yourself . . . just a tiny bit . . . to be also an "extraordinary" man, one who was saying a *new word*—in your sense, that is . . . Surely that is so?'

'Very likely,' answered Raskolnikov disdainfully. Razumikhin made a movement.

'And if it is so, can you yourself have decided -well, in view of some lack of worldly success, and embarrassed circumstances, or for the betterment in some way of mankind - to step over those obstacles? . . . Well, for instance to kill and steal? . . .'

Again he suddenly seemed to wink at him with his left eye, and laugh noiselessly - exactly as before.

'If I had indeed done so, then of course I should not tell you,' answered Raskolnikov, with haughty, challenging disdain.

'No, really; I was only very interested, just for the comprehension of your article, and only in a purely literary respect . . .'

'Pah, how impudently obvious!' thought Raskolnikov with disgust.

'Allow me to remark,' he answered drily, 'that I do not consider myself a Mahomet or a Napoleon . . . nor anyone whatever of that sort, and consequently, not being them, I am unable to give you a satisfactory explanation of how I should act if I were.'

'Oh, come, who among us in Russia doesn't think himself a Napoleon now?' said Porfiry with sudden dreadful familiarity. This time there was decidedly something special in the intonation of his voice.

'Wasn't it indeed some future Napoleon who last week dispatched our Alena Ivanovna with an axe?' blurted Zametov from his corner.

Raskolnikov was silent, gazing steadily and resolutely at Porfiry. Razumikhin frowned blackly. Even before this he had begun to notice something. He looked angrily round. There was a minute of bleak silence. Raskolnikov turned to go.

'Are you going already?' asked Porfiry effusively, holding out his hand with excessive amiability. 'I am very, very pleased to have made your acquaintance. As for your application, have no doubts about it. Write just exactly what I told you. Or better still, come and see me there yourself . . . some time soon . . . tomorrow if you like. I am sure to be there round about eleven o'clock. We will arrange everything . . . and have a little talk . . . You, as one of the last who were *there*, could perhaps tell us something . . .' he added, with a most benevolent air.



'Do you wish to interrogate me officially, with all the formalities?' sharply asked Raskolnikov.

'No, why? It is quite unnecessary for the present. You misunderstand me. You see, I don't like to let any opportunity pass, and . . . and I have already talked to all the other borrowers . . . from some of them I took depositions . . . and you, as the last of them . . . Oh, yes, by the way!' he exclaimed, suddenly delighted with something; 'I've just this moment remembered what I was going to say.' He turned to Razumikhin. 'You know how you drummed it into me about that Nikolashka? . . . Yes, I know, I know . . .' turning back to Raskolnikov, 'that the lad is clear, but what could I do? And Mitya had to be worried, too . . . Well, this is the point, the essential thing: when you were going upstairs . . . I think you said you were there between seven and eight?'

'Yes,' answered Raskolnikov, with an unpleasant feeling that he might not have said it at all.

'Well, going past at some time after seven, on the staircase, did you by any chance see, in the open flat on the second floor you remember? two workmen, or at any rate one of them? They were painting. Did you notice? It is very, very important for them! . . .'

'Painters? No, I didn't see them,' answered Raskolnikov slowly, as if he were cudgelling his memory. At the same time he was straining every faculty in tortured anxiety to divine as quickly as he might where the pitfall lay, and make sure that he did not miss anything. 'No, I didn't see them, and I didn't in fact notice any flat open . . . but there on the fourth floor' (he had by now triumphantly discovered the trap) 'I remember that a clerk was removing from his flat . . . opposite Alena Ivanovna's . . . I remember . . . I remember that clearly

. . . Soldiers were carrying out some sort of sofa and I was squeezed against the wall . . . But painters—no, I don't remember that there were any painters . . . and I don't think there was a flat open anywhere. No, there wasn't . . .'

'But what are you talking about?' cried Razumikhin suddenly, apparently pulling himself together and realizing something. 'Surely the painters were working on the very day of the murder, and he was there three days before! What makes you ask him about them?'

'Oh, I've got mixed up!' Porfiry struck his forehead. 'Devil take it, this business is driving me out of my senses!' he went

on, turning apologetically to Raskolnikov. 'It would have been so important to us, if we could have learnt that they had been seen, in that flat, at some time after seven, that I fancied just now that you could tell us . . . I was quite mixed up!'

'Then you ought to be more careful,' remarked Razumikhin in surly tones.

The last words were spoken in the entrance-hall. Porfiry Petrovich conducted them to the door with extreme politeness. Both were sullen and gloomy when they emerged into the street, and they walked some steps without a word. Raskolnikov drew a long breath . . .

## CHAPTER VI

' . . . I don't believe it! I can't believe it!' repeated Razumikhin in bewilderment, trying with all his might to refute Raskolnikov's arguments. They were approaching Bakaleev's, where Pulkheria Alexandrovna and Dunya had long been expecting them. Razumikhin, in the heat of the discussion, kept stopping in the road, embarrassed and excited by the fact that for the first time they were talking plainly of *it*.

'Then don't believe it!' answered Raskolnikov with a cold and careless smile. 'As usual, you noticed nothing, but I weighed every word.'

'You are over-anxious, that is why . . . Hm . . . I admit Porfiry's tone was really rather strange, and that wretch Zametov was particularly odd! . . . You are right, there was something about him—but why? Why?'

'He has been thinking it over since last night.'

'No, on the contrary, on the contrary! If they had had such a brainless idea, they would have done their best to hide it. They would have kept their hands concealed, so as to catch you later . . . But this—it was so reckless and so bare-faced!'

'If they had had facts, real facts, to go on, or any kind of foundation for their suspicions, they would indeed have tried to hide their game, in the hope of a still greater victory (but they would long ago have made a search of my room!). But they have no facts, not one—it is all ambiguous and illusory, a will-o'-the-wisp—that is why they are trying to browbeat me with their impudence. Perhaps he was furious at not having any facts and his annoyance made him break out. Or perhaps he has some design . . . He seems an intelligent man . . .

Perhaps he wanted to frighten me by pretending that he knew . . . That, my dear fellow, is your psychology . . . However, it nauseates me to enter into explanations of all this. Drop it!

'And it is an insult to you, you are outraged! I understand you! But . . . since we have begun to speak plainly an excellent thing, and I am glad we are doing it at last! I will frankly admit now that I have noticed it in them for some time, this idea, but only, of course, the vaguest trace, a creeping suspicion; only why even so much? How can they dare? Where do the hidden roots of it lie? If you knew how furious I am! What, all this just because a poor student, crippled with poverty and hypochondria, on the verge of a cruel illness and perhaps already affected by it—note that!—a prey to anxiety, self-centred, conscious of his own worth, who has spent six months in isolation in his corner, in tattered clothes and boots without soles, stands before some copper or other and suffers his abuse, here he is, confronted with an unexpected debt, an overdue bill in favour of this fellow Chebarov, evil-smelling paint, a temperature of thirty degrees Reaumur, a stifling atmosphere, a crowd of people, talk about the murder of a person he has visited shortly before, and all this on an empty stomach! How on earth could he help fainting? And that, that alone is the basis of all this! What the devil? I know it is very trying for you, but in your place, Rodka, I should have burst out laughing in their faces, or better still, have spat in every one of their ugly mugs, and more than once; and, with due deliberation, as it should always be done, I should have distributed a couple of dozen slaps in the face among them, and left it at that. Cheer up! To hell with them! It's a disgraceful affair!'

'All the same, he summed it up very well,' thought Raskolnikov.

'To hell with them? But there's another examination to-morrow!' he said bitterly. 'Must I really enter into explanations with them? I am annoyed with myself, too, for that degrading scene with Zametov in the tavern yesterday . . .'

'Hang it all! I will go to Portry myself. I am related to him, and I'll screw it out of him; he shall lay bare the whole thing to the roots. And Zametov—I'll . . .'

'At last he has guessed right!' thought Raskolnikov.

'Stop!' exclaimed Razumikhin, seizing his friend by the



shoulder; 'stop! You are wrong! I have been thinking and you've made a mistake! What sort of trap was it? You say the question about the workmen was a trap? Work it out! If you had done *that*, would you have let it out that you had seen the flat was being painted . . . and seen the workmen? On the contrary, you would have said you saw nothing, even if you had seen them! Who would admit something that told against himself?'

'If I had done *that deed*, I should certainly have said that I had seen the flat and the workmen,' answered Raskolnikov reluctantly and with evident distaste.

'But why testify against oneself?'

'Because only moujiks and very inexperienced greenhorns instantly and flatly deny everything, under questioning. Any man with even a scrap of intelligence or experience will be sure to try to admit, as far as possible, all material facts that cannot be avoided; only he will look for other reasons for them, turn them to reveal special and unexpected facets, which will give them a different meaning, and place them in a new light. Porfiry could count on my answering like that, and saying that I had seen them, for the sake of plausibility, and then turning up something to explain . . .'

'But he would have told you at once that the workmen could not have been there two days before and that consequently you must yourself have been there on the day of the murder, between seven and eight o'clock. And you would have been tripped up by a trifle!'

'He counted on that, too; he thought I would not have time to consider, but would hasten to give a plausible answer, forgetting that the workmen could not have been there two days earlier.'

'But how could you forget that?'

'Very easily. It is those trifling details that most easily trip up clever people. The cleverer a man is, the less he expects to be caught out by something simple. In fact to throw the cleverest people off balance you must use the simplest means. Porfiry is not nearly as stupid as you imagine . . .'

'After all this, he's a scoundrel, though!'

Raskolnikov could not help laughing. But at the same time there seemed to him to be something strange in his own liveliness and the readiness with which he had explained the last point, when he had conducted all the previous conversation

with sullen distaste and plainly only because it was unavoidable, considering the object he had in view.

'I let myself be carried away,' he thought.

But almost in the same moment he grew uneasy, as if struck by an unexpected and worrying idea. His uneasiness increased. They had reached the entrance of Bakaleev's.

'You go on by yourself,' he said abruptly. 'I shall be back in a minute.'

'Where are you going? We've arrived.'

'I must, I must; I have something to do . . . I will come in half an hour . . . Tell them.'

'Have it your own way. I'll go with you.'

'Why? Do you want to torture me as well?' cried Raskolnikov with such bitter exasperation and with such a look of despair that Razumakhin was discouraged. He stood for some time on the steps and morosely watched his friend walk quickly in the direction of his own room. Finally, with clenched teeth and hands, he swore an oath that that very day he would squeeze Portiry like a lemon, and went upstairs to assuage Pulkheria Alexandrovna's alarm at their long absence.

When Raskolnikov arrived at his own house, his temples were damp with sweat and he was panting. He hurried up the stairs, entered his open door, and fastened it with the hook. Then, frantic with fear, he rushed into the corner, thrust his hand into that hole in the wallpaper where the things had lain, and spent several minutes in searching it minutely, groping in every cranny and in every fold in the paper. When he found nothing, he stood up and drew a deep breath. Going up the steps to the door of Bakaleev's, he had suddenly imagined that one or other of the things, some chain or link or even perhaps a piece of the paper they had been wrapped in, with an inscription in the old woman's hand, might somehow have slipped down and got lost in a crack, to confront him at some later time as unexpected and irresistible evidence.

He stood as if lost in thought and a strange, humble, half-vacant smile played on his lips. At last he picked up his cap and quietly left the room. His ideas were confused. He was still abstracted as he came out to the gate. 'There he is' called a loud voice; he raised his head.

The porter was standing at the door of his lodge, pointing him out to a little man who looked like a superior workman or small tradesman, but since he was wearing a sort of long robe

and a waistcoat, from a distance he resembled a peasant-woman. His head, in a greasy cap, hung down, and his whole figure seemed to stoop. From his flabby wrinkled face he seemed to be over fifty, his sunken little eyes looked hard, morose, and discontented.

'What is it?' asked Raskolnikov, approaching the porter.

The stranger looked sideways at him, frowning, and studied him intently and lingeringly, then he turned slowly round and without a word walked out through the gate into the street.

'But what is it?' cried Raskolnikov.

'That person there was asking if a student lived here—he gave your name and asked who you lived with. You came out just then, I pointed you out, and he went. That's all about it.'

The porter also seemed a little puzzled, but not very, and after standing thinking a moment or two longer he turned round and went back into his lodge.

Raskolnikov dashed out after the stranger, and immediately caught sight of him walking along the other side of the street, at the same even, unhurried pace, with his eyes fixed ruminatively on the ground. He overtook him quickly, and walked for a short time behind him, then he drew level and looked sideways at his face. The man noticed him at once and looked quickly at him, then dropped his eyes again; they walked on thus for about a minute, side by side, without speaking.

'Were you asking the porter for me?' said Raskolnikov at last, in a low voice.

The man made no answer and did not even look at him. There was silence once more.

'Why do you . . . come to ask for me . . . and then say nothing? . . . What is all this?' Raskolnikov's voice cracked, and his words seemed unwilling to emerge clearly.

This time the man raised his head and looked at him with sombre ominous eyes.

'Murderer!' he said suddenly, in a low but clear and distinct voice.

Raskolnikov went on walking beside him. His knees felt terribly weak, a chill ran up his spine, his heart seemed to stop for a moment and then began to thump as though it had torn loose from its place. They walked on again thus, in complete silence, for a hundred yards.



The man did not look at him.

'But why do you . . . what . . . who is a murderer?' muttered Raskolnikov hardly audibly.

'You are,' pronounced the stranger still more distinctly and impressively, with a smile of triumphant hatred, and again he looked straight at Raskolnikov's pale face and his staring eyes. They came to a crossing, and the man turned into the street on the left and walked on without looking round. Raskolnikov stood still and watched him for a long time. He saw the man turn after he had gone some fifty paces and look back at him, still standing motionless in the same place. It was impossible to be sure, but it seemed to Raskolnikov that his face again wore its cold, hostile and triumphant smile.

With languid, feeble steps, with shaking knees and a feeling of frozen horror, Raskolnikov turned back and mounted to his room. He took off his cap and laid it on the table, and then stood there motionless for some ten minutes. Then, drained of all strength, he lay down on the sofa and painfully stretched himself out on it, with a feeble groan, his eyes were closed. He lay there for about half an hour.

He could not think. His mind held ideas, or fragments of ideas, disconnected and incoherent images—the faces of people he had known as a child or seen once and never remembered again, the heavy of the Church of the Ascension, the billiard-table in some public house, with an officer playing at it, the smell of cigars in a basement tobacco shop, a tavern, a back staircase, sloppy with wash-water and strewn with egg shells, the Sunday sound of bells borne in from somewhere . . . all changing and whirling in dizzy spirals. Sometimes an image pleased him and he tried to cling to it, but it would fade away. He had a diffused inner feeling of oppression, but it was not marked, sometimes, indeed, all seemed well. A slight shiver shook him perceptibly, and this also was an almost pleasurable sensation.

He heard Razumikhin's hurried steps and his voice, shut his eyes, and tried to sleep. Razumikhin opened the door and stood considering on the threshold for a short space. Then he stepped quietly into the room and cautiously approached the sofa. Nastasya's voice could be heard whispering:

'Don't disturb him. Let him have his sleep out. Then he can have something to eat.'

'Exactly,' answered Razumikhin.

They went out carefully, and closed the door. Another half-hour went by. Raskolnikov opened his eyes and lay on his back with his hands behind his head.

'Who is he? Who is this man who seems to have sprung up from nowhere? Where was he and what did he see? Everything, doubtless. But where was he standing as he looked on? Why has he risen out of the ground only now? And how could he see—could it be possible? Hm . . .,' he went on, turning cold and shuddering, 'what about the jeweller's case that Nikolay found behind the door—was that possible either? Evidence! You overlook one infinitesimal detail—and it builds up to a whole Egyptian pyramid of evidence! A fly was buzzing round, and it saw! Can such things be possible?'

Suddenly he was conscious, with repulsion, of how physically weak he had become.

'I ought to have known it,' he thought, with a bitter smile. 'How, knowing myself, foreknowing myself, dared I take the axe and stain my hands with blood? It was my duty to know beforehand . . . Ah! but really I did indeed know beforehand! . . .,' he whispered despairingly.

At times he seemed to stand motionless in contemplation of some particular idea.

'No, those people are not made like this; the *real* ruler, to whom everything is permitted, destroys Toulon, butchers in Paris, *forgets* an army in Egypt; *expends* half a million men in a Moscow campaign, shakes himself free with a pun in Wlno, and when he is dead they put up statues to him; *everything* is permitted to him. No! Such people are plainly not made of flesh, but of bronze!'

A sudden irrelevant thought nearly made him laugh.

'Napoleon, the pyramids, Waterloo—and a vile, withered old woman, a moneylender, with a red box under her bed—what a mishmash even for somebody like Portiry Petrovich to digest! . . . How could he, indeed? Aesthetic considerations forbid. "Does a Napoleon crawl under an old woman's bed?" he will say. Oh, what rubbish! . . .'

At times he felt that he was wandering, he had fallen into a state of feverish exaltation.

'The old hag is nothing!' he thought disconnectedly, with mounting excitement. 'Perhaps the old woman was a mistake, but she is not the point. The old woman was only a symptom of

my illness . . . I wanted to overstep all restrictions as quickly as possible . . . I killed not a human being but a principle! Yes, I killed a principle, but as for surmounting the barriers, I did not do that; I remained on this side . . . The only thing I knew how to do was kill! And I could not do that properly either, it seems . . . A principle? Why was that foolish fellow Razumikhin railing at the Socialists just now? They are industrious and business-like people; they work for the "common weal" . . . No, I have only one life given to me, and it will never come again; I do not want to wait for the "common weal" I want to have my own life, or else it is better not to live at all. What then? I only didn't want my mother to go hungry without doing what I could, while we waited for the "common weal". "I," they say, "contribute one brick to the building of the common weal and that gives me full satisfaction" Ha, ha! But what about me? After all, I shall only live once, and after all I also want . . . Oh, aesthetically speaking, I am a louse, nothing more," he added, suddenly beginning to laugh like a madman. "Yes, I really am a louse," he went on, clinging to the idea with malicious pleasure, burrowing into it, playing with it for his own amusement, "if only because, first, I'm arguing now about being one, secondly, I've been importuning all-gracious Providence for a whole month, calling on it to witness that it was not for my own selfish desires and purposes that I proposed to act (so I said, but for a noble and worthy end . . . ha, ha! Because, thirdly, in the execution of my design I devoted so much attention to securing the utmost justice accurately calculated by weight and measure: from all the lice on earth, I picked out absolutely the most useless, and when I had killed her, I intended to take from her exactly as much as I needed for my first step, and neither more nor less (and all the rest, consequently, would have gone to the monastery for the repose of her soul—ha, ha!) . . . Finally, I am a louse because," he went on, grinding his teeth, "because I myself am, perhaps, even worse and viler than the louse I killed, and I *knew before-hand* that I should tell myself so after I had killed her! Can anything compare with such horror? Oh, platitudes! What baseness! . . . Oh, how well I understand the Prophet, on horseback, scimitar in hand. "It is the will of Allah, therefore obey, thou trembling creature!" He is right, he is right, the Prophet, when he establishes a marvellous battery across a street somewhere and mows down the innocent and the



guilty, without deigning to justify himself! Obey, trembling creature, and *do not kill*, because that is not your affair! . . . Oh, nothing, nothing will make me forgive that old witch!"

His hair was damp with sweat, his trembling lips were parched, his immovable gaze was fixed on the ceiling.

'My mother, my sister, how I loved them! What makes me hate them now? Yes, I hate them, hate them physically, I cannot bear them near me . . . A short time ago I went up to my mother and kissed her, I remember . . . To embrace her, and think that if she knew . . . was I to tell her then? It is just the sort of thing I'm capable of . . . Hm! *She* ought to be like me,' he thought, forcing himself to struggle against his growing delirium. 'Oh, how much I hate that old woman now! I think I should kill her again if she came back to life! Poor Lizaveta! Why had she to turn up? . . . It is strange though, I wonder why I hardly ever think of her, as though I had not killed her . . . Lizaveta! Sonya! Poor, meek, gentle creatures, with meek eyes! . . . Why do they not weep? Why do they not groan? . . . They give up everything . . . they look at you meekly and gently . . . Sonya, Sonya, gentle Sonya! . . .'

He had drifted into sleep; it seemed strange that he could not remember how he came to be in the street. It was already late. The twilight had deepened, the full moon was shining brighter and brighter; but the air was particularly stifling. The streets were crowded with people going home from work or out for a walk; there was a smell of bile, and dust, and stagnant water. Raskolnikov was melancholy and anxious, he recollected clearly that he had come out with some definite purpose, that there was something he must hasten to do, but he could not remember what it was. Suddenly he stopped, seeing on the opposite pavement a man standing and waving to him. He crossed the street towards him, but the man turned abruptly and unconcernedly walked away, with lowered head, without looking back or giving any sign that he had summoned him. 'Did he really call me?' wondered Raskolnikov, but began to follow. After some ten paces he suddenly recognized the stoop-shouldered stranger in the long robe, and was terrified. Raskolnikov followed him at a distance, his heart thumped, they turned into a lane—still the man did not turn round. 'Does he know that I am following him?' thought Raskolnikov. The man turned in at the gate of a large house

Raskolnikov hurried to the gate and looked to see if he would not turn round and call him. And in fact, when he reached the other end of the arched gateway and was emerging into the courtyard, he did turn round and again seemed to beckon to him. Raskolnikov at once entered, but when he reached the courtyard the stranger was no longer there. Consequently, he must have turned into the first staircase. Raskolnikov hurried after him. From two flights higher up, indeed, he heard measured, unhastening steps. Strangely enough, the staircase seemed somehow familiar. There was the window on the first floor; the mysterious and melancholy moonlight shone through the panes. Here was the second floor. Oh! This was the same flat where the painters had been working. . . . How was it he had not known at once? The steps of the man in front had died away; 'that means he is standing still or has hidden somewhere.' Here was the third floor—should he go any farther? How quiet it was up there, so quiet that it was terrible! . . . But he went on. The sound of his own steps alarmed and frightened him. Heavens, how dark it was! The stranger was probably standing hidden in a corner. Ah, here was a flat with its staircase door open, he hesitated and went in. It was very dark inside, and empty, as though everything had been removed; very quietly, on tip-toe, he went into the sitting-room. The whole room was bathed in clear moonlight, everything here was as before—chairs, mirror, yellow sofa, and pictures in frames. The huge, round copper-red moon was looking straight through the window. 'The stillness comes from the moon,' thought Raskolnikov; 'she must be asking riddles now.' He stood and waited, waited a long time, while the moonlight grew quieter, and his heart thumped more violently, until it became painful. The stillness continued. Suddenly he heard a momentary dry cracking sound, as if a twig had snapped; then all was silent again. A fly woke up, bumped against the window pane, and set up a whining buzz. At that moment, in the corner between a small cupboard and the window, he saw what looked like a woman's cloak hanging on the wall. 'Why is there a cloak there?' he thought. 'It was not there before. . . .' He stole quietly up to it, and realized that someone seemed to be hidden behind it. He moved it carefully aside with his hand, and saw a chair standing there, and the old woman sitting huddled up in it. Her head hung down so that he could not see her face, but it was she. He stood over her. 'She is afraid' he thought, and

stealthily withdrawing the axe from its loop he struck her on the crown of the head, once and again. But it was strange—she did not even stir under the blows; it was as if she were made of wood. He grew afraid, and stooped nearer to look at her, but she bent her head even lower. He crouched down to the floor and looked up into her face from below, looked once and froze where he was—the old woman sat there laughing, overcome with noiseless laughter, striving with all her powers to prevent his hearing it. Suddenly it seemed to him that the bedroom door had opened a crack, and that whispering and laughter were coming from there too. Madness seized him, he began frenziedly striking the old woman on the head, but with every blow of the axe the sound of whispering and laughter in the bedroom grew stronger and louder, and the old woman shook with mirth. He tried to flee, but the entrance was full of people, all the doors stood open, and the landing and the stairs below were one mass of people, a sea of heads, all looking at him, and all silent, waiting, without a sound . . . His heart laboured, his legs were rooted and would not stir . . . He tried to scream, and . . . awoke.

He drew a deep breath, but the dream seemed strangely to be continuing—his door was wide open and on the threshold stood a complete stranger, looking fixedly at him.

He had hardly opened his eyes before he closed them again. He lay on his back, motionless. "Is this still the dream, or not?" he thought, and imperceptibly raised his lids a fraction to look; the stranger still stood in the same place, still gazing at him. Suddenly he stepped quietly across the threshold, closed the door behind him, walked to the table, waited there a short time—with his eyes fixed on Raskolnikov the whole time—and gently, noiselessly, sat down on the chair by the table; he laid his hat on the floor by his side, propped both hands on his stick and leaned his chin on them. It was plain that he was prepared for a long wait. As far as Raskolnikov could see in quick glimpses through his lashes, the visitor was a man no longer young, stout, with a bushy, light-coloured, almost white, beard . . .

Some ten minutes passed. It was still light, but beginning to grow dusk. Absolute stillness reigned in the room. No sound came from the stairs. Only a large fly buzzed and bumped against the pane. At last, unable to endure any longer, Raskolnikov abruptly raised himself to a sitting position.



‘Well, say something! What do you want?’

‘Of course I knew very well that you were not asleep, but only pretending,’ replied the stranger oddly, with a tranquil smile. ‘Allow me to introduce myself: Arkady Ivanovich Svidrigaylov . . .’

## PART FOUR

---

### CHAPTER I

'CAN this be the dream continuing?' thought Raskolnikov again. He watched his unexpected visitor warily and mistrustfully.

'Svidrigaylov? Nonsense! That's impossible!' he said at last aloud, in perplexity.

The visitor did not seem at all surprised at this exclamation.

'I have called on you for two reasons; first, because I wanted to become acquainted with you personally, having long known of you through most interesting and favourable reports, and secondly, because I cherish the hope that you will not refuse to help me in a project which directly concerns the interests of your sister, Avdotya Romanovna. It is possible that she is so prejudiced against me that she would not even allow me to come anywhere near her without some recommendation, but with your help, on the other hand, I am confident . . .'

'Your confidence is misplaced,' interrupted Raskolnikov

'May I ask if it is true that they arrived only yesterday?'

Raskolnikov did not answer.

'I know it was yesterday. I myself, indeed, arrived only the day before yesterday. Well, Rodion Romanovich, I will say this to you—I see no need to justify myself, but be good enough to tell me what was so criminal in my conduct in all that affair, judged sensibly and without prejudice?'

Raskolnikov still watched him without speaking.

'The fact that in my own house I persecuted a defenceless girl and "insulted her with my vile proposals"—is that it? (You see I anticipate you', But you have only to suppose that I, too, am a man, *et nihil humanum* . . . in one word, that I also am capable of being attracted and falling in love (which after all is not a matter that depends on our will, and everything is explained in the most natural manner. The whole question is am I a monster or am I myself a victim? And if I am a victim? When I proposed to the object of my affections that she should fly with me to America or to Switzerland, I may have cherished the most honourable sentiments and thought I was furthering

our mutual happiness. Reason, you know, is passion's slave; perhaps, after all, it was to myself I did most harm! . . .'

'That is quite beside the point,' interrupted Raskolnikov with distaste. 'The simple fact is that whether you are right or wrong they find you repugnant, and therefore have no wish to know you. They will have nothing to do with you. Take yourself off! . . .'

Svidrigaylov laughed aloud.

'But you . . . but there is no getting round you' he said, laughing in the most candid manner. 'I thought I could be artful, but no, you instantly put your finger on the real point!'

'But you are still trying to be artful at this very moment.'

'Well, what then? What then?' repeated Svidrigaylov, still laughing heartily. 'It was what is called *bonne guerre*, and the most innocent of deceptions' . . . All the same, you interrupted me, and, whether or no, I repeat again: there would have been no unpleasantness but for the incident in the garden. Maria Petrovna . . .'

'They say that you drove Maria Petrovna into her grave, is that so?' rudely interrupted Raskolnikov.

'Oh, you have heard of that, too? But of course you would have . . . Well, in answer to your question, I hardly know what to say, although my conscience is perfectly clear in that respect. I mean, you mustn't think that I have any misgivings on that score: everything was quite regular and correct; the medical inquiry revealed apoplexy, as a result of bathing immediately after a heavy meal accompanied by almost a bottle of wine, and indeed there was nothing else it could have shown . . . No, sir, but I'll tell you what I have been wondering for some time, especially on my way here in the train; did I not contribute to this unfortunate accident in some degree, by causing some mental disturbance or something of that kind? But I came to the conclusion that it positively could not be so.'

Raskolnikov laughed.

'Why should you want to worry about that?'

'What are you laughing at? Consider: I gave her only a couple of blows with a riding-switch, and it didn't even leave a mark. Please don't think me cynical: I am quite aware that I behaved atrociously, and so on and so forth; but I also know quite well that Maria Petrovna may even have been pleased at this evidence of passion, so to speak. All that business about your sister had been wrung absolutely dry. Maria Petrovna



had already been obliged to stay at home for two days; she had no fresh excuse for going to town, and they were all bored there with that letter of hers— you heard about her reading the letter?). And suddenly those two blows fell; they might have come from heaven! . . . The first thing she did was to order the carriage! . . . Not to mention the fact that it sometimes happens that women are highly gratified at being outraged, in spite of their apparent indignation. It happens with everybody— mankind in general loves to be affronted, have you noticed? But especially women. You might almost say it's their only amusement.'

At one time Raskolnikov thought of ending the interview by getting up and going away. But a certain amount of curiosity, and even some calculation, kept him back for the time being.

'Do you like fighting?' he asked absently.

'No, not particularly,' calmly answered Svidrigaylov. 'I hardly ever came to blows with Maria Petrovna. We lived very peaceably together and she was always quite satisfied with me. In all our seven years of marriage I used the whip only twice altogether— not counting a third, quite equivocal occasion, : once, two months after our marriage, immediately after we arrived in the country, and again this last time. And did you think I was such a tyrant, a reactionary, a slave-driver? Ha, ha! . . . By the way, do you remember, Rodion Romanovich, how a few years ago, in the days of beneficent publicity, a nobleman— I forget his name— was publicly held up to shame' in the press for having thrashed some German woman in a railway-carriage? Do you remember? About that time, in the very same year, I think, there was "the disgraceful affair of the *Century*" (you remember, the *Egyptian Affair*; the public reading. Those black eyes! Oh, where are you, golden days of our youth? . . . Well, sir, this is my opinion— I don't feel any deep sympathy for the gentleman who administered the thrashing, because after all it . . . well, what is there to sympathize with? But at the same time, I can't help saying that from time to time one comes across such provoking "Germans" that I don't think there is a single progressive who could answer for himself. Nobody looked at the subject from that point of view then, but all the same that is the truly humane point of view, it really is!'

Having said this, Svidrigaylov suddenly laughed again. It was clear to Raskolnikov that this was a man who had firmly

made up his mind to something, but would keep his own counsel.

'You must have been several days with nobody to talk to, I suppose?' he asked.

'Almost nobody. Why? Are you surprised to find me so easy-going a person?'

'No, I am surprised because you are almost excessively amiable.'

'Because I did not take offence at the rudeness of your questions? Is that it? But . . . why should I be offended? As you asked, so I answered,' he added, with a surprisingly artless expression. 'You know, I take no particular interest in anything,' he went on, musingly. 'Especially now I have nothing to occupy me . . . However, you may believe, if you care to, that I am making up to you with an ulterior motive, especially as I told you myself that I have something to see your sister about. But I will freely acknowledge that I am bored to death, especially these last three days, so that I am very glad to have you to talk to . . . Don't be angry, Raskolnikov, but you yourself somehow seem terribly odd to me. Say what you please, but there is something strange about you just now; not, that is, particularly at this moment, but now generally speaking . . . Well, well, I won't go on; don't scowl! Really I am not such a bear as you suppose.'

Raskolnikov looked at him sombrely.

'Perhaps you are not a bear at all,' he said. 'I even think that you are a very well-bred man, or at least know how to behave like one on occasion.'

'I am not particularly interested in anybody's opinion,' answered Svidrigaylov coolly and with a touch of haughtiness, 'and therefore why not be a bit of a vulgarian, since that guise is so appropriate to our climate and . . . and especially if one has a natural tendency that way?' he added, with another laugh.

'But I have heard that you have many acquaintances here. You are surely "not without connexions", as it is termed. Why then, in that case, should you have recourse to me, except to further some purpose of your own?'

'It is true that I have friends here,' assented Svidrigaylov, ignoring the main point, 'and I have already met some of them, in the three days that I've been hanging about here. I recognize them as the sort of people I know and I think they

recognize me in the same way. That is a matter of course, since I am decently dressed and not reckoned a poor man; the abolition of serfdom has made no difference to me: my income, derived from forests and water-meadows, is not diminished by it. But . . . I won't go to see them. I was bored with them before; this is my third day here and I haven't called on anybody . . . And what a town this is! I wish you could tell me how it has come to be like this. A town of clerks and all kinds of seminarists! It's true I didn't notice much when I was having a good time here before, eight years ago . . . Now I swear I have no confidence in anything but anatomy.'

'In anatomy?'

'As for these political clubs, these *Dassauts*, these hair-splitting discussions of yours, or whatever other evidence of progress you may have here—well, they must all get on without me,' he went on, again ignoring the question. 'And I don't want to be a card-sharper, either.'

'Have you ever been one?'

'How could I help it? There was a whole set of us, all highly respectable, eight years ago; we had a very good time; there were rich men among us, and poets, and, you know, we all had the most charming manners. Generally speaking, in our Russian society the very best manners are found among those who are used to being beaten—have you noticed that? Of course, now I've fallen off with being in the country. All the same, in those days I was nearly put in prison for debt by a Greek from *Nezhin*. Then *Marfa Petrovna* turned up, bargained with him, and bought me off for thirty thousand silver roubles (I owed seventy thousand altogether). We were united in lawful wedlock, and she took me off immediately into the country, like some treasure. She was five years older than me, you know. She loved me dearly. For seven years I never left the country. And note this—all her life she held that document (made out to someone else—over my head, that note for thirty thousand roubles, so that if I had ever had any thought of rebellion, it would have been straight into the trap with me! And she would have done it! Women, you know, see nothing incongruous in all that.'

'And if it hadn't been for that, would you have cut and run?'

'I don't know how to put it. I hardly found that the document hampered me at all. I didn't want to go anywhere, and *Marfa Petrovna* herself once or twice suggested that I should



go abroad, seeing that I was bored. But what would have been the use? I had been abroad before, and I always hated it. I don't know why, but you look at the dawn breaking, the bay of Naples, the sea, and you are sad. The worst of it is, you know, that you really do grieve for something. No, better stay in your own country; here at least one can blame somebody else for everything and find excuses for oneself. Perhaps I might go on an expedition to the North Pole, because *j'ai le vin mauvais*. I have no taste for drinking, and there is nothing else left for me to do. I have tried and I know. But I'll tell you what, they say Berg\* is going to make an ascent in a great balloon on Sunday in the Yusupov Gardens, and that he will take passengers up for a consideration. Is that true?"

"Why, would you go up?"

"I? No . . . I only asked," murmured Svidrigaylov, as if he were really thinking of something else.

"What does he really want, I wonder?" thought Raskolnikov.

"No, the document was no embarrassment to me," went on Svidrigaylov thoughtfully. "I stayed in the country of my own accord. And about a year ago, on my name-day, Marfa Petrovna gave it back to me, and a considerable sum of money besides. She had some capital, you know. "You see how I trust you, Arkady Ivanovich" those were her very words. Don't you believe that she used those words? But you know, in the country I had become the complete squire; everybody knows me in those parts. And I sent for some books as well. Marfa Petrovna approved at first, but afterwards she was always afraid I should study too much."

"You appear to miss Marfa Petrovna very much."

"I do? Perhaps. Yes, it may be so. By the way, do you believe in ghosts?"

"What kind of ghosts?"

"The usual kind, of course!"

"Do you?"

"Well, perhaps not, *pour vous plaire* . . . That is, I don't exactly disbelieve in them . . ."

"Have you ever seen one?"

Svidrigaylov looked at him rather strangely

"Marfa Petrovna is good enough to visit me sometimes."

"What do you mean by that?"

"She has already been three times. The first time I saw her was on the very day of the funeral, an hour after we came

away from the cemetery. That was the day before I left for here. The second time was on the way here, at Malaya Vishera station, the day before yesterday; the third was two hours ago in the room where I am living. I was alone.'

'And awake?'

'Wide awake. I was awake all three times. She comes, speaks a few words, and leaves by the door, always by the door. You can almost hear her even.'

'I wonder why I thought that something of that kind was certainly happening to you,' said Raskolnikov suddenly, and was immediately filled with astonishment at his own words. He was very excited.

'In-deed? You thought that?' asked Svidrigaylov, surprised. 'Really? Well, didn't I say we had something in common, eh?'

'You never said that!' answered Raskolnikov sharply and with some heat.

'Didn't I?'

'No!'

'I thought I had. Just now, when I came in and saw you lying with your eyes shut, pretending to be asleep, I said to myself at once: "This is the very man!"'

'What do you mean by "the very man"? What are you talking about?' cried Raskolnikov.

'Talking about? I really don't know . . .' murmured Svidrigaylov, candidly, seeming puzzled himself.

There was a minute of silence, while they stared at one another.

'What nonsense!' exclaimed Raskolnikov in a tone of annoyance. 'What does she talk about, when she appears to you?'

'She? Oh, the silliest rubbish you can imagine, and people are very odd! that makes me really angry. She came in the first time—I was tired, you know, with the funeral, the requiem mass, the prayers, and the meal afterwards, and at last I was alone in the study; I had lit a cigar and sat thinking—she came in at the door, and she said "Arkady Ivanovich, with all the upset today you've forgotten to wind up the clock in the dining-room." Well, all those seven years I had wound up that clock every week, and if I forgot, she always used to remind me. The next day I was on the way here. At daybreak, I got out at a station and got some coffee. I had spent the night dozing fitfully, and I was very tired and could hardly keep my eyes open; I looked up, and suddenly Marfa Petrovna sat

down beside me with a pack of cards in her hands. "Wouldn't you like me to tell your fortune for the journey, Arkady Ivanovich?" She was very good at telling fortunes. I shall never forgive myself for not letting her tell it. I took fright and hurried away; it is true that the bell went just then. Today, I was sitting smoking, with an over-loaded stomach after a perfectly wretched dinner brought from a cook shop—when suddenly Maria Petrovna came in, all dressed up in a new green silk dress with a long train. "Good afternoon, Arkady Ivanovich! How do you like my dress? Aniska can't make them like this." Aniska is our dressmaker in the country. She used to be a serf, and she learnt her trade in Moscow—a pretty girl. She stood in front of me and turned round. I inspected the dress and then I looked very, very carefully at her, and said: "What makes you go to all the trouble of coming to me for such trifles?" "Good gracious, my dear, it's getting impossible to disturb you about anything!" To tease her, I said, "Maria Petrovna, I want to get married." "That depends on you, Arkady Ivanovich, but it isn't very creditable to rush here and get married again, almost before your wife is buried. If you could even be trusted to choose well! But no, I know it will do neither her nor you any good, and nice people will laugh at you." Then she took herself off, and I seemed to hear her train rustling. What nonsense, isn't it?

"But perhaps this is all lies, eh?" responded Raskolnikov.

"I don't often lie," Svidrigaylov answered thoughtfully, as if he had not noticed the rudeness of the question.

"And had you never seen any apparitions before?"

"Yes, I had, just once in my life, six years ago. I had a servant, Philka; we had just buried him, and I forgot and called out "Philka, my pipe!" He came in and went straight to the cabinet where I keep my pipes. I thought "He is taking his revenge on me," because we had had a fierce quarrel just before his death. "How dare you come into my presence," said I, "with a hole in your elbow? Get out, you rascal!" He turned and went out, and he has never come again. I didn't tell Maria Petrovna at the time. I wanted to have prayers for his soul, but I was ashamed."

"You ought to see a doctor."

"I don't need you to tell me that there is something wrong with me, although I honestly don't know what; it seems to me that I am probably five times as healthy as you. I did not ask



you whether you believe that people see ghosts. I asked you whether you believe that ghosts exist.'

'No, nothing would make me believe it' cried Raskolnikov with some heat.

'What do people usually say?' murmured Svidrigaylov, as though he were talking to himself, with head bent and eyes turned aside. 'They say "You are sick, and so what you think you see is nothing more than the unreal dream of your feverish mind." But you know, that is not strictly logical. I agree that ghosts appear only to the sick, but that proves only that they cannot appear to anybody else, not that they have no real existence.'

'Of course they don't exist' insisted Raskolnikov irritably.

'You think not?' went on Svidrigaylov, slowly turning his eyes on him. 'Well, suppose we reason like this. I wish you would help me here. Apparitions are, so to speak, shreds and fragments of other worlds, the first beginnings of them. There is, of course, no reason why a healthy man should see them, because a healthy man is mainly a being of this earth, and therefore for completeness and order he must live only this earthly life. But as soon as he falls ill, as soon as the normal earthly state of the organism is disturbed, the possibility of another world begins to appear, and as the illness increases, so do the contacts with the other world, so that at the moment of a man's death he enters fully into that world. It is a long time since I first developed this argument. If you believe in the life hereafter, you may accept this reasoning too.'

'I do not believe in a life hereafter,' said Raskolnikov.

Svidrigaylov remained thoughtful.

'What if there is nothing there but spiders or something like that?' he said suddenly.

'This is a madman,' thought Raskolnikov.

'Eternity is always presented to us as an idea which it is impossible to grasp, something enormous, enormous! But why should it necessarily be enormous? Imagine, instead, that it will be one little room, something like a bath house in the country, black with soot, with spiders in every corner, and that that is the whole of eternity. I sometimes imagine it like that, you know.'

'But surely, surely, you can imagine something juster and more comforting than that!' exclaimed Raskolnikov, painfully moved.

'Juster? For all we know, that may be just; and, you know, I would certainly make it like that, deliberately!' answered Svidrigaylov, with a vague smile.

At this monstrous answer a chill seized upon Raskolnikov. Svidrigaylov raised his head, gazed steadily at him, and suddenly laughed aloud.

'No, but think of this,' he cried. 'Half an hour ago we had never seen one another, we look on one another as enemies, and there is still a question to be settled between us; we've dropped the question and just look what nonsense we are talking! Well, wasn't I right when I said we were kindred spirits?'

'Be good enough,' said Raskolnikov irritably, 'to allow me to ask for an immediate explanation of why you have condescended to honour me with a visit . . . and . . . and . . . I am in a hurry; I have no time to spare. I must go out . . .'

'Certainly, certainly. Your sister, Avdotya Romanovna, is marrying Mr. Peter Petrovich Luzhin, isn't she?'

'Can't you manage to avoid asking questions about my sister, or mentioning her name? I cannot understand how you dare utter her name in my presence, if you really are Svidrigaylov.'

'But she is exactly what I came to talk about, so how can I help mentioning her?'

'Very well, but say it as quickly as possible!'

'I am convinced that you must already have made up your mind about this Mr. Luzhin (a connexion of mine by marriage,, if you have either been in his company for as long as half an hour or heard any faithful account of him. He is not a fitting match for Avdotya Romanovna. In my opinion, Avdotya Romanovna is sacrificing herself, with great nobility and without counting the cost, for . . . for her family. It seemed to me, from all I had heard of you, that for your part you would be very pleased if this match could be broken off without harming her interests. Now that I know you personally, I am sure of it.'

'All this is very innocent of you; excuse me, I meant insolent,' said Raskolnikov.

'That is to say that my motives are purely selfish. Don't worry, Rodion Romanovich, if I were considering only my own interests I should not have expressed myself so bluntly. I am not a complete fool. In this connexion, let me tell you a strange psychological fact. A short time ago, justifying my love for

Avdotya Romanovna, I spoke of myself as a victim. Well, you must know that now I feel no love for her whatever, none at all, so that even to me it seems very strange, since I really did feel something . . .'

'As a result of idleness and depravity,' interrupted Raskolnikov.

'Well, I am indeed idle and depraved. But your sister has so many excellent qualities that even I could not but be impressed by them to some extent. But it all amounted to nothing, as I see now.'

'And have you seen it for long?'

'I had begun to notice it even earlier, but I finally convince myself the day before yesterday, almost at the moment of my arrival in St. Petersburg. In Moscow I still imagined that I was coming here to try to win Avdotya Romanovna's hand as Mr. Luzhin's rival.'

'Excuse me for interrupting you. Please cut your story short, if you can, and come straight to the purpose of your visit. I am in a hurry. I have to go out . . .'

'With the greatest pleasure. After I had arrived here and decided to undertake a certain . . . journey, I wished to make the necessary preliminary arrangements. My children have remained with their aunt; they are well provided for and have no need of me. And indeed I am not much of a father! For myself I have taken only what Maria Petrovna gave me a year ago. It is enough for me. Excuse me, I am coming to the point now. Before this journey which I may perhaps take, I want to settle accounts with Mr. Luzhin. It is not that I dislike him so extremely, but he was the cause of my quarrel with Maria Petrovna, when I found out that she had contrived this marriage. Now, with your help and perhaps in your presence, I should like to have an interview with Avdotya Romanovna, and tell her firstly that her association with Mr. Luzhin will not only not be of any advantage to her but will probably bring her definite harm. Then, after begging her forgiveness for all the recent unpleasantness, I should ask permission to offer her ten thousand roubles and thus make easier the break with Mr. Luzhin, a break from which I am sure she herself would not be averse if only it appeared possible.'

'But you really are mad!' exclaimed Raskolnikov, more surprised than angry. 'How dare you say such things?'



'I knew you would make a fuss. But to begin with, although I am not rich, I can dispose of ten thousand roubles quite freely; that is to say I have absolutely no need of it, absolutely none. Unless Avdotya Romanovna accepts it, I shall find some more foolish use for it. That is the first point. The second is that my conscience is perfectly clear, there is no ulterior motive behind my offer. You may believe me or not, as you choose, but both Avdotya Romanovna and you will realize it later. The whole point is that I really did cause some trouble and unpleasantness to your sister, whom I greatly respect, and therefore, as I sincerely repent of it, I earnestly desire—not to buy myself off, not to pay for the unpleasantness, but purely and simply to do something for her good, on the basis that I do not really claim the privilege of doing nothing but harm. If my offer contained one-millionth part of calculation, I should not have made it so bluntly, and I should not have offered her only ten thousand roubles when a mere five weeks ago I was offering her much more. Besides, in a very, very short time I may perhaps be marrying another young lady and that fact alone ought to destroy any suspicion that I might have designs on Avdotya Romanovna. Finally, I will say that if she marries Mr. Luzhin, Avdotya Romanovna will be taking the same money, but from another source. . . . Don't be angry, Rodion Romanovich. Consider it coolly and calmly.'

Svidrigaylov was himself extremely cool and calm as he said this.

'I beg you to stop,' said Raskolnikov. 'However you look at it, this is unforgivable impudence.'

'Not at all! If that were so, a man could do his fellow men nothing but harm in this world, and would have no right to do a particle of good, because of empty conventions. That is absurd. Surely if, for example, I died and left this money to your sister in my will, she would not then refuse to accept it?'

'Quite possibly she would.'

'No, I won't believe that! However, if the answer is no, there is no more to be said. But ten thousand roubles may be a very good thing on occasion. In any case, I beg you to tell Avdotya Romanovna what I have said.'

'No, I won't tell her.'

'In that case, Rodion Romanovich, I shall be obliged to seek a personal interview, which would mean troubling her.'

'If I do tell her, will you make no effort to see her yourself?'

'I don't know what to say. I should very much like to see her once.'

'There is no hope of that.'

'I'm sorry. However, you don't know me. Perhaps now we may become closer friends.'

'You think we can be friends?'

'Why shouldn't we?' said Svidrigaylov with a smile. He rose and took up his hat. 'I really didn't come here with the intention of troubling you for long, and I wasn't much counting on anything, although this morning I was greatly struck with your face . . .'

'Where did you see me this morning?' asked Raskolnikov uneasily.

'Oh, it was quite accidental . . . I keep fancying there is something very like me in you . . . Don't worry, I am not a bore: I got on well enough with the other card-sharppers. I never bored the great Prince Svirbev, who is a distant relative of mine, I could write about Raphael's Madonnas in Mrs. Prilukova's album, I lived for seven years without a break with Maria Petrovna, I used to spend the night in Vvazemsky's house in the Haymarket in the old days, and perhaps I will go up with Berg in his balloon.'

'Well, all right. May I ask if you will be leaving soon?'

'Leaving?'

'Yes, on that journey . . . you spoke of it yourself.'

'The journey? Oh, yes . . . I did speak to you of a journey . . . Well, that's a far-reaching question . . . But if only you knew what you are asking about,' he added abruptly in a loud voice, and laughed shortly. 'Perhaps I may get married instead of making that journey; they are trying to make a match for me.'

'Here?'

'Yes.'

'How have you found time for that?'

'But I do want to see Avdotya Romanovna once. I ask you most earnestly. Well, good-bye . . . Oh, yes! I was forgetting something. Please tell your sister, Rodion Romanovich, that she is remembered in Maria Petrovna's will for three thousand roubles. That is quite definite. Maria Petrovna made arrangements a week before her death, and it was done in my presence. In two or three weeks' time Avdotya Romanovna will be able to receive the money.'

'Are you speaking the truth?'

'Yes. Tell her. Well, sir, your servant. I am staying very near here, you know.'

As he left, Svidrigaylov bumped into Razumikhin at the door.

## CHAPTER II

It was nearly eight o'clock. They were hurrying towards Bakaleev's house, in order to arrive before Luzhin.

'Who was that?' asked Razumikhin, as soon as they reached the street.

'That was Svidrigaylov, the landowner in whose house my sister was insulted when she was governess there. She had to leave, in fact she was turned out by his wife, Marfa Petrovna, because of his amorous advances to her. Later Marfa Petrovna begged Dunya's pardon, and now she has died suddenly. We were talking of her not long ago. I am very much afraid of that man, I don't know why. He came to St. Petersburg immediately after his wife's funeral. He seems very strange, and he has some plan . . . It is as if he knew something . . . Dunya must be protected from him . . . that's what I wanted to tell you. Are you listening?'

'Protected! What can he do to Avdotya Romanovna? Well, thank you for telling me this, Rodya . . . We will protect her! . . . Where does he live?'

'I don't know.'

'Why didn't you ask him? What a pity. However, I'll find out!'

'Did you see him?' asked Raskolnikov after a short silence.

'Yes, I noticed him; I noticed him particularly.'

'You really did see him? Did you see him clearly?' insisted Raskolnikov.

'Yes, I remember him clearly. I should recognize him among a thousand. I have a good memory for faces.'

They were silent again.

'Hm . . . that's all right . . . ' muttered Raskolnikov 'Otherwise you know . . . I almost thought . . . I still keep thinking . . . that perhaps it was an illusion.'

'What are you talking about? I don't follow.'

'Well,' Raskolnikov went on, with a crooked smile, 'you all say that I am mad; it seemed to me just now that perhaps I really am mad, and have simply seen an apparition.'

'Why do you say that?'

'After all, who knows? Perhaps I really am mad, and every-



thing that has happened all this time has been only my imagination . . .'

'Oh, Rodya, you are upset again! . . . What did he say? Why did he come?'

Raskolnikov did not answer and Razumikhin thought for a minute.

'Well, listen to my story,' he began. 'I looked in on you, but you were asleep. Then we had dinner and then I went to see Porfiry. Zametov was still there. When I tried to begin, nothing came of it. I simply could not find the right words. They seem not to understand, they are incapable of understanding, but they don't let that worry them. I took Porfiry aside, to the window, and began to talk to him, but again it somehow came out wrong; he didn't look at me and I didn't look at him. At last I shook my fist in his face and told him, in a cousinly way, I would beat his brains out. He only looked at me, I spat and came away, and that was all. It was all very stupid. I didn't exchange a word with Zametov. But listen: I was afraid I'd spoilt things for you, but coming downstairs I had an idea—it positively flashed on me—what are we worrying about? If there were any danger to you, or anything like that, well, of course. But really, what is it to you? You have nothing to do with it, so be hanged to them! We shall have the laugh of them afterwards. In your place, I should mystify them a bit more. How ashamed they will be . . . or not! Be hanged to them! Later we can give them a drubbing, but now we will simply laugh at them.'

'Yes, of course,' answered Raskolnikov. 'But what will you say tomorrow?' he thought. It was strange that until this moment it had never entered his head to wonder. 'What will Razumikhin think when he knows?' As he thought this, Raskolnikov looked hard at him. He took very little interest now in Razumikhin's account of his visit to Porfiry; so much water had flowed under the bridges since then! . . .

In the corridor they ran into Lizhin, who had turned up at exactly eight o'clock and was looking for the room, so that all three went in together, but without looking at one another or exchanging greetings. The young men went in first, and Peter Petrovich, to avoid any awkwardness, lingered a little in the passage, taking off his overcoat. Pulkheria Alexandrovna went out to welcome him on the threshold. Darya was greeting her brother.

Peter Petrovich came in and bowed to the ladies civilly enough, though with redoubled primness. He looked, however, as though he had been somewhat taken aback and had not yet recovered. Pulkheria Alexandrovna, also a little out of countenance, seated everybody at a round table on which a samovar was boiling. Dunya and Luzhin faced each other from opposite sides of the table. Razumikhin and Raskolnikov had Pulkheria Alexandrovna opposite them, Razumikhin nearer Luzhin and Raskolnikov next to his sister.

There was a momentary silence. Peter Petrovich leisurely drew out a scented cambric handkerchief and blew his nose with the air of a virtuous man whose dignity has been wounded and who is firmly resolved to exact an explanation. While he was in the hall, the idea had occurred to him of going away without taking off his coat, thus inflicting a severe and impressive punishment on the ladies and making them realize the whole situation. But he had not been able to make up his mind to this course. Besides, he was a man who did not like the unknown, and there were matters here to be cleared up. If his orders were so openly disobeyed, that meant there was some reason, and consequently it was better to learn what it was first. There would always be time to punish them, and it was in his power to do so.

'I hope your journey was pleasant,' he said formally, addressing Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

'Yes, thank God, Peter Petrovich.'

'I am very pleased to hear it. And Avdotya Romanovna is not too tired, either?'

'I am young and strong, I don't get tired, but it was very trying for mama,' answered Dunya.

'It can't be helped, our national railways are very long. Our so-called "Mother Russia" is vast. . . I, in spite of my own desires, was quite unable to meet you yesterday. I hope, however, that everything passed off without any particular trouble.'

'Alas, no, Peter Petrovich, we felt very downcast,' declared Pulkheria Alexandrovna, with a peculiar intonation, 'and if God Himself had not sent Dmitri Prokofich to us yesterday, we should have been utterly lost. This is he, Dmitri Prokofich Razumikhin,' she added, introducing him to Luzhin.

'I have already had the pleasure . . . yesterday,' muttered Luzhin, with an unfriendly sidelong look at Razumikhin. He frowned and was silent. Peter Petrovich belonged to that order

of persons who seem extremely amiable in company and lay special claim to the social graces, but who, as soon as something is not to their liking, lose all their spring and become more like sacks of flour than animated and lively gentlemen. Silence fell again: Rassolnikov remained obstinately dumb, Avdotya Romanovna seemed unwilling to speak for the moment, Razumishin could find nothing to say. Pulkheria Alexandrovna began to feel anxious again.

'Maria Petrovna is dead. Have you heard?' she began, resorting to her main topic of conversation.

'Naturally I have heard. I was one of the first to know, and now I have brought you the news that immediately after his wife's funeral, Arkady Ivanovich Svidrigailov left in haste for St. Petersburg. So, at least, I hear from most trustworthy sources.'

'For St. Petersburg? Here?' asked Dunya, exchanging alarmed glances with her mother.

'Just so. And obviously he has some definite purpose bearing in mind the haste of his journey and the antecedent circumstances in general.'

'Good heavens! Will he not leave Dinechka in peace even here?' exclaimed Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

'I do not think that either you or Avdotya Romanovna has any particular cause for alarm, unless of course you yourselves consent to enter into some kind of relations with him. As for me, I am on my guard, and I am now making inquiries to discover where he is staying...'

'Oh, Peter Petrovich, you cannot believe how much you have frightened me!' resumed Pulkheria Alexandrovna. 'I have seen him only twice, and I thought him terrible, terrible. I am convinced he was the cause of poor Maria Petrovna's death.'

'About that it is impossible to reach a definite conclusion. My impression is exact. I will not dispute that perhaps he was instrumental in hastening the course of events... to say by the moral influence of the affronts he gave her. As for his conduct and his moral character in general, I am in agreement with you. I do not know whether he is rich now, but exactly what Maria Petrovna lent him, I shall be in a position to tell in the shortest possible space of time, but here in St. Petersburg, if he has any property or resources at all, he will certainly resume his old courses. He is the most degraded, the most completely abandoned to vice, even of people of his own kind. I have



substantial grounds for supposing that Marfa Petrovna, who had the misfortune to fall so deeply in love with him and redeem his debts eight years ago, was of service to him again in another connexion—only her efforts and sacrifices succeeded in suppressing, at the outset, criminal investigations involving a suspicion of brutal and, so to say, fantastic homicide, for which he might very well have been sent on a trip to Siberia. Such, if you wish to know, is the sort of man he is.’

‘Good heavens!’ cried Pulkheria Alexandrovna. Raskolnikov was listening with great attention.

‘Were you speaking the truth when you said you had exact knowledge of this?’ inquired Dunya in a severe and impressive tone.

‘What I am telling you is only what I myself heard, in confidence, from poor Marfa Petrovna. It must be remarked that from a legal point of view the matter is extremely obscure. There lived, and I believe still lives, here a certain foreigner, a woman called Resslerich, who was a small money-lender and had other business interests. A long time ago Mr. Svidrigaylov had very intimate and mysterious relations with this Resslerich woman. She had a distant relative, a niece I think, living with her, a deaf-and-dumb girl about fifteen, or perhaps only fourteen, years old. This Resslerich hated the girl, reproached her with every morsel she ate, and beat her unmercifully. One day the girl was found hanged in the attic. The verdict was that she had committed suicide. There, after the usual proceedings, the matter ended, but later, information was laid that the child had been—cruelly abused by Svidrigaylov. It is true that it was an obscure case, as the accusation came from another German, a woman of notorious character whose word could not be credited, finally, no actual written statement was made, thanks to Marfa Petrovna’s efforts and her money, it was all limited to rumours. Nevertheless, the rumours were very significant. You, of course, Avdotya Romanovna heard while you were there the story of the man Philip, who died of brutal ill-treatment, six years ago, before serfdom was abolished.’

‘On the contrary, I heard that this Philip landed himself.’

‘Just so, but he was driven, or rather persuaded, to this violent end by the ceaseless systematic persecution and punishments of Mr. Svidrigaylov.’

‘I do not know that,’ answered Dunya drily. ‘I only heard a very strange story about this Philip’s being some sort of

hypochondriac, a kind of home-grown philosopher, who, the servants said "read himself silly", and about his having hanged himself more because of the mockery than because of the beatings of Mr. Svidrigaylov. While I was there he treated the servants well, and they liked him, even though they did blame him for Philip's death.'

'I see, Avdotya Romanovna, that you are suddenly disposed to find excuses for him,' remarked Luzhin, with an ambiguous smile twisting his lips. 'He is certainly a man of great cunning, with the ladies, and very fascinating to them, as the lamentable example of Marta Petrovna, who died so strangely, serves to show. I only wished to be of service to you and your mama with my advice, in view of the new attempts on his part which are undoubtedly in store for us. As far as I am concerned, I am convinced that the fellow will certainly disappear once more into a debtor's prison. Maria Petrovna, with her children to consider, was far from intending to settle any land on him, and if she did leave him anything, it must have been the unavoidable minimum, a trifle, a mere nothing, not enough to last a man of his habits a year.'

'Peter Petrovich,' said Dunya, 'please let us stop talking of Mr. Svidrigaylov. It makes me wretched.'

'He has just been to see me,' said Raskolnikov suddenly, breaking his silence for the first time.

There were exclamations on all sides and everybody turned to him. Even Peter Petrovich was roused.

'An hour and a half ago, when I was asleep, he came on, woke me up, and introduced himself,' went on Raskolnikov. 'He was quite at home and cheerful, and is perfectly confident that I shall become a friend of his. Among other things he was most persistent in seeking an interview with you, Dunya, and asked me to act as his intermediary. He has a suggestion to make to you—he told me what it was. Besides this, he really informed me that a week before her death Maria Petrovna had left you three thousand roubles in her will, and you will be able to receive the money in a very short time.'

'Thank God!' cried Pulkheria Alexandrovna, crossing herself. 'You must pray for her soul, Dunya!'

'It really is true,' Luzhin burst out.

'Well, what more?' asked Dunya, urgently.

'Then he said that he was not rich and that all the estate goes to the children, who are now with their aunt. Then he

told me he is staying somewhere not far from me—but I don't know where, I didn't ask . . .'

'But what is it, what is it he wants to suggest to Dunya?' asked Pulkaena Alexandrovna fearfully. 'Did he tell you?'

'Yes, he told me.'

'What is it, then?'

'I will tell you afterwards,' Raskolnikov turned to his tea and said no more.

Peter Petrovich took out his watch and looked at it.

'I must go, I have something to do. So I need not be in your way,' he added with an air of some pique, and made to rise from his chair.

'Don't go, Peter Petrovich,' said Dunya. 'You know you intended to spend the evening with us. Besides, you yourself wrote that you wanted to discuss something with mama.'

'Quite so, Avdotya Romanovna,' said Peter Petrovich impressively, sitting down again but keeping his hat in his hands. 'I did indeed desire an explanation both with you and with your respected mama, and on some most important points. But as your brother insists it impossible to discuss some proposal of Mr. Svylingaylov's in my presence, I am unwilling, and indeed unable, to talk of most extremely important matters in the presence of outsiders. In addition, my most urgent and earnest request has not been fulfilled . . .'

Lizhin's expression was bitter, and he again became majestically silent.

'Your request that my brother should not be present at our meeting was disregarded entirely at my insistence,' said Dunya. 'You wrote that my brother had insulted you; I think that the matter should be cleared up without delay, and that you should be reconciled. If Rodya really did insult you, he *ought to and will ask your pardon.*'

Peter Petrovich immediately began to swagger.

'There are some insults, Avdotya Romanovna, which, with the best will in the world, cannot be forgotten. There is a point in everything beyond which it is dangerous to go, for if once you do so, there can be no turning back.'

'If it was not, strictly speaking, what I was talking about, Peter Petrovich,' interrupted Dunya with a shade of impatience. 'You must understand plainly that our whole future depends now on whether you clear all this up and make friends as quickly as possible, or not. I tell you candidly at the outset



that I cannot see things in any other light, and if you set any value on me at all, this business must be settled once for all today, difficult as it may be. I repeat that if my brother is at fault he will ask your forgiveness.'

'I am surprised that you should put the question in that way, Avdotya Romanovna.' Luzhin was growing more and more irritated. 'Valuing and, so to say, adoring you as I do, I may at the same time find it completely and absolutely possible not to like some member of your family. As an aspirant to the happiness of your hand, at the same time I cannot take upon myself obligations inconsistent . . .'

'Oh, don't be so quick to take offence, Peter Petrovich,' interrupted Dunya with feeling. 'Be the wise and generous person I have always thought and would still like to think you. I have given you a solemn promise, I am engaged to you, trust me in this matter, and believe that I am capable of *adjudging* it in an unbiased fashion. The fact that I am undertaking the role of judge is as much a surprise to my brother as to you. When today, after the receipt of your letter, I requested him not to fail to be here at our meeting, I told him nothing of my intentions. Please understand that if you cannot come to terms, I shall be obliged to choose between you—it must be either you or he. That is now the question stands, on your side and on his. I don't want to make any mistake in my choice, in fact I must not. For your sake I must break with my brother, for my brother's sake I must break with you. I can find out now for certain, as I want to, whether he is a brother for me. And about you—am I dear to you, do you prize me, are you the husband for me?'

'Avdotya Romanovna,' said Luzhin, ruffled, 'I find your words too ominous; nay, more, I must call them offensive, in view of the position I have the honour to occupy in relation to you. I will say nothing of the strange and insulting comparison, on the same level, between me and . . . a *naïve* youth, but your words admit the possibility that the promise you gave might be broken. You say "either you or he" and by that very fact you show how little I mean to you . . . I cannot tolerate this, considering the relations and . . . obligations which exist between us.'

'What?' Dunya fired up. 'I put your interests along side of everything that has until now been precious in my life, that has until now formed the *whole* of my life, and you are offended because I set *too little* value on you.'

Raskolnikov did not speak, but he smiled sarcastically. Razumikhin was shivering with excitement, but Luzhin would not accept the reproach, on the contrary, with every word he grew more captious and touchy, as though he were beginning to enjoy the dispute.

'Love for the future companion of your life, for your husband, should surpass love for your brother,' he answered sententiously, 'and in any case I cannot be put upon the same footing . . . Although I insisted just now that I did not wish, and indeed was unable, to discuss in your brother's presence all the matters I came here intending to speak of, nevertheless I now propose to seek from your respected mama the explanation, which I must insist on, of a point of the utmost importance, which seriously affects me. Your son,' he went on, addressing Pulkheria Alexandrovna, 'yesterday, in the presence of Mr. Rassudkin' (or . . . I think that is right? Excuse me, I can't remember your surname' and he bowed graciously to Razumikhin) 'insulted me by distorting an idea I had expressed to you in private conversation, over coffee, namely, that marriage with a poor girl who has had experience of life's bitterness is in my opinion more advantageous in conjugal relations than with one who has known prosperity, for it is more beneficial to the morals. Your son deliberately exaggerated the meaning of my words to the point of absurdity, accusing me of evil intentions and, in my view, basing what he said on your correspondence. I shall count myself happy if you, Pulkheria Alexandrovna, find it possible to persuade me to the opposite effect and thus set my mind at rest to a considerable extent. Please inform me of the exact terms in which you reproduced my words in your letter to Rodion Romanovich.'

'I don't remember,' said Pulkheria Alexandrovna in some confusion. 'I repeated them as I understood them. I don't know how Rodya repeated them again to you . . . Perhaps he did exaggerate something.'

'He could not have exaggerated them without your prompting.'

'Peter Petrovich,' Pulkheria Alexandrovna declared with dignity, 'the proof that Dunya and I did not put a very bad construction on your words is that we are *here*.'

'Well said, mama!' said Dunya approvingly.

'It appears that I am at fault here, too,' said Luzhin resentfully.

'Here you are, always blaming Rodion, Peter Petrovich, and you yourself recently told an untruth about him in your letter,' added Pulkheria Alexandrovna, gaining courage.

'I do not remember writing anything that was not true.'

'You wrote,' said Raskolnikov sharply, not turning to Luzhin, 'that yesterday I gave money not to the widow of the man who was killed, which is what really happened, but to his daughter (whom I had never even seen until yesterday). You wrote it in order to make mischief between me and my family, and for the same purpose you used in addition the vilest terms about the conduct of a girl whom you do not know. All that is gossip of the meanest kind.'

'Excuse me, sir,' answered Luzhin, shaking with anger. 'I enlarged upon your qualities and actions in my letter solely in order to comply with the request of your sister and your mama that I should inform them how I found you and what impression you produced on me. As for the matter alluded to in my letter, find me a single line that is unjust!—show me that you did not waste your money or that in that family, unfortunate though it is, there are no unworthy persons.'

'In my opinion, with all your respectability you are not worth the little finger of the unhappy girl at whom you are casting stones.'

'Does that mean that you could allow yourself to introduce her into the society of your mother and sister?'

'I have already done so, if you want to know. I made her sit down today with mama and Dunya.'

'Rodya!' exclaimed Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

Dunechka blushed; Razumikhin frowned. Luzhin smiled with haughty sarcasm.

'You may see for yourself, if you will, Avdotya Romanovna,' said he, 'whether any agreement is possible between us. I hope that the matter is now cleared up and disposed of once and for all. I will withdraw, in order not to interfere further with the pleasures of a family gathering and the communication of secrets.' He rose and packed up his hat. 'But in going I shall permit myself the liberty of remarking that henceforward I hope to be spared such encounters and, so to say, compromises. I must particularly address this request to you, respected Pulkheria Alexandrovna, especially since my letter was directed to you, and to no one else.'

Pulkheria Alexandrovna felt somewhat affronted.



'It seems that you think you already exercise complete control over us, Peter Petrovich. Dunya told you the reason why your request was not complied with; she meant well. And you wrote to me as if you were giving orders. Are we to regard every wish of yours as a command? I must tell you, on the contrary, that you ought to behave with particular delicacy and forbearance towards us now, because, trusting you, we have abandoned everything to come here, and are consequently practically at your mercy already.'

'That is not quite just, Pulkheria Alexandrovna, especially at the present moment, when Maria Petrovna's legacy of three thousand roubles has just been announced. It seems to have been very well timed, judging by the new tone in which you have been speaking to me,' he added sarcastically.

'And judging by that remark, we may certainly suppose that you counted on our helplessness,' observed Dunya irritably.

'But now, at least, I can no longer count on it, and I particularly do not wish to hinder the communication of Arkady Ivanovich Svidrigaylov's secret proposals, which he has authorized your dear brother to deliver, and which, I perceive, possess for you a most important, and perhaps a very agreeable, significance.'

'Oh, heavens!' exclaimed Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

Razumikhin could sit still no longer.

'And are you not ashamed now, sister?' asked Raskolnikov.

'Yes, Rodya, I am ashamed,' said Dunya. Pale with anger, she turned to Luzhin. 'Peter Petrovich, go!'

Peter Petrovich appeared not in the least to have expected such an ending. He had had too much confidence in himself, in his power, and in the helplessness of his victims. Even now he could not believe it. He turned pale and his lips quivered.

'Avdotya Romanovna, if I go out of that door now, with such a farewell, depend upon it I shall never return. Think well! I mean what I say!'

'What insolence!' cried Dunya, springing up from her place. 'I do not wish you to return!'

'What? So that's it?' exclaimed Luzhin, quite unable, even at the last moment, to believe in the rupture, and therefore now completely at a loss. 'That's it, is it? Do you know, Avdotya Romanovna, that I should be justified in complaining?'

'What right have you to speak to her like that?' intervened Pulkheria Alexandrovna hotly. 'What could you complain

about? What right have you? Would I give my Dinya to such a man as you are? Go away! Leave us altogether! It is our own fault for having entered upon a wrong course, and mine most of all . . .'

'Nevertheless, Pulkheria Alexandrovna,' raved Luzhin in hot anger, 'you bound me by a promise that you are now going back on . . . and finally . . . finally . . . I was involved by it, so to say, in expense . . .'

This last grievance was so much in keeping with Peter Petrovich's character that Raskolnikov, white with rage and with the effort of restraining it, suddenly lost control and roared with laughter. But Pulkheria Alexandrovna was furiously angry.

'Expense? What expense was that? You are talking of our trunk, I suppose? But surely the guard carried it free of charge for you. And good heavens! You say we bound you! You must think again, Peter Petrovich; it was just the opposite, you bound us hand and foot!'

'That's enough, mama; no more, please!' begged Avdotya Romanovna. 'Peter Petrovich, do me the favour of going.'

'I am going. But one last word!' he said, having by now almost completely lost control of himself. 'Your mama seems to have quite forgotten that I decided to take you, so to say, when the gossip of the town about your reputation had spread all over the district. Scorning public opinion for your sake and vindicating your reputation, I was certainly completely and absolutely entitled to count on being recompensed and even to demand your gratitude . . . And it is only now that my eyes have been opened! I can see that perhaps my action in scorning the general view was completely and absolutely rash . . .'

'Is he asking to have his head broken?' cried Razumikhin, starting up ready to wreak vengeance on him.

'You are a base, malicious person!' said Dinya.

'Not a word! Not a movement!' exclaimed Raskolnikov, holding Razumikhin back; then, advancing until he almost touched Luzhin, he said quietly and distinctly, 'Be good enough to get out! And not another word, or else . . .'

Peter Petrovich, his pale face distorted with rage, looked at him for some seconds and then turned and went out, and rarely indeed has any man carried such vicious hatred in his heart as he now felt for Raskolnikov. He blamed him, and him alone, for everything. It is worthy of note that even as he

descended the stairs he still imagined that the game was not utterly lost and that, as far as the ladies were concerned, things might still be set 'completely and absolutely' right.

### CHAPTER III

THE point was that up to the very last minute he had not in the least expected such a break. He had blustered and balled, never imagining even the possibility that two poor and unprotected women could escape his power. His confidence was greatly strengthened by vanity and that degree of self-reliance which might best be called self-intuition. Peter Petrovich, who had struggled up from nothing, was full of almost morbid admiration for himself, set a high value on his own brain and capabilities and sometimes, when he was alone, even admired his own face in the mirror. But more than anything in the world he loved and prized his money, got together laboriously and by every means in his power, it raised him to the level of everything that had been superior to him.

When he had bitterly reminded Dunya just now that he had resolved to take her in spite of evil rumours about her, he had spoken with complete sincerity, and even felt the deepest indignation at her 'black ingratitude'. All the same, when he offered his hand to Dunya he was already fully convinced of the baselessness of the stories, which had been publicly related by Maria Petrovna and long since dropped by everybody in the little town, who now warmly defended Dunya. Indeed, he would not have denied that he knew all this at the time. Nevertheless, he still rated very high his decision to raise Dunya to his own level, and considered it heroic. In talking of it to Dunya he had been expressing a cherished secret belief that had more than once aroused his own self-admiration, and he could not understand how others could fail to admire his noble action. When he had paid his visit to Raskolnikov, he had entered with the feeling of a benefactor, prepared to reap his reward and taste the sweetness of compliments. And certainly now, as he went downstairs, he considered that he had been grossly insulted and that his virtues had not been recognized.

As for Dunya, he simply could not do without her; giving her up was unthinkable. For several years now he had dreamed voluptuously of marriage, but he went on accumulating money



bit by bit, and waited. He dwelt with rapture on the idea of a virtuous maiden, poor—she must be poor, very young, very pretty, well-born, well-educated and timorous, one who had known a great many misfortunes, and was completely humble before him, one who all her life would think of him as her saviour, reverence him, obey him, admire him and him alone. How many delightful scenes and episodes, with this seductive and playful theme, his imagination had created in quiet intervals of rest from business! And now the dreams of so many years had almost come true; Avdotya Romanovna's beauty and education had made an impression on him, her helpless situation aroused his passion. He had found even more than he had dreamed of. Here was a proud, willful, virtuous girl, of a breeding and education superior to his own—he was conscious of this, and this being would be slavishly grateful to him all her life for his noble deed, and reverently humble herself before him, while he exercised absolute and unlimited dominion over her! . . . It seemed almost providential that not long before, after prolonged deliberation and forethought, he had at last resolved to make a decided change in his career and enter a wider sphere of activity, and at the same time to climb little by little into higher social circles, as he had long indulged in pleasant thoughts of doing . . . In one word, he had determined to try St. Petersburg. He knew that with a woman's help it was 'completely and absolutely' possible to go far. The fascination of a charming, virtuous, and well-educated woman could make his path wonderfully pleasant, attract friends to him, cast a rainbow-coloured glory over his life . . . and now all was ruined! This sudden, monstrous break had come on him like a clap of thunder. It was some ludicrous joke, an absurdity! He had been only the tiniest bit overhearing, he had not even managed to have his say out; he had not really meant it all, but had got carried away—and it had ended so seriously! Finally, in his own fashion he really loved Danva, in his dreams he was already her lord and master—and then, suddenly . . . No! Tomorrow, tomorrow at latest, everything must be restored, the wound must be healed, the breach repaired and, most important of all, that insolent young puppy, the cause of the whole thing, must be destroyed. Involuntarily, with a painful sensation, he remembered Razumakhin . . . but on that score he soon reassured himself. 'As though such a person could be put on his level!' But the one he really was

seriously afraid of was Svidrigaylov . . . In short, he foresaw a good deal of trouble . . .

'No, I am more to blame than anybody else,' said Dunya, embracing her mother and kissing her. 'I was blinded by his money, but I swear, brother, I didn't even imagine he was such a wretch. If I had seen through him before, nothing could have tempted me.' Don't judge me too harshly, brother.'

'God has delivered us, God has delivered us!' Pulkheria Alexandrovna murmured, almost unconsciously, as though she had not yet fully realized what had happened.

They were all extremely cheerful, and in five minutes they were even laughing. Sometimes, though, Dunetchka, remembering what had happened, grew pale and knitted her brows. Pulkheria Alexandrovna could not understand how she, too, could be glad; only that morning a break with Luzhin had seemed a terrible catastrophe. Razumikhin was in raptures. He did not yet dare to express his delight, but he was feverishly excited, as though a monstrous weight had rolled off his heart. Now he had the right to devote his whole life to them, serve them . . . And who knew what might happen? But he was afraid to pursue his thoughts farther, he feared his own imagination. And Raskolnikov went on sitting in his old place, seeming absent minded and almost sullen. He, who had been the most insistent on Luzhin's dismissal, now seemed less interested than the others in what had just happened. Dunya could not help thinking that he was still angry with her, and Pulkheria Alexandrovna watched him apprehensively.

'Well, what did Svidrigaylov say to you,' asked Dunya, approaching him.

'Oh yes, yes,' exclaimed Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

'He tried to insist on giving you ten thousand roubles, and besides that, he expressed a desire to see you once, in my presence.'

'See her? Not for anything in the world,' cried Pulkheria Alexandrovna. 'And how dare he offer her money?'

Raskolnikov proceeded to repeat (rather drily) his talk with Svidrigaylov, omitting everything about Maria Petrovna's ghost, in order to avoid unessential matters, since he felt averse to any but the most necessary conversation.

'What answer did you give him?' asked Dunya.

'At first I told him I would not give you any message. Then

he declared that he would use every means in his power to obtain an interview himself. He averred that his passion for you had been a passing fancy, and that now he feels nothing for you . . . He doesn't want you to marry Luzhan . . . But his talk was very confused."

"How do you explain him to yourself, Rodya? What did he seem like to you?"

"I confess I don't understand him very well. He offers you ten thousand roubles, but he told me he is not rich. He declares he is going away somewhere, and ten minutes later he has forgotten he said anything of the kind. He comes out also with the fact that he wants to get married, and that the match is already being arranged . . . Of course he has some design, and, most likely, a bad one. But again, it is strange to think that he would tackle the matter so stupidly if his intentions were evil . . . Of course, I refused the money on your behalf, once for all. Altogether he seemed to me very strange . . . even . . . perhaps just a little mad. But I might be mistaken; it may be that he was trying to create a wrong impression. Maria Petrovna's death seems to have affected him . . ."

"God rest her soul!" exclaimed Pulkheria Alexandrovna. "I will always pray for her, always! What would have become of us now, Dunya, without that three thousand roubles? It is just as though it had fallen from heaven. Why, Rodya, this morning we had no more than three roubles to our name, and Dunechka and I were wondering how we could pawn her watch somewhere, so that we should not have to ask that man for money until he thought of it for himself."

Dunya seemed almost thunder-struck by Svidrigaylov's offer. She still stood deep in thought.

"He has some terrible purpose!" she half-whispered to herself, almost shuddering.

Raskolnikov noticed her immoderate alarm.

"I think I am destined to see him again more than once," he said to her.

"We will watch him! I will track him down!" exclaimed Razumikhin, full of zeal. "I won't let him out of my sight! Rodya has given me permission. He said to me not long ago: 'Look after my sister.' Will you give me permission too, Avdotya Romanovna?"

Dunya smiled and gave him her hand, but the worried look did not leave her face. Pulkheria Alexandrovna watched her



timidly, but the thought of the three thousand roubles was evidently comforting to her.

A quarter of an hour later they were all engaged in animated conversation. Even Raskolnikov, although he did not talk, had been listening attentively for some time. Razumikhin was holding forth.

‘And why, why should you go away?’ his excited rhetoric flowed on; ‘what will you do in a little town?’ The main thing is that you are all together here, and you need one another—you need one another very much, if you understand me. It is only for a little time . . . Accept me as a friend and partner, and I promise you we will devise a marvellous plan. Listen, I will explain it all to you in detail—the whole scheme. It had already occurred to me this morning, before anything had happened . . . This is the point: I have an uncle—a dear old man’, and this uncle has a capital of a thousand roubles, but he lives on his pension and does not need it. For two years he has been trying to insist on my borrowing this thousand and paying him six per cent. for it. I can see his idea—he simply wants to help me. But last year I didn’t need the money, this year, however, I was only waiting for him to come here and then I meant to borrow it. If you will contribute another thousand out of your three—that will be enough to begin with, and we will make a partnership. And to do what?’

Then Razumikhin began to unfold his plan, explaining at some length that almost all our booksellers and publishers are bad because they have very little knowledge of their wares, while reasonably good books pay, generally speaking, and make a profit, sometimes a considerable one. Razumikhin had been dreaming of a publishing business, having worked for two years for other publishers. He had a fairly good knowledge of three European languages, although he had told Raskolnikov a week before that his German was weak. But this was with the object of persuading his friend to take half the translation and three roubles of the advance payment; he had been lying, and Raskolnikov had known that he lied.

‘Why, I ask you, should we let the opportunity slip when we have one of the most important essentials—money of our own?’ cried Razumikhin enthusiastically. ‘Of course it will need a lot of hard work, but we will work hard, you, Avdotya Romanovna, Rodion, and I . . . Some books yield a famous profit

now! The most important foundation for the undertaking is that we shall know just what ought to be translated. We shall translate, and publish, and learn, all at the same time. I can be useful there, because I have had experience. I've been poking my nose into publishing for two years now, and I know all the ins and outs; you don't need to be a saint to make piskins, believe me! And why, why, let the chance slip? Why, I know and I've kept the knowledge to myself—two or three books, and the mere idea of translating and publishing them might well be worth a hundred roubles for each one; indeed, for the idea of one of them I wouldn't take five hundred. And yet, do you know, if I told a publisher of them, he might perhaps hum and ha over them, they are such blockheads! As for all the business of printing, paper, selling, leave that to me; I know all the tricks of the trade. We'll begin in a small way, then go on to bigger things, and at least we shall get a living out of it. In any case we shall get our capital back.'

Dunya's eyes shone.

'What you say pleases me very much, Dmiiri Prokofich,' she said.

'Of course, I know nothing about it,' put in Pulkheria Alexandrovna. 'Perhaps it is a good idea, but then again, God only knows! It is something new and unknown. We shall, of course, have to stay here, if only for a time . . .'

She looked at Rodya.

'What do you think, brother?' asked Dunya.

'I think it's a very good idea of us,' he answered. 'Needless to say, it is early yet to dream of a publishing house, but we really might issue five or six books with every confidence of success. I know one myself that would certainly go well. As for his knowing how to run the business, there is no doubt of that; he understands it . . . However, you will have plenty of time to make arrangements . . .'

'Hurrah!' shouted Razumikhin. 'Stop a minute, there is a flat here, in this very house, belonging to the same landlord. It is a separate flat, distinct from the hotel and not communicating with it, and it is furnished. There are three small rooms and the rent is moderate. Take it for the time being. I will pawn the watch for you tomorrow and bring you the money and then everything can be settled. The main thing is that you can all three live together, and Rodya can be with you . . . Where are you going, Rodya?'

'What Rodya, are you going already?' asked Pulkheria Alexandrovna in alarm.

'At such a moment!' cried Razumikhin.

Dunya looked at her brother with incredulous surprise. He had his cap in his hands and was getting ready to leave.

'You sound as though you were burying me, or saying good-bye for ever,' he said rather strangely.

He tried to smile, but somehow the smile was not a success.

'But really, who knows? Perhaps we are seeing each other for the last time,' he added unexpectedly.

He had been thinking this to himself, and somehow it said itself aloud.

'What is the matter?' cried his mother.

'Where are you going, Rodya?' asked Dunya in a strange tone.

'I really must go,' he answered confusedly, as though he were hesitating what to say. But his pale face showed a definite resolution.

'I wanted to say . . . as I was coming here . . . I wanted to tell you, mama . . . and you, Dunya, that it would be better if we parted for a short time. I don't feel well, I am not easy . . . I will come to you later, of my own accord, when . . . it is possible. I will remember you, and I love you . . . Leave me! Leave me alone! I had decided this, even before . . . I had firmly decided . . . Whatever happens to me, whether I perish or not, I want to be alone. Forget me altogether. It is better so . . . Don't make inquiries about me. When it is necessary, I will come myself, or . . . send for you. Perhaps it may all come right . . . But now, if you love me, give me up . . . Otherwise I feel I shall begin to hate you . . . Good bye!'

'Oh God!' cried Pulkheria Alexandrovna.

His mother and sister were both terribly frightened; so indeed was Razumikhin.

'Rodya, Rodya, he reconciled with us, and let us be as we were before!' exclaimed his poor mother.

Slowly he turned towards the door, slowly he walked towards it. Dunya followed him.

'What are you doing to our mother, brother?' she whispered, her eyes blazing with indignation.

He looked sadly at her.

'It's all right. I will come, I shall be coming,' he muttered only half-aloud, as if not fully conscious what he was talking of. He went out of the room.



'Heartless, wicked egoist!' exclaimed Dunya.

'He is ma-a-d, but not heartless! He is out of his mind. Don't you see that? It is heartless of you to call him so!' whispered Razumikhin hotly, close to her ear, while he clasped her hand tightly.

'I will come back,' he exclaimed, turning to Pulkheria Alexandrovna, who seemed dazed and numb, and he hurried from the room.

Raskolnikov was waiting for him at the end of the corridor.

'I knew you would come running after me,' he said. 'Go back to them, be with them . . . be with them tomorrow as well . . . and always. Perhaps . . . I will come . . . if I can. Good-bye.' And he walked away without offering his hand.

'But where are you going? What do you mean? What is the matter with you? You can't do this sort of thing!' murmured Razumikhin, utterly at a loss.

Raskolnikov stopped again.

'Once for all, never ask me about anything. I cannot answer you . . . Don't come to see me. I may perhaps come here . . . Leave me, but . . . *don't leave them*. Do you understand?'

It was dark in the corridor; they were standing near a lamp. For almost a minute they looked at one another in silence. Razumikhin remembered that minute all the rest of his life. With every moment Raskolnikov's intent and fiery glance pierced more powerfully into his mind and soul. Suddenly Razumikhin shuddered. Something strange had passed between them . . . some idea, something like a hint, something terrible and monstrous, suddenly understood on both sides . . . Razumikhin grew as pale as a corpse.

'Do you understand now?' said Raskolnikov abruptly, with painfully distorted features . . . 'Go back, go to them,' he added, turned away and hastily left the house . . .

I shall not describe that evening in Pulkheria Alexandrovna's room, how Razumikhin returned to them, how he tried to reassure them, how he swore that it was essential to allow the sick man to rest, swore that Rodya would come to them, that he would come every day, that he was very seriously upset, and must not be irritated; how he said that he, Razumikhin, would watch over him, he would get him a good doctor, the very best, he would arrange a consultation . . . In a word, from that evening Razumikhin became a son and a brother to them.

## CHAPTER IV

RASKOLNIKOV went straight to the house on the canal where Sonya lived. It was an old, green-painted house of three stories. He sought out the porter and got from him a vague direction to the tailor Kapernaumov's quarters. In a corner of the courtyard he found the entrance to a narrow, dark staircase, mounted it to the second floor and came out on to a passage that ran round the whole floor on the courtyard side. While he was wandering in the darkness, wondering where to find Kapernaumov's entrance, a door suddenly opened, three paces away from him; automatically he seized it.

'Who is there?' asked a woman's voice, full of alarm.

'Me . . . I was coming to see you,' answered Raskolnikov, walking into the tiny hall. In it a candle in a battered copper candlestick stood on a broken chair.

'You! Good heavens!' exclaimed Sonya weakly, standing as if transfixed.

'Which way is your room? Here?'

And, trying not to look at her, Raskolnikov walked quickly into the room.

A moment later Sonya came in with the candle, put it down, and stood in front of him, completely at a loss, full of indescribable agitation, and visibly frightened by his unexpected visit. Her pale face was suddenly flooded with colour, and tears even stood in her eyes . . . She felt at once sick and ashamed and glad . . . Raskolnikov turned away quickly and sat down at the table. He took in the whole room at a glance.

It was a large room, but very low-ceilinged, the only one let by the Kapernaumovs; the locked door to the left led to their other room. Opposite this, in the right-hand wall, was another door, always kept locked, which led into the next flat. Sonya's room was rather like a barn, the irregularity of its angles made it look misshapen. One wall, with three windows which gave on to the canal, was set obliquely, so that one corner, forming a terribly acute angle, seemed to run off into obscurity, and when the light was poor the whole of it could not even be seen properly; the other angle was monstrously obtuse. There was hardly any furniture in this large room. To the right, in the corner, was a bed, with a chair beside it nearer the door. Against the same wall, very close to the door into the

other flat, stood a plain deal table covered with a blue cloth, with two cane chairs near it. By the opposite wall, not far from the narrow corner, was a small, plain, wooden chest of drawers, looking lost in the empty spaces. This was all there was in the room. The yellowish, dirty, rubbed wallpaper was darkened in the corners; the room must have been damp and full of charcoal fumes in winter. Its poverty was evident; the bed had not even curtains.

Sonya silently watched the visitor who was so minutely and unceremoniously examining her room, and at last she even began to shake with fright, as though she stood before her judge and the ruler of her destiny.

'I am late . . . Is it eleven o'clock yet?' he asked, still without looking at her.

'Yes,' murmured Sonya. 'Yes, it is!' she repeated hastily, as though this offered her a way of escape. 'My landlord's clock has just struck . . . I heard it . . . It is.'

'I have come here for the last time,' went on Raskolnikov gloomily, although it was, in fact, the first. 'Perhaps I shall never see you again . . .'

'Are you . . . going away?'

'I don't know . . . Tomorrow . . .'

'So you won't be at Katerina Ivanovna's tomorrow?' said Sonya in a trembling voice.

'I don't know. Tomorrow morning everything . . . But that isn't the point; I came to say one word . . .'

He raised his preoccupied glance towards her, and suddenly noticed that he was sitting, while she still stood before him.

'Why are you standing? Do sit down,' he said in a different voice, quiet and kind.

She sat down. He looked at her gently and almost compassionately for some moments.

'How thin you are: just look at your hand! It is quite transparent. Your fingers are like a dead woman's.'

He took her hand. Sonya gave a faint smile.

'I was always like this,' she said.

'When you lived at home too?'

'Yes.'

'Well, of course you were!' He spoke jerkily, and his expression and the sound of his voice had suddenly changed once more. He looked round again.

'This is the place you rent from Kapernaumov?'



'Yes.'

'Are they there, on the other side of the door?'

'Yes . . . They have a room like this one.'

'Just one?'

'Yes.'

'If I lived in your room I should be afraid at night,' he remarked gloomily.

'My landlords are very kind and good,' answered Sonya, still in the same lost, dazed state. 'All the furniture and everything else . . . everything belongs to them. And they are very kind, and the children often come in here . . .'

'Aren't they stammerers or something?'

'Yes, . . . he stammers and is lame besides. His wife is the same . . . She doesn't exactly stammer, but she can't say all her words properly. She is kind, very kind. He is a former house-serf. And there are seven children . . . only the oldest stammers, the others are merely sickly . . . but they don't stammer. How do you know about them?' she added, with some astonishment.

'Your father told me about it, that time. He told me all about you . . . About how you went out at six o'clock and came back after eight, and about how Katerina Ivanovna knelt by your bed.'

Sonya was embarrassed.

'I thought I saw him today,' she whispered hesitatingly.

'Whom?'

'My father. I was in the street, just near here, at the corner, between nine and ten o'clock, and I seemed to see him walking in front of me. It might just have been him. I would have liked to go to Katerina Ivanovna's . . .'

'You were walking the streets?'

'Yes,' whispered Sonya abruptly, again looking down in confusion.

'I suppose Katerina Ivanovna used to beat you, when you lived at your father's?'

'Oh, no. Why do you say that? No!' Sonya looked at him almost with terror.

'You love her, then?'

'Love her? But of course!' Sonya almost wailed, clasping her hands together in distress. 'Oh, you speak of her . . . If only you knew! She is really just like a child . . . I suppose she has really lost her reason . . . from grief. But how clever she used

to be . . . how generous . . . how good! You know nothing, nothing at all . . . Oh!

Sonya said this almost despairingly, wringing her hands in excitement and distress. Her pale cheeks had flushed again, and her eyes looked full of anguish. She was plainly very deeply moved, and longing to speak, to plead, to find expression for something. An almost *insatiable* compassion, if one can use the expression, was depicted in every feature of her face.

'Beat me! What makes you say that? Good heavens, beat me! And even if she had, what of that? What of it? You know nothing, nothing at all . . . She is so unhappy, oh, so unhappy! And she is ill . . . She is seeking justice . . . She is pure. She believes there ought to be justice in everything, and she demands it . . . You might torture her, but she would not act unjustly. She does not see that one can't expect justice from people, and she gets exasperated . . . Like a child, like a child! She loves justice, she loves justice!'

'And what will become of you?'

Sonya looked questioninglv at him.

'They are left on your hands, you know. Even before, really, you had to bear the whole burden, and your father came to you for money to drink with. Well, but what will happen now?'

'I don't know,' said Sonya sadly.

'Will they remain where they are?'

'I don't know. They are behind with the rent, and I hear that the landlady said today that she wanted to give them notice, and Katerina Ivanovna says that she won't stay there another minute.'

'What makes her so confident? Is she relying on you?'

'Oh, no, don't speak like that' . . . We are one, we live as one.' Sonya had grown suddenly excited once more, and even angry, exactly like a ruffled canary or some other little bird. 'And besides, what can she do? What else can she do?' she asked, growing more violently excited. 'How she cried today. Her mind wanders, have you noticed? She gets muddled, first she is childishly anxious that everything shall be more tomorrow, and that we should have a dinner, and everything . . . then she is wringing her hands, coughing up blood, crying, and then suddenly she begins to knock her head against the wall, as if she were utterly desperate. Then she takes comfort again. She pins all her faith on you; she says you will help her, and that she will borrow a little money somewhere and go back

to her old home, taking me with her, and open a boarding-school for young ladies, with me to superintend it, and that a wonderful new life is beginning for us. She kisses me, caresses me, comforts me, and she really believes it all, all those fantastic dreams! How can you contradict her? And all day she has been washing, cleaning, mending; with her feeble strength she dragged the tub into the room, and then she couldn't breathe, and had to lie down on the bed. This morning she and I went to the market to buy shoes for Poltchka and Lena, because all they had have fallen to pieces, only we hadn't enough money to pay for them, we were a lot short, and she had chosen such nice little boots, because she has very good taste, you don't know. And she began to cry there in the shop, with the shopman there, because she hadn't enough. . . Oh, how sad it was to see her.'

'Well, after that one can understand . . . your living like this,' said Raskolnikov, with a bitter smile.

'And aren't *you* sorry, aren't *you* sorry for her?' exclaimed Sonya again. 'Yet I know you gave her your last penny, when you had seen nothing. If you had seen everything, good heavens! And how often I have driven her to tears, how often! Even this last week! Yes, I! Not more than a week before he died. I was cruel! And how many times I have behaved so, how many! . . . Oh, how painful it has been all day to remember it now!'

Sonya wrung her hands as she spoke, with the pain of remembering.

'You, cruel?'

'Yes, I, I! I had gone there,' she continued, weeping, 'and my poor father said to me, "Read to me, Sonya," he said, "I have a headache. Read to me . . . here is a book." It was some book he had got from Andrey Semenovitch Lebezvatrikov, who lives there, he used always to get such queer books. But I said "I must go," because I didn't want to read, and I had gone there chiefly to show Katerina Ivanovna some collars, Lizaveta, the dealer, had let me have some collars and cuffs cheap, and they were quite new and very pretty, figured ones. Katerina Ivanovna liked them very much; she put them on and looked at herself in the glass and she liked them very, very much. "Please give them to me, Sonya," she said. She said *please*, and she so wanted them. But when could she wear them? It was just that they reminded her of the old, happy days. She



looked at herself in the glass and admired herself, and she had had no dresses, none at all, no pretty things, for so many years! And she would never ask anybody for anything; she is proud; she would rather give away her own last possessions, but now here she was asking for them—she liked them so much! But I didn't want to give them away. "What use are they to you, Katerina Ivanovna?" I said. Yes, that is how I spoke to her. I should not have said that to her! She just looked at me, and she was so terribly sad that I had refused her, that it made me sorry to see her. . . . And she wasn't sad about the collars, but because I had refused her, I could see that. And now I wish I could change it all, do it all over again, take back all those words. . . . Oh, I. . . . But why am I saying all this? . . . It makes no difference to you.'

'You knew this Lizaveta, the dealer?'

'Yes. . . . Did you know her?' asked Sonya, rather surprised.

'Katerina Ivanovna has consumption, in a very advanced stage; she will soon die,' said Raskolnikov after a silence, ignoring the question.

'Oh, no, no, no!' With an unconscious gesture Sonya seized both his hands in hers, as though imploring him not to let it happen.

'But really it will be better for her to die.'

'No, not better, not better. It will not be better at all!' she repeated in terror, hardly conscious of what she said.

'And the children? Where can they go then, except here?'

'Oh, I don't know! . . . ' cried Sonya, almost desperate, clutching her head. It was plain that the idea had occurred to her many, many times before and that he had only made it start up again.

'Well, if you become ill and are taken to hospital, while Katerina Ivanovna is still alive, what will happen then?' he insisted pitilessly.

'Ah, why do you say that? Why do you say it? It cannot happen!' Awful terror distorted Sonya's face.

'Cannot happen?' went on Raskolnikov, with a cruel smile. 'Are you insured against it? Then what will become of them? The whole lot will be turned into the street, she will cough as she begs, and knock her head against the wall, as she did today, and the children will cry. . . . She will fall down in the street and be taken to the police and then to the hospital to die, and the children. . . .'

'Oh, no! . . . God will not allow it!' broke at last from Sonya's over-burdened heart. She had listened with an imploring face, with her eyes on him and her hands clasped in silent supplication, as though it all depended on him.

Raskolnikov got up and walked about the room. A minute passed. Sonya stood with hands and head hanging, in terrible anguish.

'Can't you save, put something away for a rainy day?' he asked, stopping short in front of her.

'No,' whispered Sonya.

'Of course you can't! Have you tried?' he went on, almost sneering.

'Yes.'

'And it came to nothing! Of course it did! No need to ask!'

He resumed his pacing about the room. Another minute went by.

'You don't get money every day?'

Sonya grew more confused than ever, and again colour flooded her face.

'No,' she whispered, with a painful effort.

'Polechka will probably go the same way,' he said abruptly.

'No! No! That can't be! No!' Sonya almost shrieked in desperation, as if someone had plunged a knife into her. 'God—God will not allow such a terrible thing! . . .'

'He lets it happen to others.'

'No, no! God will protect her! God will protect her!' she repeated, beside herself.

'Perhaps God does not exist,' answered Raskolnikov, with malicious enjoyment. He looked at her and laughed.

Sonya's face underwent a sudden awful change, a tremor passed across it. She looked at him with inexpressible reproach; she tried to say something, but she could not utter a word, and only covered her face with her hands and sobbed bitterly.

'You say Katerina Ivanovna's mind is deranged; your own mind is deranged,' he said after a short silence.

Some five minutes passed. He went on walking up and down the room in silence, without looking at her. At last he went up to her; his eyes were glittering. He took her by the shoulders with both hands and looked into her weeping face. His piercing eyes were dry and inflamed, his lips twitched violently . . . With a sudden swift movement he stooped, fell to the ground,

and kissed her foot. Sonya started back in fear, as though he were mad. Indeed, he looked quite mad.

'Why, why do you do that? To me?' she murmured, turning white, and her heart contracted painfully.

He rose at once.

'I prostrated myself not before you, but before all human suffering,' he said wildly, and walked away to the window. 'Listen,' he added, turning back to her after a minute; 'not long ago I told an offensive fellow that he was not worth your little finger . . . and that I did my sister honour today, seating her beside you.'

'Oh, why did you say that? Was she there?' cried Sonya, frightened. 'An honour to sit with me! But I am . . . a fallen creature . . . Ah, why did you say it?'

'I said it not because of your dishonour and your sin, but because of your great suffering. That you are a great sinner is true,' he added, almost exultantly, 'but your greatest sin is that you have abandoned and destroyed yourself *in vain*. Is that not horrible? Is it not horrible that you live in this filth, which is so loathsome to you, while at the same time you know (you have only to open your eyes) that you are helping nobody by it, and not saving anybody from anything? Tell me,' he said, almost frenziedly, 'how such shame and such baseness can exist in you side by side with other feelings, so different and so holy! Surely it would be better, a thousand times better and wiser, to plunge into the water and end it all.'

'But what will become of them?' asked Sonya faintly, gazing at him with anguish, but also without any apparent surprise at the suggestion. Raskolnikov looked at her strangely.

He had read it all in her look. She must indeed have had that idea herself. Perhaps many times in her despair she had seriously thought of putting an end to everything, seriously enough not to be surprised now when he suggested it. She had not noticed even the harshness of his words. The meaning of his reproaches and his peculiar view of her shame had of course also escaped her notice, as he saw. But he fully understood how monstrously she was tormented, and had long been tormented, by the thought of her dishonourable and shameful position. But what, he wondered, what could have prevented her until now from resolving to end it all? And it was only now that he fully realized what those poor little orphans and the pitiful, half-mad Katerina Ivanovna, with her consumption



and her way of knocking her head against the wall, meant to Sonya.

Nevertheless, it was clear, again, that Sonya with her character and the upspringing she had in spite of everything received, could not in any event continue as she was. The question remained for him—how could she have stayed in her present situation for so long without going mad, even if it were beyond her strength to throw herself into the water? Of course he understood that Sonya's position in society was fortuitous, was an accident, although unfortunately not exceptional or isolated. But the accidental nature of her position, the certain degree of education she had had, and all her earlier life might, it seemed, have killed her at the very first step on that a morrent path. What had supported her? Surely it could not be depravity? All her shame had obviously taught her only mechanically; no trace of real corruption had yet crept into her heart; he could see that, it was her real self that stood before him.

'Three ways are open to her,' he thought, 'to throw herself into the canal, to enter a madhouse, or . . . or, finally, to abandon herself to debauchery that will numb her mind and turn her heart to stone.' The last idea was repulsive to him, but he was sceptical, he was young, he had an abstract and consequently cruel mind, and therefore he could not but believe that the last course, of yielding to corruption, was the most likely.

'But can that be true?' he cried within his heart. 'Can that creature, who still preserves the purity of her soul, consciously sink at last into the abominable stench of that pit? Is it possible that she already feels the attraction, and that she has only been able to endure until now because vice no longer seems so disgusting to her? No, no, that cannot be!' he exclaimed, as Sonya had earlier. No, what has kept her from the canal until now is the thought of sin, and *they, those children* . . . And if she has not gone mad before this . . . But who can say she has not? Is her reason really sound? Can sane people talk as she does? Could a healthy mind make her judgements? How can she possibly cross over her own destruction, above the stinking pit into which she is being drawn, and wave her hands and stop her ears when she is told of the danger? Why does she?—Because she expects a miracle to happen? Probably. And are not all these things signs of madness?'—

He clung obstinately to this idea. It was a solution that

he preferred to any other. He fixed his eyes intently on her

‘So you pray a great deal to God, Sonya?’ he asked her

Sonya said nothing. He stood and waited for her answer.

‘What should I do without God?’ she said in a rapid, forceful whisper, glancing at him for a moment out of suddenly flashing eyes, and pressing his hand with hers.

‘Well, there it is!’ he thought.

‘And what does God do for you in return?’ he asked, probing deeper.

Sonya was silent for a long time, as though unable to answer. Her flat little chest heaved with agitation.

‘Be quiet! Do not ask! You are not worthy! . . .’ she exclaimed suddenly, looking at him severely and indignantly.

‘That’s it, that’s it!’ he repeated to himself, insistently

‘He does everything,’ she said in a rapid whisper, her eyes again downcast.

‘That is the solution! That is the explanation!’ he decided, watching her with greedy curiosity. He looked with a new, strange, almost painful feeling at that thin, pale, angular little face, at those timid blue eyes that were capable of flashing with such fire, such stern, strong feeling, at that small figure, still shaking with indignation and anger, and it all seemed to him more and more strange, almost impossible. ‘She has religious mania!’ he repeated firmly to himself.

On the chest of drawers lay a book. He had noticed it every time he passed in his pacing up and down; now he took it up and looked at it. It was a Russian translation of the New Testament. Its leather binding was old and worn.

‘Where did you get this?’ he called across the room. She was still standing in the same place, a few steps from the table.

‘It was brought to me,’ she answered unwillingly, without looking at him.

‘Who brought it?’

‘Lizaveta. I asked her to.’

‘Lizaveta! How strange!’ he thought. Everything about Sonya seemed stranger and more extraordinary with every minute. He took the book to the candle and began to turn over the pages.

‘Where is that about Lazarus?’ he asked abruptly.

Sonya looked steadily at the ground without answering. She was standing turned a little away from the table.

'Where is that about the raising of Lazarus? Find it for me, Sonya.'

She glanced at him sidelong.

'You are looking in the wrong place . . . In the fourth gospel . . .' she whispered sternly, without moving towards him.

'Find it and read it to me,' he said. He sat down, with his elbows on the table and his head propped in his hands, and sombrely prepared to listen, with his eyes turned away.

'In two or three weeks' time they will be welcoming her into the asylum! It looks as though I should be there too, if not worse,' he muttered to himself.

Sonya advanced hesitantly to the table. She had heard his strange request with incredulity, but she took the book.

'Haven't you read it?' she asked, frowning at him across the table. Her voice grew more and more severe.

'A long time ago . . . When I was at school. Read it!'

'And haven't you heard it in church?'

'No, I . . . didn't go. Do you go often?'

'N-no,' whispered Sonya.

Raskolnikov laughed.

'I understand . . . You won't go to your father's funeral to-morrow, then?'

'Yes, I shall. I was there last week . . . I had a requiem sung.'

'Whose?'

'Lizaveta's. She was murdered with an axe.'

His nerves grew tauter and tauter. His head was beginning to swim.

'You were friendly with Lizaveta?'

'Yes . . . She was good . . . She came here . . . not often . . . she couldn't. We used to read together and . . . talk. She will see God.'

The bookish words fell strangely on his ears. And here was again something new: some sort of secret meetings with Lizaveta. And both of them religious maniacs.

'I shall become one myself here! It is catching!' he thought. 'Read!' he exclaimed insistently and irritably.

Sonya still hesitated. Her heart was throbbing. Somehow she dared not read to him. He looked at the 'unhappy mad-woman' almost with torment.

'Why? You are not a believer, are you? . . .' she whispered softly, gasping a little.



'Read! I want you to!' he insisted. 'You used to read to Lizaveta!'

Sonya opened the book and found the place. Her hands shook, her voice failed. Twice she tried to begin, but could not utter the first word.

'Now a certain man was sick, named Lazarus, of Bethany' . . . she pronounced at last, with an effort, but after two or three words her voice broke like an over-strained violin string. Her breath caught and her heart laboured.

Raskolnikov half understood why Sonya could not make herself read to him, and the more he understood, the more roughly and irritably he insisted. He knew very well how difficult it was for her to expose and betray all that was *her own*. He understood that those feelings in fact constituted her real long-standing *secret*, cherished perhaps since her girlhood, in the midst of her family, with an unhappy father, a stepmother crazed by grief, and hungry children, in an atmosphere of hideous shrieks and reproaches. At the same time he now knew and knew for certain that although she was troubled and feared something terrible if she were to read now, yet she had a tormenting desire to read, and read for *him* to hear, and read *now*, 'whatever might happen afterwards' . . . He could see all this in her eyes and in her emotional agitation . . . She mastered herself, overcame the spasm in her throat, which had cut off her voice in the first verse, and continued the reading of the eleventh chapter of St. John. She came to the nineteenth verse:

'And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

'Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary sat still in the house.

'Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

'But I know, that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee.'

She stopped again, anticipating with shame that her voice would again begin to quiver and break

'Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again

'Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.

'Jesus said unto her, *I am the resurrection and the life*: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live

'And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?'

'She saith unto him' and drawing a painful breath, Sonya read clearly but strongly, as though she herself were confessing her faith for all to hear.) 'Yea, Lord, I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.'

She seemed about to stop, and glanced quickly up at *him*, but then controlled herself and went on reading. Raskolnikov sat listening, motionless, his elbows on the table, his eyes turned away. She read on to the thirty-second verse.

'Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.'

'When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled.'

'And said, Where have ye laid him?' They said unto him, Lord, come and see.

'Jesus wept.'

'Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him!'

'And some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died?'

Raskolnikov turned and looked at her with emotion. Yes, that was it! Already she was shaking with real, genuine fever. He had expected this. She was approaching the moment of the greatest, the unheard-of miracle, and was filled with immense triumph. Her voice rang like a bell with the power of triumph and joy. Her eyes had grown dark, and the lines of print danced before them, but she knew the passage by heart. In the verse, 'Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blind . . .' she lowered her voice, and the warmth and passion of it expressed the doubt, reproach, and censure of the blind, unbelieving Jews, who were so soon, in an instant, to fall to the ground as if struck by lightning, sobbing, and believing . . . 'And *he, he* who is also blind and unbelieving, he also will hear in a moment, he also will believe. Yes, yes! Here and now!' she dreamed, and trembled with joyful expectancy.

'Jesus therefore again groaning in himself cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it.'

'Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of

him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh for he hath been dead *four* days.'

Sonya strongly emphasized the word *four*.

'Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God?'

'Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me.

'And I knew that thou hearest me always but because of the people which stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me.

'And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, *Lazarus, come forth*.

'*And he that was dead came forth*' (she read, loudly and exultantly, cold and trembling as though her own eyes had seen it 'bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

'*Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him.*'

She read, and indeed could read, no farther, but closed the book and stood up quickly.

'That is all about the raising of Lazarus,' she whispered abruptly and sternly, and stood without moving, turned away from him and not daring to raise her eyes to him, although she were ashamed. Her feverish trembling continued. The candle-end had long since burned low in the twisted candlestick, dimly lighting the poverty-stricken room and the murderer and the harlot who had come together so strangely to read the eternal book. Five minutes or more passed.

'I came to say something to you,' said Raskolnikov loudly and abruptly, with a frown. He got up and went to Sonya, who raised her eyes silently to his. His look was grim and expressed a wild resolution.

'Today I deserted my family,' he said, 'my mother and sister. I shall not go to them now. I have made a complete break.'

'Why?' asked Sonya, stupefied. Her recent meeting with his mother and sister had left a strong, if rather obscure, impression upon her. She heard the news of the rupture almost with terror.

'Now I have only you,' he added. 'Let us go on together . . .



I have come to you. We are both alike accursed, let us go together!"

His eyes glittered. 'He is like somebody half mad!' thought Sonya in her turn.

'Go where?' she asked, frightened, and involuntarily stepped back.

'How should I know? I know only that our paths lie together, and I know it for certain – that is all. We have one goal!'

She looked at him without understanding. She knew only that he was terribly and infinitely unhappy.

'None of them will understand anything, if you talk to them,' he went on, 'but I have understood. I have come to you because I need you.'

'I don't understand . . .' whispered Sonya.

'You will understand afterwards. Haven't you done the same? You too have stepped over the barrier . . . you were able to do it. You laid hands on yourself, you destroyed a life . . . *your own* (that makes no difference!). You might have lived by reason and the spirit, but you will end on the Haymarket . . . But you cannot endure, and if you remain *alone* you will go out of your senses, like me. You are like a madwoman even now, so we must go together, by the same path! Let us go!'

'Why? Why do you say that?' said Sonya, strangely and passionately stirred by his words.

'Why? Because you can't remain like this – that's why! You must judge things seriously and directly at last, and not weep like a child and cry that God won't allow it. What will happen if you really are taken to the hospital tomorrow? She is out of her mind and consumptive, she will soon die, but the children? Won't Polechka be lost? Have you never seen children at the corner of the street, who have been sent out by their mothers to beg? I know where and how such mothers live. Children cannot remain children there. There a seven-year-old child is depraved and a thief. And yet children are the image of Christ. "Of such is the kingdom of God." He commanded us to love them and cherish them, they are the future of mankind . . .'

'but what must we do? What must we do?' repeated Sonya, crying hysterically and wringing her hands.

'What must we do? Demolish what must be demolished, once and for all, that is all, and take the suffering on ourselves!'

What? Don't you understand? You will understand afterwards . . . Freedom and power, but above all, power! Power over all trembling creatures, over the whole ant-heap! . . . That is the goal! Remember this! These are my parting words to you! This may be the last time I shall talk to you. If I do not come tomorrow, you will hear all about it, and then remember what I say to you now. And at some later time, after many years, you may come to understand what they mean. If I do come tomorrow, I will tell you who killed Lizaveta. Good-bye.'

Sonya started with terror.

'Do you really know who killed her?' she asked, turning cold with horror, and looking at him wildly.

'I know, and I will tell you . . . You, and only you! I have chosen you. I shall not come to ask your forgiveness, I shall simply tell you. I chose you long ago to tell this thing to, when your father talked about you. I thought of it when Lizaveta was alive. Good-bye. Don't give me your hand. Tomorrow!'

He went out. Sonya had looked at him as if he were mad; but she seemed insane herself, and she felt it. Her head was spinning. 'Good heavens! How does he know who killed Lizaveta? What did those words mean? It is terrible!' But all the same, *the idea* did not cross her mind. Never once! Never once! . . . 'Oh, he must be dreadfully unhappy' . . . He had left his mother and sister. Why? What had happened? What were his intentions? What was that he had said to her? He had kissed her foot and said . . . said (yes, he had said it clearly) that he could not live without her . . . Oh, heavens.'

Sonya passed a feverish and delirious night. Sometimes she started up, weeping and wringing her hands, then sank back again into fitful sleep, and dreamed of Polechka, of Katerina Ivanovna, of Lizaveta, of reading the gospel, and of him . . . him with his pale face and burning eyes . . . He would kiss her foot, and weep. Oh, heavens!

Beyond the door on the right, which shut off her room from Gertrude Karlovna Ressach's flat, was another room, which had long been empty. It belonged to Mrs. Ressach's flat, and was to let; cards on the gates of the house and notices stuck to the windows which overlooked the canal advertised this fact. Sonya had long been accustomed to thinking of the room as unoccupied. But all through that interview, behind the door of the empty room, Mr. Svidrigaylov had been concealed, standing and listening. When Raskolnikov went out, he stood

there for a moment longer, thinking, then tiptoed into his own room next door, got a chair, and carried it close to the door leading into Sonya's room. The conversation had seemed to him interesting and important, and he had greatly enjoyed it — enjoyed it so much that he had brought the chair so that in future, the next day, for example, he should not be subjected again to the unpleasantness of standing on his feet for a whole hour, but be more comfortably placed and thus enjoy complete satisfaction in every respect.

## CHAPTER V

THE next morning, when, at exactly eleven o'clock, Raskolnikov went into the Criminal Investigation section of the building which housed the police office of the Spasskaya District and asked to be announced to Porfiry Petrovich, he was surprised to be kept waiting so long; it was at least ten minutes before he was summoned. According to his calculations they ought to have pounced on him at once. Meanwhile he stood in the waiting room, and people who seemed to have no concern with him came and went past him. In the next room, which looked like an office, several clerks sat writing, and it was obvious that not one of them had the least idea who or what Raskolnikov was. He gazed round him with an anxious suspicious air, trying to see if there were not some guard near him, or somebody posted to keep a secret watch on him, so that he should not go away, but there was nothing of the kind. He saw clerks, persons occupied with trivial business, and a few other people, but nobody had anything to do with him, as far as they were concerned, he could go to the farthest ends of the earth. He became more and more firmly convinced that if yesterday's enigmatic stranger, that apparition sprung out of the ground, really had seen everything, really knew everything, he, Raskolnikov, would hardly have been left to stand here and wait in peace. Would they indeed have waited for him until eleven o'clock, when he condescended to come to them? It followed that that man had either not yet reported what he knew or . . . or knew nothing at all, had seen nothing (indeed, how could he have seen?), and consequently that everything that had happened yesterday had been no more than a phantasmagoria created by his sick and excited imagination. Even yesterday, at the time of his intensest alarm and despair, this



conjecture had suggested itself to him with growing force. Now, as he turned all these thoughts over in his head, and prepared to renew the conflict, he realized suddenly that he was trembling—and at the idea that he could tremble with fear before the hateful Porfiry Petrovich, anger began to seethe in his heart. More than anything else he dreaded another encounter with that man; he felt infinite, boundless hatred for him, and he even feared that his hatred would make him betray himself. So violent was his indignation that his trembling ceased at once; he was ready to go in with a cold and insolent air, and he promised himself to say as little as possible, but to watch and listen, and this time at least, come what might, to conquer his sick and overstrained nerves. At this moment Porfiry Petrovich sent for him to come in.

Porfiry Petrovich proved to be alone in his office. This was a room neither large nor small, containing a large writing desk standing in front of a sofa upholstered in imitation leather, a bureau, a bookcase in one corner, and several chairs. It was all Government furniture, made of yellow polished wood. In one corner, in the wall, or rather the partition, at the back of the room, there was a closed door; there must be other rooms beyond the partition. When Raskolnikov came in, Porfiry Petrovich at once shut the door behind him, and they remained alone. He had met his visitor with an appearance of great cheerfulness and affability, and it was only a few minutes afterwards that Raskolnikov noticed some signs that he was rather flustered, as though something had happened to put him at a loss or he had been discovered in something very private and secret.

'Ah, my dear chap! Here you are . . . in our territory . . . ' began Porfiry, holding out both hands to him. 'Well, do sit down, old man! But perhaps you don't like being called "my dear chap" and . . . "old man" *tout court*, like that? Please don't think I'm being too familiar . . . Sit here, on the sofa.'

Raskolnikov sat down without taking his eyes from him.

'In our territory', the apologies for undue familiarity, the French expression '*tout court*', and so on, were all characteristic. 'He held out both his hands to me, but he didn't actually give me one; he drew them back in time,' he thought, with a flash of suspicion. They were each watching the other, but as soon as their glances met, both turned their eyes away like lightning.

'I have brought you this paper . . . about the watch . . . here! Is that right, or shall I write it out again?'

'What? The paper? Yes, yes . . . Don't worry, it is quite all right,' said Porfiry Petrovich, as though he were in a hurry, and only after he had said it took the paper and looked at it. 'Yes, quite all right. Nothing else is necessary,' he repeated, with the same rapidity, and laid the paper on the desk. A minute later, while he was talking of something else, he took it up again and transferred it to his bureau.

'I think you said yesterday that you wished to question me . . . officially . . . about my acquaintance with the . . . murdered woman,' began Raskolnikov again. 'Why did I put in that *I think*?' flashed through his mind. 'And why am I so worried at having put it in?' came in another flash.

Suddenly he felt that, simply because he was in Porfiry's presence, and had exchanged glances and one or two words with him, his uneasiness had instantly increased to gigantic proportions . . . and that this was terribly dangerous: his nerves were tense, his emotion was increasing. 'This is disastrous! . . . I shall say too much again.'

'Yes, yes, yes! Don't worry! There is plenty of time, plenty of time,' murmured Porfiry Petrovich, who was wandering aimlessly round the table, with occasional dashes, as it were, first to the window, then to the bureau, then back to the table, now avoiding Raskolnikov's suspicious gaze, now suddenly standing still and looking straight at him. This small, plump, round figure, rolling like a ball about the room, and bouncing back off all the walls and corners, produced a very strange impression.

'We have plenty of time, plenty of time! . . . Do you smoke? Have you your own? Here, here's a cigarette,' he went on, handing one to his visitor . . . 'You know, I am receiving you here, but my own flat is just there, on the other side of the partition . . . my official quarters. Just now I am out of it for a time. Some repairs had to be done. Now it's almost ready for me . . . you know, an official flat is a famous thing, isn't it? What do you think?'

'Yes, it is,' answered Raskolnikov, looking at him almost mockingly.

'A famous thing, famous . . . ' repeated Porfiry Petrovich, as if he had begun to think of something else. 'Yes, famous!' he almost shouted at last, suddenly turning his eyes on Raskol-

nikov and coming to a stop two paces away from him. There was something stupid and trivial about this constant repetition that contrasted strongly with the serious, contemplative, and enigmatic look he now bent on his visitor.

All this still further intensified Raskolnikov's bitter malice, and he could no longer resist issuing an ironical and rather indiscreet challenge.

'Do you know,' he said suddenly, looking almost insolently at Porfiry Petrovich, and delighting in his own insolence, 'there must exist, I believe, a lawyer's procedure, a legal method, applying to all sorts of investigations, by which they begin with trivial matters, far removed from the real subject, or even with something serious, so long as it is quite irrelevant, so as to encourage the person being interrogated, or rather to distract his attention and lull his mistrust, and then suddenly and unexpectedly stun him by hitting him on the crown of his head with the most dangerous and fatal question. Am I right? Isn't the principle enshrined in all the rules and precepts to this day?'

'Yes, yes . . . So you think that what I was saying about official quarters . . . eh?' Porfiry Petrovich screwed up his eyes and winked; a look of cheerful slyness passed over his face, his wrinkled forehead became smooth, his eyes narrowed, his features relaxed, and he abandoned himself to prolonged nervous laughter which made his whole body quiver and shake. He was looking straight into Raskolnikov's eyes. The latter, with an effort, began to laugh too, but when Porfiry, seeing him also laughing, went off into guffaws which turned him crimson in the face, Raskolnikov's repulsion overcame his caution—he stopped laughing, scowled, and watched him with a fixed stare of hatred all the time that his long fit of laughter, which seemed indeed deliberately prolonged, lasted. The lack of caution was not all, however, on one side—Porfiry, apparently caught laughing at his visitor to his face, showed very little embarrassment at the aversion this treatment had aroused. To Raskolnikov this seemed very significant, he realized that earlier also Porfiry Petrovich had not been in the least embarrassed, but that perhaps he, Raskolnikov, had fallen into a trap; that there was plainly something here, some sort of motive, he knew nothing of; that perhaps all Porfiry's preparations had already been made, and now, this minute, they would be disclosed, and overwhelm him . . .



He went straight to the point at once, rising and taking up his cap.

'Portiry Petrovich,' he began resolutely, but in rather violent agitation, 'yesterday you expressed a desire that I should come here for some interrogation' (he stressed the word *interrogation*). 'I have come, and if you need to ask me any questions, ask them, but if not, allow me to leave. I have no time to spare, I have things to do . . . I have to be at the funeral of the clerk who was run over, about whom you . . . also know,' he added, was immediately angry with himself for the addition, and then grew at once even more agitated. 'I am sick and tired of all this, and have been for a long time . . . It was partly that that made me ill . . . and in one word,' he almost shrieked, feeling that the phrase about being ill was even more out of place, 'in one word, be good enough either to question me or to let me go at once . . . and if you question me, do it in the proper form! Otherwise I shall not allow it; meanwhile, good-bye for the present, since there is nothing for us two to do now.'

'Good Lord! What are you talking about? What is there for me to question you about?' clucked Portiry Petrovich, with a complete change of tone and aspect, and an instant cessation of laughter. 'Please don't upset yourself,' he fussed now, beginning to wander about once more, and busying himself with making Raskolnikov sit down again. 'There is no hurry, there's no hurry, and all that is pure nonsense! I am, on the contrary, very glad that you have at last come to see me . . . I look upon you as a visitor. And you must forgive me, Rodion Romanovich, old man, for that confounded laughter. Rodion Romanovich! I think that is your patronymic? . . . I'm all nerves, and you amused me very much by the witness of your remark; sometimes, I assure you, I laugh till I shake like a jelly, for half an hour on end . . . I laugh easily. With my constitution I am afraid I might even have a stroke. But sit down, what's the matter? . . . Please, old man, or I shall think you are angry . . .'

Raskolnikov said nothing, but watched and listened, still scowling angrily. He sat down, however, but kept his cap in his hands.

'I will tell you one thing, Rodion Romanovich, old chap, about myself, or rather in explanation of my character,' went on Portiry Petrovich, still fussing about the room and, as before, apparently trying to avoid meeting his guest's eyes.

'I, you know, am a bachelor, and neither fashionable nor famous, and besides, I have developed as far as I am capable of, grown ripe, and settled down, and . . . and . . . have you ever noticed, Rodion Romanovich, that among us, here in Russia I mean, and especially in our St. Petersburg circles, if two intelligent men, like you and me, who do not know each other very well, but respect one another, so to speak, if two such men come together, for quite half an hour they cannot find anything to talk about—they sit there stuffily and feel awkward? Everybody can find some subject of conversation—the ladies, for instance, or fashionable people, people in high society, can always talk about something, *c'est de rigueur*, but middling people like us, thinking ones, that is, are all awkward and tongue-tied . . . What is the cause of this? Whether it is because we have no interest in public affairs, or because we are very honest and don't want to deceive one another, I don't know. What do you think, en? Put your cap down though; you look as though you were leaving at once. It makes me uncomfortable to see you . . . And I really am delighted . . .'

Raskolnikov put down his cap, still listening silently and seriously, with a frown, to Porfiry's vague, confused chatter. 'Why, can he really be trying to distract my attention with this stupid talk?'

'I can't very well offer you coffee here, but why not sit and enjoy yourself for five minutes or so with a friend? Porfiry chattered on without stopping. 'You know, all the official duties . . . Don't mind, old chap, if I keep walking up and down; excuse me, I am very much afraid of offending you, but exercise is simply essential to me. I am always sitting, and I am so glad to move about for a few minutes . . . haemorrhoids, you know . . . I am always meaning to try gymnastics for it; they say you can see all sorts of quite high officials, even Privy Councillors, skipping with a little rope—what a thing science is, in our day and age! Just so . . . But about my duties here, interrogations and all those formalities . . . you yourself mentioned questioning, old man . . . well, you know, Rodion Romanovich, old man, sometimes the questioner is let astray, more than the one he is examining. You made a very just and penetrating remark on that subject just now, old man.' (Raskolnikov had made no such remark. 'You get all tangled up! Yes, really; tangled up! And it's all the same thing over and over, over and over, like beating a drum! There is a reform

on the way, and we are all to be at any rate called something different. He, he, he! As for our lawyer's procedure, as you so wittily term it—there I am completely in agreement with you. Who is there, tell me, out of all the people accused of crimes, even if they are absolute yokels, who does not know that they will try to lull his mistrust (as you happily express it—with irrelevant questions, and then unexpectedly stun him, he, he, he! by hitting him on the crown of his head, to use your delightful metaphor, as if with an axe, he, he, he! So you really thought that when I talked of my flat I intended . . . he, he! You are very ironical. Well, I won't say any more. Oh, yes, by the way—one thing leads to another—you mentioned formalities just now, in connexion with questioning, you know . . . But why bother about formalities?—in many cases, you know, they mean nothing. Sometimes just a friendly talk is much more use. The formalities will always be there, if necessary; allow me to assure you of that. But what are they, after all, I ask you? An examining magistrate ought not to be hampered by them at every step. His business is, so to speak, some sort of an art, in its own way . . . he, he, he!

Porfiry Petrovich paused a moment for breath. He had been running on without a break, now throwing off meaningless empty phrases, now slipping in a few enigmatic words, then again wandering off into nonsense. He was almost running about the room, with his fat little legs moving faster and faster, his eyes fixed on the ground, and his right hand thrust behind his back, while his left gesticulated ceaselessly, making various gestures that were always extraordinarily out of keeping with his words. Suddenly Raskolnikov noticed that once or twice, as he scurried about the room, he seemed to pause near the door for a moment, as though he were listening. 'Can he be expecting something?'

'But you were really quite right,' Porfiry began again gaily, looking at Raskolnikov with extraordinary artlessness—which made him start and instantly prepare himself for something—'really right, when you laughed so wittily at our legal forms, he, he, he! Indeed, our profound psychological methods—some of them—are made quite ridiculous, and perhaps even useless, if formalities are allowed to cramp them. Yes . . . I am talking of forms again—well, if I recognize or rather suspect, that this, that, or the other man is guilty, in some case that is in my hands . . . You are reading law, I believe, Rodion Romanovich?'



'I was . . .'

'Then here is an example to guide you, so to speak, in future—but please don't imagine that I am venturing to instruct you—look at the articles on crime you publish! No, only I take the liberty of putting this example before you as a matter of fact—so suppose I consider that this person or that is a criminal, why, I ask, should I worry him before the proper time, even if I have evidence against him? One man, for example, I feel obliged to arrest at once, but another may be quite different, and so why not allow him to go free for a time, he, he? No, I see you do not quite understand, so I will put it more clearly: if I put him in custody too soon, I may by that be giving him, so to speak, moral support. He, he! You are laughing?' (Raskolnikov had no idea of laughing; he sat with compressed lips, with his feverish gaze fixed on Porfiry's eyes.) 'Yet it is true, especially with some types, because people are very different; but of course only practice can guide one. Now you will say: evidence. Well, suppose there is evidence; but evidence, you know, old man, cuts both ways for the most part. I am only an investigator, and fallible like everybody else, I confess, I should like to produce deductions that are, so to speak, mathematically clear; I want to have evidence that is like two and two make four! I want something like direct and incontrovertible proof! But if I put a man in custody at the wrong moment—even though I am sure that it was *he*—I may very likely be destroying my only means of incriminating him further; and why? Because I shall be giving him a definite position, so to speak, I shall give him, as it were, psychological certainty and tranquillity, and once he understands that he is definitely accused, he will retreat from me into his shell. They say that in Sebastopol, immediately after the battle of the Alma, intelligent people were terribly afraid that the enemy would attack at once with all his force and take the town, but when they saw that the enemy preferred a regular siege and was already preparing his trenches, those intelligent people, they say, were thoroughly reassured and highly delighted: if a regular siege was intended, that meant that things would drag on for two months at least! You're laughing again. You still don't believe me? Well, you are right as well. You are right, you are right! These are all special cases, I agree; and the present case is really special! But you ought to bear it in mind, my dear Rodion Romanovich, that the average case, the case for which all the legal forms

and rules are devised, which they are calculated to deal with, when they are written down in the textbooks, does not exist at all, because every case, every crime, for example, as soon as it really occurs, at once becomes a quite special case, and sometimes it is absolutely unlike anything that has ever happened before. Very comical things of that kind sometimes occur. Now, if I leave one gentleman quite alone, if I don't arrest him or worry him in any way, but if he knows, or at least suspects, every minute of every hour, that I know everything down to the last detail, and am watching him day and night with ceaseless vigilance, if he is always conscious of the weight of suspicion and fear, he is absolutely certain to lose his head. He will come to me of his own accord, and perhaps commit some blunder, which will provide, so to speak, mathematical proof, like two and two make four - and that is very satisfactory. This may happen even with a boorish peasant, all the more with people of our sort, the contemporary intellectuals, with their one-sided development. Because, my dear chap, a very important point is understanding what side of a man's nature has been developed. And the nerves, the nerves, you seem to have forgotten them. Nowadays, they are all sick, and fine-drawn, and irritable' . . . And everybody is so full of spleen! And I tell you, in its way that provides a mine of information! And why should I worry if a man goes freely about the town? Let him! Let him be at large for a time; I know that he is my prey, and that he can't escape me. Where could he run away to, he, he? Abroad? A Pole will escape abroad, but not my man, especially as I am watching and have taken precautions. Or will he flee into the depths of the country? But the peasants live there, real homespun Russian peasants, and the modern educated man would rather go to prison than live with people as foreign to him as our peasants, he, he! But all this is unimportant, external. What is running away? It's merely form; the point isn't that he won't run away because he has nowhere to run to, but that *psychologically* he won't escape, he, he! What an expression! By a law of his nature he wouldn't escape, even if he had somewhere to escape to. Have you ever seen a moth with a candle? Well, he'll be just like that, he'll circle round me as if I were a candle. Freedom will no longer be a boon to him; he will begin to brood, he will get himself into a muddle, entangle his own feet in a net, and worry himself to death! . . . More than that, he

himself will provide me with a mathematical proof of the nature of two and two make four if only I allow a long enough interval between the acts of the drama. . . . And he'll keep on, keep on circling round me, closer and closer, and then, pop! he'll fly straight into my mouth and I'll swallow him, and that will be very satisfactory, he, he, he. Don't you believe me?"

Raskolnikov did not answer, but sat pale and motionless, watching Porfiry's face with the same strained attention.

"The lesson is a good one," he thought, turning cold. "It is no longer a case of cat and mouse, as it was yesterday. He is not showing me his strength, and . . . hunting, for hunting he is much too clever for that. . . . He has some other motive, but what? Ah, broader, it's all nonsense your trying to scare me and be so clever. You have no proof, and no man I saw yesterday doesn't exist. You just want to get me confused and worked up before-hand, and then to produce when I'm in the most condition for you, but you're making a mistake, you'll come a cropper! But why, though, did I see the . . . things?" Is he counting on the bad state of my nerves? No, broader, you're mistaken, you'll come to grief, even if you have something up your sleeve. Well, . . . we shall see what it is."

And he braced himself as well as he could to meet the unknown and terrible crisis. At moments he seemed to throw himself on Porfiry and strangle him there and there. From the time he entered he had been aware of his own rage. He was conscious of his lips ticked with heat and of his hammering heart. But he was determined not to let a word until the right time came. He knew this to be the right time in his position since he would not only avoid letting anything slip, but also perhaps provoke his enemy, for his enemy knew him too much. So at least he hoped.

"No, I see you don't believe me. You still think I'm a lawless buffoon," Porfiry began again, growing more and more cheerful, ceaselessly gazing with pleasure, and . . . circling round the room. Well, of course you're right. God created me with such a figure that the . . . ideas I have of other people are criminal ones, I'm a coward, but I'll tell you something, and I'll repeat it to you, my dear Roderik Roderovich, excuse an old man . . . are still a young man at your first vision, so to speak, and therefore you esteem the human



intellect above all things, like all young people. Abstract reasoning and the play of wit tempt you astray. It is exactly like the former Austrian *Hofkriegsrath*, for example: if my judgement of military matters is sound, that is, on paper they defeated Napoleon and took him prisoner, calculating and reasoning in the cleverest fashion there in the study, but then, you see, General Mack surrendered with all his army, he, he, he! I can see, I can see, Rodion Romanovitch, old man, that you are laughing at me, a civilian, for taking my examples from military history. But what would you have, it's a weakness of mine; I love the art of war, and I like reading all these military histories. . . . really, I've missed my vocation. I ought to have had a military career, really. I might not have become a Napoleon, but I should have become a major, he, he, he! Well, my dear friend, now I'll tell you the whole truth, about this *special case*, that is; really and nature, my dear sir, are very important, and sometimes upset the most penetrating calculations! Ah, listen to an old man, I am speaking seriously, Rodion Romanovitch! and saying this, Porfiry Petrovitch, who was barely thirty-five, really seemed to grow old all at once; even his voice changed, and he somehow shrivelled up, 'and besides I'm a very frank person. Am I a frank person, or not? What is your opinion?' I think I am completely frank, here I am telling you all these things for nothing, and don't even ask for any reward, he, he! Well, I will proceed: wit, in my opinion, is a wonderful thing, it is, so to speak, the ornament of nature and the solace of life, and what riddles it can set sometimes!—so that a poor devil of an investigator is quite baffled, especially when his own fancy is liable to lead him astray as well, as always happens, since he is only human after all! But the criminal's own nature comes to the rescue of the poor investigator, that's the point! That's what the young person, carried away by his own wit, and "over-stepping all obstacles" as you so wittily and cleverly expressed it yesterday, doesn't think of. He, let us suppose, will lie, I mean our man, the *special case*, Mr. X, and he extremely well, in the most marvelously clever fashion; this would seem to be triumph, and he might expect to enjoy the fruits of his wit, and then plop! he will fall in a faint, and that at the most interesting and shocking point! It is illness, we will suppose, and rooms are sometimes stuffy, besides, but all the same! All the same, he has given us an idea! He lied incomparably well, but he

couldn't rely on his own nature. That's it, that's where our skill comes in! Another time, tempted by the playfulness of his own wit, he will make a fool of a man who suspects him, he will turn pale *too naturally*, too much as if it were real, and again he's given us an idea! His trickery may be successful at first, but the other will revise his ideas, given time, if he isn't a dunder-head. And it's the same at every step! Why? Because he will begin trying to forestall us, he will thrust himself in where he is not wanted, he will begin to talk incessantly about things he would do better to say nothing about, he will talk in allegories, he, he! He will come of his own accord and begin asking why he hasn't been arrested long since, he, he, he!—and this happens with the sharpest-witted of men, versed in psychology and literature. Nature is a mirror, the very clearest of mirrors! Look into it and admire! But why are you so pale, Rodion Romanovich? Is it too stuffy for you? Shall I open the window?"

"Oh, don't trouble, please," cried Raskolnikov, suddenly beginning to laugh. "Please don't trouble!"

Porfiry stopped opposite him and after a pause began to laugh too. Raskolnikov got up from the sofa, abruptly cutting short his fit of laughter.

"Porfiry Petrovich," he said loudly and distinctly, although his trembling legs would hardly support him, "at last I see plainly that you definitely suspect me of the murder of that old woman and her sister Lizaveta. I must tell you that for my part I had enough of this long ago. If you find that you have a legal right to prosecute me or arrest me, then do it! But I will not permit anyone to laugh in my face and torment me . . ."

His lips began to tremble, his eyes shone with fury, and his voice rose, although he had been trying to keep it low. "I will not permit it," he shouted, banging his fist violently on the table. "Do you hear that, Porfiry Petrovich? I will not permit it!"

"Good heavens! What has brought this on again?" cried Porfiry Petrovich, apparently thoroughly frightened. "My dear fellow! Rodion Romanovich! My dear friend! What is the matter?"

"I will not permit it!" Raskolnikov shouted again.

"My dear chap, quietly! You will be heard, somebody will come! And then what could we say to them? Think!" said

Porfiry Petrovich in a frightened whisper, thrusting his face close to Raskolnikov's.

'I won't permit it, I won't permit it' repeated Raskolnikov mechanically, but he had also dropped his voice to a whisper.

Porfiry turned quickly and ran to open the window.

'I'll let some fresh air in! And you must drink a little water, my dear fellow! You've had an attack!' And he hurried towards the door to call for water; but there in the corner, luckily, was a carafe.

'My dear chap, have some water,' he whispered, hurrying over to him with the carafe. 'It may do you good . . .' Porfiry Petrovich's alarm and sympathy seemed so natural that Raskolnikov was silent and began to watch him with fierce curiosity. He did not take the water, however.

'Rodion Romanovich! My dear chap! You'll drive yourself mad like this, I assure you. Ah! Drink some. Even if it's only a sip, do drink some water!'

He forced a glass of water into his hand. Raskolnikov began to raise it mechanically to his lips, but then recollected himself and set it on the table with distaste.

'Yes, you've had a little attack! You're going the right way to bring your illness back, my dear fellow,' clucked Porfiry Petrovich with friendly sympathy, although he still looked a little disconcerted. 'Good Lord! How can you be so careless of yourself? Here Dmitri Prokofich came to see me yesterday. I agree, I agree, I've got a nasty sarcastic nature, but just look what people have made of that' . . . Lord! He came yesterday, after you'd gone, we had dinner, and he talked and talked, and I was absolutely flabbergasted; well, thought I . . . good Lord! Did you send him? But sit down, old man, for the love of Christ, sit down!'

'No, I didn't send him. But I knew he had come, and why,' answered Raskolnikov sharply.

'You knew?'

'Yes. What of that?'

'Just this, Rodion Romanovich, old man, that I don't know only about such actions of yours, I am informed about everything! I know that you went to *take that flat*, just before night-fall, when it was getting dark, and began ringing the bell, and asked about the blood and thoroughly puzzled the workmen and the porters. You know, I can understand your state of mind just then . . . but all the same, you'll simply drive yourself mad



like that, as true as I'm here! You'll lose your wits! There is indignation seething violently inside you, a generous indignation, at the injuries you have received, first from fate and then from the police, and you go rushing about from place to place, to force everybody, so to say, to speak out and so make an end of it at once, because you are sick of all these stupidities and suspicions. That is so, isn't it? Have I guessed your mood? But in this way you are upsetting not only your own wits, but my Razumikhin's as well; and, really, he is too *good* a person for that, as you know yourself. You are ill, and he is kind and good, and your illness is infectious for him . . . I will tell you, old chap, when you are calmer . . . But sit down, old man, for Christ's sake. Please rest, you are terribly pale; do sit down.'

Raskolnikov sat down; his trembling had ceased, and his whole body felt hot. Stunned with amazement, he listened with strained attention to Porfiry Petrovich, who still seemed alarmed as he pressed his friendly attentions on him. But he did not believe one word he said, although he felt strangely inclined to believe him. He was struck with dismay by Porfiry's unexpected words about the flat. 'What is this?' he thought. 'So he knows about the flat, and he is telling me himself!'

'Yes, we have had an almost exactly similar case in our practice, a case involving morbid psychology,' went on Porfiry in his rapid speech. 'A man falsely accused himself of murder, and how thoroughly he did it! he created a complete but hallucinatory picture, brought forward facts, gave a circumstantial account of it, and got all and sundry muddled and confused, and why? He had been, quite unwittingly, the cause in part, but only in part, of the murder, and when he learnt that he had given the murderer a pretext, he got into a state of depression and stupor, began to imagine things, went completely out of his mind, and persuaded himself that he was the murderer! Finally the Senate High Court tried the case, and the unhappy man was acquitted and put under proper care. One should be grateful to the Senate Court! Alas! Dear, dear, dear! So what then, my dear chap? Why, you may easily drive yourself into a raging fever, if you have these impulses to upset your own nerves, and go about at night ringing bells and asking questions about blood! I've studied all this psychology in my practice. Sometimes, in just the same way, a man feels drawn to jump out of a window or off a church-tower, and the temptation is very strong. So with door-bells . . . Illness,

Rodion Romanovich, illness! You have begun to neglect your illness. You ought to consult an experienced doctor, but as it is, what good is that fat fellow of yours? . . . You are liable to become delirious! It is delirium that makes you do all those things! . . .'

For a moment everything seemed to Raskolnikov to be spinning round.

'Can it be possible,' flashed through his mind, 'that he is lying even now? No, impossible, impossible!' He pushed the thought away from him, realizing in time to what degree of rage and fury it might drive him, and feeling that the fury might be violent enough to make him lose his mind.

'I wasn't delirious, I was quite conscious of what I was doing!' he cried, straining all his powers of judgement to fathom Porfiry's game. 'I was conscious, quite conscious! Do you hear?'

'Yes, I hear you, and I understand. Yesterday as well you said you were not delirious, you were particularly emphatic about not being delirious. I know everything you can say! Ah! . . . But listen, Rodion Romanovich, my dear friend, there is at least this circumstance . . . If you really were guilty, or somehow mixed up in this damned business, would you, for heaven's sake, be so emphatic about not having been delirious, but on the contrary, in full possession of your faculties, when you did all that? And so specially insistent on it, with such particular obstinacy—would you?—is it possible, for goodness sake? Quite the contrary, I should say. Indeed, if you really felt you had done something wrong you ought to insist that you certainly were delirious. I am right, aren't I?'

There was something sly about this question. Raskolnikov recoiled from Porfiry, who was stooping over him, as far as the sofa would allow, and watched him in silent perplexity.

'Then about Mr. Razumikhin, that is about whether he came here yesterday from you or at your instigation, you ought certainly to have said that he came of his own accord, and concealed that you had anything to do with it. But you don't conceal it! You even insist that you persuaded him to come!'

Raskolnikov had never done so. A chill ran down his spine.

'You keep on lying,' he said slowly and faintly, with a sickly smile distorting his lips, 'You want to prove to me again that you know my game, that you know all my answers beforehand,' he went on, aware that he was no longer weighing his

words as he should. 'You want to frighten me . . . or else you are simply laughing at me . . .'

As he said this, he continued to look into the face so close to his, and unbridled fury suddenly flashed again in his eyes.

'You are lying all the time!' he cried. 'You yourself know perfectly well that the criminal's best plan is to tell the truth as far as he can . . . to hide, as far as possible, nothing that he can reveal. I don't trust you!'

'What a slippery person you are!' chuckled Porfiry. 'There's no coping with you, old chap. You've got some fixed idea into your head. So you don't trust me? But I tell you that you trust me half-way already, and I'll make you trust me all the way yet, because I sincerely like you and wish you well.'

Raskolnikov's lips trembled.

'Yes, I do, and I will say one final thing to you,' went on Porfiry, lightly touching Raskolnikov's arm in a friendly fashion. 'One last thing: you must watch that illness of yours. Besides, your family is here now; you must think of them. You ought to take care of them and cherish them, but you only frighten them . . .'

'What business is it of yours? How do you know about them? Why are you so interested? You must be watching me, then, and you want to make sure I know it!'

'Good Lord! Why it was you, you yourself, who told me! You don't realize that when you are agitated you tell everything, to others as well as to me. I learnt a lot of interesting details yesterday from Mr. Razumikhin, Dmitri Prokofich. No, you interrupted me, but I tell you that in spite of all your brains, your mistrustfulness makes you unable to take a sensible view of things. For instance, to go back to the same subject, on this question of door-bells: I gave you that precious detail, that fact (for it is a fact to be considered, you know. I gave it you with both hands, I, an examining magistrate! Don't you see anything in that? If I suspected you at all, should I have done that? On the contrary, I should first have lulled your suspicions, and pretended that I had not been informed of the fact; I should have drawn your attention in the opposite direction, and then stunned you, as with a blow on the head with an axe (to use your own expression). "And what," I should have said "were you doing in the murdered woman's flat at ten o'clock, or nearer eleven, at night? Why were you ringing the bell? Why were you asking about the blood? And why did



you try to mislead the porter, and get him to go to the police lieutenant at the station?" That's how I should have acted, if I had had even the slightest suspicion of you. I should have taken a statement from you in the proper form, made a search, and perhaps arrested you . . . If I haven't acted like that it follows that I am not harbouring any suspicions! But you have not the capacity to take a sane view, and I repeat, you see nothing!"

Raskolnikov's whole body quavered, so that Porfiry Petrovich could see it quite plainly.

"You are lying all the time!" he said. "I don't know what you are aiming at, but you do nothing but lie . . . You weren't talking in that sense a few minutes ago, and I can't be mistaken about that . . . Are you lying?"

"I lying?" rejoined Porfiry, visibly growing a little heated, but still preserving the same cheerfully mocking expression, and apparently not at all worried by what Mr. Raskolnikov might think of him. "Lying?" . . . Well, now was I acting towards you just now—and I an examining magistrate, when I was prompting you, showing you all the ways of defending yourself, supplying all that psychology—"Illness," I said, "delirium, being insulted, melancholia, police officers" and all the rest of it? Eh? He, he, he! There is one thing, however, to be said—all these psychological means of defence, these excuses and evasions—are very insubstantial, and they cut both ways. "Illness, delirium," you say, "fancies, illusions, I don't remember"—that is all very well, but then why is it, old chap, that you see just these illusions in your sick delirium, and not others? There could have been others, couldn't there? He, he, he, he!"

Raskolnikov looked at him proudly and scornfully.

"In one word," he said leadily and insistently, pushing Porfiry back a little as he stood up, "in one word, what I want to know is this. Do you admit that I am definitely free from suspicion or not?" Tell me that, Porfiry Petrovich, tell me definitely and finally, and quickly, at once!"

"Here's a fine fuss! Well, what a fuss you make!" cried Porfiry, with a stiv, perfectly cheerful, and untroubled look. "Why do you want to know, why do you want to know so much, when nobody has even begun to worry you yet? Really you are like a child crying for the fire to play with. And why are you so worried? Why do you thrust yourself upon us? What are your reasons, eh? He, he, he!"

'I tell you again,' shouted Raskolnikov furiously, 'that I cannot any longer endure . . .'

'What? The uncertainty?' interrupted Porfiry.

'Do not taunt me! I will not have it . . . I tell you I won't have it! . . . I can't and I won't! . . . Listen to me!' he shouted, banging the table with his fist again.

'Quietly, quietly! You will be heard! I warn you seriously, look after yourself. I am not joking!' said Porfiry in a whisper, but this time his face had not its former expression of womanish good nature and alarm. On the contrary, now he was giving orders, frowning sternly and destroying at one blow, as it were, all mystery and ambiguity. But it was only for a moment. Raskolnikov, perplexed, fell suddenly into a real frenzy, but strangely enough he again obeyed the injunction to speak quietly, although he was in a perfect paroxysm of fury.

'I will not allow myself to be tortured!' As he had before, he suddenly dropped his voice to a whisper, instantly recognizing with anguish and hatred that he felt obliged to submit to the command, and driven to greater fury by the knowledge. 'Arrest me, search me, but be good enough to act in the proper form, and don't play with me. Do not dare . . .'

'Don't worry about the proper form,' interrupted Porfiry, with his former sly smile, apparently even gloating over Raskolnikov. 'I invited you here informally, old man, in a very friendly fashion!'

'I don't want your friendship! I spit upon it! Do you hear? And look—I am taking my cap and gun! Well, what will you say now, if you intend to arrest me?'

He seized his cap and went to the door.

'But don't you want to see my little surprise?' chuckled Porfiry, seizing his arm again and stopping him by the door. He seemed to be growing ever more high-spirited and playful, and this made Raskolnikov finally lose control.

'What little surprise? What is this?' he asked, stopping short and looking at Porfiry with terror.

'Just a little surprise. Here it is, just behind the door, he, he, he!' He pointed his finger at the closed door in the partition, which led into his living quarters. 'I locked it in, so that it shouldn't run away.'

'What is it? Where? What?' Raskolnikov went to the door and tried to open it, but it was locked.

'It is locked. Here is the key!'

And he showed him the key, which he had taken from his pocket.

'You are still lying!' howled Raskolnikov, no longer restraining himself. 'You lie, you damned clown!' He rushed at Porfiry, who retreated towards the door, but without quailing.

'I understand it all, all of it! You are lying. You are teasing me to make me betray myself . . .'

'But you can't betray yourself any further, Rodion Romanovich, old chap. You're quite beside yourself. Don't shout. I shall call somebody.'

'You are lying, nothing will happen! Call your people! You knew I was ill, and you tried to irritate me to madness, so that I should betray myself, that's what you were after! No, bring out your facts! I understand it all! You have no facts, you have only paltry, rubbishy guesses, Zametov's guesses! . . . You knew my nature, you wanted to drive me mad, and then stan me with priests and witnesses . . . Are you waiting for them, eh? What are you waiting for? Where are they? Bring them out!'

'What witnesses, old man? What an imagination you have! And to act as you say would not be in accordance with the forms. You don't understand what the procedure is, my dear chap . . . The forms are still there, as you will see for yourself' muttered Porfiry, with his ear directed to the door.

There seemed really to be some noise at this moment close to the door, in the other room.

'Ah, they are coming!' cried Raskolnikov. 'You sent for them! You were waiting for them! You expected . . . Well, bring them all here, deputies, witnesses, anything you like . . . bring them! I am ready! I am ready! . . .'

But now a strange thing happened, something so little to be foreseen in the ordinary course of things, that neither Raskolnikov nor Porfiry Petrovich could have expected such a *dénouement*.

## CHAPTER VI

AFTERWARDS, remembering that moment, Raskolnikov recalled it in this way:

The noise outside the door increased suddenly, and the door opened a little way.

'What is it?' cried Porfiry Petrovich in annoyance. 'I gave orders not to . . .'



There was no answer for a moment, but there were evidently several people outside the door, and they seemed to be pushing somebody away.

'What is it?' repeated Porfiry Petrovich anxiously.

'The prisoner Nikolay has been brought,' said a voice

'I don't want him! Get out! Wait till you're wanted' . . . Why is he here? What lack of discipline!' cried Porfiry, rushing to the door.

'But he . . .' the same voice was beginning again, and was suddenly cut off.

There were a couple of seconds, not more, of actual struggle; then somebody seemed to give somebody else a violent push, and immediately afterwards a very pale man walked straight into Porfiry Petrovich's office.

At first sight, this man's appearance was very strange. He was looking straight before him, but seemed not to see anything. His eyes shone with resolution, but his face was deadly pale, as though he were going to execution. Even his twitching lips were white.

He was still very young, of medium height, thin, with the hair cropped round his head, and spare, parched-looking features. He was dressed like an ordinary working man. The man he had unexpectedly pushed aside burst into the room after him, and managed to seize him by the shoulder, he was a guard. But Nikolay jerked his arm and pulled himself free again. A few curious onlookers crowded in the doorway. Some of them tried to get into the room. All this had happened in the space of little more than a moment.

'Get out! You are too early! Wait until you are sent for' . . . Why did you bring him so soon?' grumbled Porfiry Petrovich, full of annoyance, and seeming very disconcerted. But Nikolay suddenly fell on his knees.

'What do you want?' cried Porfiry in astonishment.

'I am guilty! The sin was mine! I am the murderer!' answered Nikolay abruptly, panting, but in quite a loud voice.

There was a stupefied silence, which lasted for several seconds, even the guard recoiled. He did not approach Nikolay again, but retreated mechanically to the door and stood there without moving.

'What is this?' cried Porfiry Petrovich, emerging from his momentary stupor.

'I . . . am the murderer . . .' repeated Nikolay, after a short pause.

'What . . . you . . . what? . . . Whom did you kill?'

Porfiry Petrovich was clearly at a loss.

Nikolay again said nothing for a moment.

'Alena Ivanovna and her sister Lizaveta Ivanovna, I . . . killed them . . . with an axe. Everything went black . . .' he added suddenly, and then was silent again. He was still on his knees.

Porfiry Petrovich stood for a short time as if plunged in thought, then abruptly roused himself and waved away the uninvited onlookers. They disappeared at once, and the door was closed. Then he looked at Raskolnikov, standing in the corner with his wild gaze fixed on Nikolay, and seemed about to approach him, but stopped, looked from him to Nikolay and back again, then once more back to Nikolay, and finally turned on Nikolay again as though he could not help himself.

'What do you mean, running ahead with "everything went black"?' he shouted at him almost furiously. 'I haven't asked you anything about that yet . . . Speak out, you killed them?'

'I am the murderer . . . I want to testify . . . ' said Nikolay.

'O-oh! What did you kill them with?'

'With an axe. I got it for that.'

'Oh, he's in a hurry! Alone?'

Nikolay did not understand the question.

'Was it you alone who killed them?'

'Yes. Mitka is innocent, he had nothing to do with any of it.'

'Don't be in such a hurry about Mitka! O-oh! . . . How is it then . . . how did you come to run downstairs just then? The porters met both of you, didn't they?'

'I did it as a blind . . . that is why I ran with Mitka,' answered Nikolay quickly, as though he had prepared his reply beforehand.

'Ah, so that's it!' cried Porfiry angrily. 'That's not his own idea; he's picked it up somewhere,' he muttered to himself, and then his eyes fell on Raskolnikov again.

He had evidently been so concerned with Nikolay that he had forgotten about Raskolnikov for the moment. Now he recollected himself, and seemed rather embarrassed . . .

'Rodion Romanovich, my dear fellow! Excuse me,' he said, hurrying over to him, 'I can't . . . would you mind . . . you

should not be here . . . and I . . . You see what a surprise! . . . Would you mind? . . .'

And taking him by the arm, he led him towards the door.

'It seems that you didn't expect this,' said Raskolnikov, who had regained much of his courage, although he naturally could not clearly understand any of this.

'Neither did you, old chap. Look how your hand shakes, he, he!'

'You are trembling yourself, Porfiriy Petrovich.'

'So I am. I didn't expect this! . . .'

They were already at the door. Porfiriy waited impatiently for Raskolnikov to go.

'And aren't you going to show me your little surprise?' asked Raskolnikov suddenly.

'He can talk like that, while his teeth are still chattering, he, he! What an ironical person you are! Well, good-bye for the present.'

'I think we might say simply *good bye*.'

That is as God wills, as God wills,' muttered Porfiriy, with a wry smile.

As he walked through the outer office, Raskolnikov noticed many eyes fixed on him. In the crowd in the ante-room he picked out the two porters from *that* house, to whom he had suggested going to the police that night. They were standing waiting for something. As soon as he reached the stairs he heard Porfiriy Petrovich's voice again behind him. Instantly, he saw him panting along after him.

'One word, Rodion Romanovich; as to all the rest of this, it is as God wills, but all the same there are some questions I must put to you, to comply with the formalities . . . So we shall see each other again, you see!'

And Porfiriy stopped in front of him with a smile.

'You see!' he added again.

It might have been supposed that he wanted to say something more, but could not bring out the words.

'And you must please forgive me, Porfiriy Petrovich, for what I said just now . . . I was angry,' began Raskolnikov, now so much emboldened that he could not resist the desire to show off.

'It doesn't matter, it doesn't matter,' rejoined Porfiriy, almost joyfully. 'I myself . . . I have a venomous nature, I am sorry to say! But we shall see each other again – and very many times, if God wills it! . . .'



'And learn to know each other in the end?' rejoined Raskolnikov.

'Yes, in the end we shall get to know each other,' agreed Porfiry, screwing up his eyes and looking at him gravely. 'Are you going to a party now?'

'To a funeral.'

'Oh, yes, to a funeral! Look after your health, keep well . . .'

'I don't know what I can wish you in return,' rejoined Raskolnikov, who had begun to go down the stairs, but turned round to face Porfiry again. 'I would wish you every success, but really, you know, yours is such a funny job!'

'Why funny?' Porfiry Petrovich, who had also turned to go, pricked up his ears.

'Well, just look how you must have teased and tormented that poor Mikolka, psychologically, in your usual way, until he confessed; day and night you must have been trying to prove it to him. "you're the murderer, you're the murderer," and now that he has confessed you'll put him on the rack again: "You're lying," you say, "you aren't the murderer! You can't be! You've picked it up somewhere or other!" Well, after that, what else is it but a funny job?'

'He, he, he! So you noticed that I told Nikolay just now that none of that was his own idea?'

'How could I help it?'

'He, he! You are sharp-witted, very sharp-witted. You notice everything. A really quick mind! You seize on the most comical aspect of things . . . he, he! It is Gogol, isn't it, among our writers, who is said to have that faculty in the highest degree?'

'Yes, Gogol.'

'Yes, Gogol . . . Good bye till our next most pleasant meeting.'

'Good-bye till then . . .'

Raskolnikov went straight home. He was so confused and bewildered that when he reached home and flung himself down on the sofa, he sat there for a quarter of an hour simply recovering and trying to get his thoughts into some kind of order. He did not even begin to reason about Nikolay; he was dumfounded; he felt that there was something astonishing and mysterious in Nikolay's confession that he was quite incapable of understanding at this moment. But Nikolay's confession was an actual fact. The consequences of that fact were immediately clear to him: the lie must be exposed, and

then they would be on his trail again. But at least he was free until then, and he ought certainly to do something to help himself, for the danger to himself must inevitably return.

But how great was it? The situation was becoming clear. Remembering *roughly*, in general outline, all the recent interview with Porfiry, he could not help shuddering again with fear. He naturally did not yet know everything Porfiry had been aiming at, and therefore could not understand all his moves. But part of his hand had been revealed, and nobody, of course, knew better than he how terrible this 'lead' of Porfiry's had been from his point of view. A little more and he *might* have given the game away completely, even to the factual evidence. Knowing the weaknesses of his character, and having understood him and summed him up correctly at the first glance, Porfiry had taken almost the best possible line with him, though perhaps he had pursued it too vigorously. There was no disputing that Raskolnikov had managed to compromise himself seriously, but, all the same, no *facts* had yet been arrived at: everything was still only inferential. But had he got it right, did he understand it all properly now? What had Porfiry really been driving at today? Had he indeed been preparing some surprise? And what had it been? Was he really waiting for something or not? How would they have parted if Nikolay's arrival had not brought an unexpected climax?

Porfiry had shown almost all his cards; of course, he was taking a risk, but he had shown them and so it seemed to Raskolnikov if he had really had anything more, he would have shown it. What had his 'surprise' been? A joke? Had it meant anything, or not? Could it have concealed anything like factual evidence or a definite accusation? The stranger of yesterday? Where had he got to? Where was he today? It, indeed, Porfiry had got hold of something definite, it must be connected with that man . . .

He sat on the sofa with his head hanging down, his face buried in his hands, and his elbows on his knees. A nervous trembling still shook his whole body. At last he rose, picked up his cap, stood thinking for a moment, and turned towards the door.

Somehow he had a presentiment that for today at least he could almost certainly consider himself out of danger. His heart felt suddenly almost light: he was anxious to get to Katerina Ivanovna's. He was too late for the funeral, of course,

but he would be in time for the dinner, and there he would see Sonya.

He stopped, thinking, and with a feeble smile on his lips.

'Today, today!' he repeated to himself, 'yes, this very day! I must . . .'

He was on the point of opening the door when it began to open of itself. He started and recoiled. The door was opening slowly and quietly, and suddenly he saw a figure—yesterday's stranger *from under the ground*.

The man stopped on the threshold, looked at Raskolnikov in silence, and then took a step into the room. His appearance was exactly the same as on the day before, the same figure, dressed in the same way, but his face and his look had undergone a considerable change—now he looked melancholy, and after a pause he sighed deeply. It only wanted for him to put the palm of his hand to his cheek and tilt his head to one side and he would have looked exactly like a peasant-woman.

'What do you want?' asked Raskolnikov, terror-struck.

The man said nothing, but suddenly bowed very low, almost to the ground, low enough at least to touch it with one finger of his right hand.

'Who are you?' cried Raskolnikov.

'I am guilty,' said the man quietly.

'Of what?'

'Of evil thoughts.'

They looked at each other.

'I was annoyed. When you came there that time—perhaps you had been drinking—and told the porters to go to the police and asked about the blood, I was annoyed that they left you alone, thinking you were drunk. I was so annoyed that I couldn't sleep. But I remembered your address, and came here yesterday and asked questions . . .'

'Who came?' interrupted Raskolnikov, instantly beginning to remember.

'I did. That is to say I injured you.'

'So you come from that house?'

'Why, I was standing there with them in the gateway, or have you forgotten? I've followed my trade there for years and years. I am a furrier, a working furrier, and I take in work at home . . . but more than anything I was annoyed . . .'

Suddenly Raskolnikov remembered clearly the scene of two days before; he imagined that besides the porters there had



been several men standing there, and some women as well. He remembered a voice suggesting that he should be taken straight to the police. He could not remember the face of the man who had spoken, and he did not recognize him even now, but he clearly remembered turning towards him and making some answer.

This, then, was what all the previous day's horror resolved itself into. The most terrible thing was the thought that he had almost come to grief, had almost destroyed himself, because of such an insignificant circumstance. For it followed that, except for the taking of the flat and the talk about blood, there was nothing that this man could tell. Consequently Porfiry had nothing either, nothing but *admiral*, no kind of facts, only *admiral*, which cut both ways; nothing definite. Consequently if no further facts were revealed—and they must not be—they must not, must not, then . . . what could they do to him? What could they definitely prove against him, even if they arrested him? And Porfiry could only just have learned about the flat, only now; he could not have known about it before.

'Did you tell Porfiry today . . . that I went there?' he cried, struck by a sudden idea.

'What Porfiry?'

'The magistrate in charge of the investigation.'

'Yes, I told him. The porters didn't go to him, so I went.'

'Today?'

'I was only a minute before you. And I heard it all, the way he was tormenting you.'

'Where? What? When?'

'Why there, behind that partition. I was sitting there all the time.'

'What? So you were the surprise? But how did it all come about? Please tell me!'

'Well,' began the man, 'when I saw the porters wouldn't go when I told them, because they said it was too late, and perhaps they would get into trouble for not going at once, I got annoyed, and I couldn't sleep, and then I began finding things out. I found out all I could yesterday, and today I went there. The first time I went, he wasn't there. I went back an hour afterwards, and I couldn't see him, but the third time they let me in. Well, I began to tell him everything just as it happened, and he began fussing round the room and hitting his chest with his fist, and he said, "What are you rogues doing

to me? If I had known about this, I would have sent guards to fetch him!" Then he ran out and called somebody in and began talking to him in the corner, and then he came back to me asking me questions and cursing and swearing. And he blamed me for not going before; and I told him all about everything and I said you didn't dare answer what I said to you yesterday, and that you didn't recognize me. And then he began running round again, beating his breast all the time, and he got angry and ran about, and when they said you were there, he said to me, "Well, go into the next room, and sit there for a bit and don't stir, whatever you may hear," and he brought me a chair himself, and locked me in, and said, "Perhaps I'll ask you to come in." And when they brought Nikolay, he sent me away, after you'd gone. "I shall want you again," says he, "to ask you some more questions" . . .

'Did he question Nikolay while you were there?'

'When he sent you out, he sent me out straight after, and then began to ask Nikolay questions.'

He stopped, and suddenly bowed again, touching the floor with his finger.

'Forgive me for slandering you, and for my spite.'

'God will forgive you,' answered Raskolnikov. As soon as he had uttered the words, the man bowed to him again, not so deeply this time, but only from the waist, then turned and left the room. 'Everything cuts both ways; now everything cuts both ways,' repeated Raskolnikov to himself again and again. Then, in better spirits than ever before, he too went out.

'Now we shall fight again,' he said with a bitter smile, as he went down the stairs. But the bitterness was directed against himself; he remembered his own 'cowardice' with scorn and shame.

## PART FIVE

---

### CHAPTER I

THE morning after his ill-fated interview with Dunechka and Pulkheria Alexandrovna had a sobering effect on Peter Petrovich. To his great displeasure he was compelled little by little to recognize as an accomplished and irrevocable fact what had yesterday appeared to him an almost fantastic occurrence, which still seemed impossible even after it had actually happened. The black snake of wounded self-esteem had preyed on his heart all night. As soon as he got up, Peter Petrovich examined himself in the mirror. He was afraid he might look bilious after the night. But for the time being all was well in that respect, and the inspection of his pale and distinguished face, which had of late grown rather fat, even consoled him momentarily, fully persuading him that he could find another bride, perhaps even a better one, elsewhere. His thoughts returned immediately to reality, and he spat vigorously, a gesture which provoked his young friend and the sharer of his lodgings, Andrey Semenovich Lebezyatnikov, to a silent but sarcastic smile. Peter Petrovich saw the smile, and mentally set it down against his young friend's account. He had set a good many things down there recently. His annoyance redoubled when he suddenly realized that he ought never to have told Andrey Semenovich of the result of yesterday's happenings. That was another mistake he had made yesterday, one made in the heat of the moment, when irritation had made him unduly expansive . . . Throughout the morning, one unpleasantness followed another, as though on purpose to annoy him. Even in the Senate something went wrong with the case that was causing him so much trouble. He was particularly irritated with the landlord of the flat he had taken in anticipation of his imminent marriage and decorated at his own expense—the landlord, a prosperous German tradesman, refused to cancel the newly completed contract and insisted on all the penalties stipulated for in it, although Peter Petrovich was returning the flat to him almost entirely redecorated. Similarly, the furniture shop refused to return a single rouble of the



deposit on the furniture which had been bought but not yet delivered to the flat. 'I'm not going to get married simply because I've got the furniture' said Peter Petrovich to himself, grating his teeth, while the desperate hope flashed through his mind once more. 'Surely everything can't really be irrevocably over and done with. Surely it should be possible to make one more try.' The alluring image of Dunetchka wrung his heart once more. He endured a moment of anguish, and, if the mere expression of a wish could have killed Raskolnikov, Peter Petrovich would assuredly have pronounced the wish in that instant.

'Another mistake I made was in not giving them any money,' he thought gloomily, as he returned to Lebezyatnikov's little room, 'why the devil was I such a Jew? It isn't even as if I were being careful of my money. I simply wanted to keep them as badly off as possible and so lead them to see me as their Providence, and now look! . . . Pah! . . . No, my position would have been much better . . . and stronger, if only I had given them some fifteen hundred roubles, for example, for the trousseau, and little gifts, various fancy boxes, dressing-cases, ornaments, materials, and all that sort of rubbish from Knopp's or the English Stores! They would not have cast me off so lightly now! They are the sort of people who would have felt obliged to return both the money and the presents if they refused me, and they would have been sorry to have to do that! Besides, their consciences would have been troubled. "How", they would have said, "can we suddenly drive away a man who has acted with such generosity and delicacy towards us?"'

Hm! I've made a blunder! And, grinding his teeth again, Peter Petrovich admitted—only to himself, of course—that he had been a fool.

Having come to this conclusion, he reached home feeling twice as vicious and sore as when he had left. The preparations for the funeral dinner in Katerina Ivanovna's room aroused his curiosity. He had heard something about it the day before; he even seemed to remember that he had been invited; but his personal worries had distracted his attention from everything else. He made inquiries of Mrs. Lippewechsel, who was busying herself with the table in the absence of Katerina Ivanovna—who was at the cemetery,—and learnt that the dinner would be a very fine one, that almost all the lodgers had been invited, including some who had not known the dead man, that even

Andrey Semenovitch Lebezyatnikov, in spite of his former quarrel with Katerina Ivanovna, had been included in the invitations, and finally that he himself was not only invited but eagerly expected, since he was almost the most important of all the lodgers. Amalia Ivanovna herself had also been invited with the greatest courtesy, in spite of all past unpleasantness, and was therefore bustling about now, performing housewifely duties and almost enjoying herself. Moreover, she was dressed in her best new black silk, all frills and flounces, and was very proud of herself. All this information gave Peter Petrovitch a certain idea, and he went off to his room, or rather to Andrey Semenovitch Lebezyatnikov's, rather thoughtfully. The point was that he had also learnt that Raskolnikov was one of those who had been invited.

For some reason, Andrey Semenovitch had been at home all the morning. Peter Petrovitch's attitude to this gentleman was rather strange, if natural: he had despised and hated him, practically from the day he came to stay with him, and yet he seemed a little afraid of him. His motive for coming here on his arrival in St. Petersburg was not purely regarding economy. Although this was almost his principal reason, he had another as well. Before he left the provinces, he had heard that Andrey Semenovitch, his former ward, was one of the most advanced of the young progressives, and that he even played a prominent part in certain curious and legendary circles. Peter Petrovitch was impressed by all this. These powerful and omnipotent groups who despised and denounced everybody, had for a long time inspired him with a peculiar but undefined apprehension. Of course, while he was in the provinces he himself could not acquire even an approximately exact understanding of anything of that kind. He had heard, like everybody else, that there existed, especially in St. Petersburg, certain progressives, nihilists, 'denouncers', and so on and so forth, but, like many others, absurdly exaggerated and distorted the idea and meaning of these names. For several years what he had most feared had been *denunciation*, or *exposure*, and this was the principal cause of his constant, exaggerated uneasiness, especially at the thought of transferring his activities to St. Petersburg. In this connexion he was *scared*, as it is called, as little children are sometimes *scared*. Some years ago, in the provinces, while he was still at the beginning of his career, he had met with two cases of cruel 'exposure' of personages of some local importance,

to whom he had attached himself, and who had been his patrons. One case had ended particularly scandalously for the personage exposed, and the other had very nearly resulted in the ruin of the person concerned. This was why, when he arrived in St. Petersburg, Peter Petrovich proposed to investigate these movements and if necessary to anticipate possible developments and ingratiate himself with 'our younger generation'. For this purpose he relied on Andrey Semenovitch, and he had learned to trot out, after a fashion, current phrases borrowed with a view to interviews with, for example, Raskolnikov . . .

Naturally, he had soon recognized in Andrey Semenovitch a singularly commonplace and sly person. But this neither disabused nor encouraged Peter Petrovich. Even if he had been convinced that all progressives were just such simpletons, it would not have allayed his uneasiness. He was not particularly concerned with all the doctrines, ideas, and systems with which Andrey Semenovitch bombarded him. He had his own purposes. He simply wanted to find out as quickly as possible what had happened *here*, and how. Had *these people* any power or not? Had he personally any reason to be afraid, or not? If he entered upon any enterprise, would he be denounced, or not? And if he were denounced, what would it be for? What were people denounced for now? Further, could he not ingratiate himself with these people and pull the wool over their eyes, if they really had any power? Ought he to try to do this, or not? Could he not, for example, use them to further his career? In short, there were hundreds of questions to answer.

Andrey Semenovitch was a short, thin-blooded, scrupulous creature, a clerk in some Ministry, with hair of an astonishingly pale colour and mutton-chop whiskers of which he was very proud; there was almost always something wrong with his eyes. His heart was soft enough, but his speech was extremely self-assured and sometimes even insolently overbearing, the effect of this, coming from such a manikin, was nearly always comical. Amalia Ivanovna, however, considered him one of her most respectable lodgers, that is to say, he was not a heavy drinker and he paid his rent punctually. In spite of these good qualities, Andrey Semenovitch really was rather stupid. He had joined the forces of progress and 'our younger generation' out of conviction. He was one of that countless and multifarious legion of nondescripts, putrescent abortions, and uninformed



obstinate fools who instantly and infallibly attach themselves to the most fashionable current idea, with the immediate effect of vulgarizing it and of turning into a ridiculous caricature any cause they serve, however sincerely.

Lebezyatnikov, in spite of his great kindness of heart, was also finding it difficult to tolerate his fellow lodger and former guardian, Peter Petrovich. On both sides this state of affairs had come about unexpectedly. Simple though Andrey Semenovich might be, he had begun to think that Peter Petrovich was fooling him and secretly despised him, and that 'there was something wrong about the fellow' He had tried to expound Fourier's system and Darwin's theory to him, but Peter Petrovich, especially recently, had listened very sarcastically, and in the past few days had even begun to jeer. The fact was that he instinctively divined that Lebezyatnikov was not only a foolish and trivial person, but perhaps a fraud as well, and that he had no connexions of any importance even in his own group, but had only heard things at second hand; what was more, he was not very expert even in his own chosen task of *propaganda*, because he got too muddled; and besides, how could he denounce anybody? It may be noted in passing that during those ten days (especially at first) Peter Petrovich had readily accepted some very strange commendations of himself; he had not objected, for example, but had sat silent, when Andrey Semenovich attributed to him a willingness to further the construction in the near future of a new 'commune' somewhere in Meshchanskaya Street, or not to hinder Dunecnka if she thought of taking a lover in the first month of their marriage, or not to have his future children christened, and so on all in the same strain. Peter Petrovich, in his usual manner, did not object when such qualities were attributed to him, and even allowed himself to be praised for them, so pleasant to him was praise of any kind.

Peter Petrovich, who had had occasion during that morning to change several five-per-cent. Government bonds, sat at the table counting packets of bank-notes. Andrey Semenovich, who rarely had any money, wandered about the room and pretended to himself that he regarded all those bundles with indifference, and even with contempt. Nothing could have persuaded Peter Petrovich that Andrey Semenovich could really see so much money with indifference; Andrey Semenovich, in his turn, thought bitterly that Peter Petrovich might

be quite capable of holding such an opinion of him, and might, moreover, be glad of this chance to tease and irritate his young friend by displaying the packets of bank-notes and thus making him feel his insignificance and the great difference between them.

He found him, on this occasion, more exasperatingly inattentive than ever, even though he, Andrey Semenovitch, had begun to expound his favourite theme, the foundation of a special new 'commune'. The brief comments and replies which escaped from Peter Petrovich in the intervals between the clicks of the balls on the *atacus* were open and intentionally rude jeers. But Andrey Semenovitch 'humanely' ascribed Peter Petrovich's mood to the effect of his having broken with Dimechka, and burned with the desire to talk about this; he had something progressive and proselytizing to say on this subject, which might comfort his esteemed friend and 'undoubtedly' assist his further development.

'What is this funeral dinner they are preparing at that . . . at the widow's?' asked Peter Petrovich suddenly, interrupting Andrey Semenovitch at the most interesting point.

'As if you didn't know! I am sure I discussed it with you yesterday, and told you my idea of all these ravals . . . And surely I heard that she had invited you, as well! You were talking to her yourself yesterday . . .'

'I had no idea that that foolish woman, desolate as she is, would throw away on the funeral all the money she got from the other fool . . . Raskolnikov! I was absolutely astonished, as I came past such preparations, wine . . . Quite a few people are coming! It's quite sickening! . . .'

Went on Peter Petrovich, enlarging on the subject as though with some purpose. 'What? Did you say that I was invited?' he added suddenly, raising his head. 'When was this? I don't remember it. However, I shall not go. What should I do there? I only spoke a few words to her casually, yesterday, about the possibility of her receiving a grant of a year's salary, as the destitute widow of a civil servant. I suppose that must be why she invited me. He, he!'

'I do not intend to go either,' said Lebezyatnikov.

'I should think not! You beat her black and blue with your own hands. I can understand your feeling ashamed. He, he, he!'

'Who did? Beat whom?' cried Lebezyatnikov, alarmed and blushing.

'You did. You beat Katerina Ivanovna a month ago, didn't you? I heard about it, you know, yesterday . . . So much for your principles! . . . Even the woman's question hasn't worked out very successfully. He, he, he!'

And Peter Petrovich, as though feeling more cheerful, went back to clicking his abacus.

'That is all rubbish, and it is slanderous!' flared up Lebezyatnikov, who always flinched from reminders of this incident. 'It wasn't like that at all! It was different . . . You heard it wrong; all scandal! I was only defending myself. She attacked me first with her finger-nails . . . She plucked out all my whiskers . . . Everybody is allowed to defend himself, I hope. Besides, I don't allow anyone to use violence to me . . . On principle. Because that is almost despotism. What was I to do just stand there? I only pushed her away.'

'He, he, he!' Luzhin went on laughing maliciously.

'You're only trying to provoke me, because you're in a bad temper yourself . . . And it's all nonsense and has nothing at all, nothing at all, to do with the woman's question. You've got it wrong. I used to think that if it is accepted that woman is man's equal in everything, even physical strength (as some people maintain), there must consequently be equality in such things too. Of course, I decided later that the question ought not to arise, because there ought never to be any fighting; fighting is unthinkable in the future society . . . and of course it is strange to look for equality in fighting. I am not such a fool . . . although fighting does occur . . . I mean it won't occur in the future, but now it still does . . . Bah! The devil! You get people all muddled! It is not because of that unpleasant business that I am staying away from the funeral. My not going is a simple matter of principle, because I don't wish to take part in superstitious ceremonials, that's why! However, it might be possible to go just in order to laugh at it . . . It's a pity there won't be any priests. If there were, I should certainly go.'

'That is, you would accept hospitality and practically spit on it and on your hosts. Is that it?'

'Not at all; merely as a protest. I should go with the intention of being helpful. I might indirectly promote their development and our propaganda. It is the duty of every man to develop others and disseminate propaganda, and perhaps the harsher one's methods the better. I might throw out an



idea, a seed . . . From that seed might grow something real. What is there in that to offend them? At first they will be offended, but then they will see that I have been of assistance to them. Look how people blamed Terebyeva (who is in the commune now, because when she left her family and . . . took a lover, she wrote to her mother and father that she did not wish to live in a world of prejudice, and was going to contract a civil marriage, and because it was thought that she was too harsh with her parents, and could have spared them and written more gently. I think that's all nonsense; gentleness is not called for; on the contrary, on the contrary, protest is what is wanted. Look at Varents, who had been married seven years, and abandoned her two children, she made a clean break with her husband, in a letter which said: 'I have realized that I cannot be happy with you. I shall never forgive you for deceiving me by concealing that there exists another way of organizing society, in communes. I have recently learnt of this from a great-souled man, and I have given myself to him; together we are founding a commune. I am putting it plainly, because I consider it dishonourable to pretend. Do as you think fit. Do not hope that I shall return to you; it is too late. I wish you happiness.' That's how to write letters of that kind!

'This Terebyeva, isn't she the one you told me has contracted a third "civil marriage"?'

'No, only two, if you look at it in the right way! But if it were four, or fifteen, all that means nothing! And if ever I were sorry that my father and mother were dead, I am sorry now. I have even dreamed of how, if they were still living, I should sting them with my protests! I should have deliberately created a situation . . . Talk about a clean break! I'd have shown them! I'd have surprised them. It's really a pity that I haven't anybody!'

'To surprise? He, he! Well, let that be as you please,' interrupted Peter Petrovich, 'but now tell me this. I suppose you know the dead man's daughter, that sickly creature. Well, is what they say about her true, eh?'

'What is that? In my opinion, that is, according to my personal conviction, it is the most normal condition for a woman. Why not? I mean to say, *distinguons*. In our present society it is not, of course, entirely normal, because it is forced on her, but in future it will be completely normal, because

freely chosen. And even now she had the right to act as she did; she was suffering, and that was her stock, so to speak, her capital, which she had a perfect right to dispose of. Of course, in the future society there will be no need of capital funds, but her role will be given a different significance, under harmonious and rational conditions. As for Sofya Semenovna herself, in present conditions I look upon her action as a spirited concrete protest against the organization of society and I deeply respect her for it; I rejoice to see her!

'But I was told that it was you who caused her to be driven away from here!'

Lebezyatnikov became positively frenzied.

'That is another slander!' he shouted. 'It was not like that at all, not at all! More falsehood! Katerina Ivanovna got it all wrong, because she did not understand anything! I didn't try to force myself on Sofya Semenovna! I was simply trying to educate her, quite disinterestedly, trying to rouse her to protest . . . All I needed was her protest, and besides, Sofya Semenovna was really unable to stay here any longer.'

'Was she invited to enter the commune?'

'You are still laughing at me, but allow me to tell you it has no effect at all. You don't understand anything! There is no such role in the commune. The communes are founded in order to do away with such roles. In the communes her role will completely change its present character, and what is stupid here will become wise there, what is unnatural here, under present conditions, will become completely natural there. Everything depends on environment and circumstances. The environment is everything, and the man is nothing. I am very good friends with Sofya Semenovna even now, which may serve to prove to you that she never regarded me as her enemy and persecutor. Yes! I am trying now to attract her into the commune, only on a quite different basis, quite different! What do you find so funny? We want to found our own particular commune on a much wider basis than previous ones. We have progressed farther in our convictions. We reject more! If Dobrolyubov rose from his grave I should quarrel with him. As for Belinsky, I should absolutely annihilate him! Meanwhile I am continuing Sofya Semenovna's education. She has a beautiful nature, beautiful!'

'And so you are taking advantage of her beautiful nature, eh? He, he!'

'No, no! Oh, no! Just the opposite!'

'Well, just the opposite, then. He, he, he! What a thing to say!'

'You must believe me! What reason could I have for deceiving you, I should like to know? On the contrary, I myself find it strange that she is so intensely, even timidly, chaste and modest with me!'

'And you of course are educating her . . . he, he, he! teaching her that modesty is all nonsense? . . .'

'Not at all! Not at all! Oh, how crudely and stupidly — excuse me — you understand the word education! You don't understand anything at all! Heavens, how . . . unprepared you still are! We are seeking the emancipation of women, but you have only one thing in your head . . . Ignoring altogether the questions of chastity and female modesty as unprofitable in themselves, and even prejudicial, I fully acquiesce in her chastity with me, fully, because that is her right and a matter for her own free will. Of course, if she herself were to say to me "I want you," I should consider myself very lucky, because I like the girl very much; but as things are now, of course, nobody has ever treated her more politely and courteously than I do, or with more respect for her dignity . . . I wait and hope . . . that is all!'

'It would be better for you to give her some sort of present. I bet you didn't even think of that.'

'I told you you didn't understand anything! Of course, she is in that position, but this is a different question, quite different! You simply despise her. Seeing a fact which you mistakenly consider deserving of scorn, you refuse to regard a human being in a humane light. You do not know yet what she is like! I am very disappointed about one thing, that she seems lately to have stopped reading, and doesn't borrow any more books from me. She used to. I am sorry, too, that with all the energy and resolution which she showed once, in making her protest, she still has too little self-reliance and, so to speak, independence, too little capacity for rejection, to be able to free herself entirely from certain prejudices and . . . stupidities. In spite of that, she has a wonderful understanding of some questions. For example, she understood the question of kissing hands' marvellously well. That is, that it is an insulting mark of inequality for a man to kiss a woman's hand. This was the subject of one of our discussions, and I gave her an account of



it immediately afterwards. She listened very attentively to a description of the workers' associations in France, too. Now I am explaining to her the question of entering rooms in the future society.'

'Oh, and what is that?'

'Recently we have been discussing whether a member of a commune has at all times the right to enter the room of another member, whether man or woman . . . and it was decided that he has . . .'

'And what if he or she is occupied at that moment with the unavoidable demands of nature, he, he?'

Andrey Seménovich was really angry.

'You're always harping on the same string! You keep on and on about those damned "demands of nature"!' he cried, with detestation. 'Pah, I am disgusted with myself for having mentioned those confounded demands, prematurely, when I was expounding the system to you. Damn it all! It's always a stumbling-block to people of your sort, and worse than that they get parrot-phrases by heart and go round repeating them before they know what it's all about! And as if they were in the right! As if they had something to be proud of! Pah! I have insisted many times that it is not possible to explain this question to beginners before the very end, when they believe in the system and their ideas are properly developed along the right lines. And what, I should like to know, do you find so shameful and despicable even in cess-pits? I should be the first to be ready to clean out any cess-pit you like! There isn't even any self-sacrifice about it! It is simply work, an honourable, socially useful activity, which is worth as much as any other, and may even be worth more than the activities of some Raphael or Pushkin; because it is more useful!'

'And more honourable, more honourable— he, he, he!'

'What does honourable mean? I don't understand such expressions as used to define human activities. "More honourable", "nobler"— that's all rubbish; those are absurdities, antiquated prejudices which I reject! Everything that is *useful* to humanity is honourable. I understand only one word, *useful*! \* You may snigger if you like, but it is true!'

Peter Petrovich was laughing heartily. He had finished his calculations and put away most of his money. However, for some reason he had left a part of it on the table. This 'cess-pit question' had already, in spite of its triviality, been the occasion

of several arguments and quarrels between Peter Petrovich and his young friend. The stupid part of it was that Andrey Semenovitch had grown really angry. Luzhin was simply amusing himself, and just now he felt a great desire to tease Lebezyatnikov.

'It's because things went badly for you yesterday that you are so captious and spiteful,' burst out Lebezyatnikov at last. In spite of all his 'independence' and his 'protests' he was not generally bold enough to oppose Peter Petrovich, and still retained from former years his habit of deference towards him.

'You would do better to tell me,' interrupted Peter Petrovich, in a tone of haughty displeasure, 'whether you can . . . or, rather, whether you are on sufficiently friendly terms with the young person just referred to, to ask her to come here for a few moments. I think they have all got back from the cemetery . . . I can hear people moving about . . . I wish to see her, that young person.'

'What for?' asked Lebezyatnikov, surprised.

'I just want to. I shall be leaving today or tomorrow, and therefore I should like to tell her . . . However, please be here yourself, when I explain. That will be best. Otherwise, you may imagine God knows what.'

'I shan't imagine anything . . . I was only asking. If you have something to say to her, there is nothing easier than to ask her here. I will go at once. And be assured that I will not disturb you.'

Five minutes later Lebezyatnikov returned with Sonechka. She came in feeling extremely surprised, and, as usual, very shy. She was always shy in such circumstances, she had dreaded seeing new faces and making new acquaintances ever since her childhood, and she feared it now more than ever . . . Peter Petrovich greeted her 'nicely and politely', but with a shade of jovial familiarity which, in his opinion, was becoming to a respectable man of solid worth, like himself, in his dealings with a young and, in a special sense, *interesting* creature like Sonya. He hastened to 'reassure' her, and seated her at the table opposite him. Sonya sat down and looked about her—at Lebezyatnikov, at the money lying on the table, and back again at Peter Petrovich—and then her eyes remained glued to his face. Lebezyatnikov turned towards the door. Peter Petrovich got up, signed to Sonya to stay where she was, and stopped Lebezyatnikov on the threshold.

'Is Raskolnikov there? Has he come?' he asked in a whisper.

'Raskolnikov? Yes. Why? Yes, he's there . . . I just saw him come in . . . why?'

'Then I particularly request you to remain here with us, and not to leave me alone with this . . . girl. My business is trifling, but God knows what conclusions will be drawn. I don't want Raskolnikov to tell *them* . . . Do you understand what I am talking about?'

'Yes, I understand!' said Lebezyatnikov, suddenly realizing what he meant. 'Yes, you are right . . . Of course, in my personal opinion you carry your anxiety too far but . . . all the same, you are right. Certainly I will stay. I will remain here by the window, and not be in your way . . . I think you are right . . .'

Peter Petrovich went back to the sofa, sat down opposite Sonya, and looked at her with a very dignified and rather severe expression, as much as to say, 'Don't get any ideas into your head, young lady.' This completed Sonya's confusion.

'First of all, Sofya Semenovna, please apologize for me to your respected mama . . . That is right, I think? Katerina Ivanovna has taken the place of your own mother?' he began, still seriously, but quite pleasantly. He evidently had the most friendly intentions.

'Yes, that is right, my mother's place,' answered Sonya hurriedly and timidly.

'Well, then, give her my apologies for being obliged, because of circumstances not depending on me, to be absent from the dinner, in spite of your mama's kind invitation.'

'Yes; I will tell her; at once,' and Sonya jumped up from her chair.

'I have not finished yet,' said Peter Petrovich, stopping her with a smile at her simplicity and ignorance of the way to behave, 'and you know very little of me, Sofya Semenovna, if you thought I would disturb you by asking here in person someone like yourself for such an unimportant reason, concerning nobody but me. I have another object.'

Sonya hastily sat down again. The grey and rainbow-coloured bank-notes which had been left on the table attracted her eyes again, but she quickly turned her face away and raised it towards Peter Petrovich, it suddenly seemed to her that it was very bad manners, especially for *her*, to look at somebody else's money. She fixed her eyes on the gold



lorgnettes which Peter Petrovich held in his left hand, and on the thick, heavy, and very beautiful gold ring with a yellow stone on the middle finger of that hand, then she turned them away from that, too, and, not knowing what else to do, ended by looking straight into Peter Petrovich's eyes again. After a still more dignified pause, he went on

'I chanced to exchange a few words in passing with the unhappy Katerina Ivanovna yesterday. That was enough to inform me that she was in an . . . unnatural position, if I may so express it . . .'

'Yes . . . unnatural,' hastily agreed Sonya.

'Or, to put it more simply and understandably, a painful position.'

'Yes, more simply and underst . . . yes, painful.'

'Quite so. Therefore, you see, from feelings of humanity a-a-and so to say, sympathy, I should have liked, for my part, to be of some service to her, foreseeing her inevitably unhappy fate. I believe that all that destitute family is now entirely dependent on you.'

'Allow me to ask,' said Sonya, rising suddenly to her feet, 'whether you spoke to her yesterday of the possibility of a pension. Because she told me that you had undertaken to procure a pension for her . . . Is that true?'

'Far from it. You might even call it ridiculous. I merely made some reference to temporary assistance for the widow of a clerk who has died while in government service—provided she has some influence—but it appears that your late father had not only not served the full term, but had not recently been employed in the civil service at all. In one word, though there might be some hope, it would be of a very flimsy character, because, in fact, there is no right whatever to assistance in this case, quite the contrary . . . And she was already thinking of a pension, he, he, he! A lady who runs away with an idea!'

'Yes, she was thinking of a pension . . . Because she is credulous and good, and her goodness makes her believe everything, and . . . and . . . and . . . her mind works like that . . . Yes . . . excuse her,' said Sonya, and again got up to go.

'Excuse me, you have not yet heard me out.'

'No, not heard you out,' murmured Sonya.

'Sit down, then.'

Sonya, dreadfully confused, sat down for the third time.

'In view of her position, and that of the unfortunate little

children, I should like—as I said before—as far as lies in my power, to be of some help, that is, as far as lies in my power, as they say, and no more. Perhaps, for example, it would be possible to get up a subscription for her, or, so to say, a lottery . . . or something of that kind—as is always done in cases of this kind by friends, or even by strangers, but in any case by those desirous of helping people. That is what I intended to speak to you about. It could be done.'

'Yes, very kind . . . God will repay . . . ' stammered Sonya, still gazing at Peter Petrovich.

'It can be done, but . . . we will talk of it later . . . that is, we might begin today. We will meet in the evening, talk it over and lay, so to say, the foundation. Come here at about seven o'clock. Andrey Semenovitch, I hope, will also make one of us . . . But . . . there is one circumstance which ought to be mentioned beforehand, with due care. It was for this, Sofya Semenovna, that I troubled you to come here. This is what I think: it is impossible to give money into Katerina Ivanovna's own hands, it is dangerous; today's funeral dinner proves it. Not having, so to say, a crust of bread for tomorrow or . . . well, or shoes, or anything, today she buys Jamaica rum, and even, I believe, Madeira, a-a-and coffee. I saw it as I came past. Tomorrow it will all come down on you again, everything to the last crust of bread; it is quite absurd. Therefore the subscription, in my personal view, ought to be organized in such a way that the unhappy widow, so to say, does not know about the money, but only you, for example, know. Am I right?'

'I don't know. It is only just today that she . . . it is only once in a lifetime . . . she very much wanted to remember him, to do him honour, his memory . . . but she is very sensible. However, as you please, sir, and I shall be very, very, very . . . they will all be . . . God will bless you . . . and the orphans . . . '

Sonya burst into tears, unable to finish.

'Quite so. Well, then, bear it in mind; and now be good enough to accept from me personally in the interests of your kinswoman, for immediate needs, what sum I can spare. I am completely and absolutely desirous that my name should not be mentioned in connexion with it. Here you are . . . having, so to say, cares of my own, I am not in a position . . . '

And Peter Petrovich held out to Sonya a carefully unfolded ten-rouble bank-note. Sonya took it, blushed deeply, jumped

up, murmured something, and hastily took her leave. Peter Petrovich ceremoniously escorted her to the door. She slipped out of the room at last, agitated and weary, and returned to Katerina Ivanovna in a state of extraordinary confusion.

Throughout this scene Andrey Semenovitch had stood there by the window or moved about the room, trying not to interrupt the conversation; when Sonya had gone, he went up to Peter Petrovich and solemnly offered him his hand.

'I heard everything and I *saw* everything,' he said, laying special emphasis on the word *saw*. 'This was noble, I mean humane! You wished to avoid her gratitude, I could see! And although I confess I cannot, on principle, sympathize with private charity, because not only does it not radically destroy the evil, but it even nourishes it, nevertheless I am bound to admit that I saw your action with pleasure—yes, yes, I liked it.'

'Oh, rubbish!' muttered Peter Petrovich, who seemed rather agitated, looking closely at Lebezyatnikov.

'No, it's not rubbish! A man who has been insulted and annoyed as you were by yesterday's happenings, and who is at the same time capable of thinking of other unhappy creatures—such a man, sir . . . although his actions constitute a social mistake—all the same . . . is worthy of respect! I did not expect it of you, Peter Petrovich, especially as according to your way of understanding things—oh! how that still hinders you! How, for example, all the unfortunate events of yesterday upset you,' exclaimed good little Andrey Semenovitch, feeling a renewed kindness for Peter Petrovich, 'and why, why do you think you must have this marriage, this *legal* marriage, my very dear, my most generous minded Peter Petrovich? Why must you have this *legality* in marriage? Well, if you were to beat me for it, I must say that I am glad that it failed, that you are free, that you are not altogether lost for humanity, I am glad . . . You see, I have spoken my mind!'

'Because I don't want, in your civil marriage, to wear horns and bring up other men's children; that's why I want a legal marriage,' answered Luzhin, for the sake of saying something. He seemed thoughtful and preoccupied.

'Children? You said children?' Andrey Semenovitch started like a war-horse at the sound of the trumpet. 'Children are a social question, and one of the first importance, I agree; but the problem of the children is solved in another way. Some



people even reject children altogether, like every other kind of family life. We will talk about children later, but now let us consider horns! I confess I have a weakness for the subject. That nasty Pushkinian guardee's expression is unthinkable in the lexicon of the future. Yes, and what are horns? Oh, what a fallacy! What horns? Why horns? What nonsense! On the contrary, there will be none in civil marriage! Horns are only the natural result of every legal marriage, the correction of it, so to speak, a protest, so that in this sense they are not in the least humiliating . . . And if I am ever—to assume an absurdity—legally married, I shall even be glad of your damned horns; then I shall say to my wife “My dear, until this moment I only loved you, but now I respect you, because you have shown yourself capable of protesting!” You laugh? That is because you are not strong enough to free yourself from prejudice! Confound it, I understand quite well where the unpleasantness lies when there is deception in legal marriage: but that is only the ignoble consequence of an ignoble state of affairs, in which both the one party and the other are degraded. But when horns are bestowed openly, as in civil marriage, then they don't exist any more, they are unthinkable, they cease even to be called horns. On the contrary, your wife would only be showing how much she respected you, by considering you incapable of opposing her happiness and advanced enough not to take your revenge on her because of her new husband. Confound it, I sometimes imagine that if I were given in marriage—bah, if I got married (irregularly or legally, it's all the same), I might very well provide my wife with a lover, if she took too long about acquiring one for herself: “My dear,” I should say to her, “I love you, but even more I wish you to respect me—here you are!” Am I not right in what I say?”

Peter Petrovich sniggered as he listened, but he was not particularly amused. He did not even hear much of all this. He was really thinking of something else, and even Lebezyatnikov perceived this at length. Peter Petrovich seemed excited, and rubbed his hands as he considered something. Afterwards, Andrey Seménovich remembered this and understood it . . .

## CHAPTER II

It would have been difficult to say exactly what were the reasons which had raised the senseless idea of that funeral dinner in Katerina Ivanovna's disordered mind. She had actually squandered on it almost ten roubles out of the twenty Raskolnikov had given her for Marmeladov's funeral. Perhaps Katerina Ivanovna considered it her duty to the dead man to honour his memory 'properly', so that all the lodgers, and especially Amalia Ivanovna, might know that 'he was no worse than they, and probably much better', and that none of them had any right 'to look down his nose' at him. Perhaps the most potent influence on her was that special '*pride of the poor*', which makes many poor people, in observing some of those social rites obligatory in our way of life for all and sundry, exert their utmost efforts and spend the last penny of their savings, simply in order to make as good a showing as their neighbours and not be 'criticized' by them. But most probably Katerina Ivanovna wished, precisely on this occasion, just at this moment when she seemed to be abandoned by everyone on earth, to show all these 'nasty contemptible lodgers' not only that she 'knew how things ought to be done, and how to entertain guests', but also that she had not been brought up for her present lot in life, but in the 'household of an officer and a gentleman, in what might almost be called aristocratic surroundings', and had never been meant for sweeping floors, or washing her children's rags at night. Such fits of pride and vanity sometimes seize the poorest and most downtrodden of people, and may take the form of tormenting and uncontrollable desires. Katerina Ivanovna, moreover, was not downtrodden—circumstances might kill her, but they could not crush her spirit, could not intimidate her or subdue her will. Besides, Sonechka had good grounds for saying that her mind was disturbed. It is true that she could not yet have been definitely and conclusively called deranged, but recently, for the whole of the past year, her poor brain had been too harassed to escape all damage. Doctors say that an advanced stage of consumption also tends to produce some impairment of the mental faculties.

There was neither a great number nor a great variety of wines, nor any Madeira, that had been an exaggeration, but there was wine. There were vodka, rum, and port, all of very

poor quality, but all in fair quantity. Besides the traditional *kutya*\* of boiled rice and raisins, there were two or three varieties of eatables (including pancakes), all from Amalia Ivanovna's kitchen, and two samovars were going at once, so that both tea and punch might be made after dinner. Katerina Ivanovna had bought the provisions herself, with the help of one of the lodgers, a pathetic little Pole, living there for God knows what reason, who had immediately volunteered to run Katerina Ivanovna's errands, and had been dashing about with his tongue hanging out all the morning and all the previous day, apparently trying to make his activity as noticeable as possible. He was constantly consulting Katerina Ivanovna over every trifle, and even went looking for her when she was shopping; he could be heard incessantly calling her 'honoured *Pani*', and at last she grew thoroughly sick of him, although at first she had said she would be quite lost without this 'obliging and generous-hearted' person. It was characteristic of Katerina Ivanovna to paint everybody she came into contact with in glowing colours at first, and to praise them so highly that it sometimes became embarrassing. She would invent circumstances to their credit that had never existed, and herself believed in them most sincerely and whole-heartedly, and then in a moment she would be disillusioned and break with them, repulsing with contempt and harshness the very people she had been almost literally idolizing only a few hours before. She was by nature of a humorous, cheerful, and peaceable disposition, but constant failure and unhappiness had brought her to the point of so *furiously* desiring and demanding that everybody should live in joy and harmony, and *should not dare* to live otherwise, that the slightest discord, the smallest setback, drove her at once almost to madness, and in an instant, from indulging the brightest hopes and fancies, she would fall to cursing fate, smashing and destroying anything that came to hand, and banging her head against the wall. Amalia Ivanovna had also suddenly acquired unusual significance and importance in Katerina Ivanovna's eyes, perhaps only because preparations for this funeral dinner were under way and Amalia Ivanovna had thrown herself whole-heartedly into helping with them; she had undertaken to lay the table, to procure linen and cutlery and so on, and to have the food cooked in her own kitchen. Katerina Ivanovna left everything to her and herself went to the cemetery. Everything had in fact



been done very nicely: the table looked quite neat, and although the plates, forks, knives, glasses, cups, and so on, borrowed from different lodgers, did not match, but were of various shapes and sizes, all were set out by the appointed time, and Amalia Ivanovna, in a black dress and with new mourning ribbons in her cap, met the returning funeral party with a certain pride, conscious of work excellently done. This pride, though justified, did not please Katerina Ivanovna. 'Really, just as if the table couldn't have been laid without Amalia Ivanovna.' She disliked the cap with its new ribbons, too. 'Wasn't this stupid German woman giving herself airs because she was the landlady, and had consented to help her poor lodgers out of charity? It looked like it. Charity indeed! Why, Katerina Ivanovna's papa, who was a colonel, and all but governor, sometimes had forty guests at table, and persons like Amalia Ivanovna, or rather Ludwigovna, would not even have been allowed into the kitchen . . .' However, Katerina Ivanovna resolved not to give her feelings vent for the moment, although she decided in her own mind that Amalia Ivanovna must be taken down a peg or two this very day and reminded of her proper place, or else she would be fancying God knows what about herself. Meanwhile, she merely treated her with coldness. Another unpleasant circumstance helped to increase Katerina Ivanovna's irritation at the service, except for the little Pole, who had just managed to get to the cemetery, hardly any of the lodgers invited to the funeral had been present, but now all the poorest and most insignificant of them had appeared for the dinner, many of them not even quite sober, the disgusting wretches! But the older and more solid citizens among them had all stayed away, as if they had agreed upon it among themselves. Peter Petrovich Luzhin, who might be called the most respectable of all the people in the flat, had not appeared, and yet, only the evening before, Katerina Ivanovna had managed to tell the whole world, that is to say Amalia Ivanovna, Polechka, Sonya, and the little Pole, that he was a most noble and generous man, very well-to-do and with enormous influence, who had been a friend of her first husband's and received in her father's house, and who had promised to do his utmost to obtain a considerable pension for her. We may remark here that if Katerina Ivanovna boasted of anybody's property and connexions, it was without any interested motive or personal calculation, but quite dis-

interestedly, out of the fullness of her heart, so to speak, and from simple joy in giving praise and ascribing even more than his real worth to the person she extolled. Like Luzhin, and probably 'following his example', that 'miserable scoundrel Lebezyatnikov' also failed to appear. 'Who does he think he is?' He was only invited out of kindness and because he shares a room with Luzhin and is a friend of his, so it would have been awkward not to ask him.' A stylish lady and her 'dried-up old maid' of a daughter were also absent; although they had been living only a week or two in one of Amalia Ivanovna's rooms, they had complained several times of the noise and shouting coming from the Marmeladovs' room, especially when Marmeladov came home drunk, and Katerina Ivanovna had of course been informed of this by Amalia Ivanovna, when she was wrangling with her and threatening to turn out the whole family, shouting at the top of her voice that Katerina Ivanovna was a nuisance to 'respectable lodgers whose shoes she was not fit to untie'. Now Katerina Ivanovna had made a special point of inviting this lady and her daughter 'whose shoes she was supposed not to be fit to untie', all the more determinedly because the lady had always turned haughtily away if they met by chance; Katerina Ivanovna meant to show them that 'people here had nobler thoughts and feelings, and would issue invitations in token that they bore no ill will', and that she herself was not accustomed to living in such circumstances. She had meant to make this, and her late papa's Governorship, clear to them by the conversation at table, and to hint at the same time that there was no reason why they should turn away when they met her, and that it was an extremely stupid thing to do. The fat lieutenant-colonel (really a retired staff-captain) was, alas, absent, but it appeared that he had been 'under the weather' since the morning of the previous day. In a word, the only ones who had appeared were the little Pole, a shabby silent little clerk with a spotty face and a greasy frock-coat, who had an unpleasant smell, and a deaf and almost completely blind old man, who had once worked in some post office and whom someone had been maintaining at Amalia Ivanovna's, nobody knew why, from time immemorial. There was also a drunken retired lieutenant (really a clerk in the commissariat) with a very loud coarse laugh, who, 'just imagine!' had no waistcoat on. One guest sat straight down at the table without even greeting Katerina Ivanovna, and, finally, one person

who did not possess a suit would have come in a dressing-gown, but this was so gross an affront to propriety that he was thrust out by the combined efforts of Amalia Ivanovna and the little Pole. The Pole had brought with him two other Poles who had never even lived at Amalia Ivanovna's, and whom nobody had ever seen there before. All this was extremely exasperating to Katerina Ivanovna. 'After all, who were all these preparations made for?' To make more room the children had not even been put at the table, which filled the whole room as it was, but their places had been laid on a trunk in a corner, where the two youngest sat on a bench, and Polechka, as the biggest, was charged with looking after them, feeding them, and wiping their little noses 'like well-brought-up children's'. In short, Katerina Ivanovna was perforce obliged to greet all her guests with redoubled dignity and even haughtiness. Some she eyed very sternly and asked to sit down with great condescension. For some reason she considered Amalia Ivanovna to be responsible for all those who were not present, and suddenly adopted a very off-hand manner with her, as Amalia Ivanovna immediately noticed with extreme resentment. Such a beginning boded no good for the end. At last everybody was seated.

Raskolnikov had arrived at almost the same time as they returned from the cemetery. Katerina Ivanovna was terribly glad to see him, first because he was the only 'educated person' among the guests and 'as everybody knew was preparing to occupy a professorial chair in the university in two years' time', and secondly because he immediately excused himself with great politeness for not having been able to be at the funeral in spite of his own wishes. She almost rushed at him, made him sit down on her left (Amalia Ivanovna was on her right) and in spite of her ceaseless fussing and anxiety that the food should be properly served and that there should be enough for everybody, in spite of the tormenting cough that constantly interrupted her and left her panting for breath, and that seemed to have grown more obstinate during the last two days, she kept up an incessant flow of conversation with Raskolnikov, pouring out in a half-whisper all her accumulated emotions and her justifiable indignation at the failure of the dinner; this indignation alternated with frequent fits of the gayest, most uncontrollable laughter at her guests, and especially at the landlady.

'That cuckoo is to blame for everything. You know who I mean, her, her!' said Katerina Ivanovna, nodding towards



the landlady. 'Look at her: her eyes are popping out, she thinks we are talking about her, and she can't catch what we are saying. What an owl! Ha, ha, ha!' Cough, cough, cough. 'And what does she think she is proving with that cap?' Cough, cough, cough. 'Have you noticed that she wants everybody to think she is patronizing me and doing me an honour by being here? I asked her, as a decent respectable woman, to invite nice people, who had known my poor husband, and look at the clowns and sluts she has brought! Look at that one, whose face is not even clean; he's nothing but a lump of dirt on two legs! And those queer little Poles . . . ha, ha, ha!' Cough, cough, cough. 'Nobody has ever seen them here before; I haven't either; well, I ask you, why have they come? All sitting solemnly in a row. Hey, *Pan*,' she suddenly cried out to one of them, 'have you had some pancakes? Have some more! Have some beer! Wouldn't you like some vodka? Look, he's jumped up, he's bowing, look, look! They must be dreadfully hungry, poor things! It doesn't matter, let them eat. They aren't making a noise, at any rate, only . . . only, really, I am afraid for the landlady's silver spoons! . . . Amalia Ivanovna!' she said almost aloud, addressing her, 'if your spoons chance to get stolen, I warn you I won't take the responsibility! . . . Ha, ha, ha!' and she roared with laughter, turning back to Raskolnikov, gesturing towards the landlady again and full of enjoyment of her sally. 'She didn't understand, she didn't understand again! She's sitting there with her mouth open, look: an owl, a real owl, a screech-owl in new cap-ribbons, ha, ha, ha!'

Again her laughter turned into intolerable coughing, which lasted for five minutes. Drops of sweat stood on her forehead, blood appeared on her handkerchief. Silently she showed it to Raskolnikov and then, with hardly a pause, began to whisper to him again with extraordinary animation, and a red flush staining her cheeks: 'Listen, I entrusted her with a most delicate commission, as you might say, that of inviting that lady and her daughter, you understand who I mean? It was necessary to proceed in the most delicate manner, to manage things very skilfully, and she went about it in such a way that that fool of a newcomer, that insolent creature, that provincial nonentity, simply because she is some major's widow and has come here to petition for a pension, and wear out her skirts on the floors of government offices, and at fifty-five years old she rouges and powders (it is well known) . . . and not only

does this creature not condescend to put in an appearance, but she doesn't even send an excuse, as common courtesy demands, if she can't come. I can't understand, either, why Peter Petrovich hasn't come. But where is Sonya? Where has she gone? Ah, there she is at last! Why, Sonya, where have you been? It is strange that you can't be punctual even at your father's funeral. Rodion Romanovich, make room for her next to you. There is your place, Sonechka . . . have what you like. Have some galantine, that is the best. The pancakes will be brought in a minute. Have the children been given some? Polechka, have you got everything there?" Cough, cough, cough. "Good. Be a good girl, Lenya, and don't kick your feet, Kolya; sit still, like a nicely-brought-up little boy. What did you say, Sonechka?"

Sonya hastened to give her Peter Petrovich's apologies at once, trying to speak loud enough for everybody to hear and using the most choicely respectful expressions, purposely composed in the manner of Peter Petrovich and embellished by herself. She added that Peter Petrovich had urgently requested her to inform Katerina Ivanovna that, as soon as he was able, he would come himself to talk to her about *business*, and arrange what could be done for her and undertaken in the future.

Sonya knew that this would soothe and appease Katerina Ivanovna, that she would be flattered, and, most important of all, her pride would be gratified. She sat down next to Raskolnikov, making him a hurried bow and casting at him a quick glance of curiosity. For the rest of the time, however, she avoided either looking at him or speaking to him. She seemed almost absent minded, although she watched Katerina Ivanovna's face in order to anticipate her wishes. Neither she nor Katerina Ivanovna was in mourning, for want of suitable clothes; Sonya wore dark brown, and Katerina Ivanovna her only dress, a sober striped cotton print. The news about Peter Petrovich was very well received. Katerina Ivanovna listened with an air of self-importance, and then, in the same consequential manner, inquired after Peter Petrovich's health. Then she promptly whispered to Raskolnikov, almost aloud, that it would indeed be strange for a respectable man of soad worth, like Peter Petrovich, to find himself in such 'extraordinary company', in spite of his devotion to the family and his ancient friendship with her papa.

"That is why I am particularly grateful to you, Rodion

Romanovich, for not disdaining my hospitality even in these surroundings,' she added almost aloud; 'but I am convinced that only your special friendship for my poor dear husband persuaded you to keep your word.'

Then once more she surveyed her guests with pride and dignity, and suddenly, with great solicitude, inquired loudly across the table of the deaf old man whether 'he would not care for a little more roast meat, and had he been supplied with port?' The old man did not answer, and for a long time could not be made to understand what he was being asked about, although his neighbours even began to shake him, to amuse themselves. He only gazed about him with his mouth open, which increased the general merriment still more.

'What a dolt! Look at him! Why was he brought? As for Peter Petrovich, I always had full confidence in him,' went on Katerina Ivanovna to Raskolnikov. 'He, of course, is not like'—here she quite overwhelmed Amalia Ivanovna by addressing her loudly and cuttingly, with an expression of great severity 'not like your over-dressed riff-raff who would not even have been admitted as cooks into my papa's kitchen, and my late husband would certainly have done them too much honour if he had received them, even though it was only out of his inexhaustible kindness.'

'Yes, he loved to drink; he loved it, and he certainly drank!' cried the retired commissariat clerk suddenly, as he drained his twelfth glass of vodka.

'My late husband certainly had that weakness, and everybody knows it,' Katerina Ivanovna turned on him in a flash. 'But he was a generous-hearted, good man, who loved and respected his family, his fault was that in the goodness of his heart he trusted all sorts of depraved creatures, and he would drink with God knows who, people who were far beneath him in every way. Just think, Rodion Romanovich, they found a gingerbread cock in his pocket; he was dead drunk, but he had remembered the children.'

'Cock? Did you say a cock?' cried the commissariat clerk.

Katerina Ivanovna did not deign to answer him. She sighed thoughtfully.

'Like everybody else, you probably think I was too harsh with him,' she went on to Raskolnikov. 'But I wasn't. He respected me very, very much. He was a good-hearted man! And I was so sorry for him sometimes! He would sit in a corner,



watching me, and I would feel sorry for him; I wanted to be nice to him, but then I would think, "If you are nice to him, he will get drunk again." It was only by being severe that I could restrain him a little.'

'Yes, he had his hair pulled more than once,' roared the commissariat clerk again, pouring another glass of vodka down his throat.

'Some fools would be all the better, not only for having their hair pulled, but for a good drabbing. I am not speaking of my poor husband now' retorted Katerina Ivanovna.

The red patches on her cheeks glowed brighter and brighter, her breast heaved. Another moment, and she would have made a scene. People were sniggering and obviously enjoying themselves. They began to nudge the clerk and whisper to him, evidently hoping to get them both worked up.

'A-llow me to ask what you are referring to,' he began, 'I mean, whose honourable name . . . you were good enough to . . . But that's enough! It's nothing! Widow! I forgive you . . . I pass!' And he returned to his vodka.

Raskolnikov sat and listened with disgust. He ate very little, barely, and only out of politeness and to avoid offending her, touching the food with which Katerina Ivanovna kept piling his plate. His eyes were fixed on Sonya. Sonya grew steadily more anxious and uneasy; she, too, foresaw that the dinner would not end peacefully, and fearfully watched Katerina Ivanovna's growing irritability. She knew that she herself was the principal reason why the two ladies had treated Katerina Ivanovna's invitation with such disdain. She had heard from Amalia Ivanovna that the mother had taken offence at the invitation and had asked 'how she could be expected to let her daughter sit down with *that girl*'. She was afraid that Katerina Ivanovna had somehow learnt of this, and an affront to her, Sonya, meant more to Katerina Ivanovna than offensiveness to herself personally, or to her children, or her papa, it was, in short, a mortal insult and Sonya knew that Katerina Ivanovna would not rest 'until she had shown those two draggle-tails that they . . . &c., &c.' As if on purpose to make matters worse, somebody passed down to her from the other end of the table a plate on which were two hearts pierced by an arrow, moulded from black bread. Katerina Ivanovna flared up at once and remarked across the table in a loud voice that the sender was of course 'a drunken ass'. Amalia Ivanovna, also apprehensive

of something unpleasant, and deeply hurt by Katerina Ivanovna's supercilious manner, tried to divert the nasty mood of the company to another object and at the same time to increase her own importance, by beginning suddenly, apropos of nothing, to tell a story about an acquaintance of hers, 'Karl from the chemist's', who took a cab at night, and 'the cabby wished to kill him, and Karl very, very much begged and prayed him not to kill him and cried, and he was feared, and from fear his heart transfixed.' Although Katerina Ivanovna smiled, she immediately observed that Amalia Ivanovna ought not to try to tell stories in Russian. Amalia Ivanovna was even more offended than before and answered that her '*Valer aus Berlin* was a very, very important man and always his hands in pockets put'. Katerina Ivanovna was too heartily amused to restrain herself any longer, and burst into a fit of laughter that made Amalia Ivanovna begin to lose the last shreds of her patience and self-control.

'Look at the screech-owl!' whispered Katerina Ivanovna, cheerful again, to Raskolnikov. 'She meant to say he kept his hands in his pockets, but it sounded as if he put his hands in other people's pockets.' Cough, cough. 'And have you noticed, Rodion Romanovich, how all these foreigners living in St. Petersburg, without exception, and especially the Germans who come here from all over the place, are stupider than us? You will agree, one simply can't say that "Karl from the chemist's from tear his heart transfixed" or that (snivelling fool!), instead of tying the cabman up, "he prayed and cried and very much begged". The silly creature!—and she thinks it is all very pathetic, and doesn't suspect how stupid she is. I think that drunken clerk is much cleverer than she is; at least you can see that he is a drunkard and has drunk his wits away; but they are all so prim and proper . . . Look at her sitting there with her eyes popping out. She's angry, she's angry! Ha, ha, ha!' Cough, cough, cough.

With her spirits restored, Katerina Ivanovna allowed her attention to stray to all sorts of minor matters, and then began to describe how, with the help of the pension she would obtain, she would open a boarding-school for young ladies in T . . . , her native town. Raskolnikov had not been informed of this scheme by Katerina Ivanovna before, and she instantly went into all its fascinating details. In some unexplained fashion there suddenly appeared in her hand that same

'Certificate of Merit' of which the late Mr. Marmeladov had told Raskolnikov in the tavern, when he was explaining that his wife, Katerina Ivanovna, when she left school, had danced a shawl-dance 'before the Governor and other important personages'. The certificate was now evidently expected to serve as proof of Katerina Ivanovna's right to conduct a school herself, but, more important, it had been kept in reserve for the purpose of finally discomfiting 'those two dressed-up draggles', in case they came to the dinner, and of showing them quite clearly that Katerina Ivanovna came from a very honourable, one might even say aristocratic, family, was the daughter of a colonel, and was very much better than certain adventuresses, who had recently multiplied so rapidly. The certificate immediately got into the hands of the drunken guests, and Katerina Ivanovna did not try to prevent this since it really stated, *en toutes lettres*, that she was the daughter of a man who had held some civil rank and been decorated, and could consequently almost be thought of as indeed a colonel. Warming to her subject, Katerina Ivanovna proceeded to enlarge on the details of this wonderful and peaceful future in T —, the teachers from the high school, whom she would invite to give lessons in her school, and the respectable old Frenchman, M. Mangot, who had taught her French and was now living out his time in T — and would no doubt come to her for a very reasonable salary. Finally it came to the turn of Sonya, 'who would go to T — with Katerina Ivanovna and help her with everything'. Here somebody guffawed at the other end of the table. Katerina Ivanovna, although she instantly tried to pretend that she disdained to notice the laughter, raised her voice and began to talk enthusiastically of Sonya Semenovna's undoubted qualifications to be her assistant, 'her gentleness, patience, self-denial, generosity, and good education'. She tapped Sonya on the cheek and, rising, kissed her warmly twice. Sonya blushed, and Katerina Ivanovna burst into tears, immediately observing that 'she was a silly, nervous creature, and had got too worked up, and it was time she stopped, and since dinner was over it was time to hand round tea'. At this moment, Amalia Ivanovna, now thoroughly disgruntled by the fact that she had not taken the least part in all this conversation, and that nobody was listening to her, risked a last attempt and, with secret misgivings, ventured to express to Katerina Ivanovna two very practical and profound ideas,



first, that in the boarding-school to be, they must pay particular attention to the young ladies' clean linen (*die Wäsche*) and that 'they must have absolutely one such good *Dame*, that she should after the linen to care', and secondly, 'that the young ladies must not secretly by night any novels to read'. Katerina Ivanovna, who was really very tired and upset, and who had had enough of this dinner, immediately 'snapped' at Amalia Ivanovna that she was 'talking nonsense', and didn't understand anything; that *die Wäsche* was the linen-maid's concern, not that of the directress of a superior boarding-school; and as for novel reading, that was a most indecorous suggestion, and she begged her to say no more. Amalia Ivanovna flushed and, turning nasty, remarked that she only 'good meant', and 'very much good meant' and that '*Geld* for the room had not paid been'. Katerina Ivanovna at once 'put her in her place', with the retort that she was lying when she said she 'meant good', because she had been badgering her, Katerina Ivanovna, about the rent the day before, while the dead man was still lying there on the table. To this Amalia Ivanovna answered, very logically, that 'those lady she inviting was, but those lady not coming were, because those lady were respectable lady, and to unrespectable ladies could not to come'. Katerina Ivanovna 'scored off her' by observing that, as she was a slut, she was not in a position to judge what genuine respectability was. Amalia Ivanovna was not to be put down, but instantly declared that her '*Vater aus Berlin* a very, very important person wass, and went with both hands in pockets, and always went puff, puff!'; and in order to present a truer picture of her *Vater*, she jumped up from her chair, thrust both her hands into her pockets, inflated her cheeks and began making vague puffing noises to the accompaniment of loud guffaws from the lodgers, who were purposely encouraging her with their approval, in expectation of a fight. Katerina Ivanovna could not brook this, and immediately 'rolled out', for everyone to hear, that perhaps Amalia Ivanovna had never had a *Vater*, but was simply a drunken St. Petersburg Finn, who had probably been a cook somewhere or other, and possibly something worse. Amalia Ivanovna, as red as a lobster, shrieked that perhaps Katerina Ivanovna 'altogether without a *Vater* has been; but she had a *Vater aus Berlin*, and he wore a long frock-coat and ever went puff, puff, puff!' Katerina Ivanovna remarked disdainfully that everybody knew where she came

from and that it was stated in print on her certificate of merit that her father was a colonel; and that Amalia Ivanovna's father (if she had one at all, was probably a Finnish milkman in St. Petersburg; but most likely she had had no father, because her patronymic was in doubt to this day: was she Ivanovna or Ludwigovna? Here Amalia Ivanovna, driven to frenzy at last, and thumping the table with her fist, began to scream that her *Vater* was called Johann, that he was a *Burgmeister*, and that Katerina Ivanovna's *Vater* had 'quite never a *Burgmeister* been'. Katerina Ivanovna got up from her chair and in a severe and apparently calm voice (although she was very pale and her breathing was laboured) remarked that if Amalia Ivanovna had the effrontery 'to set her rubbishy little *Vater* on a level with her papa once more, she, Katerina Ivanovna, would tear off her cap and trample it under her feet'. On this, Amalia Ivanovna began to run about the room, shouting at the top of her voice that she was the mistress of the house and that Katerina Ivanovna 'must this instant from my flat to depart'; then for some reason she began hastily collecting her silver spoons from the table. Everything was din and uproar. The children began to cry. Sonya hurried to Katerina Ivanovna to restrain her, but when Amalia Ivanovna shouted something about a yellow card, Katerina Ivanovna pushed Sonya away and advanced upon her landlady with the intention of putting her threat about the cap into execution. At this moment the door opened and Peter Petrovich Luzhin appeared on the threshold. He stood there and let his stern and attentive glance travel over the whole company. Katerina Ivanovna hurried eagerly towards him.

### CHAPTER III

'PETER PETROVICH!' she exclaimed, 'you, at least, will protect me! Tell this stupid creature that she must not dare to treat a respectable lady in misfortune in this manner, that there are courts of law! . . . I shall go to the Governor-general himself . . . She shall answer for it . . . Remember my father's hospitality, and protect my orphan children.'

'Excuse me, madam . . . Excuse me, excuse me, madam,' said Peter Petrovich, waving her away. 'As you are aware, I had not the honour of your papa's acquaintance . . . allow me, madam!' (Somebody laughed loudly.) 'In your ceaseless

disputes with Amalia Ivanovna I have no intention of taking part . . . I have found it necessary to come here . . . I wish to speak with your stepdaughter, Sofya . . . Ivanovna (I think) . . . at once! Allow me to pass . . .'

Peter Petrovich sidled past Katerina Ivanovna and walked towards the farther corner of the room, where Sonya was.

Katerina Ivanovna remained standing where she was, as if thunderstruck. She could not understand how Peter Petrovich could disown her papa's hospitality. Once she had invented that hospitality, she herself regarded it as gospel. She was impressed, too, by Peter Petrovich's dry, business-like tone, which seemed to convey some contemptuous threat. Everybody had gradually become silent since his entrance. Besides the fact that this 'solid citizen' was sharply out of harmony with all the guests, it was evident that he had come here on business of importance, since probably only an extraordinary reason could bring him into such company, and that, consequently, something was going to happen. Raskolnikov, standing by Sonya, moved aside to let him pass; Peter Petrovich seemed not to notice him. A moment later, Lebezyatnikov also appeared on the threshold; he did not come into the room, but stood there with an expression of peculiar curiosity and even of astonishment; he listened, but for a long time seemed unable to understand.

'Excuse me if I am interrupting you, but the matter is rather important,' remarked Peter Petrovich to the company in general, without addressing himself to any one person. 'I am even glad that there should be people here. Amalia Ivanovna, I humbly request you, as mistress of the flat, to give your attention to my conversation with Sofya Ivanovna.' He turned directly to Sonya, who seemed extraordinarily surprised and even apprehensive, and went on: 'Sofya Ivanovna, immediately after your visit, a banknote of the value of one hundred roubles disappeared from my table in my friend Andrey Semenovitch Lebezyatnikov's room. If, in any way whatever, you know where it is now, and will tell us, then I assure you on my word of honour, which I take everybody here to witness, that that shall be the end of the matter. In the contrary event, I shall be obliged to have recourse to more serious measures, and then . . . on your own head be it!'

Complete silence reigned in the room. Even the crying children were quiet. Sonya stood, as pale as death, and looked



at Luzhin without speaking. She seemed not to have understood. A few seconds passed.

'Well, what is it to be?' asked Luzhin, looking intently at her.

'I don't know . . . I know nothing about it . . .' said Sonya at last, faintly.

'No? You don't know?' repeated Luzhin, and then paused again for a few moments. 'Thank, mademoiselle,' he began again sternly, but still as it were exhorting her. 'I think well. I am prepared to give you more time to reflect. Be good enough to realize that if I were not convinced, I, with my experience, would certainly not run the risk of accusing you so directly, since for so direct and public an accusation, if I were lying, or even mistaken, I should be held, in a certain sense, responsible. I know this. This morning, for my own requirements, I changed some five-per-cent banks of the nominal value of three thousand roubles. I made a note of it in my pocketbook. When I came home, as Andrey Semenovitch can bear witness, I began to count the money and when I had counted two thousand three hundred roubles I put that money in my pocketbook, and put the pocketbook in my coat pocket. There remained about five hundred roubles in bank-notes on the table, and among them were three one-hundred-rouble notes. Just then you came (at my request), and all the time you were with me you were very perturbed, and three times in the course of our conversation you hurriedly got up to go, although our conversation was not finished. Andrey Semenovitch can testify to all this. You yourself, mademoiselle, will probably not refuse to confirm that I asked you to come, through Andrey Semenovitch, for the sole purpose of discussing with you the bereaved and helpless position of your relative Katerina Ivanovna—to whose dinner I was unable to come—and the possibility of helping her by organizing a subscription, or a lottery, or something of the sort. You expressed your gratitude, and even shed tears. I recount everything just as it happened, in the first place to remind you of it, and in the second to show you that my memory retains even the minutest details). Then I took from the table a ten-rouble note and gave it to you, as a contribution from myself for the assistance of your relative. Andrey Semenovitch saw all this. Then I accompanied you to the door—still with the same confusion on your part—after which I remained alone with Andrey Semenovitch, and, after a conversation with him lasting about ten minutes, Andrey

Seménovich went out and I returned to the table where the money was lying, with the intention of counting it and laying it aside, as I had purposed to do before. To my surprise, one of the hundred-rouble notes was missing. Kindly consider, then: I cannot suspect Andrey Seménovich in any way; the very idea is shameful. Neither could I have made a mistake in my accounts, because a minute before your entrance I had finished my reckoning and found the total correct. You will agree that, recollecting your confusion and your haste to be gone, and the fact that you kept your hands on the table for some of the time, and, finally, taking into account your social position and its concomitant habits, I was, so to say, *compelled*, against my will and with horror, to adopt a suspicion which—while of course, it is cruel—is—justifiable! I will add once more that, in spite of my *just* conviction, I know there is nevertheless in my present accusation some risk to myself. But, as you see, I did not let the matter rest, I acted, and I will tell you why; solely, miss, solely on account of your black ingratitude! What? I invite you to visit me, in the interests of your destitute relative, I put into your hands the ten roubles which are all I am in a position to give you, and you immediately, on the spot, repay me for all this by such an action! No, it is not right! You must be taught a lesson! Think well then; nay, I implore you, as your true friend (for you cannot have a better friend than I am at this moment), to reconsider! Otherwise, I shall be inexorable! Well?"

"I did not take anything of yours," whispered Sonya, terrified. "You gave me ten roubles, here, take them!" Sonya pulled her handkerchief from her pocket, untied the knot in it, took out the ten-rouble note and proffered it out to Luzhin.

"And so you deny knowledge of the other hundred roubles?" he said insistently and reproachfully, not taking the note.

Sonya looked round. They were all looking at her with terrible, stern, mocking, hateful faces. She glanced at Raskólnikov . . . he was standing by the wall with his arms folded, and looking at her with eyes full of fire.

"Oh God!" burst from Sonya.

"Amalia Ivanovna, the police must be informed, and meanwhile I humbly beg you to send for the porter," said Luzhin quietly and even gently.

"*Gott der barmherzige!*" I had known that she a thief is!" exclaimed Amalia Ivanovna, throwing up her hands.

'You knew?' Luzhin took her up. 'That means that even before this you had some sort of basis for coming to that conclusion. I beg you, respected Amalia Ivanovna, to remember your words, spoken, moreover, in the presence of witnesses.'

There was a general stir and an outburst of loud conversation on all sides.

'Wha-a-t?' shrieked Katerina Ivanovna, recovering her wits and flinging herself on Luzhin as though a spring had been released. 'What? You accuse her of theft? Sonya? Oh, villains, villains!' She rushed to Sonya and hugged her with her wasted arms.

'Sonya, how dared you take ten roubles from him? How silly of you! Give it to me! Give me the ten roubles at once—here!'

And snatching the note from Sonya, Katerina Ivanovna crumpled it up and flung it with a backward sweep of her arm straight into Luzhin's face. The ball of paper hit him in the eye and fell to the floor. Amalia Ivanovna rushed to pick it up. Peter Petrovich lost his temper.

'Restrain that madwoman!' he cried.

At this moment several more people appeared in the doorway beside Lebezyatnikov, among them the two recently arrived ladies.

'What! Madwoman? I am mad, am I? Fool!' shrieked Katerina Ivanovna. 'You are a fool, you rascally attorney, you vile creature! Sonya, Sonya taking money from him! Sonya a thief! Why, she would be more likely to give it to you, fool!' Katerina Ivanovna laughed hysterically. 'Have you ever seen a fool?' and she turned rapidly from one to another, pointing to Luzhin. 'What? And you as well!' as she caught sight of the landlady. 'You too, you German sausage seller, you assert that "she a thief is", you filthy Prussian hen dressed up in a crinoline! You! You! And she hasn't left the room, and when she came back from seeing you, you villain, she sat down straight away by me, everybody saw her. She sat next to Rodion Romanovich . . . Search her! Since she didn't go out at all, that means the money must be on her! Search then, search, search! Only if you don't find it, then excuse me, my dear man, you shall answer for it! I'll run to the Emperor, the Emperor, to our gracious Tsar himself, I will throw myself at his feet, at once, this very day! I am all alone in the world, they will let me in! Do you think they won't? You are mis-



taken, I shall get in! I shall get in! I suppose you were counting on her being so meek and gentle, weren't you? Is that what you relied on? But I, brother, am not meek! It will be the worse for you! Search, then! Search, search, go on, search!

And Katerina Ivanovna frenziedly tugged at Luzhin, trying to pull him towards Sonya.

'I am ready, I will take the responsibility . . . but calm down, madam, calm down! I see only too well that you are not meek! . . . This . . . this . . . what is to be done?' muttered Luzhin. 'The police ought to be present . . . although as it is there are quite enough witnesses . . . I am ready . . . But in any case it is difficult for a man . . . by reason of his sex . . . If with Amalia Ivanovna's assistance . . . although things ought not to be done like this . . . what should we do?'

'Anyone you like! Anybody who wants to may search her!' cried Katerina Ivanovna. 'Sonya, turn out your pockets! See, see! Look, you monster, it's empty, her handkerchief was here, and the pocket is empty! You see! Here's the other pocket, look! You see! You see!'

And Katerina Ivanovna did not so much turn as drag Sonya's pockets inside out, one after the other. But from the second, the right-hand, pocket there flew out a piece of paper which described a parabola in the air and fell at Luzhin's feet. Everybody saw it, and there were many excited exclamations. Peter Petrovich stooped, picked up the paper from the floor with two fingers, raised it where everybody could see, and unfolded it. It was a hundred-rouble bank-note, folded into eight. Peter Petrovich turned round in a circle, holding up the note to show everybody.

'Thief! Out of my flat! Police, police!' howled Amalia Ivanovna. 'They must in Siberia driven be! Get out!'

The air was full of exclamations. Raskolnikov said nothing, but kept his eyes on Sonya except when he occasionally glanced quickly at Luzhin. Sonya still stood in the same place, as though hardly conscious. She did not even seem very surprised. Suddenly her face was flooded with crimson, and she cried out and covered it with her hands.

'No, it wasn't me! I didn't take it! I don't know anything about it!' she cried in a heart-rending wail, and flung herself into the arms of Katerina Ivanovna, who clasped her and held her close as though she would shield her with her body from all the world.

'Sonya, Sonya! I don't believe it! You see, I don't believe it!' cried Katerina Ivanovna, in the face of the plain evidence, rocking her in her arms like a child. She kissed her repeatedly, caught up her hands and kissed them too, lingeringly. 'As if you could have taken it! How stupid these people are! Oh Lord! You are so stupid, stupid!' she cried, turning to them. 'You don't know yet, you don't know her heart, you don't know what she is like! She take it, she! Why, she would strip off her last garment, and sell it, and go barefoot, and give you everything, if you were in need, that's the kind of girl she is! She went on the streets because my children were starving, she sold herself for us! . . . Ah, my poor dear husband! Ah, my poor dear dead husband! Do you see this, do you see it? Here is a funeral dinner for you! Oh, heavens! Why are you all standing still? Defend her! Rodion Romanovich, why don't you take her part? Do you believe it, too? Not one of you is worth her little finger, not one of you, not one, not one, not one. Oh God, defend her now!'

The plaints of poor, consumptive, bereaved Katerina Ivanovna seemed to have produced a marked effect on her hearers. There was so much suffering and pathos in the face twisted by pain and wasted by disease, in the parched lips flecked with blood, in the hoarse voice, in the sobs like a crying child's, in the childishly trustful and yet desperate prayer for help, that all of them pated the unhappy woman. Peter Petrovich at least *pitied* her.

'Madam, madam' he exclaimed impressively. 'This matter does not involve you! Nobody could accuse you of instigating the theft or of complicity in it, especially as it was you who made the discovery by turning out her pockets; that means that you had no idea of it before. I am completely and absolutely willing to be compassionate if, so to say, destitution was Sonya Semenovna's motive, but why, mademoiselle, did you refuse to confess? Did you fear the disgrace? Was this your first step? You lost your head, perhaps? It is understandable, very understandable . . . But how could you start on such courses? Ladies and gentlemen'—he turned to the assembled company—'pitying and, so to say, sympathizing, I may be ready to forgive, even now, in spite of the personal insults I have received. And, mademoiselle, let your present disgrace be a lesson to you for the future,' he added to Sonya; 'I shall take no further steps. So be it; I have done. Enough!'

Peter Petrovich cast a sidelong look at Raskolnikov. Their glances met. Raskolnikov's fiery eyes seemed ready to reduce him to ashes. Katerina Ivanovna, meanwhile, appeared no longer to hear what was going on; she was hugging and kissing Sonya like a madwoman. The children had also put their little arms round Sonya, and Polechka, who, although she did not altogether understand what was happening, was drowned in tears and shaking with sobs, had hidden her pretty little face, swollen with crying, against Sonya's shoulder.

'What a foul trick!' said a loud voice suddenly from the doorway.

Peter Petrovich looked round quickly.

'How despicable!' repeated Lebezyatnikov, staring fixedly at him.

Peter Petrovich seemed startled, as everybody observed and remarked upon later. Lebezyatnikov advanced into the room.

'And you dared to call on me as a witness!' he said, going up to Peter Petrovich.

'What does this mean, Andrey Semenovitch? What are you talking about?' muttered Lazhin.

'It means that you are a . . . traducer! That is what my words meant!' said Lebezyatnikov hotly, looking at him sternly with his short-sighted little eyes. He was terribly angry. Raskolnikov gazed at him with absorbed attention, as though seizing on and weighing every word. Once more silence reigned in the room. Peter Petrovich seemed at a loss, especially in the first moments.

'If it is me you mean . . . ' he stammered. 'What is the matter with you? Are you sane?'

'I am sane enough, and you are . . . a scoundrel! Oh, how vile the whole business is! I listened, I waited to the end, on purpose to understand it all, because, I must confess, I still don't quite see the logic of it . . . I don't understand what your purpose was.'

'But what did I do? Will you stop talking in these idiotic riddles? Or perhaps you have been drinking?'

'You may perhaps drink, base creature, but I don't! I never touch vodka, because it is against my principles! Just think, he himself gave that hundred-rouble note to Sonya Semenovna with his own hands! I saw it, I can bear witness, I will take an oath on it! He did it, he himself!' repeated Lebezyatnikov, looking at each of them in turn.



'Have you gone out of your mind or something, puppy?' squeaked Luzhin. 'She herself, here in front of all of you, she herself asserted a moment ago that she received nothing from me but ten roubles. If that is so, how could I have given it to her?'

'I saw you, I saw you!' asserted Lebezyatnikov in a shout, 'and although it is against my principles, I am prepared to swear any oath you like in court immediately, because I saw how you put it surreptitiously into her pocket! Only I, like a fool, thought you were doing it out of kindness! In the doorway, as you parted from her, when she had turned and you were shaking her hand with one of yours, with the other, the left hand, you slipped the note into her pocket on the sly. I saw you! I saw you!'

Luzhin turned pale.

'What is this nonsense?' he exclaimed haughtily. 'And how could you recognize a banknote, when you were standing by the window? With your short sight, you simply imagined you saw it. You are raving!'

'No, I didn't imagine it. Although I was standing a good way off, I saw everything, and though it really is difficult to recognize a note from the window—you are right there—it so happens that I know for a certainty that it was indeed a hundred-rouble note, because when you were giving Sofya Semenovna the ten-rouble note—I saw you myself—you took a hundred-rouble note from the table at the same time (I saw this, because I was standing quite near you just then, and because of a certain idea that came to me, I did not forget that you had that note in your hand). You folded it and kept it in your hand all the time. Then I would have forgotten it again, but when you were getting up you transferred it from your right hand to your left and nearly dropped it; then I remembered again because the same idea came back to me, the idea that you wanted to do her a kindness without letting me know. You may imagine that then I began to watch you—and I saw how you managed to thrust it into her pocket. I saw you, I saw you, I am prepared to swear to it!'

Lebezyatnikov was almost breathless. Exclamations, expressing more astonishment than anything else, began to be heard on all sides, some of them, however, were taking on a menacing tone. Everybody crowded round Peter Petrovich. Katerina Ivanovna rushed up to Lebezyatnikov.

'Andrey Semenovitch! I misjudged you! Stand up for her! You are the only one on her side! She is an orphan; God sent you to her! Andrey Semenovitch, our dear, kind friend!' And Katerina Ivanovna, hardly realizing what she was doing, flung herself on her knees before him.

'Stuff and nonsense!' shouted Luzhin, in a passion of rage. 'You are talking rubbish, sir! "I forgot, I remembered, I remembered, I forgot" what does it all mean? So I slipped it to her deliberately? What for? What was my purpose? What have I in common with this . . .'

'What for? That is what I cannot understand myself, but that I am speaking gospel truth is a fact! I am so far from being mistaken, you abominable scoundrel, that I remember clearly that that question occurred to me at once, just when I was thanking you and shaking hands with you. Why had you put it stealthily into her pocket? That is, just why did you do it by stealth? Was it only to hide it from me, because you knew I held contrary opinions and repudiated private charity which accomplishes no radical cure? Well, I decided that you really were ashamed to give away such large sums in front of me, and besides, I thought, "perhaps he means to give her a surprise, to astonish her, when she finds a whole hundred roubles in her pocket." (Because some charitable people don't like to make a parade of their good deeds, I know.) Then I thought you wanted to test her, that is, to see if she would come and thank you when she found it. Then, that you wanted to avoid all gratitude, and that . . . how does it go?—that the right hand (isn't it?) should not know . . . something like that, in short. Well, a lot of different ideas came into my head, so that I intended to think them over later, but all the same, I thought it would not be tactful to reveal that I knew your secret. However, yet another point occurred to me: that Sofya Semenovna might lose the money before she noticed it; that is why I decided to come here, call her outside, and inform her that a hundred-rouble note had been put in her pocket. And on the way I called at the Kobylatnikovs' room to take them *A General Deduction from the Positive Method*, and specially recommend to them Piederit's article (and Wagner's as well). Then I came here, and what a state of affairs I found here! Now could I, could I, have had all those ideas and deliberations, if I really had not seen you put a hundred roubles in her pocket?'

When Andrey Semenovitch had finished his lengthy argument, with the logical conclusion at the end of the speech, he was dreadfully tired, and sweat was pouring off his face. Unfortunately, he was not very skilful at expressing himself in Russian (although he knew no other language, so that he seemed suddenly quite exhausted, even wasted away, after this feat of advocacy. His speech, nevertheless, had produced a remarkable effect. He had spoken with such warmth of conviction that everybody obviously believed him. Peter Petrovitch felt that things were going badly for him.

'What concern is it of mine if such silly questions came into your head?' he cried. 'That is not proof. You may have dreamed the whole thing, that's all! And I tell you that you are lying, sir! You are lying and slandering me out of spite against me, out of resentment because I refused to listen to your godless, free-thinking social theories, that's what it is!'

But Peter Petrovitch could not manage to twist things to his own advantage. On the contrary, murmurings arose on all sides.

'Oh, so that's your line!' exclaimed Lebezyatnikov. 'Liar! Call the police, and let me be sworn! There is only one thing I can't understand, and that is why he should risk such a vile trick. Wretched, despicable creature!'

'I can explain why he risked it, and if necessary I will swear to it myself,' said Raskolnikov at last, firmly, and stepped forward. He seemed calm and resolute. Simply by looking at him everybody could clearly see that he really did know what all this was about, and that the time had come to unravel the knot.

'Now I can see the complete explanation,' Raskolnikov went on, addressing Lebezyatnikov. 'From the very beginning I suspected some filthy trick; my suspicions were aroused by certain circumstances known only to me, which I will tell you of at once, they are the whole point! Your invaluable evidence has made everything finally clear to me. I beg all of you to listen. This gentleman' (he pointed to Luzhin, 'recently became engaged to a young lady, my sister, Avdotya Romanovna Raskolnikov. But on his arrival in St. Petersburg, at our first meeting, the day before yesterday, he quarrelled with me and I threw him out, as I have two witnesses to prove. He has a very spiteful nature . . . I did not know then that he was lodging here with you, Andrey Semenovitch, and that con-



sequently on the very day of our quarrel, that is, the day before yesterday, he saw me, as a friend of the late Mr. Marmeladov's, give some money to his widow, Katerina Ivanovna, for the funeral. He immediately wrote to my mother and informed her that I had given all my money not to Katerina Ivanovna but to Sofya Semënovna, and in addition he referred in the most despicable terms to . . . to Sofya Semenovna's character, that is, he made insinuations about the character of my relations with Sofya Semenovna. All this, you understand, with the idea of making mischief between me and my mother and sister by suggesting that I was squandering the money they had sent to help me, all they had, on unworthy objects. Yesterday, in his presence, and that of my mother and sister, I established the true facts, proving that I had given the money to Katerina Ivanovna for the funeral, and not to Sofya Semenovna, and that I had not even been acquainted with Sofya Semenovna the day before, nor so much as seen her. To that I added that with all his virtues he, Peter Petrovich Luzhin, was not worth the little finger of Sofya Semenovna, whom he had spoken so ill of. When he asked if I would let Sofya Semenovna sit down beside my sister, I answered that I had already done so, that day. He grew angry because my mother and sister refused to quarrel with me without a better reason than his calumnies, and gradually began to say the most unpardonably impertinent things to them. There was a final rupture and he was turned out of the house. All this was yesterday evening. Now I ask for your special attention; think if he had contrived to show that Sofya Semenovna was a thief, then he would have proved to my mother and sister that he was almost right in his suspicions, that he was justified in being angry with me for setting Sofya Semenovna on a level with my sister, and that in attacking me he had consequently been defending and protecting the honour of my sister and his future wife. In short, by all this he might even have managed to embroil me with my family once more, and of course he hoped to get into favour with them again. I don't speak of the revenge he was taking on me, because he had grounds for supposing that Sofya Semenovna's honour and happiness were dear to me. That is what he counted on doing. That is how I understand the matter. That is all his motive, and there can be no other!

With these words, or something like them, Raskolnikov ended his speech, which had frequently been interrupted by

the exclamations of his audience, all of whom had listened very attentively. In spite of the interruptions he had spoken calmly, curtly, precisely, clearly, firmly. His incisive voice, his air of conviction, and his stern face produced an extraordinary effect.

'That's it! You are right!' corroborated Lebezyatnikov delightedly. 'It must be so, because he did in fact ask me, as soon as Sonya Semenovna came into the room, whether you were here. Had I seen you amongst Katerina Ivanovna's guests? He called me over to the window and asked me secretly. That means he thought it essential that you should be here! You are right! It is all true.'

Luzhin smiled scornfully and said nothing. He had, however, turned very pale. He seemed to be considering how to get out of his fix. He might have been glad to drop the matter and leave, but this was hardly possible at the moment; it would have meant acknowledging the justice of the accusations levelled against him and the fact that he had indeed deliberately slandered Sonya Semenovna. Besides, the guests, who had been drinking fairly heavily, were too excited to allow it. The commissariat clerk, although he did not understand all of it, was shouting loudest of them all, suggesting various measures which Luzhin thought extremely unpleasant. Some people who had not been drinking were also present, they had collected here from every room in the flat. The three Poles were furiously angry and never stopped shouting in Polish, 'The *Pan* is a scoundrel' and muttering threats. Sonya had listened with strained attention, but as though she only partly understood, and looked like a person recovering from a swoon. She had not once taken her eyes from Raskolnikov, feeling that he was her sole protection. Katerina Ivanovna's breathing was harsh and laboured and she seemed in the last stages of exhaustion. More stupid with astonishment than all the rest of them, Amalia Ivanovna stood there with her mouth open and without a thought in her head. She saw only that Peter Petrovich had somehow come to grief. Raskolnikov tried to say something more, but he was not allowed to finish; they were all shouting and crowding round Luzhin with oaths and threats. But Peter Petrovich did not flinch. Seeing that the attempt to incriminate Sonya had completely failed, he now called impudence to his assistance.

'Allow me, ladies and gentlemen, allow me; do not crowd round; let me pass!' he said, pushing his way through them.

'And do me the favour of uttering no threats; I assure you that nothing will come of them. You will accomplish nothing by them, not a jot, but, on the contrary, you, ladies and gentlemen, will answer for trying to force me to conceal a criminal offence. The thief has been unmasked, and I shall prosecute. The law is less blind than you and . . . and it is not drunk and will not believe two acknowledged atheists, agitators, and trouble-makers, when they accuse me for the sake of personal revenge, as they are fools enough to admit themselves . . . Yes! Allow me!'

'I don't want a trace of you left in my room; be good enough to leave immediately! Everything is over between us! And to think of the way I've put myself about, the way I've been explaining things to him . . . for two whole weeks' . . .'

'You know I myself told you, Andrey Semenovitch, that I was leaving, and you wished then to get me to stay. Now I will only add that you are a fool, sir! May you be cured of your feeble mind and your short-sightedness! Allow me, ladies and gentlemen!'

He thrust forward, but the commissariat clerk was not going to let him escape so easily, he seized a tumbler from the table, swung it, and launched it at Peter Petrovich, but it flew straight at Amalia Ivanovna. She shrieked and he, thrown off balance by his swing, rolled under the table. Peter Petrovich went back to his room, and within half an hour had quitted the house. Sonya, with her meek nature, had always been conscious that she was more vulnerable than other people, and could be insulted almost with impunity. She had, nevertheless, until this moment thought that she could somehow manage to avoid disaster by caution, meekness, submissiveness to anybody and everybody. Her disabusement was too grievous. She was, of course, capable of bearing everything, even this, with patience and almost without murmuring. But at first she found this burden too heavy. In spite of her triumphant vindication, when the first terrified numbness had passed and she was able to realize and understand clearly what was happening the consciousness of her helplessness in the face of insult and injury oppressed and wrung her heart. She gave way to hysteria and at last, unable to endure any longer, flung herself out of the room, almost immediately after Lazhin left it, and hurried home. Amalia Ivanovna, when the glass struck her, amid roars of merriment, also found it unbearable to have



to suffer for what was not her fault. Like a madwoman she rushed striking at Katerina Ivanovna, whom she held to blame for everything.

'Away from my flat! This instant! March!' And she began to seize everything of Katerina Ivanovna's that she could lay hands on and hurl them all to the floor. Already almost completely exhausted, nearly fainting, pale, and gasping for breath, Katerina Ivanovna started up from the bed on which she had collapsed, and flung herself on Anna Ivanovna. But the struggle was too unequal, she was pushed away like a feather.

'What! That godless slander was not enough—this slut must attack me now! What? She drives me out on the day of my poor husband's funeral, after she has eaten at my table, out into the street with my orphaned children! And where can I go?' cried the poor woman, sobbing and panting. 'Oh God!' she exclaimed, with flashing eyes, 'is there no justice? Will you not protect me, widowed and fatherless? But we shall see. There is justice and truth on earth, they do exist, and I will find them! At once; only wait, godless, worthless creature! Polechka, stay with the children until I come back. Wait for me, even if you have to wait in the street! We shall see whether there is justice in the world!'

Throwing over her head the green shawl Marmeladov had spoken of, Katerina Ivanovna made her way through the disorderly and drunken crowd of lodgers who still thronged the room and ran out into the street, wailing and weeping, with a vague intention of going somewhere at once, without delay, and finding justice, whatever the cost. Polechka, terrified, crouched with the children on the trunk in the corner, and waited, shivering, with her arms round the two little ones, for her mother's return. Anna Ivanovna swept about the room, raging, striking, lamenting, and flinging everything she could lay hands on to the floor. The lodgers were all shouting and lawling in a disorderly way, some discussing, as well as they could, what had happened, others quarrelling and cursing one another, others again striking up a song . . .

'Now it is time I went, too!' thought Raskolnikov. 'Well, Sonya Semenovna, let us see what you will have to say now!'

And he set off towards Sonya's lodgings.

## CHAPTER IV

RASKOLNIKOV had been energetic and courageous in pleading Sonya's cause against Luzhin, in spite of the burden of fear and suffering in his own soul. But after so harassing a morning he was glad of a chance to escape from the preoccupations that had become unbearable to him, apart altogether from the warm personal feelings involved in his defence of Sonya. Besides, he had already been contemplating, with an alarm that became terror at some moments, his forthcoming interview with Sonya; he felt *obliged* to tell her who had killed Lizaveta, although he foresaw that it would cost him great anguish, which he tried, as it were, to push away from him. When, therefore, he exclaimed, as he left Katerina Ivanovna's 'Well, what will you have to say now, Sofya Semenovna?' it was probably because he was still wildly, if superficially, elated by his recent victory over Luzhin. But a strange thing happened. When he reached the Kapernaumovs' flat, he experienced a sudden sensation of impotence and fear. He stopped before the door, asking himself, 'Need I really tell her who killed Lizaveta?' The question was a strange one, because at the very same moment he felt not only that he must tell her, but that he could not put it off even for a short time. He did not yet know why he could not, he only *felt* it, and the tormenting consciousness of his helplessness before the inevitable almost crushed him. To escape from his anxious preoccupations, he quickly opened the door and paused on the threshold with his eyes on Sonya. She was sitting with her elbows on her little table and her face hidden in her hands, but when she saw Raskolnikov, she stood up at once and came to meet him, as though she had been expecting him.

'What would have become of me without you?' she said rapidly, as they moved into the room together. Evidently she was in haste to say this one thing to him. Then she waited.

Raskolnikov walked to the table and sat down on the chair from which she had just risen. She stood in front of him, two paces away, exactly as she had the day before.

'Well, Sonya?' he said, suddenly aware that his voice was trembling. 'The whole affair hinged on your "social position and its concomitant habits". Did you understand that just now?'

Sonya looked distressed.

'Please don't talk to me as you did yesterday,' she interrupted. 'Please, don't even begin. There is enough suffering as it is . . .'

She hastened to smile, fearing that he might not like the rebuke.

'I was very foolish to come away. What is happening there now? I wanted to go back at once, but I kept on thinking that you . . . would come here.'

He told her that Amalia Ivanovna was turning them out of their room, and that Katerina Ivanovna had gone off 'to look for justice'.

'Oh God!' exclaimed Sonya. 'Let us go at once . . .'

And she seized her cape.

'It's everlastingly the same thing!' cried Raskolnikov, exasperated. 'You have no thoughts except for them! Stay with me a little.'

'But . . . Katerina Ivanovna?'

'Katerina Ivanovna can wait. Since she has left the house, she will be sure to come here,' he added morosely. 'If you are not here, she will find fault with you . . .'

Sonya sat down, in a torment of indecision. Raskolnikov remained silent, with his eyes on the ground, considering.

'Assume that Luzhin did not want to do it just now,' he began, without looking at Sonya, 'but if he had wanted to, or if it had somehow been part of his plans, he would have shoved you into gaol, wouldn't he, if it hadn't been for me and Lebezyatnikov?'

'Yes,' she said faintly. 'Yes!' she repeated, distracted and alarmed.

'But you know I might not have happened to be there. And Lebezyatnikov turned up quite by chance, too.'

Sonya was silent.

'Well, and if it had been prison for you, what then? Do you remember what I said to you yesterday?'

Again she did not answer. He waited.

'And I expected you to cry out again, "Oh, don't say it! Stop!"' laughed Raskolnikov, in a rather strained way. 'What, still silent?' he asked after a pause. 'But surely we must talk about something. I should like to know how you would settle a certain "problem", as Lebezyatnikov would say, now.' (He seemed to falter a little.) 'No, I really am serious. Suppose, Sonya, you had known Luzhin's intentions beforehand, and



known for a certainty that they meant the ruin of Katerina Ivanovna and the children, and of yourself into the bargain (I put it that way, because you consider yourself of no account). Polechka as well . . . because she is destined to take the same road. Well, then: suppose you were allowed to decide, that either one or the other should go on living, that is, either that Luzhin should live and go on doing evil, or that Katerina Ivanovna should die. How would you decide? Which of them should die? That is my question.'

Sonya looked at him anxiously. She could feel that there was something behind the uncertainty of this speech, which seemed to be approaching some point in a roundabout fashion.

'I had a feeling that you would ask me something like that,' she said, looking at him searchingly.

'Well, perhaps you had. But how would you decide?'

'Why do you ask about what could not happen?' said Sonya distastefully.

'That means that it would be better for Luzhin to go on living and doing mischief! Surely you dare not decide that way?'

'But I can't know God's intentions . . . And why do you ask questions that have no answer? Where is the point of such empty questions? How could it depend on my decision? Who made me a judge of who shall live and who shall not?'

'Oh, if you are going to mix God up in it, we shall get nowhere,' grumbled Raskolnikov sullenly.

'You had better say straight out what you mean,' cried Sonya in distress. 'You are leading up to something again . . . Did you come here only to torment me?'

She could not restrain herself but burst into bitter weeping. He looked at her in black dejection. Five minutes went by.

'You are right, Sonya,' he said quietly at last. He had changed suddenly; his artificially bold and weakly challenging manner had disappeared. Even his voice had grown suddenly feeble. 'I told you yesterday that I should not come to plead for pardon, and here I seem to have begun by doing just that . . . What I said about Luzhin and about God was for myself . . . I was asking for your forgiveness, Sonya . . .'

He tried to smile, but there was something helpless and incomplete about that pale smile. He bent his head and covered his face with his hands.

Suddenly and unexpectedly a bitter hatred for Sonya

seemed to flood his heart. Surprised and almost terrified by this feeling, he lifted his head and gazed at her, meeting her eyes fixed on him with a look of anxiety and anguished care. There was love in that look; his hatred vanished like a shadow. It had not been real; he had taken one feeling for another. All that it meant was that *the moment* had come.

He hid his face in his hands again and bent his head. Suddenly he rose from the chair, his face pale, looked at Sonya, and, without a word, went and sat down mechanically on the bed.

This moment felt to him terribly like that other, when he had stood behind the old woman, after he had freed the axe from its loop, and felt that 'there was not a moment to lose'.

'What is the matter?' asked Sonya, intimidated.

He could not speak. This was not at all, not at all, how he had meant to make his announcement, and he could not understand what was happening to him. She went up to him slowly, sat down on the bed beside him, and waited, without taking her eyes off him. Her heart thumped irregularly. The silence became unendurable, he turned his deathly-pale face towards her; his lips moved impotently, striving to speak. Terror filled Sonya's heart.

'What is the matter?' she repeated, drawing slightly away from him.

'Nothing, Sonya. Don't be afraid . . . It's all rubbish! Really, when you come to think of it, it is rubbish,' he muttered, looking like a man wandering in delirium. 'Why did I choose to torture you with this?' he added suddenly, looking at her. 'Really, why? I keep on asking myself that question, Sonya . . .'

He had, indeed, been asking himself the question perhaps a quarter of an hour before, but now he was quite without strength, hardly conscious of what he was doing and trembling from head to foot.

'Oh, how you are torturing yourself!' she said, full of distress.

'It's all nonsense! . . . Listen, Sonya,' for some reason he smiled suddenly, a pale and impotent smile that lasted for some two seconds) 'do you remember what I wanted to tell you yesterday?'

Sonya waited uneasily.

'I said, when I left, that I might perhaps be saying good-bye for ever, but that if I did come here today, I would tell you . . . who killed Lizaveta.'

She shuddered from head to foot.

'Well, here I am, come to tell you.'

'Then what you said yesterday was really . . . ' she whispered with difficulty. 'But how do you know?' she asked quickly, as if she had suddenly recollected herself.

Sonya's breathing was beginning to labour. Her face grew paler and paler.

'I do know.'

She was silent for a minute.

'Do you mean *he* has been found?' she asked timidly.

'No, he's not been found.'

'Then how do you know about *it*?' she asked, again almost inaudibly, and again after almost a minute's silence.

He turned to her and steadily, steadily, looked at her.

'Guess,' he said with the same distorted, feeble smile as before.

A convulsive shudder shook her.

'But you . . . I . . . Why do you frighten me so?' she asked, smiling like a child.

'I must be a great friend of *his* . . . if I know,' went on Raskolnikov, still continuing to keep his eyes fixed on her face, as though it were not in his power to turn them away. 'He did not want to . . . kill Lizaveta. He . . . killed her by accident . . . He meant to kill the old woman . . . when she was alone . . . and he went there . . . But Lizaveta came in . . . He was there . . . and he killed her.'

Another terrible minute went by. They still gazed at one another.

'Can't you guess?' he asked suddenly, with the sensation of a man throwing himself from a tower.

'N-no,' whispered Sonya, almost inaudibly.

'Look well.'

As soon as he had said this an old familiar sensation turned his heart to ice—he looked at her and suddenly in her face he seemed to see Lizaveta. He vividly recalled Lizaveta's expression as he advanced upon her with the axe and she retreated before him to the wall, with one hand stretched out and a childlike fear in her face, exactly like that of small children when they suddenly begin to be frightened, stare anxiously at the object of their fear, shrink back and stretch out their little hands, ready to burst into tears. It was almost the same now with Sonya; just as helpless, just as frightened, she stared at him



for some time and then, stretching out her left hand, lightly, almost imperceptibly, rested her fingers on his breast and slowly raised herself from the bed, shrinking farther and farther back, still with her eyes fixed on his face. Her fear suddenly communicated itself to him: the same terror showed in his face and he gazed at her with the same fixity and almost with the same *childish* smile.

'Have you guessed?' he whispered at last.

'Oh God!' burst in a terrible wail from her breast. Powerlessly she fell back on the bed, with her face in the pillow. But after a moment she raised herself quickly, quickly approached him, seized both his hands, and squeezing them as tightly as a vice in her thin fingers, once more fixed her unmoving glance on his face, as though it were riveted there. With this last despairing look she was striving to find and somehow, anyhow, seize upon some last hope. But there was no hope, no doubt remained; it was *true*! Even much later, when she remembered this moment, it seemed strange and wonderful to her that she should have known *at once* that there was no longer any doubt. Surely she could not have said, for example, that she had foreseen something of the kind. And yet now, as soon as he said it, it suddenly seemed to her that she really had foreseen *this very thing*.

'That's enough, Sonya! Stop! Don't torture me!' he begged pitifully.

This was not at all, not at all, how he had thought of making his revelation, but it was the way things had happened.

As if she did not know what she was doing, she jumped up and, wringing her hands, walked into the middle of the room, but quickly came back and sat down again beside him, so close that their shoulders almost touched. Suddenly, as if she had been stabbed, she started, cried out, and flung herself, without knowing why, on her knees in front of him.

'What have you done, what have you done to yourself?' she said despairingly, and, starting up, threw herself on his neck, embraced him and held him tight.

Raskolnikov recoiled and regarded her with a melancholy smile.

'How strange you are, Sonya! You put your arms round me and kiss me, when I tell you *that*. You don't know what you are doing.'

'There is no one, no one, unhappier than you in the whole

world!' she exclaimed in a frenzy, not hearing what he said, and suddenly broke into hysterical sobbing.

Long unfamiliar feelings poured like a flood into his heart and melted it in an instant. He did not withstand them, two tears sprang into his eyes and hung on his lashes.

'Then you will not forsake me, Sonya?' he said, looking at her almost with hope.

'No, no! Never, nowhere!' cried Sonya. 'I will follow you wherever you go. Oh God! . . . Oh, I am wretched! . . . Why, why didn't I know you before? Why did you not come before? Oh God!'

'I have come now.'

'Now! Oh, what can be done now? . . . Together, together!' she repeated, as if beside herself, embracing him again. 'I will follow you to prison!' He felt a sudden shock and the old hostile, almost mocking smile played on his lips.

'Perhaps, Sonya, I don't mean to go to prison yet,' he said.

Sonya looked at him quickly.

After her first passionate and poignant impulse of sympathy for this unhappy being, the terrible idea of murder seized her again. In his changed tone she now suddenly heard the voice of the murderer. She looked at him in bewilderment. She knew nothing yet of the why, the how, the wherefore, of it. Now all these questions sprang at once to her mind. Again she could not believe it. 'He, he a murderer? Can that be possible?'

'What is this? Where am I?' she said in deep perplexity, as if still hardly conscious. 'And how could you, you, the man you are . . . bring yourself to this? . . . It can't be true!'

'But it is. It was to rob her! Stop, Sonya!' he answered wearily and almost with annoyance.

Sonya stood as if stunned, then suddenly cried out, 'You were hungry! You . . . was it to help your mother? Was that it?'

'No, Sonya, no,' he muttered, turning away and hanging his head. 'I was not very hungry . . . I did want to help my mother, but . . . but that wasn't quite it . . . Don't torture me, Sonya!'

Sonya threw up her hands.

'But is this really, really true? Good God, what sort of truth is this? Who can believe it? . . . How could you, how could you give away your last penny, and yet commit murder for gain? Oh! . . .' she exclaimed suddenly. 'That money you gave Katerina Ivanovna . . . that money . . . Good heavens, could that money be . . .?'

'No, Sonya,' he interrupted hastily. 'It was not that money. Calm yourself! My mother sent me the money, through a merchant, when I was ill, and I gave it away the same day . . . Razumukhin saw it . . . he received it for me, indeed . . . That money was mine, my own, really mine.'

Sonya listened in bewilderment, trying with all her might to understand.

'But *that* money . . . I don't even know whether there was any money, though,' he added thoughtfully. 'I took a purse from her neck, a chamois-leather one . . . it was full, tightly crammed . . . but I didn't look inside it; I can't have had time . . . Well, and the things, some sort of studs, and chains—I put them all with the purse, in a courtyard on the Voznesensky Prospect, buried under a stone, the next morning . . . They are still lying there . . .'

Sonya listened with strained attention.

'But then why . . . why did you say it was for money, if you didn't take anything?' she asked quickly, clutching at straws.

'I don't know . . . I had not decided whether I should take the money or not,' he said, again apparently deep in thought, and then suddenly seemed to recollect himself with a brief, hurried smile. 'Oh, what nonsense I've been talking, haven't I?'

The thought occurred to Sonya, 'Is he mad?' But she suppressed it at once. No, it was something else. But she could understand nothing, nothing of all this.

'You know, Sonya,' he said with sudden inspiration, 'I'll tell you what: if I'd killed simply because I was hungry,' he went on, emphasizing every word and looking at her mysteriously but frankly, 'then I should be . . . *happy* now! I want you to understand that!'

'And what would it matter to you,' he cried after a moment, almost in desperation, 'what could it matter to you if I confessed now that I had done wrong? What could you find in such a meaningless triumph over me? Oh, Sonya, was it for that I came to you?'

Sonya seemed about to say something, but remained silent.

'That is why I wanted you to go with me yesterday, because you were all that was left to me!'

'Where did you want me to go?' asked Sonya timidly.

'Not to steal or commit murder. Don't be alarmed, it wasn't for that,' he smiled caustically. 'We are not alike . . . And you know, Sonya, it is only now, only this moment that I realized



where I was asking you to go yesterday. Yesterday, when I asked you, I didn't know myself where to. I asked you for one reason, I came here for one thing—that you should not leave me. You won't leave me, Sonya?"

She pressed his hand.

"And why, why did I tell her, why did I reveal it to her?" he exclaimed despairingly after a minute, looking at her with infinite pain. "Now you are waiting for me to explain it, Sonya; you sit and wait, I see, but what shall I say to you? You will not understand a word of it, and will only wear yourself out with suffering . . . because of me! . . . See, you are crying and embracing me again—why do you embrace me? Because I could not carry my burden myself, and have come here to put it on other shoulders—if you suffer it will be easier for me! And can you love such an infamous wretch?"

"But don't you suffer too?" cried Sonya.

Again a wave of the former feeling flooded his heart and for a moment softened him.

"Sonya, I have an evil heart, note that; it explains many things. I came here because I am evil. There are people who would not have come. But I am a coward and . . . an infamous wretch. But . . . let it go! None of this is to the point . . . I must speak now, and I do not know how to begin . . ."

He stopped and considered.

"Oh, we are such different people! . . ." he cried again. "We don't match. And why, why did I come? I shall never forgive myself that!"

"No, no, it was right to come!" exclaimed Sonya. "It is better that I should know, much better!"

He looked at her with anguish. "What if it really is . . .?" he said, as if trying to make up his mind. "You know, it was like this! This was it: I wanted to make myself a Napoleon, and that is why I killed her . . . Now do you understand?"

"N-no," whispered Sonya, naively and timidly; "only . . . go on, go on! I shall understand, I shall understand it all inside me!" she implored him.

"You will understand? Good, we shall see!"

He was silent, thinking, for a long time.

"The point is this: on one occasion, I put this question to myself: what if, for example, Napoleon had found himself in my shoes, with no Toulon, no Egypt, no crossing of Mont Blanc, to give his career a start, but, instead of those

monumental and glorious things, with simply one ridiculous old woman, who must be killed to get money from her trunk (for that career of his, you understand? well, would he have made up his mind to do it if there was no other way? Would he have shrunk from it, because it was so un-monumental and . . . and so sinful? Well, I tell you I tormented myself over that "problem" for a terribly long time, and I was terribly ashamed when at last I realized (quite suddenly) that not only would he not shrink, but the idea would never even enter his head that it was not monumental . . . and he would be quite unable to understand what there was to shrink from. And if there had been no other way open to him, he would have strangled her, without giving her a chance to squeak, and without a moment's hesitation! . . . Well, I also . . . stopped hesitating . . . strangled her . . . following the example of my authority . . . And that is exactly how it was! Does that amuse you? Yes, Sonya, perhaps the most amusing thing about all this, is that that is exactly how it happened . . .'

Sonya was not at all amused.

'You had better tell me straight out . . . without examples,' she said, even more timidly, and hardly audibly.

He turned towards her, looked at her sadly, and took her hands.

'You are right again, Sonya. Of course that's all nonsense, practically nothing but idle words! Look: you know, I suppose, that my mother has almost nothing. It happens that my sister had a good education, and she found herself condemned to scrape up a living as a governess. I was their only hope. I was studying; but I could not keep myself at the university and was obliged to leave it for a time. Even if things could have dragged along like that, it would only have meant that in ten years' time, or twelve, I might (if all went well) hope to become a teacher or a clerk with a salary of a thousand roubles . . .' (He sounded as though he were repeating a lesson.) 'Meanwhile, my mother would have withered away with care and grief, and I would never have been able to make her comfortable, and my sister . . . well, even worse things might have befallen my sister . . . And who would want to spend his whole life passing everything by, turning his back on everything, forgetting his mother, and humbly resigned to the wrongs done to his sister? And for what? In order, having buried them, to acquire new responsibilities—a wife and children, and then to

leave them also without a penny or a crust of bread? Well . . . well, and so I decided, having got hold of the old woman's money, to use it for my first years, so that I need not worry my mother, to provide for myself at the university, and to launch myself after the university—and to do all this on a large scale, thoroughly, so as to make a completely new career for myself and set out on a new road of independence . . . Well . . . well, that's all . . . Well, killing the old woman, of course . . . that was wrong . . . Well, that's enough!

He had dragged himself feebly to the end of his story and now hung his head.

'Oh, you're wrong, you're wrong!' cried Sonya in anguish. 'How could you . . .?' No, things are not like that!

'You see yourself that it's all wrong' . . . But I have told you the honest truth!

'What kind of truth is that? Oh God!'

'I only killed a louse, Sonya, a useless, vile, pernicious louse.'

'A human being a louse!'

'Of course I know she wasn't a louse,' he answered with a strange look. 'But I am not telling the truth, Sonya,' he added. 'It is a long time since I have told or known the truth . . . This was all wrong; your judgement is sound there. There were quite, quite, quite different reasons! . . . I have not talked to anybody for a long time, Sonya . . . Now my head aches badly . . .'

His eyes shone with the fire of fever. He was almost beginning to wander; an uneasy smile was on his lips. His utter exhaustion was apparent underneath his feverish excitement. Sonya could understand his weariness. Her head also was beginning to feel dizzy. And he spoke so strangely, some of it seemed clear enough, but still . . . 'But how? How? Oh God!' And she wrung her hands in despair.

'No, Sonya, that's all wrong,' he began again, suddenly raising his head as though struck by a new turn of thought that had aroused him again. 'That's not it! Rather . . . suppose (yes, it's much better this way), suppose I am ambitious, envious, malicious, vile, vindictive, well . . . and have perhaps a tendency to madness. (Let's have it all at once! They've talked of madness before, I know. I told you just now that I couldn't keep myself at the university. But do you know, I might perhaps have done it? My mother would have sent me



enough to pay my fees and I could probably have earned money for boots and clothes and food. There was teaching to be got; I was offered half a rouble a lesson. Razumikhin works! But I turned nasty and wouldn't do it. Yes, I turned *nasty*—that's the right word! Then I lurked in a corner like a spider. You've been in my wretched little hole, of course, you've seen it . . . But do you know, Sonya, that low ceilings and cramped rooms crush the mind and the spirit? Oh, how I hated that hole. But all the same I would not leave it. I deliberately stayed in it! For days on end I didn't go out; I wouldn't work, I wouldn't even eat, I just lay there. If Nastasya brought me food, I ate it; if not, I let the day go by without asking, on purpose, out of spite! I had no light at night, and I lay in the dark, because I wouldn't earn the money for candles. I should have been studying, but I had sold my books, and the dust is still lying inches thick on the notebooks and papers on my table. I preferred to lie and think. I spent all the time thinking . . . And all the time I had such dreams, all sorts of strange dreams, no need to tell you what they were! But it was only then that I began to fancy that . . . No, that's not it; I am getting it wrong again! You see, I kept on asking myself, "Why am I so stupid that when other people are stupid and I know for a certainty that they are, I don't even want to be cleverer than they?" Then I realized that if we have to wait for everybody to become clever it will take too long. Then I saw that it will never happen, that people don't change, and nobody can change them, and it's not worth the trouble of trying! Yes, that's it! That's the law of their nature . . . The law of their nature, Sonya! That's it . . . And I know now, Sonya, that the man of strong and powerful mind and spirit is their master! The man who dares much is right in their eyes. The man who tramples on the greatest number of things is their law-giver, and whoever is most audacious is most certainly right. So things have always been, and so they will remain. Anyone who is not blind can see it!

Although Raskolnikov still watched Sonya as he said this, he had ceased to be concerned whether she understood or not. He was completely in the grip of his fever. He felt a sort of sombre ecstasy. It really was a very long time since he had talked to anybody. Sonya understood that this gloomy creed had become his faith and his law.

'I realized then, Sonya,' he went on enthusiastically, 'that

power is given only to the man who dares stoop and take it. There is only one thing needed, only one—to dare! I had a thought then, for the first time in my life, that nobody had ever had before me! Nobody! It was suddenly as clear as daylight to me: how strange that not one single person passing through this nonsensical world has the courage, has ever had the courage, to seize it by the tail and fling it to the devil! I . . . I wanted to *have the courage*, and I killed . . . I only wanted to dare, Sonya, that was the only reason!

‘Oh, stop, stop!’ cried Sonya, flinging up her hands, ‘You have strayed away from God, and God has stricken you, and given you over to the devil! . . .’

‘By the way, Sonya, when I used to lie there in the dark thinking of all this, was that the devil confounding me, eh?’

‘Be quiet! Don’t laugh, it is blasphemous! You don’t understand anything at all! Oh God! He will never understand anything!’

‘Hush, Sonya, I am not laughing. I know myself that it was the devil dragging me along. Hush, Sonya, hush!’ he repeated with gloomy insistence. ‘I know all that. I thought it all out and whispered it over to myself, while I lay there in the dark . . . I argued it all out with myself, down to the last detail, and I know it all, all of it! And I got so tired, so tired, of all that rigmarole. I wanted to forget everything and start again, Sonya, without all the chatter. You don’t think I was foolish enough to rush headlong into it, do you? No, I went along like a wise man, and that is just what brought me to destruction! You don’t think, either, that I didn’t know, for example, that if I began questioning and cross-examining myself about whether I had the right to take power, that meant that I hadn’t any such right? Or that, if I asked myself, “Is a man a louse?” it meant that *for me* he was not, although he might be one for a man to whom the question never even occurred, and who would march straight ahead without asking any questions at all? . . . If I worried for so long about whether Napoleon would have done it or not, it must be because I felt clearly that I was not Napoleon . . . I endured all the torment of this endless debating, Sonya, and I longed to shake it off; I longed to kill without casuistry, to kill for my own benefit, and for that alone! I would not lie about it even to myself! I did not commit murder to help my mother—that’s rubbish!

I did not commit murder in order to use the profit and power I gained to make myself a benefactor to humanity. Rubbish! I simply murdered; I murdered for myself, for myself alone, and whether I became a benefactor to anybody else, or, like a spider, spent the rest of my life catching everybody in my web and sucking the life-blood out of them, should have been a matter of complete indifference to me at that moment! . . . And, most important, it was not money that I needed, Sonya, when I killed; it was not money, so much as something else . . . I know all this now . . . Understand me: perhaps, were I to pursue the same course, I should not commit murder again. I needed to experience something different, something else was pushing me along—what I needed to find out then, and find out as soon as possible, was whether I was a louse like everybody else or a man, whether I was capable of stepping over the barriers or not. Dared I stoop and take power or not? Was I a trembling creature or had I the *right* . . . ?

‘To kill? Had you the right to kill?’ Sonya flung up her hands again.

‘O-oh, Sonya!’ he cried irritably, and was about to retort, but then remained scornfully silent. ‘Don’t interrupt me, Sonya! I wanted to prove only one thing to you, that the devil was pulling me along then, and that he made it clear to me after that that I had not the right to travel by that road, because I am just as much a louse as everybody else!’ He flouted me, and now I have come to you! Take me in! If I were not a louse, would I have come to you? Listen: when I went to the old woman’s that time, it was only *to test myself* . . . Understand that!’

‘And you committed murder, murder!’

‘But really, what kind of murder? Is that how murder is done? Do people go to murder as I went then? I will tell you sometime how I went . . . Did I murder the old woman? I killed myself, not that old creature! There and then I murdered myself at one blow, for ever! . . . But it was the devil who killed the old hag, not I . . . That’s enough, Sonya, enough, enough! Leave me alone!’ he exclaimed in a sudden convulsion of anguish. ‘Leave me alone!’

He propped his elbows on his knees, and clutched his head tightly in his hands.

‘How you are suffering!’ broke in a tormented wail from Sonya.



'Well, tell me what to do now,' he begged, raising his head and gazing at her with a face monstrously distorted with despair.

'What to do?' she exclaimed, starting up, and her eyes, which had been full of tears, began to flash. 'Get up!' (She seized him by the shoulder, and he stood up, looking at her almost in consternation.) 'Go at once, this instant, stand at the cross-roads, first bow down and kiss the earth you have desecrated, then bow to the whole world, to the four corners of the earth, and say aloud to all the world: "I have done murder." Then God will send you life again. Will you go? Will you go?' she implored him, shaking all over as if in a fit, seizing both his hands and squeezing them tightly in her own, with her burning gaze fixed on him.

He was amazed, thunderstruck, at her sudden exaltation.

'You mean prison, don't you, Sonya? You think I must denounce myself?' he asked gloomily.

'Accept suffering and achieve atonement through it—that is what you must do.'

'No! I shall not go to them, Sonya.'

'But then how can you live? What will you live by?' exclaimed Sonya. 'Is it possible now? How can you speak to your mother? (Oh, what will become of them now? But what am I saying? After all, you have already abandoned your mother and your sister. Yes, you have abandoned them already. Oh God!' she exclaimed. 'He knows all this himself! You will have ceased to be a human being, and how, how, can you live then? What will become of you?'

'Don't be such a child, Sonya,' he said quietly. 'In what way have I wronged them? Why should I go? What could I say to them? All you have been saying is unreal . . . They destroy millions of people themselves, and count it a virtue. They are rogues and scoundrels, Sonya! . . . I shall not go. What should I say—that I committed a murder and dared not take the money, but hid it under a stone?' he added, with a bitter smile. 'You know they would laugh at me and say, "He was a fool not to take it." A fool and a coward! They wouldn't understand anything, Sonya; they are not fit to understand. Why should I go? I won't go. Don't be a child, Sonya . . .'

'You will destroy yourself, destroy yourself!' she repeated, stretching out her hands to him in desperate supplication.

'Perhaps I am *still* misjudging myself,' he remarked sombrely,

as though pondering something. 'Perhaps I am *still* a man and not a horse, and I was in too much of a hurry to condemn myself . . . Perhaps I can still put up a fight'

There was a supercilious smile on his lips.

'But to bear such torment! And for your whole life long' . . .

'I shall get used to it . . . he said, sullenly thoughtful. 'Listen,' he began after a moment, 'Stop crying; it is time to come to the point. I came to tell you the police are after me, trying to catch me . . .'

'Oh!' shrieked Sonya, terrified.

'Well, why do you scream? You wanted me to go to prison; why be frightened now? But this is the point: I will not give myself up. I will fight them again, and they won't be able to do anything. They have no real evidence. Yesterday I was in great danger, and I thought I was lost, but things are better today. All their evidence cuts both ways; I mean I can turn their accusations to my own advantage, do you understand? And I shall do it, because I have learnt my lesson now . . . But they are sure to put me in prison. If it had not been for one accidental circumstance they would certainly have put me there today, and perhaps they may *still* do so before the day is over . . . But that doesn't matter, Sonya: I shall stay there for a little and then they will let me go . . . because they haven't one real proof, and they won't have, I promise you. And it's impossible to convict anybody with what they have. Well, that's enough . . . I only wanted you to know . . . I will try to manage things with my mother and sister so as to reassure them and so that they won't be frightened. My sister, however, seems to be provided for now . . . consequently my mother is, too . . . Well, that's all. But be careful. Will you come and see me in prison, when they arrest me?'

'Oh yes, yes!'

They sat side by side, sad and weary, like shipwrecked sailors on a deserted shore. He looked at Sonya, and thought how much love she had for him, and suddenly it seemed strangely painful and burdensome to be so loved. Yes, that was a strange and terrible feeling! Going to Sonya's, he had felt that she was his only hope, his only way out; he had thought he could lay down a part of his suffering, at least, but now, when her whole heart turned towards him, he was suddenly conscious that his unhappiness was immeasurably greater than before.

'Sonya,' he said, 'better not come and see me when I am in prison.'

Sonya did not answer; she was in tears. Several minutes passed.

'Do you wear a cross?' she asked unexpectedly, as though suddenly remembering something.

He did not understand the question at first.

'No, I suppose you don't. Take this cypress-wood one. I have another, of brass, that was Lizaveta's. Lizaveta and I made an exchange: she gave me her cross and I gave her my ikon. Now I shall begin to wear Lizaveta's, and give this one to you. Take it . . . it is mine! It is my own, you know' she urged him. 'We are going to suffer together, we will bear the cross together! . . .'

'Give it to me,' said Raskolnikov. He did not want to distress her. But he drew back at once the hand he had extended for the cross.

'Not now, Sonya. Better give it me afterwards,' he added to reassure her.

'Yes, yes, that will be better, much better,' she took him up enthusiastically. 'When you accept your suffering, you shall put it on. You will come to me, and I will put it on you, we will pray, and then we will go.'

At this moment somebody knocked three times at the door.

'Sofya Semenovna, may I come in?' politely asked a familiar voice.

Sofya rushed to the door in terror. Mr. Lebezyatnikov's blonde head looked into the room.

## CHAPTER V

LEBEZYATNIKOV looked very anxious.

'I have come to you, Sofya Semenovna. Excuse me . . . I thought I should find you here' (he turned abruptly to Raskolnikov); 'that is, I didn't think anything . . . like that . . . but I thought . . . Katerina Ivanovna has gone out of her mind,' he blurted out to Sonya, turning away from Raskolnikov.

Sonya screamed.

'I mean, it looks like it, at any rate. However . . . We don't know what to do, that's the point! She came back . . . I think she'd been turned out of somewhere, and perhaps beaten . . . at least, I think so . . . She had run to Semen Zakharovich's chief,



but he wasn't at home; he was dining at some other general's . . . Imagine, she rushed off at once to where they were dining . . . to this other general's, and, imagine, she insisted on having Semen Zakharovich's chief called out, though it seems he was actually at table. You can imagine what happened. She was turned out, of course, and she herself says that she abused him and threw something at him. One may very well imagine it . . . and why she wasn't arrested . . . I don't know. Now she is telling everybody about it, including Amalia Ivanovna, but it is hard to understand her because she is shouting and throwing herself about violently . . . Oh, yes, she is clamouring that since everybody has abandoned her now she will take the children and go out into the streets with a barrel-organ, and the children shall sing and dance, and she will as well, and collect money, and every day they will go under the general's window . . . 'Let them see well-born children, whose father was a civil servant, going about the streets as beggars,' says she. She is beating all the children and making them cry. She is teaching Lanya to sing "The Little Hut", and the little boy to dance, and Polina Mikhaïlovna as well. She is tearing all their clothes and making them little caps, like actors. She herself is going to carry a basin and beat it instead of music. She won't listen to anything . . . Imagine what it's like! It is simply impossible!"

Lebezyatnikov would have gone on even longer, but Sonya, who had been listening almost without drawing a breath, snatched up her cloak and hat and hurried out of the room, putting them on as she ran. Raskolnikov went out after her, and Lebezyatnikov followed him.

"She has certainly gone mad" he said to Raskolnikov, as they came out into the street, "only I didn't want to frighten Sofya Semenovna, so I said "it looks like it", but there is no doubt about it. They say that in consumption there are tubercles that attack the brain, unfortunately, I don't know anything about medicine. However, I tried to convince her, but she won't listen to anything."

"You talked to her about tubercles?"

"Well, not exactly. Besides, she wouldn't have understood. But what I mean is this: if you convince a man logically that he has nothing to cry for, he will stop crying. That's clear. Or don't you think he will stop?"

"That would make living too easy," answered Raskolnikov.

"No, excuse me, excuse me. Of course, it is rather hard for

Katerina Ivanovna to understand; but do you know that in Paris they have been conducting serious experiments on the possibility of curing the mad by the use of nothing but logical persuasion? A professor there, who died recently, a serious scientist, thought they could be cured in this way. His basic idea was that there is no specific organic disorder in lunatics, but that madness is, so to speak, a logical mistake, a mistake of judgement, an incorrect view of things. He would gradually prove the patient wrong, and, just imagine, they say he achieved results. But as he was using douches at the same time, the results of this form of treatment are, of course, subject to doubt . . . At least, it would seem so . . .

Raskolnikov had not been listening for some time. As they came level with his house he nodded to Lebezyatnikov and turned in at the gate. Lebezyatnikov started, looked round, and hurried on.

Raskolnikov went into his little room and stood in the middle of it. Why had he returned here? He looked around at the discoloured, tattered wallpaper, the dust, his narrow bed . . . From the courtyard came the sound of sharp continuous knocking; somewhere something was being hammered in, a nail, perhaps . . . He went to the window, stood on tiptoes and for a long time gazed into the yard with a look of extraordinary attentiveness. But the yard was empty and whoever was knocking was invisible. In the wing on the left there were open windows here and there; pots of sickly geraniums stood on the window-sills. Linen was hanging outside the windows . . . He knew all this by heart. He turned away and sat down on the sofa.

Never, never before, had he felt so terribly alone!

Yes, once more he felt that he really hated Sonya, especially now when he had made her more unhappy. Why had he gone to plead for her tears? Why did he feel he must spoil her life? How vile!

'I will remain alone!' he said with sudden decision. 'She shall not come to the prison!'

Five minutes later he raised his head with a strange smile. The idea that had suddenly come to him was also strange: 'Perhaps it really would be better to go to Siberia.'

He never knew how long he sat in his room, with vague thoughts crowding into his head. Suddenly the door opened and Avdotya Romanovna came in. She stood still and looked

at him from the threshold, as he had done not long before at Sonya, then she came right in and sat down facing him on the chair she had sat in the day before. He looked at her silently, almost vacantly.

'Don't be angry, brother. I have only come for a moment,' said Dunya. She looked thoughtful but not stern. Her eyes were clear and tranquil. He saw that she too had come to him with love.

'Brother, I know *everything, everything*, now that Dmitri Prokofich has told me all about it and explained it to me. You are being persecuted and harassed because of a stupid and infamous suspicion . . . Dmitri Prokofich tells me that there is no danger at all, and that you are wrong to distress yourself so. I don't think so, and I *fully understand* that you are filled with indignation, and that this indignation may leave its mark on you for ever. I am afraid it may. I don't judge you, I dare not, for giving us up, and please forgive me for reproaching you before. I can feel myself that if I had had so great a trouble I should have wanted to leave everybody too. I shall not tell mother anything *about this*, but I shall keep talking to her about you, and I shall tell her from you that you will come to us very soon. Don't worry about her, I will make her mind easy, but you must not upset her again; you must come, even if only once. Remember, she is your mother! Now I have only come to say' (Dunya began to get up) 'that if you should happen to need me, or need . . . all my life, or anything . . . you must call me and I will come. Good-bye'

She turned abruptly and made for the door.

'Dunya?' Raskolnikov stopped her, got up, and went to her. 'Dmitri Prokofich Razumikhin is a very good chap.'

Dunya blushed very slightly.

'Well?' she asked after a moment's pause.

'He is a practical and hard-working man, honest and capable of true love . . . Good-bye, Dunya.'

Dunya had flashed red, then she became anxious.

'What is this, brother? Are we really parting for ever, that you should make such . . . testamentary dispositions?'

'It doesn't matter . . . Good-bye.'

He turned away from her and walked to the window. She stood there a little longer, looking at him uneasily, and went out full of alarm.

No, he did not feel cold towards her. There had been one



moment, at the very last, when he had longed to hold her close in his arms, *say good-bye* to her, and even *tell* her, but he could not make up his mind even to touch her hand.

'Afterwards she would perhaps shudder to remember that I embraced her now, and say that I stole her kiss!'

'And will *she* endure, or not?' he added to himself after some minutes. 'No, she won't; people like *her* are not made for endurance! They can never stand things . . .'

He thought of Sonya.

Cooler air blew in through the window. The light outside was no longer so bright. He snatched up his cap and went out.

Naturally, he could not now take any care of his health, nor did he wish to do so. But all this ceaseless terror and mental turmoil could not be without effect. And if he was not even now lying in a raging fever it was perhaps just because his ceaseless inner trouble kept him for the time being conscious and on his feet, as it were, artificially.

He wandered aimlessly. The sun was going down. A particular sort of dejection had recently begun to show itself in him. There was nothing violent or poignant about it, but it carried with it a premonition of perpetuity, weary, endless years of cold deadening depression, a presage of an eternity on 'a nand's-breadth of ground'. This feeling usually began to distress him even more towards evening.

'With such stupid, purely physical, infirmities, that seem to depend on the sunset or something, how can one help doing stupid things? It was bad enough going to Sonya, but Dunya.' he muttered disgustedly.

Somebody hailed him. He looked round, Lebezyatnikov rushed to him.

'Imagine, I have been to your room. I have been looking for you. Imagine, she had carried out her intention and taken the children away! Sofya Semenovna and I had hard work finding them. She is banging a frying-pan and making the children sing and dance. The children are crying. They stop at crossings and in front of shops. A lot of stupid people are following them about. Come along.'

'And Sonya?' asked Raskolnikov anxiously, as he hurried after Lebezyatnikov.

'She's raving mad. Not Sofya Semenovna, I mean, but Katerina Ivanovna, however, Sofya Semenovna is in a frenzy too. But Katerina Ivanovna is quite beside herself. I tell you,

she is definitely mad. They will be taken to the police. You can imagine what effect that will have . . . She is on the Canal now, near the Voznesensky Bridge, quite close to Sonya Semenovna's. It's not far.'

On the Canal bank, not very far from the bridge, and not two houses away from where Sonya lived, there was a knot of people, mostly street urchins. Katerina Ivanovna's hoarse broken voice could be heard from as far away as the bridge. And really it was a strange spectacle, calculated to excite the curiosity of a street crowd. Katerina Ivanovna, in her old dress and the green shawl, wearing a battered straw hat with the brim bent out of shape at one side, really was in a state of absolute frenzy. She was tired and gasping for breath. Her exhausted, consumptive face looked more full of suffering than ever—indeed, in the open air and the sunshine a consumptive always appears worse and uglier than indoors; but she was still in the same excited state and growing more exasperated with every minute. She kept dashing at the children, shouting at them, urging them on, telling them in front of everybody how to dance and what to sing, beginning to explain why all this was necessary, growing desperate over their inability to understand, beating them . . . Then, breaking off, she would rush back to the crowd; if she saw anybody slightly better-dressed stopping to look, she would immediately begin to explain to him that this, in her words, was what 'children from a respectable, one might even say aristocratic, home had been reduced to. If she heard laughter or a provocative witticism from among the crowd, she would immediately attack the offenders and begin to wrangle with them. Some of the crowd were laughing, others were shaking their heads, but they all looked anxiously at the madwoman with her terrified children. The frying-pan Lebezyatnikov had spoken of was not there, at least Raskolnikov did not see it; but instead of hanging on a frying-pan Katerina Ivanovna beat time by clapping her wasted hands when she made Polechka sing or Lenya and Kolya dance, she even tried to join in the singing herself, but each time her torturing cough made her break off at the second note, and she would lapse into despair again, curse her cough, and even weep. The frightened wailing of Lenya and Kolya made her angrier than anything else. There had really been some attempt at dressing the children up like street-singers. The little boy had on a turban of some red and white material, to

make him look like a Turk. There had not been a costume for Lenya, and she was only wearing a red knitted worsted cap (or rather night-cap) of the late Semën Zakharovich's, with a broken piece of white ostrich feather stuck in it which had belonged to Katerina Ivanovna's grandmother and been kept until now in a trunk as a family treasure. Polechka was wearing her usual clothes. She was watching her mother timidly and with great embarrassment, not leaving her side, and trying to hide her own tears; she guessed at her mother's madness and kept looking uneasily about. The street and the crowd terrified her. Sonya was following Katerina Ivanovna about, crying and begging her to go home. But Katerina Ivanovna was not to be persuaded.

'Stop it, Sonya, stop it!' she shouted in rapid, hurried tones, panting and coughing. 'You don't know what you are asking; you might be a child! I have told you that I shan't go back to that drunken German woman's. Let everybody see, let all St. Petersburg see, how a gentleman's children have to beg, though their father served all his life in faithfulness and truth and, one might say, died in the service.' (Katerina Ivanovna had already managed to create this legend for herself and believed in it blindly.) 'Let that worthless little wretch of a general see. And you are being silly, Sonya; how are we to eat now, tell me that? We have been a trouble to you long enough, I won't have any more of it! Oh, Rodion Romanovich, it's you!' she cried, catching sight of Raskolnikov and rushing towards him. 'Please explain to this silly girl that this is the best thing we could do! Even organ grinders get a living, and everybody can tell at once that we are different. They will see that we are poor orphans of good family who have been reduced to beggary. And that little wretch of a general will lose his job, you'll see! We shall be under his windows every day, and when the Emperor drives past I shall fall on my knees, and put them all in front of me and point to them and say, 'Father, protect them.' He is the father of orphans, he is merciful, he will protect them, you'll see, and that wretched little general . . . Lenya, *tenez-vous droite!* Kolya, you must dance again at once. What are you snivelling for? Snivelling again! But what on earth are you frightened of, little idiot? Oh God, what am I to do with them, Rodion Romanovich? If you knew how stupid they are! What can you do with children like that? . . .'

And, almost crying herself (which did not hinder her incessant,



uninterrupted flood of words, she pointed to the whimpering children. Raskolnikov tried to persuade her to go back, and even, thinking to work on her vanity, told her that it was not fitting for her to wander about the streets like an organ-grinder, since she was planning to be the principal of a boarding-school for young ladies . . .

'Boarding-school! Ha, ha, ha! The far-away hills are blue!' cried Katerina Ivanovna, her laughter bringing on a fit of coughing. 'No, Rodion Romanovich, the day-dreams are over! Everybody has abandoned us! . . . And that wretched little general . . . You know, Rodion Romanovich, I threw an ink-well at him. It was standing by the visitors' book on the table in the ante-room. I signed my name, threw it at him and ran away. Oh, the vile scoundrels! But I don't care, now I shall feed the children myself, I won't be beholden to anybody! We have bothered her long enough!' She pointed to Sonya.) 'Polechka, how much have you got? Show me! What, only two copecks? Mean creatures! They won't give us anything, they only run after us with their tongues hanging out! Well, what is that fool laughing at?' (pointing at one of the crowd.) 'It's all because Kolya is so stupid, he's a nuisance! What's the matter, Polechka? Speak French; *parlez-moi français*. After all, I have taught you some, you know a few sentences! . . . Otherwise how is anyone to tell you are well-educated children of good family and not like all the other organ-grinders? We're not giving some sort of Punch and Judy show in the street, but singing nice drawing-room songs. . . . Oh, yes, what are we going to sing? You keep on interrupting me, and we . . . you see, Rodion Romanovich, we stopped here to choose what to sing - something Kolya can dance to as well . . . because, as you may imagine, we couldn't prepare any of this beforehand, we must agree on something and rehearse it all thoroughly, and then we shall go to the Nevsky Prospect, where there are far more society people, and they will notice us at once, Lonya knows "The Little Hut" . . . but it's always "The Little Hut" - everybody sings it! We must sing something much more genteel. . . . Well, what have you thought of, Polya? You might help your mother! My memory, my memory has gone, or I should have remembered something! At any rate don't let us sing "A Hussar leaning on his sword"! Ah, let us sing "*Cinq sous*" in French! I taught it you, you know. And the main thing is that it is in French, so people will see at once that you are a gentleman's children, and that

will be much more pathetic . . . We might even sing "*Malborough s'en va-t-en guerre*", because that's a real children's song and it is used in all aristocratic houses as a lullaby:

*Malborough s'en va-t-en guerre  
Ne sait quand reviendra . . .*

she began singing . . . 'But no, "*Cinq sous*" would be better. Now, Kolya, hands on hips, quickly, and you, Lenya, must go round in the opposite direction, and Polechka and I will sing and clap our hands.

*Cinq sous, cinq sous  
Pour monter notre ménage . . .*

(She went off into a fit of coughing.) 'Put your dress straight, Polechka, the shoulders have slumped down,' she observed between coughs, panting. 'It is specially necessary for you to look nice and tidy now, so that everybody can see you are a gentleman's children. I said at the time that the bodice ought to be cut longer, and made in two pieces. Then you had to put in your advice, Sonya, "*Shorter, shorter still*", and it has made the child look perfectly dreadful . . . Now you're all crying again! What is wrong, you little sillies? Well, Kolya, begin, quickly! Quickly, quickly—oh, what an impossible child . . .

*Cinq sous, cinq sous—*

Another policeman! Well, what do you want?

A policeman was in fact pushing his way through the crowd. But at the same time a gentleman in undress uniform and a long cloak, a highly respectable official with an order round his neck (which was very gratifying to Katerina Ivanovna and had some influence on the policeman), came up and silently gave Katerina Ivanovna a green three-rouble note. His face expressed sincere compassion. Katerina Ivanovna accepted the money and bowed politely, even ceremoniously.

'I thank you, my dear sir,' she began, in a rather high-flown manner. 'The reasons which have prompted us . . . take the money, Polechka. You see, noble and generous people, who are ready to give immediate help to a poor gentlewoman taken on evil days, do exist. You see before you, my dear sir, orphans of good family who, one might even say, have aristocratic connexions . . . And that wretched little general sat there eating grouse . . . and stamping with impatience because I was disturbing him . . . "Your excellency," I said, "protect the poor orphans, because you knew the late Semen Zakharovich very

well," I said, "and because his own daughter was basely malign'd on the day of his death by the meanest of scoundrels . . ." There's that policeman again! Protect me!" she cried to the official. "Why is that policeman creeping up to me? We have only just come here to escape one of them on Meshchanskaya Street . . . Well, what do you want, fool?"

"This is not allowed in the streets. Please don't create a disturbance."

"It's you who are making the disturbance! It is just the same as if I were taking a barrel-organ! What business is it of yours?"

"For a barrel-organ you have to have a licence, and you are doing it on your own, and you are causing a crowd to collect. What is your address?"

"What licence?" wailed Katerina Ivanovna. "I buried my husband today. Why should I need a licence?"

"Madam, madam, compose yourself," the official was beginning. "Come, I will accompany you . . . you ought not to be here in the crowd . . . you are ill . . ."

"My dear sir, my dear sir, you don't know anything" cried Katerina Ivanovna. "We will go to the Nevsky Prospect. Sonya, Sonya! Where is she? She's crying, too! What is the matter with you all? Kolya, Lenya, where are you going?" she cried out in sudden fright. "Silly children! Kolya, Lenya! Where are they going? . . ."

Kolya and Lenya, already terrified out of their wits by the crowd and their mother's crazy tricks, had suddenly, when they saw that the policeman wanted to take them away somewhere, seized each other's little hands and, as if by agreement, run off together. Poor Katerina Ivanovna, weeping and wailing, set off in pursuit. It was an ugly and pitiful sight, as she ran weeping and gasping for breath. Sonya and Polechka hurried after her.

"Bring them back, Sonya, bring them back! Oh, naughty ungrateful children! . . . Polya! Catch them . . . It is for you I . . ."

She stumbled as she ran, and fell.

"She's hurt! She's bleeding! Oh God!" cried Sonya, stooping over her.

Everybody ran up and crowded round. Raskolnikov and Lebezyatnikov were among the first to reach her, and the official also hurried up, with the policeman behind him, muttering, "Oh dear!" with a despairing wave of his hand, as he foresaw that this would be a troublesome business.



'Be off! Be off!' he said, trying to drive away the people crowding round.

'She is dying!' shouted one.

'She's gone mad!' said another.

'Lord preserve us!' said a woman, crossing herself. 'Have they caught the little boy and the little girl? There they are; they are bringing them. The older one has got them . . . Silly little things!'

But when they looked more carefully at Katerina Ivanovna, they saw that she had not cut herself on a stone, as Sonya thought, but that the blood staining the roadway crimson had gushed out of her throat.

'I know this kind of thing, I've seen it before,' murmured the official to Raskolnikov and Lebezyatnikov. 'That's consumption; the blood flows out like that and chokes them. I saw it happen with one of my relatives not long ago—three-quarters of a pint of blood, all of a sudden . . . But what shall we do? She is dying.'

'This way, this way, to my room!' begged Sonya. 'I live here! . . . In that house there, the second from here . . . Bring her there, quickly, quickly!' She rushed from one to another. 'Send for a doctor . . . Oh God!'

This was decided on, thanks to the efforts of the official, and even the policeman helped to carry Katerina Ivanovna. She was carried almost lifeless into Sonya's room and laid on the bed. The flow of blood had not stopped, but she had begun to come to herself. Besides Sonya, there came into the room Raskolnikov, Lebezyatnikov, the official-looking gentleman, and the policeman, after he had driven away the rest of the crowd, several of whom had accompanied them to the very door. Kolya and Lénia, trembling and crying, were led in by Polechka. Some of the Kapernaumovs had come in as well: the tailor himself, a lame, crooked, odd-looking man with bristly hair and whiskers standing on end, his wife, with an eternally scared look, and several of their children with open mouths and faces set in expressions of perpetual astonishment. Among all these, Svidrigaylov suddenly made his appearance. Raskolnikov gazed at him in surprise, not understanding where he had come from and not remembering to have seen him in the crowd.

There was talk of a doctor and a priest. The official gentleman, although he whispered to Raskolnikov that a doctor

could do nothing now, ordered one to be sent for. Kapernau-mov went himself.

Meanwhile Katerina Ivanovna had regained her breath and the bleeding had stopped for a time. Her sick eyes looked intently and penetratingly at Sonya, who, pale and trembling, was wiping the drops of sweat from her forehead, at last she asked them to raise her. They sat her up on the bed, supporting her on both sides.

'Where are the children?' she asked faintly. 'Have you brought them, Polya? Oh, you silly children! . . . Why did you run away? . . . oh!'

Her parched lips were still flecked with blood. Her eyes moved, looking round the room.

'So this is how you live, Sonya! I have never once been here . . . now fate has brought me . . .'

She looked at her in distress.

'We have been a drain on you, Sonya . . . Polya, Lenya, Kolya, come here . . . Well, here they are, Sonya, all of them; take them . . . from my hands into yours . . . I have had enough!

'The ball is over' Cough! ' . . . Put me down, let me at least die in peace . . .'

They laid her down again on the pillow.

'What? The priest? . . . I don't want him . . . you haven't got a rouble to spare for him . . . I have no sins . . . God ought to pardon me without the priest's help . . . He knows how I have suffered! . . . And if He doesn't pardon me, so much the worse . . .'

An increasing delirium possessed her. At times she shuddered and moved her eyes, and recognized them all for a moment, but then the delirium seized her again. Her breathing was hoarse and laboured, there was a sort of rattling in her throat.

'I said to him, "Your excellency!" . . . ' she cried out, gasping after every word. 'That Amaha Ludwigovna . . . Oh, Lenya, Kolya, hands on hips, quickly, quickly! *Glissez, glissez, pas-de-Basque!* Stamp! . . . Be graceful!

*Du hast Diamanten und Perlen . . .*

What comes next? That's what we should sing . . .

*Du hast die schönsten Augen.  
Mädchen, was willst du mehr?*

Well, what next! *Was willst du mehr?* the things he invents, the blockhead! . . . Ah, yes, here's another:

In the mid-day heat, in the Vale of Daghestan . . .

Ah, how I loved it . . . I used to worship that song, Polechka . . . You know, your father . . . used to sing it before we were married . . . Oh, happy days! . . . That's what we must sing! Now, how, how does it . . . there, I've forgotten it . . . Remind me! How does it go?"

She was extremely agitated and struggling to raise herself. At last, in a terrible, hoarse, broken voice she began to sing, crying out and panting at every word with a look of growing terror:

'In the mid-day heat! . . . in the Vale! . . . of Daghestan! . . .  
With a bullet in my breast! . . .

Your excellency!' she shrieked suddenly, with a heart-rending wail and a gush of tears, 'protect the orphans! You have known the hospitality of the late Semen Zakharovich . . . One might even say aristocratic! . . .' Cough! She shuddered, coming suddenly to herself, and looked round at them all with a sort of terror, but at once recognized Sonya. 'Sonya, Sonya!' she said gently and tenderly, as though surprised to see her there. 'Sonya, dear, are you here, too?'

They raised her up again.

'Enough! . . . The time has come! Good bye, poor wretch! . . . This poor beast has been driven to death! . . . I am finished!' she cried, full of despair and hatred, and her head fell heavily back on the pillow.

She had lost consciousness again, but this last phase did not last long. Her bloodless, yellow, wasted face dropped back, her mouth opened, her legs straightened convulsively. She drew a deep, heavy sigh and died.

Sonya fell upon the body, with her arms about it and her head pressed against the wasted breast, and lay there motionless. Polechka fell at her mother's feet and kissed them, sobbing. Kolya and Lenya did not realize what had happened, but felt that it was something terrible. Each with both hands round the other's shoulders, they stared at one another and then, all at once, both together, opened their mouths and began to scream. They were still in their costumes, one in his turban, the other in the night-cap with the ostrich feather.



How could the 'Certificate of Merit' have made its appearance on the bed, close to Katerina Ivanovna? It lay there by the pillow; Raskolnikov saw it.

He walked to the window. Lebezyatnikov hurried over to him.

'She is dead!' he said.

'Rodion Romanovich, I must say two words to you,' said Svidrigaylov, approaching. Lebezyatnikov instantly gave place to him and delicately effaced himself. Svidrigaylov drew the astonished Raskolnikov still farther into the corner.

'I will take all the arrangements, that is for the funeral and the rest of it, on myself. You know, it takes money, and I told you I had more than enough. I will put these two little fledglings and Polechka into some good institution for orphans, and settle fifteen hundred roubles on each of them for when they come of age, so that Sonya Semenovna may be quite easy about them. And I will pull her out of the mire, because she is a good girl, isn't she? Well, then, will you tell Avdotya Romanovna that this is how I am using her ten thousand?'

'What is the object of all this generosity?' asked Raskolnikov.

'Ah, you're a mistrustful person!' laughed Svidrigaylov. 'You know I told you I had no use for that money. But will you not admit that it can be done simply out of humanity? After all, she wasn't a "louse"?' he pointed with his finger towards the corner where the dead woman was, 'like some old money-lender. Well, you will agree, "Is Luzhin indeed to go on living and doing mischief, or is she to die?" And if I don't help, probably "Polechka will take the same path to the same end" . . .'

He said all this with an expression of cheerful, insinuating slyness, and without taking his eyes from Raskolnikov. Raskolnikov paled and grew cold as he heard the very expressions he had used to Sonya. He recoiled and looked wildly at Svidrigaylov.

'How . . . do you know?' he whispered, hardly daring to breathe.

'Why, I'm staying at Madam Resslich's, just the other side of the wall here. The Kapernaumovs are here, and Madam Resslich, an old and most devoted friend of mine, is there. We are neighbours.'

'You?'

'Yes, me,' went on Svidrigaylov, shaking with laughter. 'And

I can honestly assure you, my dear Rodion Romanovich, that you interested me strangely. You know I told you we should come together—I foretold it; well, now we have done so. And you shall see how easy-going I am. You shall see that it is possible to live with me . . .’

## PART SIX

---

### CHAPTER I

AS STRANGE time began for Raskolnikov; it was as if a mist had fallen round him and enclosed him in unescapable and dreary solitude. Remembering this time afterwards, when it had long gone by, he surmised that his consciousness had become, as it were, blunted, and that this state lasted, with some intermissions, until the final catastrophe. He was firmly convinced that he had been mistaken about many things then, for example, the time and sequence of several happenings. At least, remembering afterwards, and trying to explain his recollections to himself, he learnt a good deal about himself, with the help of other people's testimony. He would confuse one event with another, for example; he would think of one thing as a consequence of something else which had occurred only in his imagination. At times he fell a prey to painful and tormenting anxiety, which sometimes grew to a panic fear. But he remembered also that there were moments, hours, perhaps even days, of complete and overwhelming apathy, which formed, as it were, the reverse side of his previous terror, an apathy like the sick indifference of a dying man. In general, during these last days, he seemed to be trying to avoid a full and clear understanding of his position; there were some facts, urgently demanding immediate consideration, that he found particularly burdensome, and how glad he would have been to get free from certain anxieties, although, had he succeeded in neglecting them, it would have threatened his complete and inevitable ruin.

Svidrigaylov especially worried him; it might almost be said that he could not get past Svidrigaylov. From the time of those ominous and explicit words of Svidrigaylov's in Soroka's room, at the moment of Katerina Ivanovna's death, it was as if the normal flow of his thoughts had received a check. But although this new factor of the situation made him extremely uneasy, he was in no hurry to seek an explanation of it. At times, finding himself in a remote and solitary part of the town, alone at a table in some miserable public house, deep in thought, and hardly knowing how he came there, he would suddenly remem-



ber Svidrigaylov; it would become clearly and alarmingly evident to him that he must come to terms with this man as soon as possible, and settle with him finally, as far as he could. Once, walking outside the city, he even fancied that he was waiting for Svidrigaylov and that they had made an appointment to meet there. Another time he woke up before dawn and found himself lying on the ground among some bushes, hardly knowing how he had wandered there. In the few days after Katerina Ivanovna's death he actually did meet Svidrigaylov two or three times, for a very short time, and always in Sonya's room, where he had gone without any clear object. They had exchanged a few short words, never touching on the capital point, as though they had come to an agreement not to mention it for the time being. Katerina Ivanovna's body was still lying there in her coffin. Svidrigaylov was making the funeral arrangements and was very busy. Sonya was also very busy. At their last meeting Svidrigaylov told Raskolnikov that he had brought the question of Katerina Ivanovna's children to a conclusion, and a successful one; that owing to his connexions he had been able to find people with whose help all three orphans could be placed at once in very suitable institutions; and that the money settled on them had also helped considerably, since it was much easier to find places for orphans who had some capital than for those who were destitute. He said something about Sonya as well, promised to call before long on Raskolnikov, and mentioned that 'he would like to ask his advice; he had something that he very much wanted to talk over . . .' This conversation took place in the corridor, near the stairs. Svidrigaylov looked earnestly into Raskolnikov's eyes and suddenly, after a pause, lowered his voice and asked. 'Why, what is it, Rodion Romanovich? You aren't well! Really! You look and listen, but you don't seem to understand. Pull yourself together. Look, let us have a talk; but, unfortunately, I have so much business to attend to, both of my own and of other people's . . . Ah, Rodion Romanovich,' he added suddenly, 'every man needs air, air, air! . . . More than anything!'

He stood aside to allow a priest and a sacristan, who were coming up the stairs, to pass. They were coming to say prayers for the dead. This they did punctually twice a day, by Svidrigaylov's orders. Svidrigaylov went on his way. Raskolnikov stood and thought for a moment, then followed the priest to Sonya's room.

He stood at the door. The service began, quiet, decorous, melancholy. From his childhood, the idea of death and the consciousness of the presence of death had oppressed him and filled him with mystic awe, besides, it was a long time since he had heard the mass for the dead. There was something else here, also, something terrible and disquieting. He looked at the children; they were all kneeling by the coffin, and Polecika was crying. Behind them, weeping softly and almost timidly, Sonya was praying. 'These last few days she hasn't once looked at me or spoken a word to me,' thought Raskolnikov suddenly. The room was bright with sunlight, the incense rose in clouds; the priest read the *Requiem eternam*, Raskolnikov stayed to the end. As he blessed them and took his leave, the priest looked round rather strangely. After the service Raskolnikov went up to Sonya. She grasped both his hands and leaned her head on his shoulder for a moment. The brief gesture bewildered Raskolnikov, it seemed strange. What? Not the slightest repugnance, no trace of loathing for him, not the least tremor of her hands? It showed infinite self-humiliation, so, at least, he understood it. Sonya said nothing. Raskolnikov pressed her hand and went out. He felt terribly over-burdened. If it had been possible for him to go away at that moment and be quite alone, even if it were for the rest of his life, he would have counted himself fortunate. The fact was that although recently he had almost always been by himself, he could not feel that he was alone. He had more than once left the town behind, emerging on to a great highway, and on one occasion into a little wood, but the more solitary his surroundings, the more conscious he felt of the close and disturbing presence of something not so much terrifying as troublesome, so that he would return to the town as quickly as possible and mingle with the crowd, entering an eating-house or a tavern or walking in the Hay-market or the Rag Market. Here he felt easier and more alone. In one tavern, towards evening, there was singing, and he sat listening for a whole hour, and afterwards remembered that he had even enjoyed it. But towards the end he suddenly became uneasy again, as though pangs of conscience had begun to torment him. 'Here I sit listening to songs, but surely that is not what I ought to be doing,' he thought. He realized at once, however, that it was not only this that was disturbing him, there was something that demanded an immediate decision, but he could not put it into words or even formulate it in his

thoughts. It was all tangled up. 'No, some kind of struggle would be better than this! Better Porfiry . . . or Svidrigaylov! . . . If there were another challenge of some sort, some attack to meet! . . . Yes, yes!' he thought. He came out of the tavern and set off, almost running. A sudden thought of Dunya and his mother for some reason induced something very like panic in him. It was during the night, before dawn, that he woke up among the bushes on Krestovsky Island, shaking all over with fever; he went home, arriving in the early morning. The fever passed after some hours' sleep, but it was late, two o'clock in the afternoon, when he woke up.

He remembered that this was the day of Katerina Ivanovna's funeral, and was glad that he had not been present. Nastasya brought him something to eat, and he ate and drank with a good appetite, indeed almost greedily. His head felt fresher, and he himself was less restless than for the past three days. He even wondered for a moment at his former fits of panic. The door opened, and Razumikhin came in.

'Ah! He can eat, so he's not ill!' said Razumikhin, and he took a chair and sat down at the table opposite Raskolnikov. He was upset and he did not try to hide it. He spoke with evident vexation but without hurrying or raising his voice much. 'Listen,' he began crisply, 'as far as I am concerned you can all go to the devil, but from what I see now, it is clear to me that I don't understand anything at all. Please don't imagine that I've come to cross-question you. I don't care a rap! I don't want to know! If you began to tell me all your secrets of your own accord, I probably shouldn't even listen to you, but simply spit and go away. I only came to find out for myself, once and for all, whether it is true that you are mad. You see, there is a conviction about you (here and there) that you are either mad or very much inclined that way. I admit I was strongly disposed to support that opinion, judging first by your stupid and odious (and quite inexplicable) actions, and secondly by your recent conduct to your mother and sister. Only a monster and a scoundrel, if he were in his right mind, could behave to them as you have done; it follows that you are mad . . .'

'Is it long since you last saw them?'

'No, it was just now. Haven't you seen them since that time? Tell me, where have you been keeping yourself? I've already been here three times. Your mother has been ill since yesterday, seriously. She wanted to come here. Avdotya Romanovna tried



to prevent her, but she wouldn't hear a word. "If he's ill," she said, "if his mind is deranged, who should help him, if not his mother?" All three of us came, because we couldn't leave her to come alone. All the way to your door we kept begging her to compose herself. We came in, and you weren't here, she sat down just here. She sat here for ten minutes, while we stood saying nothing. Then she got up and said: "If he is well enough to go out, that means he has forgotten his mother, and it is unseemly and shameful for her to stand at his door and beg for his kindness as if it were charity." She went back home and went to bed, and now she is in a fever. "I see," she says, "that he has time for *his own girl*." She supposes that *your own girl* is Sofya Semenovna, your fiancée or your lover, I don't know which. I went immediately to Sofya Semenovna's because, brother, I wanted to look into the whole business; I got there and looked in — there was a coffin, and children crying. Sofya Semenovna was trying on their mourning. You weren't there. I saw all this, apologized, went away, and told Avdotya Romanovna. So all that was nonsense, you hadn't got *your own girl*, and so the most likely thing was that you *were* mad. But here you are sitting and devouring roast beef as though you hadn't eaten anything for three days. Well, let's suppose that madmen must eat, too, but although you haven't said so much as a word to me . . . I'll swear you're not mad! Whatever else, you're not mad. So to the devil with the lot of you, because there's some mystery here, some secret, and I don't propose to rack my brains over your secrets. I only came to relieve my feelings," he concluded, getting up, "by a few curses, and I know what I have to do now!"

"What do you want to do now, then?"

"What business is it of yours what I choose to do?"

"Look, you're thinking of taking to drink?"

"How . . . how did you know that?"

"Well, of course you are!"

Razumikhin said nothing for a minute.

"You've always been a person of sound sense and you've never, never, been mad," he declared suddenly, with some heat. "It's true; I am going to take to drink. Good-bye!" And he moved as if to go.

"I was talking to my sister about you, Razumikhin, the day before yesterday, I think."

"About me? But . . . now could you have seen her the day before yesterday?" Razumikhin stopped suddenly and even

turned a little pale. It was possible to guess that his heart was beating slowly and heavily.

'She came here alone, and sat and talked to me.'

'She did!'

'Yes.'

'What did you say . . . about me, I mean?'

'I told her you were a very good, honest, and hard-working person. I didn't tell her you love her, because she knows that herself.'

'She knows it?'

'Of course! Whatever happens to me, wherever I go, you will stay and look after them. I entrust them to you, so to speak, Razumikhin. I say this because I know very well how much you love her, and I am sure your heart is pure. I know, too, that she could love you, and perhaps she already does. Now decide for yourself whether it is better for you to start drinking or not.'

'Rodka . . . you see . . . Well . . . Oh, the devil! And where are you thinking of going? You see, if it's all a secret, let it be! But I . . . I shall discover the secret . . . And I'm convinced it's nothing but a lot of nonsense and awful rot, and that you've made it all up. All the same, you're a splendid chap! A splendid chap . . .'

'But I was just going to say to you when you interrupted me, that you were quite right to decide not to try to unravel these secrets and mysteries. Leave it for a time, and don't worry. You shall know everything at the proper time, that is to say, when you need to. Yesterday somebody said to me that a man needs air, air, air! I must go to him at once and find out what he means by that.'

Razumikhin was excitedly considering an idea.

'He's a political conspirator! That's it! And he is on the point of taking a decisive step -that's it! It can't be anything else, and . . . and Dunya knows . . .' he thought.

'So Avdotya Romanovna comes to see you,' he said, weighing his words, 'and you intend to see a man who says more air is needed, air, and . . . and so that letter, too . . . it's part of the same thing,' he ended, as if he were speaking to himself.

'What letter?'

'She received a letter today that upset her very much. Very much. Very much indeed. I began to talk about you, and she asked me to be quiet. Then . . . then she said that perhaps we should very soon part, then she began to thank me very warmly

for something, then she went into her room and locked the door.'

'She had a letter?' inquired Raskolnikov thoughtfully.

'Yes, didn't you know? Hm.'

Both were silent for a short time.

'Good bye, Rodion. I, brother . . . there was a time . . . however, good-bye. You see, there was a time . . . Well, good-bye! I must go, too. I'm not going to drink. I don't need to now . . . Rubbish!'

He hurried off, but, after he had already closed the door behind him, opened it again and said, looking away:

'By the way! Do you remember that murder, you know, that Porfiry was engaged on; that old woman? Well, the murderer has been found, he has confessed and himself produced all the evidence to prove it. Just think, he is one of those workmen, you remember, those painters that I was standing up for here. Would you believe it, he deliberately staged all that scene of scuffling and laughing on the stairs with his mate, while those people were going up, the porter and the two witnesses? It was all a blind! The cunning and presence of mind of the young puppy! It's hard to credit it, but he gave that explanation himself, and he has confessed everything. And a fine fool I made of myself! Well, in my opinion he's an absolute genius of dissimulation and resourcefulness, a genius at misleading the law, so there's nothing specially surprising about it, I suppose. Such people can exist, no doubt. But I find it much easier to believe in him because he couldn't keep it up, but confessed; that makes him more credible . . . But what a fool I made of myself, what a fool! I was furious in their defence!'

'Tell me where you learnt all this, and why it interests you so much,' asked Raskolnikov, in obvious agitation.

'Well, what next? Why does it interest me? Can you ask? . . . I heard of it from Porfiry and others beside. But it was he who told me most of it.'

'Porfiry?'

'Yes, Porfiry.'

'What . . . what did he say?' asked Raskolnikov fearfully.

'He explained it extremely well. Explained it psychologically, in his usual way.'

'Explained it? He explained it to you himself?'

'Yes, yes. Good-bye! I'll tell you more later, but now I have something to do. There . . . there was a time when I thought . . .



Well, never mind; later! . . . Why should I drink now? You have made me drunk without it. I am drunk, you know, Rodka! I am drunk without wine. Well, good-bye. I will come again, very soon.'

He went out.

'He's a political conspirator, yes, that's certain, certain!' he concluded definitely as he went down the stairs. 'And he's drawn his sister in; that is very, very likely, in view of Avdotya Romanovna's character. They've been seeing each other . . . Come to think of it, she has given me hints, too. From many of her words . . . and allusions . . . and half-hints, it all emerges quite clearly! And how else can all this muddle be explained? Hm! And I almost thought . . . Oh Lord, what an idea I'd almost got into my head! Yes, that was an eclipse of reasoning, and I ought to beg his pardon. It was that time when he was standing near the lamp in the corridor, that he misled me. Pah! What a nasty, crude, vile idea mine was! A splendid fellow, Nikolka, for confessing . . . And how well this explains other, earlier things, too! His illness, all his odd actions, and even before that, while he was still at the university, the way he was always gloomy and morose . . . But what does that letter mean? Perhaps there is something in that, too. Who was the letter from? I suspect . . . Hm. No, I'm going to ferret it all out.'

As he remembered and considered all that had been said about Dunya his heart seemed to stop. He dashed hastily away.

Raskolnikov, as soon as Razumikhin had gone, got up and, as though forgetting how crowded his little room was, began to bump clumsily round it and . . . sat down again on his sofa. He felt refreshed and renewed; here was struggle again — that meant he had found a way out.

Yes, it meant a way out had been found! Until this, everything had been too oppressive and confining, had crushed him with its overwhelming weight, and a sort of stupefaction had descended on him. From the moment of the scene with Nikolka at Porfiry's he had begun to feel suffocated and hemmed in, without escape. After the scene with Nikolka had come that at Sonya's, the same day; he had not conducted it at all as he might have imagined it beforehand and he had brought it to a very different conclusion . . . his strength, that is to say, had been instantly and radically undermined! At one blow! Indeed, he had agreed with Sonya then, he had agreed in his heart that he could not live alone with such a deed on his mind! And

Svidrigaylov? Svidrigaylov was a riddle . . . Svidrigaylov disturbed him, that was true, but not from that point of view. There might be a struggle to come with Svidrigaylov also. Svidrigaylov, perhaps, might also offer a way out, but Porfiry was a different matter.

So Porfiry had explained things to Razumikhin, had explained them *psychologically*! He had begun dragging in his damned psychology again. Porfiry? But how could Porfiry believe, even for a moment, that Mikolka was guilty, after what had passed between them, after that scene between the two of them before Mikolka arrived, which could not possibly be reasonably interpreted save in one way? (During the past few days Raskolnikov had remembered all that scene with Porfiry in snatches; he could not bear to remember it as a whole.) 'During that interview such words had been pronounced, such gestures had been made, such glances had passed between them, things had been said in such a tone of voice, they had arrived at such a point, that it would take more than Mikolka (whom Porfiry had known through and through from the first word and the first question), more than Mikolka to shake the foundations of his convictions.'

'What wonder? Even Razumikhin had almost begun to suspect! The scene in the corridor, near the lamp, had not been without its effect. He had rushed off to Porfiry . . . But what was Porfiry's idea in duping him like that? What was his purpose in diverting Razumikhin's attention to Mikolka? No, he had certainly had some plan, there was some intention here, but what? It was true that a long time had gone by since that morning - much, much too long, and there had not been a word or a sign from Porfiry. Well, of course, that made matters worse . . . ' Raskolnikov took his cap and went out, still lost in thought. For the first time in all these days, he felt at least sound and sane. 'I must settle with Svidrigaylov,' he thought, 'and as quickly as possible, cost what it may; he, too, seems to be waiting for me to go to him myself.' At this moment such hatred welled up in his weary heart that he might easily have killed either Svidrigaylov or Porfiry. He felt, at least, that he was capable of this, if not now, then later. 'We shall see, we shall see,' he repeated to himself.

But no sooner had he opened his inner door than he ran into Porfiry himself, coming to see him. Raskolnikov froze for a moment, but only for a moment. Strangely enough, he was not

very surprised to see Porfiry, and hardly felt afraid of him. He was startled, but then quickly, in a flash, he was ready for him. 'Perhaps this is the denouement! But how could he have approached so quietly, like a cat? I didn't hear a sound. Has he been listening at the door?'

'You weren't expecting a visitor, Rodion Romanovich,' cried Porfiry Petrovich, laughing. 'I've been meaning to drop in for a long time. I was passing, so I thought, "why not look in for five minutes?"' Were you going somewhere? I won't keep you. Only just one cigarette, if you will allow me . . .'

'Sit down, Porfiry Petrovich, sit down,' Raskolnikov offered his guest a chair with such apparent pleasure and friendliness that he would have been quite amazed if he could have seen himself. This was the final encounter, the last trial of strength. In just such a way, a man may sometimes endure half an hour of deathly fear from a brigand and when at last the knife is laid to his throat, the fear has vanished. He sat down directly in front of Porfiry and looked at him unflinchingly. Porfiry screwed up his eyes and lit his cigarette.

'Well, speak, speak,' seemed almost ready to burst from Raskolnikov's heart. 'Well? Why, why, why, don't you speak?'

## CHAPTER II

'Oh, these cigarettes!' said Porfiry at last, when he had lighted one and drawn a few breaths; 'they're poison, absolute poison, but I can't give them up! I have a cough, my throat is raw, and I have grown short-winded. I'm cowardly, you know, so not long ago I went to B. He spends a minimum of half an hour examining each patient; he absolutely laughed when he looked at me: he sounded me and listened. "Tobacco", he said, "is not good for you; your lungs are inflamed." But how am I to give it up? What can I put in its place? I don't drink, that's the trouble. He, he, he! Not drinking a trouble! Everything is relative, you know, Rodion Romanovich, everything is relative!'

'What is this? Is he going to play the same old game again?' thought Raskolnikov disgustedly. The whole of their last interview suddenly came back to him, and the same feeling as before swept over him like a flood.

'I have been here before, the day before yesterday, in the evening; did you know?' went on Porfiry Petrovich, looking round the room. 'I came in, right into the room itself. Just the



same as today, I was going past and I thought, "Come, I'll return his call!" I came up and found the room open; I looked round. I waited a while. I went away without even telling the servant I had called. Don't you lock your door?"

Raskolnikov's face had been growing more and more lowering. Porfiry seemed to guess his thoughts.

"I came to have it out with you, my dear Rodion Romanovich, to clear things up. I owe you an explanation; I feel obliged to give it you," he went on with a smile, and he even patted Raskolnikov's knee. But almost in the same moment his face took on a serious and troubled look; a veil of melancholy seemed to be drawn over it, to Raskolnikov's surprise. He had never seen him look so before, and had not suspected that he could do so. "It was a strange scene that took place between us at our last meeting, Rodion Romanovich. Perhaps, indeed, it was a strange scene that we played at our first meeting, too, but at that time . . . Well, my life now is just one damned thing after another! This is the point, it turns out that perhaps I owe you an apology, I feel that I may. Do you remember how we parted? Your nerves were on edge and your knees were shaking, my nerves were on edge and my knees were shaking. And you know, we treated each other in a way that might be thought neither seemly nor gentlemanly. And we are, after all, gentlemen; that is, we are gentlemen first of all, in any case; that must be understood. You remember, things got to such a point . . . that it was quite indecent."

"Why is he saying this? What does he take me for?" Raskolnikov asked himself bewilderedly, raising his head and gazing hard at Porfiry.

"I have come to the conclusion that it is best for us to be plain with one another," went on Porfiry Petrovich, turning his head slightly and lowering his eyes, as if he did not wish his glance further to embarrass his former victim, and as if he now scorned to use his earlier tricks and stratagems. "Yes, sir, such suspicions and such scenes cannot continue for long. Mikolka has solved our problem now, otherwise I don't know to what lengths we might have gone. That damned little tradesman was sitting there behind my partition that time—can you imagine that? You, of course, already know that, and indeed I am aware that he came to see you afterwards; but what you supposed then was not true, I had not sent for anybody, and I had not made any arrangements whatever. You will ask why not. How shall I put

it? I was absolutely stunned. I had hardly taken steps even to send for the porters. (No doubt you saw them as you went past.) The idea came to me suddenly, in a flash; I was very strongly convinced of it, you see, Rodion Romanovich. Let me not, I thought—for although I may let one thing slip for a time, yet I seize another firmly by the tail—let me at least not allow my man to get away from me. You are very irritable and touchy, Rodion Romanovich, by nature; too much so, considering all the other fundamental traits of your character and heart, which I fondly hope I have understood to some extent. Well, of course, even then my judgement told me that it doesn't always happen that a man will simply get up and blurt out all the details for you. It does happen, especially when you keep on gnawing away at the last shreds of his patience, but only very rarely. Even I could see that it wasn't likely. No, I thought, I must have some small thing for a foundation. Even if it were only the tiniest detail, and only one, but one that you could take in your hands, a concrete thing, not just a piece of psychology. Because, I thought, if a man is guilty, of course it must be at any rate possible to get something actual and definite out of him and one may sometimes expect the most surprising results. I was relying on your character, Rodion Romanovich, on your character above all! I had great hopes of you then.'

'But you . . . but why do you keep talking like that now?' muttered Raskolnikov at last, not fully understanding what all this was about. 'What is he talking about?' he wondered distractedly. 'Does he really suppose I am innocent?'

'Why do I talk like that? I came to clear the matter up, so to speak. I consider it my bounden duty. I want to lay bare the whole thing down to the foundations, about what happened, the whole story of that, so to speak, darkening of counsel. I made you go through a great deal, Rodion Romanovich. I'm not a monster. I can understand what it must be for a man like you to have brought all this on himself—a man oppressed with cares, but proud, imperious, and, in particular, impatient of wrong! In any case I look on you as a most honourable man and one, indeed, with elements of greatness in you, although I do not agree with all your opinions. I consider it my duty to warn you of this, sincerely and straightforwardly, because above all I have no wish to deceive you. I have felt attached to you since I first knew you. Perhaps you will laugh at such words, coming from me. That is your privilege. I know that

you disliked me at sight, because, indeed, there is nothing to like me for. But think what you please, I for my part am anxious to efface your first impression of me by every means in my power, and to show you that I am a man with a heart and a conscience. I speak in all sincerity.'

Porfiry Petrovich waited for a moment in dignified silence. Raskolnikov felt a new wave of terror sweep over him. The idea that Porfiry might consider him innocent suddenly began to frighten him.

'I hardly need tell you in full detail how this all came about,' went on Porfiry Petrovich; 'I think it would be quite unnecessary. And indeed I doubt whether I could. Because how can it be explained circumstantially? First of all there were rumours. What sort of rumours they were, from whom they came, and when . . . and in what connexion your name was brought into the matter . . . I think need not be considered either. As far as I personally am concerned, it all began by chance, by the most casual accident, which might just as easily not have happened at all. What was it? Hm, I don't think I need speak of that either. All this—the rumours and the accident, combined to give me a certain idea. I confess openly, because, if you are confessing anything at all, it had better be everything—that it was I who was the first to light on you. These jottings of the old woman's on the pledges, and so on and so forth—we may take it didn't amount to anything. You can always count such pieces of evidence in hundreds. I also chanced to learn of the scene in the police office, not just casually mentioned, but discussed in all its details by an excellent witness, who had, without realizing it himself, absorbed the scene with remarkable completeness. You know it was all just one thing added to another, my dear Rodion Romanovich, one thing after another. Well, how could I help turning my mind in a certain direction? Out of a hundred rabbits you'll never make a horse, and a hundred suspicions will never make a proof, as an English proverb says, but that is mere common sense, and we have to try to deal with the passions as well, the passions, because even an examining magistrate is a man. Then, too, I remembered your article in that magazine—you remember, we talked about it at some length on your first visit to me. I scoffed at it then, but that was only to lead you on. I repeat that you are very impatient and far from well, Rodion Romanovich. That you are daring, proud, in earnest, and . . . have felt, have felt a great deal, I have long



known. I am acquainted with all these feelings, and I read your article with a sense of familiarity. It was conceived in sleepless nights and in a state of ecstasy, with a lifting and thumping of the heart, with repressed enthusiasm. But that proud, repressed enthusiasm of youth is dangerous! I mocked at you then, but now I tell you that I have an amateur's passion for such fiery, young, first literary efforts. Mist, haze, and a chord vibrating through the mist. Your article is absurd and fantastic, but it has flashes of real sincerity, a youthful and incorruptible pride, and the courage of despair; it is gloomy, that article, but that is a good point. I read it at the time and laid it aside and . . . as I laid it aside, I thought, "Well, things will not go smoothly for that man." Well, tell me, after such a beginning how could I help being carried away by the sequel? Oh Lord, have I said something? I am not making any allegations now. It is simply what struck me at the time. "What is there here?" I thought. There was nothing, that is, nothing positive, and perhaps absolutely nothing. And to let myself, an examining magistrate, be carried away in that fashion is most unseemly—there I've got Mikolka on my hands, and with facts against him—think what you like of them, but they are facts! And his psychology has been brought into it too; we must devote some attention to him; because this is a matter of life and death. Why am I telling you all this now? So that you may know, and, your mind and heart being what they are, not accuse me of behaving maliciously that time. It was not malicious, I say in all sincerity, he, he! Do you think, I wonder, that I didn't come here at that time to conduct a search? I did, I did, he, he, I was here, when you were lying ill in bed. Not officially, and not in my own person, but I was here. Your room was searched down to the smallest thing, at the first breath of suspicion, but —umsonst! I thought, "now this man will come to me, he will come to me of his own accord, and very soon; if he is guilty, he will certainly come. Another might not come, but he will." Do you remember how Mr. Razumikhin began to let things slip out? We had arranged that, to get you agitated, so we deliberately spread rumours, in order that Mr. Razumikhin should blab about them to you, and Mr. Razumikhin is a man who cannot restrain his indignation. Mr. Zametov found your anger and your open daring particularly striking: well, how could anyone blurt out in a tavern, "I killed her!" It was too daring, too audacious, and I thought, "If he is guilty, he's a bonny fighter!" That is what

I thought then. I waited for you to come! I waited with the greatest impatience, but you simply crushed Zametov that time, and . . . you know, the point is that all this damned psychology cuts both ways! Well, so I was waiting for you, and I looked out, and my wish was granted—you were coming! My heart absolutely thumped! Ah! Now, what made you come just then? Your laughter, that laughter of yours as you came in, do you remember?—why, I guessed everything then, I saw it all quite plainly, but if I hadn't been waiting for you so specially, I shouldn't have noticed anything in your laughter. That is what it means to be in the right frame of mind! And Mr. Razumikhin—oh! that stone, you remember, that stone, the one the things were hidden under? Why, I can almost see it, in a kitchen-garden somewhere—you did say a kitchen-garden to Zametov, and afterwards, for the second time, in my room? And when we began to examine your article, and you expounded your meaning—every one of your words could be taken in two senses, as if there were another word hidden beneath it! Well, that, Rodion Romanovich, is how I came to run up against a brick wall, and only realized it when I bumped my head on it. "No," I said, "what am I doing? Why," I said, "all of this, down to the smallest detail, can be explained if you wish in an entirely different way, and it would sound even more natural." I had to admit to myself that it would indeed be more natural. It was agony! "No," I thought, "it would be better if I could find just one small fact." And when I heard about those door-bells my heart stood still and a positive shudder ran through me. "Well," I thought, "there's my little tact all right! That's it!" I didn't even stop to consider it, I simply would not. I would have given a thousand roubles at that moment, of my own money, to have seen you *with my own eyes*, when you walked a hundred yards side by side with that workman, after he had called you murderer to your face, without daring to ask him a single question all the way! . . . Yes, and what about the cold shudder down your spine? And that ringing of door-bells when you were ill and half delirious? So, Rodion Romanovich, how can you wonder, after all that, that I played a few tricks with you? And you, what made you come at just that moment? I'll swear something prompted you, and if Mikolka had not sent us off on a different track . . . do you remember Mikolka just then? Do you remember him well? That was a thunder-clap, if you like! It was a peal of thunder

crashing from a cloud, a thunderbolt! Well, and how did I meet it? I didn't believe in the thunderbolt in the least, you could see that yourself! Why should I? Even later, after you had gone, when he began giving me answers that churned so well with the facts that I was quite surprised, even then I didn't believe a word he said! I was what is called as firm as a rock. "No," thought I, "this is all my eye! What has Mkolka to do with this?"

'Razumikhin said just now that you believe Nikolay is guilty and that you told him so yourself . . .'

His breath failed and he could not finish. He had listened with indescribable agitation while this man, who had seen right through him, repudiated his own judgement. He dared not, he could not, believe it. Eagerly he had scrutinized the still ambiguous words to find something more precise and definite.

'Oh, Mr. Razumikhin' cried Porfiry Petrovich, as if he were delighted to have drawn a question from the obstinately silent Raskolnikov. 'He, he, he! Well, Mr. Razumikhin had to be got away somehow: two is company, three is none. Mr. Razumikhin, as an outsider, should not have come running to me all pale . . . Well, never mind him; why bring him into this? As for Mkolka, would you care to know what sort of person he is, as I understand him, I mean? First of all, he is still a lad, not grown up yet, and he is confessing now not because he is scared but because he believes his own inventions, since in his own way he's an artist. Really, don't laugh at my explaining him like that. He is innocent, impressionable, and emotional, and his imagination runs away with him. He can sing and dance and he tells stories so well that, they say, people come from miles round to hear him. He has been to school, too, and he is ready to die of laughing over nothing at all, and every now and then he drinks himself under the table, not really for the sake of getting drunk so much as because somebody plies him with drink - like a child again. And when he stole the jewel-case that time he didn't know it was stealing, because "if I pick it up from the ground, why is that stealing?" And did you know he was a schismatic,\* and not only that, but one of those simple-minded religious zealots? Some members of his family have belonged to the sects that run away to settle out of the reach of all authority, and it is not long since he himself spent two years under the obedience of some elder in his village. I learnt all this from Mkolka himself and his friends from Zaraysk. And what's



more, he was once all for becoming a hermit himself! He was a regular zealot, used to get up in the night to pray, and read himself silly with old books, what they consider the "genuine" ones. St. Petersburg had a very powerful effect on him, especially the female sex—and the vodka, too. He is impressionable, and he forgets the village elder and everything else. I have been told that a painter here got quite attached to him and Mikolka used to go and see him in sometimes, and then this affair came along! Well, he felt afraid he tried to hang himself! He tried to run away! What can be done about the way the common people think of our justice? Some of them find the mere word "trial" terrifying. Whose fault is that? The new courts may make some difference. God grant they may! Well, apparently he has remembered the good elder now that he is in prison, the bible has made its appearance again, too. Do you, Rodion Romanovich, know what some of these people mean by "suffering"? It is not suffering for somebody's sake, but simply "suffering is necessary"—the acceptance of suffering, that means, and if it is at the hands of the authorities, so much the better. In my time there was a most submissive convict in the prison, who for a whole year lay on the stove at night reading his bible, and read and read until he was in such a state, you know, that suddenly, without rhyme or reason, he grabbed a brick and threw it at the governor without the slightest provocation. And how he threw it, too! He deliberately pitched it a yard wide, so that it shouldn't injure him. Well, everybody knows what happens to a prisoner who attacks a prison officer with a weapon; and so "he accepted his suffering". Well, this is the point. I suspect now that Mikolka desires to "accept suffering", or something of the sort. I have good grounds, supported by the facts, for believing this. But he doesn't know that I know it. What, can't you admit that such fantastic creatures are to be found among people of his kind? They often crop up. The elder's influence has begun to work again, especially since Mikolka thought of hanging himself. However, he will come to me of his own accord and tell me everything. You think he will hold out? Just wait, he'll recant yet! I am expecting him at any moment to come to me to take back his statements. I have taken a fancy to Mikolka and I am investigating him thoroughly. And what do you suppose? He, he! On some points he gave me very apt answers, and had evidently got hold of the necessary information and prepared his answers cunningly, but on other points he

is simply at sea, and doesn't know the least thing about them; he doesn't know, and he doesn't even suspect that he doesn't know. No, Rodion Romanovich, my dear chap, Mikolka isn't in this at all! This is an obscure and fantastic case, a contemporary case, something that could only happen in our day, when the heart of man has grown troubled, when people quote sayings about blood "refreshing"; when the whole of life is dedicated to comfort. There are bookish dreams here, and a heart troubled by theories; there is resolution evident here, for the first step, but resolution of a special kind—a resolve like that of a man falling from a precipice or flinging himself off a tower; this is the work of a man carried along into crime, as it were, by some outside force. He forgot to shut the door behind him, but he murdered, and murdered two people, for a theory. He murdered, but he was not so successful when it came to taking the money, and what he did manage to snatch up he carried away and hid under a stone. The torment he suffered when he crouched behind the door and heard them battering at it and ringing the bell, was not enough for him; no, he must go back to the empty flat, half-delirious, to revive his memory of the bell; he felt compelled to experience once more that cold shiver down the spine . . . Well, grant that he was ill then, all the same there is this: he committed murder, yet he thinks of himself as an honourable man, despises other people and goes about like a martyred angel—no, what nas Mikolka to do with all this, my dear Rodion Romanovich? There's no Mikolka in it!"

These last words, after all that had been said before, which had seemed like a recantation, were too unexpected a blow. Raskolnikov shuddered as though he had been stabbed.

"Then . . . who . . . was the murderer?" he could not help asking in a stifled voice. Porfiry Petrovich almost recoiled, as though startled by so unexpected a question.

"Who was the murderer?" he repeated, as though he could not believe his own ears. "But it was *you*, Rodion Romanovich! You murdered them!" he went on, almost in a whisper, but his voice was full of conviction.

Raskolnikov sprang up from the sofa, stood still for a few seconds, and sat down again without a word. His whole face twitched convulsively.

"Your lip is trembling again, as it always does," murmured Porfiry Petrovich almost sympathetically. "I don't think you

quite understand me, Rodion Romanovich,' he added after a short pause; 'that is why you are so thunderstruck. I came on purpose to tell you everything, and bring everything out into the open.'

'It was not I who murdered her,' whispered Raskolnikov, like a frightened small child caught red-handed in some misdeed.

'Yes, it was you, Rodion Romanovich, you and nobody else,' whispered Porfiry, with stern conviction.

They were both silent, and the silence lasted for an unbelievably long time, almost ten minutes. Raskolnikov leaned his elbows on the table and ran his fingers through his hair, without speaking. Porfiry Petrovich sat quietly and waited. Suddenly Raskolnikov threw a scornful glance at Porfiry.

'You are up to your old tricks again, Porfiry Petrovich! The same old methods! Really, don't you ever get tired of them?'

'Oh, stop that! What are methods to me now? It would be a different matter if there were witnesses here, but after all, here we are alone, quietly talking to nobody but each other. You can see for yourself that I didn't come here to start you and catch you like a hare. Confess, or don't confess—it's all the same to me now. I am convinced in my own mind, without that.'

'Then why did you come?' asked Raskolnikov irritably. 'I will ask you my earlier question again: if you think I am guilty, why don't you take me to prison?'

'Well, so that is your question! I will answer you in due order: to begin with, it would be of no advantage to me to arrest you straight away.'

'Why not? If you are convinced, you ought . . .'

'Oh, who says I am convinced? For the time being all this is just my dream. Besides, why should I put you there *in peace*? You know yourself, since you are asking me to do it. For example, if I bring that tradesman to give evidence against you, you will say to him, "Were you drunk or weren't you? Who saw me with you? I simply took it for granted you were drunk, and so you were"—and what can I say to you then, especially as your story is much more plausible than his, which is purely a matter of psychology—something that doesn't go well with that mug of his? Besides, you would hit the mark, because the scoundrel is very well known to be a heavy drinker. Moreover, I have admitted to you several times already that psychology is



a double-edged weapon, and its second edge is heavier and much sharper, and that except for it I have nothing against you—yet. And although I mean to arrest you all the same, and (contrary to the usual custom) have come myself to explain everything to you beforehand, yet I tell you straight (and this is also contrary to custom) that it won't be any advantage to me. Well, I came here, in the second place . . .'

'Yes, well, in the second place?' (Raskolnikov was still panting).

'Because, as I told you just now, I consider that I owe you an explanation. I don't want you to think of me as a monster, especially since I am genuinely well disposed towards you, believe it or not. Consequently, I have come here, in the third place, with a direct and open invitation to you to come forward with a confession. It will be infinitely better for you, and it will be better for me too—because it will be a weight off my mind. Well, tell me, have I been open with you or not?'

Raskolnikov thought for a minute.

'Listen, Porfiry Petrovich; after all, you said yourself it was only psychology, but now you have gone over to mathematics. Well, what if you are mistaken yourself?'

'No, Rodion Romanovich, I am not mistaken. I have my scrap of proof. I had found it even then; God sent it to me.'

'What proof?'

'I shall not tell you, Rodion Romanovich. But in any case I have no right to delay any longer; I shall arrest you. So use your judgement: it is all the same to me *now*, consequently I am acting solely for your sake. I swear it will be better for you, Rodion Romanovich!'

Raskolnikov's smile was bitter.

'This is not only amusing, it is positively impudent. Why, even if I were guilty (which I don't allow for one moment), why should I come to you with a voluntary confession when you tell me yourself that I shall be *safer* in prison?'

'Oh, Rodion Romanovich, don't put too much trust in what I say; perhaps you won't be absolutely *safe*! After all, it's only a theory, and one of mine besides, and what sort of authority am I for you? Perhaps I am hiding something from you even now. I can't simply come along and reveal everything to you, he, he! Another thing: why should you ask what advantage it will be to you? Surely you know that a reduction of your sentence would follow from it? When would you be coming

forward, after all, at what moment? Just think it over! When another has taken the crime on himself and muddled everything up! And I, I give you my solemn word, will so falsify and arrange matters *there* that your appearance shall seem utterly unexpected. We'll do away with all this psychology completely, and I will consign all my suspicions of you to oblivion, so that your crime will seem to have resulted from a clouding of your faculties, as indeed, in all conscience, it did. I am a man of honour, Rodion Romanovich, and I will keep my word.'

Raskolnikov preserved a melancholy silence; he hung his head and remained thoughtful for a long time, finally, he smiled again, but this time his smile was meek and sad.

'Oh, don't ' he said, as if he no longer could conceal anything at all from Porfiry. 'It's not worth while! I don't want your reduction of sentence!'

'Now, that's just what I was afraid of!' exclaimed Porfiry, warmly and almost involuntarily. 'I was afraid of just that, that you would have no use for it.'

Raskolnikov looked at him with a sad and expressive gaze.

'No, don't let yourself loathe life,' went on Porfiry; 'you have a lot before you still. How can you not want a reduction, how can you? You are too impatient!'

'I have a lot of what before me?'

'Of life! How can you prophesy? How much do you know? Seek and ye shall find. Perhaps it is through this that God seeks to bring you to Himself. And the bonds are not eternal . . .'

'The sentence will be reduced . . .' laughed Raskolnikov.

'And you are not afraid of Lourgeois scandal, are you? Perhaps, though, you have been afraid of it, but you didn't know it yourself. All the same, you are not a person who should be afraid of such things, or ashamed of volunteering a confession.'

'O-oh, damn all that!' whispered Raskolnikov, with scorn and repulsion, as though reluctant to speak at all. He began to get up, as if he meant to go somewhere, but sank back in evident despair.

'By all means! You have lost faith and you think I am flattering you grossly; but have you lived much yet? Do you understand much? You invented a theory, and you were ashamed because it went wrong and because it turned out to be not even very original! It proved mean and base, it is true, but that does not make you hopelessly mean and base. You are not

mean and base at all! At least, you did not deceive yourself for long, but in one leap reached the farthest extremity. Do you know how I regard you? As one of those who would allow themselves to be disembowelled, and stand and face their torturers with a smile—if they had found a faith, or found God. Well, find your faith, and you will live. To begin with, you have needed a change of air for a long time. Perhaps, also, suffering is a good thing. Suffer, then. Perhaps Mikolka is right to desire suffering. I know that you don't believe this—but don't philosophize too subtly; plunge straight into life, without deliberation; don't be uneasy—it will carry you direct to the shore and set you on your feet. What shore? How should I know? I simply believe that there is still much life before you. I know that now you regard my words as a sermon learnt by heart, but perhaps later you will remember them at some time and they will stand you in good stead; that is why I am talking. It's a good thing that you only killed an old woman. If you had invented a different theory you might perhaps have done something a hundred million times as monstrous! Perhaps you ought to thank God; how do you know that He is not sparing you just for that? Keep your heart high and don't be so fearful! Do you flinch from the great fulfilment that confronts you? No, that would be shameful. As you took such a terrible step, now you must take courage. That is justice. Do what justice demands. I know you do not believe me, but it is the sacred truth that life will sustain you. Afterwards you will regain your self-esteem. Now you need only air, air, air!

Raskolnikov started.

'Who are you?' he cried. 'What sort of prophet are you? From what heights of lofty calm do you utter these all-wise exhortations?'

'Who am I? I am a man who has developed as far as he is capable, that is all. A man, perhaps, of feeling and sympathy, of some knowledge perhaps, but no longer capable of further development. But you—that's another matter: the life God destines you for lies before you (but who knows, perhaps with you, too, it will pass away like a puff of smoke and nothing will come of it). Well, what of it, if you are to pass into a different category of men? With your heart, you will not pine for comfort! What will it matter if nobody sees you perhaps for a very long time? It is not time that matters, but you yourself. Become a sun, and everybody will see you. The first duty of the sun is



to be the sun. What are you smiling at again—because I am talking like Schuler? And I am willing to bet that you suppose I am trying now to cajole you by flattery. Well, perhaps that is just what I am doing, he, he, he! Perhaps, Rodion Romanovich, you ought not to believe what I say, perhaps you should never believe me completely—I agree that my ways make it undesirable; but I will add only this—I think you ought to be able to judge how far I am a trickster and how far an honest man!

‘When do you think of arresting me?’

‘I can leave you at liberty for a day or two longer. Think it over, my dear chap, and pray. Honestly, it will be to your advantage.’

‘What if I run away?’ asked Raskolnikov, with a strange smile.

‘You won’t run away. A peasant would run away, or a modern dissenter—the lackey of another’s ideas, because you need only show him the end of your finger and, like Mr. Midshipman Easy, he will believe anything you like for the rest of his life. But you, after all, no longer believe even your own theory, why should you run away? What would you do in hiding? The fugitive’s life is hard and hateful, and your first need is for a definite position and existence, and a suitable atmosphere, and what sort of atmosphere would you have? If you ran away, you would come back of yourself. *You can’t get on without us.* But if I put you under lock and key—you’ll stay there a month, perhaps two, perhaps three, and then, suddenly, you will remember what I say, you will volunteer a confession, perhaps quite unexpectedly even to yourself. An hour beforehand you will not know that you are going to come forward with a confession. You see I am convinced that you will “resolve to accept your suffering”; you don’t believe my word now, but you will come to the same conclusion yourself. Because suffering, Rodion Romanovich, is a great thing; don’t look at the fact that I am fat myself, that doesn’t matter; I still know, and don’t laugh at this, that there is an idea in suffering. Makolka is right. No, you won’t run away, Rodion Romanovich.’

Raskolnikov got up and took his cap. Porfiry Petrovich rose as well.

‘Are you thinking of going for a walk? It will be a nice evening, if there isn’t a storm. However, that might be better if it made it cooler . . .’

He also took up his cap.

"Please don't take it into your head, Porfir, Porfir," said Raskolnikov, with grim insistence, "that I have confessed to-day. You are a strange man, and I have listened to you in circumstances. But I haven't confessed anything . . . Remember that."

"Oh, I know that, and I'll remember it. Look, I declare as a trembling. Don't worry, my dear fellow, you still have your own way. Got a little wax, only, you must get it to-day. In case of need, I have one little request to make of you," he added, lowering his voice; "it is rather a delicate request, but it is important, if I may say so. If anything happened, you must think it well and I consider you could in a case of emergency, for example—well, just in case—you should send a message through the next delivery man, or else by post, or even by the messenger, or in some fantastic way—to Raskolnikov, that is, to the man who is in a ridiculous situation, and must please to give me a letter, then—leave a short circumstantial note. Just a couple of lines, two little lines—and mention the situation, which is very generous of you. Well, good-bye . . . Please, then, to send a handy new telegram."

Porfir stopped as he went out and seemed to stand looking at Raskolnikov. Raskolnikov went to the window and watched, battling with impatience, until he noticed Porfir, who had now left the house and gone some little distance. Then he turned and hurriedly left the room.

### CHAPTER III

He turned to Svidrigailov. What he meant to do, he did not know himself. But he went over to him, and talked to the man. Once he had talked to him, he could not do anything else, the man had gone.

One question particularly troubled him as he went. Had Svidrigailov been to see Porfir? After all, he had said that he was prepared to swear he had not. He had said that, and then, and again, remembered even to say that he had not seen him. He decided, as he had in the case of the other man.

But if he had not been to see Porfir, what would he do?

He was inclined to think of the man, but he would not go. What? He could not have explained, but even if he could, he would not have touched his head with his hand.

All this worried him, yet at the same time he could not be bothered with it. It was a strange thing, and perhaps nobody would have believed it, but he felt only feeble, almost absent-minded, concern for the fate that now seemed imminent. Something different and much more important, something extraordinary—which concerned himself, certainly, and no other person, but differently and more vitally—tormented him now. He felt, besides, an infinite moral weariness, although his reason was functioning better this morning than it had done for many days past.

Was it indeed worth while, after all that had happened, to struggle to overcome all these trifling new difficulties? Was it worth while, for example, to try to devise a way of preventing Svidrigaylov from going to see Porfiry, to waste time studying and investigating a Svidrigaylov?

Oh, how tired he was of it all!

Meanwhile he was still hurrying to see Svidrigaylov, could it mean that he expected something *new* from him, some information, some way of escape? A drowning man clutches at a straw! Could destiny, or some instinct, be bringing them together? Perhaps it was only weariness and despair; perhaps he needed not Svidrigaylov but somebody else, and Svidrigaylov had merely happened to turn up. Sonya? But what should take him to Sonya now? Should he plead for her tears again? But the thought of Sonya was terrible to him now. She represented an irrevocable sentence, an unchangeable resolution. He must choose between her way and his own. Especially at this moment he was in no condition to see her. No, would it not be better to try Svidrigaylov, and find out what he meant? And he could not help acknowledging to himself that for a long time he really had felt a kind of need of Svidrigaylov for some reason.

What, though, could they have in common? Even their wrongdoing could not be of the same degree. Moreover, the man was obviously a very unpleasant character, extraordinarily corrupt and depraved, undoubtedly cunning, deceitful, and perhaps malicious. Many tales were current about him. It was true that he was actively concerning himself with Katerina Ivanovna's children, but who could say what that meant or what his motives were? He was a man of endless schemes and designs.

Another thought kept running through Raskolnikov's head now, and he found it terribly disturbing and made efforts to drive it away from him, so painful was it. The train of thought



ran thus: Svidrigaylov had persistently put himself in his way, and was still doing so; Svidrigaylov had learnt his secret; Svidrigaylov had had designs upon Dunya. What if he still had? One might say almost with certainty that he had. And what if now, having learnt Raskolnikov's secret and thus got him into his power, he wished to use it as a weapon against Dunya?

This idea had sometimes tortured him even in his dreams, but now, as he walked to Svidrigaylov's, was the first time it had been present to his conscious mind with such clarity. The mere idea filled him with black rage. To begin with, it would change everything, even in his own situation; he would have to reveal his secret at once to Dunechka. Perhaps he would have to give himself up, to save Dunechka from taking some incautious step. That letter! Dunya had received some letter this morning, and who in St. Petersburg could be sending her letters? (Luzhin, perhaps?) True, Razumikhin was on his guard; but Razumikhin did not know anything. Would he perhaps have to disclose everything to Razumikhin, too? The thought was repugnant to Raskolnikov.

In any case, he must see Svidrigaylov as soon as possible, he decided at last. Thank goodness, what he needed to deal with here was not so much details as the gist of the matter; but if, if he was indeed capable, if Svidrigaylov was plotting something against Dunya,—then . . .

All this time, throughout the whole month, Raskolnikov had been so weary that now he could resolve a problem like this in only one way: 'Then I shall kill him,' he thought, with cold despair. A feeling of oppression weighed down his heart; he stopped in the middle of the street and looked round: where was he, and which way had he come? He found himself on the Obukhovsky Prospect, thirty or forty yards from the Haymarket, which he had just crossed. The whole first floor of the building on his left was occupied by a tavern. All the windows were wide open, and the place, judging by the movement of the figures in the windows, was crowded with people. From inside the room came the sound of singing, the thin notes of clarinet and fiddle, the rattle of a Turkish drum. He could hear women's voices squealing. He was about to go back, at a loss to understand why he had turned into Obukhovsky Prospect, when through one of the farther windows he suddenly caught sight of Svidrigaylov himself, sitting at a tea-table in the window, with a pipe in his mouth. This produced a strange, almost terrifying

impression on him. Svidrigaylov was watching him closely, without speaking, and—another thing which struck Raskolnikov forcibly—seemed about to get up so as to steal away before he was seen. Raskolnikov at once tried to look as though he had not seen him and were looking thoughtfully at something else, but continued to watch him out of the corner of his eye. His heart was hammering with alarm. He was right; Svidrigaylov was plainly very anxious not to be seen. He had taken the pipe out of his mouth and was trying to get out of sight, but apparently, having risen and moved away his chair, he suddenly realized that Raskolnikov had seen him and was watching him. Something passed between them that resembled the moment of their first meeting, at Raskolnikov's, when he had been dreaming. A mischievous smile appeared on Svidrigaylov's face, growing steadily broader. They both knew that each was watching the other. At last Svidrigaylov broke into loud laughter.

'Well, well! Come in, if you like. I am here!' he called through the window.

Raskolnikov went up into the restaurant.

He found him in a very small room, with one window, adjoining the larger room where shopkeepers, clerks, and people of that sort were drinking tea at a score of small tables, to the screeching of choruses by a wretched group of singers. The click of billiard balls could be heard from somewhere. On the table in front of Svidrigaylov stood an open bottle of champagne and a half-full glass. There was a boy in the room also, who held a little barrel-organ in his hands, and a healthy red-cheeked girl of eighteen, with her striped skirt tucked up and a beribboned Tyrolean hat on her head. Paying no attention to the choruses in the next room, she was singing a popular song in a rather hoarse contralto, to the accompaniment of the organ . . .

'Well, that's enough!' Svidrigaylov interrupted her as Raskolnikov entered.

The girl immediately broke off and stood waiting respectfully. The same expression of serious respect had been on her face as she sang her servants'-hall rhymes.

'A glass, Philip!' shouted Svidrigaylov.

'I won't have any wine,' said Raskolnikov.

'As you please. This wasn't for you. Drink, Katya! You won't be wanted any more today; be off with you!' He poured her a

full glass of the wine and put down a yellow note. Katya tossed off the wine as women do, swallowing twenty times without pausing for breath. Then she picked up the note, kissed Svidrigaylov's hand, which he solemnly gave her for the purpose, and went out of the room, taking the box with his organ in her wake. They had been brought in from the street. Svidrigaylov had not been a week in St. Petersburg, and already everything round him was established on a patriarchal footing. The waiter, Philip, was already an 'old friend' and cringed obsequiously. The door to the other room could be locked; Svidrigaylov seemed quite at home in the little room and spent, perhaps, whole days in it. The tavern was dirty and greasy, and not even fifth-rate.

'I was going to your place to look for you,' began Raskolnikov, 'but why did I suddenly turn into the Oukharsky Prospect just now from the Haymarket? I never come this way. I always turn right from the Haymarket. And this is not the way to your place. But I turned along here and here you are.' 'Strange.'

'Why don't you say straight out it's a miracle?'

'Because it may be only coincidence.'

'Oh, all you people are the same,' laughed Svidrigaylov. 'Even if you believe a miracle has occurred, you won't admit it. After all, you say yourself that it only may be a coincidence. And you can't imagine, Rodion Romanovitch, how afraid everybody here is of having his own opinions. I am not talking about you. You have your own opinion, and you have shown you were not afraid to hold it. That is what made me curious about you.'

'Nothing else?'

'Surely that is enough.'

Svidrigaylov was obviously exalted, but only very slightly, he had drunk only half a glass of wine.

'I think you came to see me before you discovered that I was capable of possessing what you call my own opinion,' remarked Raskolnikov.

'Oh, that was different. Everyone has his own affairs. Talking of miracles, I must tell you that you seem to have been asleep this last two or three days. I told you the name of this tavern myself, and there is nothing miraculous in your having come straight here; I explained how to get here and told you where it was and the times when you could find me here. Don't you remember?'



'I had forgotten,' answered Raskolnikov, astonished.

'I can well believe it. I told you twice. The address registered itself in your memory automatically, you turned down here automatically and unconsciously came the right way to this address. Even while I was speaking to you then, I didn't think you were taking it in. You are very transparent, Rodion Romanovich. And another thing' I am sure lots of people in St. Petersburg talk to themselves as they walk about. It's a town of half-crazy people. If we had any science in this country, the doctors, lawyers, and philosophers could conduct very valuable researches in St. Petersburg, each in his own special sphere. There are few places which exercise such strange, harsh, and sombre influences on the human spirit as St. Petersburg. What can be accomplished by climate alone! Besides, this is the administrative centre of all Russia and that character must be reflected in everything. That, however, is not the point now, but this is: I have several times observed you from a distance. You come out of the house with your head held high. After twenty paces it is beginning to droop and your hands are folded behind your back. Your eyes are open, but obviously you see nothing of what is in front of you or all round. At last your lips begin to move and you talk to yourself, sometimes unclasp your hands and flourishing them in the air, and then finally you stand still for quite a time in the middle of the road. This is very bad. Perhaps somebody else notices you, besides me, and it won't do you any good. It's really all one to me, and I don't want to cure you, but you, of course, understand me.'

'Do you know that I am being followed?' asked Raskolnikov, looking searchingly at him.

'No, I don't know anything about it,' answered Svidrigaylov, with apparent surprise.

'Well, let us leave me alone,' frowningly muttered Raskolnikov.

'Very well, we will leave you alone.'

'Tell me, rather, if you come here to drink, and twice told me to come to you here, why, when I looked through the window from the street just now, you tried to hide yourself and to get away. I saw you very clearly.'

'He, he! Why, when I was standing on your threshold, did you lie on your sofa with your eyes closed and pretend you were asleep, when you weren't asleep at all? I saw you very clearly.'

'I might have had . . . my reasons . . . you know that yourself.'

'I might have my reasons, too, although you don't know them.'

Raskolnikov leaned his right elbow on the table, rested his chin on the fingers of his right hand, and fixed his unwavering gaze on Svidrigaylov. For about a minute he studied his face, which he had always wondered at. It was a rather strange face, almost like a mask: red and white, with a very light-coloured beard and still quite abundant fair hair. The eyes seemed somehow too blue, and their gaze too massive and unmoving. There was something terribly unpleasant in the handsome face, so extraordinarily young for its years. Svidrigaylov's light summer clothes were foppishly elegant, and his linen particularly so. There was a large ring, set with a valuable stone, on his finger.

'Must I really still trouble about you as well?' said Raskolnikov, coming with feverish impatience direct to the point. 'Although you could perhaps be a most dangerous person if you chose to do me harm, I won't let myself be racked any more. I will show you that I don't value myself as highly as you seem to think. I have come to tell you straight out that if you still retain your former intentions with regard to my sister, and if to further them you think of making use of what you have recently found out, I will kill you before you can get me put in prison. You may take my word for this: you know that I am capable of keeping it. Secondly, if you wish to tell me anything—because all this time it has seemed to me that there was something you wanted to say to me—tell me quick, because time is precious and very soon it may be too late.'

'Where are you going in such a hurry?' asked Svidrigaylov, examining him curiously.

'Everybody has his own affairs,' said Raskolnikov, sternly and impatiently.

'You, yourself, were demanding just now that we should be frank,' remarked Svidrigaylov, with a smile. 'But at the very first question you refuse to answer. You think all the time that I have some design, and so you regard me with suspicion. Well, that is quite understandable in your situation. But I shall not undertake the labour of convincing you of the contrary, however much I may wish to be friends with you. The game really isn't worth the candle. And I wasn't intending to say anything so very special to you.'

'Then what did you want with me? You did seek me out persistently, didn't you?'

'Simply as a curious subject for observation. I was pleased with the fantastic nature of your position, that's what it was. Besides, you are the brother of a person in whom I was greatly interested, and, finally, I had heard a dreadful amount about you from that same person, from which I concluded that you had great influence with her, that's enough, isn't it? He, he, he! However, I admit that your question is quite complicated and that it is difficult for me to answer. Well, for example, here you have come to me now, not only with a definite object, but for something new. That's true, isn't it? Isn't it?' insisted Svidrigaylov, with a mischievous smile. 'Well, then, imagine that I, while I was still on my way here, was counting on you too to tell me something *new*, and on managing to borrow something from you! You see what we rich men are!'

'Borrow what?'

'How can I tell you? How should I know what? You see this wretched tavern I spend all my time in, and I enjoy it, or rather, I don't exactly enjoy it, but one must have somewhere to sit. Well, take that poor Katya—did you see her? . . . Well, if I, for example, were a gourmet or an epicurean clubman—but as it is, look at what I can eat! (He pointed to the corner, where a tin tray on a little table held the remains of an unappetizing beef-steak and potatoes.) 'By the way, have you had dinner? I've had a bite, and I don't want anything more. I don't drink wine, for example, at all. I never touch any kind but champagne, and of that one glass lasts me all the evening, and even then I get a headache. I ordered this now to help me pull myself together, because I am getting ready to go somewhere, and you find me in a peculiar mood. That was why I tried to hide just now, like a schoolboy, because I thought you might hinder me; but I think'—he took out his watch, 'I can spend an hour with you, it's half-past four now. Believe me, if only I were something—a landowner, say, or a father, an officer in the Lancers, a photographer, a journalist . . . but I'm nothing. I have no speciality. Sometimes it is almost boring. Honestly, I thought you would tell me something new.'

'But who are you, then, and why have you come here?'

'Who am I? You know—a gentleman, who served two years in the cavalry, then knocked about here in St. Petersburg, then married Maria Petrovna and lived in the country. There's my biography for you!'

'You are a gambler, I think?'



'A gambler? No. A card-sharper is not a gambler.'

'And you were a card-sharper?'

'Yes, I have been that, too.'

'And were you ever caught and thrashed?'

'It did happen. What then?'

'Well, that means you might challenge someone to a duel . . . and altogether it could be lively.'

'I won't argue with you, and besides, I am no master of philosophy. I confess I came here as soon as I could more on account of women.'

'As soon as Marfa Petrovna was buried?'

'Yes,' smiled Svidrigaylov with winning frankness. 'What of that? You seem to find something wrong in my talking like that about women.'

'You mean, do I approve or disapprove of debauchery?'

'Debauchery? So that's what you think! However, I will take things in order and answer you first about women in general; I am inclined to be talkative, you know. Tell me, why should I put any restraint on myself? Why should I give up women, if I have any inclination for them? It's something to do, at any rate.'

'So all you hope for here is a spell of debauchery?'

'Well, why not? Debauchery if you will! You seem to like the word! But I like a straight question, at any rate. In "debauchery" there is at least something constant, based on nature, indeed, and not subject to fantasy, something that exists in the blood as an eternal flame, always ready to set one on fire, and not to be readily extinguished, for a long time to come, perhaps for many years. You will agree that in its way it is an occupation.'

'Why be glad of that? It is a disease, and a dangerous one.'

'Oh, so that's what you think? I agree that it is a disease, like everything else that goes to extremes—and it is an essential part of it, that it goes to extremes—but, to begin with, it is one thing with one person and something different with another, and, in the second place, one must of course observe measure in all things, and make calculations, however mean; but then, what can one do after all? If it were not for it, one might have to shoot oneself without more ado. I agree that a respectable man is morally obliged to put up with boredom, but you know, all the same . . .'

'And could you shoot yourself?'

'Well, there it is!' Svidrigaylov parried, with an expression

of aversion. 'Do me a favour, and don't speak of that,' he added hastily, and without any of the swaggering tone of his earlier words. Even his face looked different. 'I confess to an unpardonable weakness, but I can't help it. I am afraid of death and don't like to hear it spoken of. Do you know that I am a bit of a mystic?'

'Ah, Marfa Petrovna's ghost! Why, does it still appear?'

'Don't mention that; I haven't seen it in St. Petersburg yet. The devil take it!' he cried, with an irritated look. 'No, we had better . . . but . . . Hm! Unfortunately, time is getting short, and I can't stay with you long. I'm sorry. I could have told you something.'

'What takes you away—a woman?'

'Yes, a woman. A quite unforeseen chance . . . no, that's not what I want to talk about.'

'Well, and the squalor, has the squalor of this no effect on you any longer? Have you already lost the strength to stop?'

'And do you claim to have strength as well? He, he, he! You surprise me, Rodion Romanovich, even though I knew before that it would be like this. You to talk about debauchery and aesthetics! You a Schiller! You an idealist! It was bound to be like this, of course, and it would have been surprising if it had been otherwise, but all the same it does seem strange when it actually happens . . . Oh, dear, I'm sorry that time is short, because you yourself are a very curious study! By the way, do you like Schiller? I'm terribly fond of him.'

'What a lot of boasting you do, though!' said Raskolnikov, with some distaste.

'No, honestly I don't!' answered Svidrigaylov, gruffly. 'But I won't argue, perhaps I do boast, but, after all, why not, if it's harmless? I lived in the country with Marfa Petrovna for seven years, and so now that I have got hold of an intelligent man like you—intelligent and in the highest degree interesting

I simply delight in letting myself run on. Besides, I have drunk this half-glass of wine, and it has gone to my head the least bit. And, most important of all, there is something that I am very worked up about, but I . . . won't speak about that. Where are you going?' he asked suddenly, in alarm.

Raskolnikov was on the point of rising. He felt stifled and uncomfortable and it seemed to him that it had been a mistake to come here. He was convinced that Svidrigaylov was the most shallow and worthless scoundrel on the face of the earth.

'Oh, sit still! Stay a little longer!' begged Svidrigaylov. 'Order yourself some tea, at least. Do stay a little, and I won't talk any more nonsense, about myself, I mean. I will tell you a story. Would you like me to tell you how a woman tried, as you would put it, to "save" me? It will answer your first question, even, since that person was your sister. May I tell you? It will help to kill time.'

'Very well, but I hope you . . .'

'Oh, don't worry! Besides, Avdotya Romanovna can inspire only the deepest respect even in a thoroughly bad character like me.'

## CHAPTER IV

'You know, perhaps (and indeed I told you so myself),' began Svidrigaylov, 'that I was in the debtor's prison here, with an enormous debt and not the slightest prospect of getting the means to pay it. There is no need to go into the details of how Marfa Petrovna bought me out. Do you know to what lengths of foolishness love can drive a woman? She was an honest creature, and not at all stupid (although completely uneducated). But just imagine, this same honest, jealous woman, after many scenes of frenzied reproach, actually stooped to a sort of bargain with me, which she kept all through our marriage. The point was that she was considerably older than me, and besides she was always chewing a clove or something. I was sufficiently brutal, and honest enough in my own way, to tell her straight out that I could not be absolutely faithful to her. This admission drove her wild, and yet I think my brutal frankness pleased her in a way. "If he tells me this in advance," she said, "it means he doesn't want to deceive me," and that is of the first importance to a jealous woman. After a lot of weeping we made a verbal contract, like this: first, I was never to leave Marfa Petrovna, but always remain her husband; second, I was never to be absent from her without her permission; third, I was never to set up a permanent mistress; fourth, in return for this, Marfa Petrovna was to allow me to cast an eye occasionally at the house servants, but never without her secret knowledge; fifth, God preserve me from falling in love with a woman of our own class, sixth, if I fell a victim, which God forbid, to a great and serious passion, I was bound to disclose it to Marfa Petrovna. On this last point, however,



Marfa Petrovna's mind was fairly easy all along; she was an intelligent woman and consequently could only regard me as a rake and a profligate, who was not capable of loving seriously. But an intelligent woman and a jealous woman are two different things, and that was where the disaster came from. To form an impartial judgement of some people, however, one must first discard some preconceived opinions and one's habitual attitude to the ordinary persons and objects surrounding us. I feel able to rely on your good sense, more than on anybody else's, indeed. You may perhaps have already heard a great many ridiculous and laughable things about Marfa Petrovna. She had certainly some absurdly funny ways, but, I tell you straight, I am sincerely sorry for all the innumerable griefs I caused her. Well, that's enough, I think, for a becoming *raison furible* on the tenderest of wives from the fondest of husbands. On the occasion of our quarrels, I mostly kept silent and didn't lose my temper, and this gentlemanly behaviour was almost always effective; it influenced and even pleased her; there were times when she was even proud of me. But all the same she could not bear your sister. How did it come about that she risked taking such a beauty into her house as a governess? I explain it by the fact that Marfa Petrovna was an ardent and impressionable woman and that she simply fell in love herself—literally fell in love—with your sister. Well, Avdotya Romanovna? I knew very well, at the first glance, that it would be a bad business, and—what do you think?—made up my mind not even to look her way. But Avdotya Romanovna herself took the first step—do you believe that, or not? Will you believe, too, that at first Marfa Petrovna went so far as to be angry with me for my constant silence about your sister, and for listening with such indifference to her own continual rapturous praises of Avdotya Romanovna? I can't understand what she wanted! Well, of course, Marfa Petrovna told Avdotya Romanovna all about me in the greatest detail. She had an unfortunate trick of telling all our family secrets to absolutely everybody, and incessantly complaining to everybody about me, so she was hardly likely to omit her wonderful new friend. I suppose that they never talked of anything else but me, certainly there is no doubt that Avdotya Romanovna learnt all those sombre and mysterious stories that are told about me . . . I am willing to bet that you have heard something of the sort, too.'

'Yes, I have. Luzhin accused you of being the cause of a child's death. Is that true?'

'Do me the favour of leaving all that vulgar gossip alone,' replied Svidrigaylov impatiently and with distaste. 'If you are determined to hear about all that nonsense, I will tell you myself one day, but now . . .'

'There was talk of a servant of yours in the country, too, and how you were supposed to be the cause of what happened to him.'

'Please, that's enough!' interrupted Svidrigaylov again, with manifest impatience.

'I suppose that wasn't the servant who came and filled your pipe after he was . . . dead . . . that you told me about yourself?' asked Raskolnikov, with steadily increasing irritation.

Svidrigaylov looked hard at Raskolnikov, and a hint of jeering spite seemed to gleam for an instant in his eyes like a flash of lightning, but he restrained himself and answered with great urbanity:

'Yes, that was the one. I can see that you find all that extraordinarily interesting, and I shall consider it a duty to satisfy your curiosity in every particular at the first favourable opportunity. Hang it, I can see that to some people I really might appear a romantic figure. You may judge then, after that, how grateful I was bound to feel to Marfa Petrovna for having told your sister so many mysterious and interesting things about me. I can't judge what impression they made on her, but in any case, it was all to my advantage. In spite of Avdotya Romanovna's real aversion for me, and my persistently gloomy and forbidding aspect, she grew sorry for me at last, sorry for a lost soul. And when a girl's heart begins to feel *pity* for a man, then of course she is in the greatest danger. She begins to want to "save" him, and make him see reason, and raise him up, and put before him nobler aims, and awaken him to a new life and new activities—well, everybody knows what can be dreamt of in such circumstances. I realized at once that the bird had flown into the net of its own accord, and I began to make preparations in my turn. You seem to be frowning, Rodion Romanovich. There is no need; the affair, as you know, came to nothing. (Devil take it, what a lot of wine I'm drinking'. You know, from the very beginning I always thought it was a pity that your sister had not chanced to be born in the second or third century of our era, as the daughter of a ruling prince somewhere, or some governor or pro-consul in Asia Minor. She would

doubtless have been one of those who suffered martyrdom, and she would, of course, have smiled when they burnt her breast with red-hot pincers. She would have deliberately brought it on herself. And in the fourth or fifth century she would have gone into the Egyptian desert and lived for thirty years on roots, ecstasies, and visions. She is the kind of person who hungers and thirsts to be tortured for somebody, and if she does not achieve her martyrdom she is quite capable of jumping out of a window. I have heard something of a certain Mr. Razumikhin. They say he is a sensible young man; I suppose he is a seminarian. Well, let him take care of your sister. In short, I think I understood her, and I consider that it does me credit. But at that time, at the beginning, that is, of an acquaintance, you know yourself that one is always somehow more frivolous and stupid than usual, one makes mistakes and sees things in the wrong way. Hang it, why was she so pretty? It was not my fault. In one word, with me it began with an uncontrollable fit of sensual passion. Avdotya Romanovna is terribly chaste, to a positively unheard-of degree. Notice this; I tell you it about your sister as a fact. She is perhaps even morbidly chaste, in spite of the depth of her intelligence, and it will do her harm. There happened to be a certain girl in the house, Parasha, black-eyed Parasha, who had just been brought from another estate as a maid-servant, and I had never seen her before. She was very pretty, but incredibly stupid. She burst into tears, raised a yell that could be heard all over the place, and caused a scandal. Once, after dinner, Avdotya Romanovna deliberately sought me out when I was alone in the garden and with flashing eyes *demanding* that I should leave poor Parasha alone. It was almost our first private conversation. I, naturally, considered it an honour to fulfil her wish, and tried to pretend that I was embarrassed and discomfited, and, in short, played my part not too badly. Then began negotiations, secret conversations, moral lectures, sermons, entreaties, supplications, even tears—would you believe it, even tears! That shows how far the passion for conversion will go in some girls! Of course, I put the blame for everything on my destiny, made out that I was avid and greedy for light, and finally brought into play the greatest and most reliable means of subjugating a woman's heart, which never disappoints anybody and always produces a decisive effect on every single woman, without exception. I mean, of course, flattery. There is nothing in the world harder than



straightforwardness, and nothing easier than flattery. In straightforward dealing, if there is one-hundredth part of a false note, the result is immediate dissonance and, in consequence, trouble. But in flattery every single note can be false and the effect will be agreeable, and it will be listened to with some pleasure; the pleasure may indeed be somewhat crude, but it is still pleasure, for all that. And, however gross the flattery may be, at least half of it will certainly seem to be true. This holds for every stage of development and every social level. Even a vestal virgin can be seduced by flattery, not to mention ordinary people. I can't help laughing when I remember how I once seduced a lady who was devoted to her husband, to her children, and to virtue. What fun it was, and how little trouble! And the lady really was virtuous, in her own way at least. My whole strategy consisted in being crushed and prostrate before her chastity the whole time. I flattered her unconscionably, and no sooner did I obtain so much as a glance or a pressure of the hand than I reproached myself for having taken it by force, declaring that she had resisted me, and resisted me so strongly that I should certainly never have won any favours if I had not been so depraved; that she, in her innocence, did not anticipate my cunning and yielded without intention or knowledge, unaware of what she did, and so on and so forth. In short, I attained my ends, and the lady remained convinced that she was innocent and chaste, that she was neglecting none of her duties or obligations, and that she had fallen quite by accident. And how angry she was with me when at long last I told her that in my honest opinion she had been seeking satisfaction just as much as I had. Poor Marfa Petrovna was also terribly susceptible to flattery and if I had only wanted I could have possessed myself of all her property while she was still alive. (But I am drinking an awful lot of wine and talking too much, I hope you won't be angry if I say now that the same effect began to appear even with Avdotya Romanovna. But I was stupid and impatient and spoiled everything. More than once, even before this (and especially on one occasion) Avdotya Romanovna found the expression of my eyes terribly displeasing, if you will believe me. To put it shortly, there was a flame in them that flared up more strongly and less guardedly all the time, and it frightened her and at last she came to hate it. There is no need to go into details, but we parted. Then I again acted stupidly. I allowed myself to turn all her moral propaganda to

the crudest mockery; Parasha appeared on the scene again, and she was not the only one—in short, we had a perfect pandemonium. Ah, Rodion Romanovich, if you had only once in your life seen how your sister's eyes can flash fire! It doesn't matter if I have drunk a whole glassful of wine and am tipsy now, I am telling the truth; I assure you, I dreamed of that look; in the end I couldn't bear even to hear the rustle of her dress. Really, I thought that I should have a fit or something; I had never imagined that I could get into such a frenzy. In one word, a reconciliation was essential to me; but it was quite impossible. And can you imagine what I did then? To what depths of stupidity a man can be reduced by frenzy! Never undertake anything in a frenzy, Rodion Romanovich. I calculated that Avdotya Romanovna was a beggar, after all (oh, excuse me, I didn't mean to say that . . . but does it make any difference what word you use, if it means the same?), that, in short, she had to earn her own living, and that she had to help to keep both her mother and you (oh, hang it, you are scowling again . . .), so I decided to offer her all my money, I could have realized up to about thirty thousand at the time, on condition that she would run away with me here, to St. Petersburg. Naturally, I would have sworn to give her eternal love, blissful happiness, and so on and so forth. Believe me, I was so enamoured that if she had said: "Cut Maria Petrovna's throat or poison her and marry me"—I would have done it on the spot! But the whole thing ended in the disaster that you already know about, and you can judge for yourself to what a pitch of fury I was driven when I heard that Maria Petrovna had got hold of that rascally clerk, Luzhin, and all but succeeded in contriving a match between them—which in reality would have amounted to exactly the same thing as I had suggested. Wouldn't it? Wouldn't it? It would, wouldn't it? I notice that you have begun to listen very attentively . . . an interesting young man . . ."

Svidrigaylov impatiently thumped the table with his fist. He had become red in the face. Raskolnikov saw clearly that the glass or glass and a half of champagne he had drunk, without noticing, in constant small sips, had affected him for the worse, and he resolved to profit by the opportunity. He was very suspicious of Svidrigaylov.

"Well, after all that, I am quite convinced that you came here with my sister in mind," he said bluntly and openly to Svidrigaylov, so as to irritate him still more.

'Oh, drop it!' Svidrigaylov seemed to pull himself up sharply. 'Why, I told you . . . and besides your sister can't stand me.'

'I am convinced of that, too, but that isn't the point.'

'You are convinced of it?' (Svidrigaylov screwed up his eyes with a mocking smile.) 'You are right, she doesn't like me; but never try to answer for what is between a husband and his wife, or a lover and his mistress. There is always one little corner which remains hidden from all the world, and is known only to the two of them. Will you vouch for Avdotya Romanovna's having looked on me with aversion?'

'From some words and hints you dropped while you were telling your story, I notice that you still have your own views, and your own urgent designs on Dunya—vicious ones, of course.'

'What? Did I let words and hints of that kind escape me?' Svidrigaylov was naively startled, but paid not the slightest attention to the epithet applied to his designs.

'You are still doing so. Well, for example, what are you so afraid of? Why were you so startled?'

'I am afraid, am I? Afraid of you? You ought rather to be afraid of me, *cher ami*. All the same, what rot! . . . However, I'm drunk, I can see; I very nearly let things out again. Damn the wine! Hi, there! Water!'

He seized the bottle and without more ado threw it out of the window. Philip brought some water.

'That's all nonsense,' said Svidrigaylov, wetting a towel and applying it to his head. 'I can confound you with one word, and reduce all your suspicions to nothing. Do you know I'm getting married?'

'So you have already told me.'

'Did I? I'd forgotten. But I couldn't have spoken positively then, because I hadn't even seen my future wife; I was only thinking of it. Well, now I am engaged, and the thing is done, and, if only I hadn't something urgent to do, I should certainly take you to see them at once—because I want to ask your advice. Oh, hang it! I've only ten minutes left. Look at my watch. But all the same, I will tell you about it, because it's something very interesting, in its way, my marriage. Where are you off to? You're not going again?'

'No, I won't go now.'

'You won't go away at all? We shall see! I will take you there, truly, only not now; now it will soon be time for me to



leave. You turn to the right, and I to the left. Do you know this Resslerich? This same Resslerich, in whose house I am living now, eh? Do you hear? No, what do you think? she is the same one they talk about, you know, about one of her girls in the water, in the winter . . . well, are you listening? Do you hear me? Well, she was the one who cooked it all up for me; you're bored, she said, you must find something to amuse you. I'm a moody, gloomy person, you know. Do you think I've a cheertful disposition? No, it's moody. I don't do any harm, but I sit in a corner, and sometimes I haven't a word to say for three days on end. This Resslerich is a tricky piece of work, I can tell you, and this is what he has in mind. I shall get tired of my wife and leave her, and my wife will fall into her hands, and be put into circulation by her, among our own class, that is, and higher ones. There is, she says, an invalid father, a retired official, who sits in his arm-chair and has not been able to move his legs for three years. There is, she says, a mother as well—a very sensible lady, *mama*. The son is serving somewhere in the provinces, and doesn't help them. The married daughter never goes to see them, and they have two little nephews on their hands—as though their own weren't enough—and they took their younger daughter away from school before she finished her education. She will be just sixteen in a month's time, that is, she will be marriageable in a month. She is the one meant for me. We went there, it was very funny, I introduced myself—a landowner, a widower, bearing a well-known name, with such-and-such connexions, and with money—what does it matter that I am fifty and she is not yet sixteen? Who will consider that? Well, but it's tempting, eh? It's tempting, you know! Ha, ha! If you could have seen me talking to *papa* and *mama*! It would have been worth paying to get in, simply to see me then. She came in, dropped a curtsy—still in short skirts, imagine! An unopened bud. She coloured up, blushing like the dawn—she had been told, of course—I don't know what you think about women's faces, but to my mind these sixteen years, these still childish eyes, this modesty and fearful shyness—to my mind, they are better than beauty. But in addition to all this, she was a little picture! Fair hair in tight little ringlets like a lamb's coat, pouting rosy little lips, tiny feet—charming! . . . Well, we had made each other's acquaintance, and I explained that for domestic reasons I was in a hurry, and so the next day, the day before yesterday, that is, we were betrothed. Since

then, whenever I go, I take her on my knee at once, and don't let her go . . . Well, she blushes like the dawn, and I kiss her every minute; mama, of course, impresses on her that "this" (so she says) "is your husband, and things must be so"—and, in one word, it suits me down to the ground. This present condition, of being betrothed, is perhaps really better than marriage. There is in it what is called *la nature et la vérité*! Ha, ha! I have had one or two talks with her—she is far from stupid; sometimes she will steal a look at me that positively burns through me. And you know, she has a little face like a Raphael Madonna's. Has it ever struck you that the Sistine Madonna really has a fantastic face, a face of melancholy and almost simple-minded piety? Well, hers is something like that. The day after we received her parents' blessing I took with me fifteen hundred roubles' worth of things—a *parure* of diamonds and another of pearls, a silver dressing-case—as big as this—with all sorts of fittings, so that even that little Madonna face of hers flushed with pleasure. Yesterday I took her on my knee—very unceremoniously, no doubt—she blushed crimson and tears started to her eyes, but she did not want to betray how deeply stirred she was. Everybody was out of the room for a moment, and we were left quite alone, and suddenly she threw herself on my neck (it was the first time she had done so of her own accord), put both her little arms round me, kissed me, and swore to be a good, true, and obedient wife to me and make me happy, to spend her whole life, every minute of her life, for me, and to sacrifice everything else, and in return all she wished was to *have my respect*; beyond that, she said, "I want nothing, nothing, nothing—no more gifts." You will agree that to hear such an avowal, alone, from a little sixteen-year-old angel in a muslin dress, with a mass of little curls, blushing with maidenly shame and with tears of enthusiasm in her eyes—you will agree that it is rather a temptation. It is, isn't it? It is worth something, en? Isn't it? Well . . . well, listen . . . well, let us go and see my fiancée . . . only not just now!

'In short, this monstrous difference in years and knowledge of life whets your sensual appetite! But surely you will not really marry like that!'

'Why not? Certainly I shall. Every man considers himself, and that man has the gayest life who is most successful in deceiving himself. Ha, ha! But why are you standing up so stoutly for virtue? Spare me, I am only a sinful man! He, he, he!

'And yet you have settled Katerina Ivanovna's children. However . . . however, you had your own reasons for that . . . I understand it all now.'

'I like all children. I like them very much,' laughed Svidrigaylov. 'Apropos of that, I could tell you a very curious story, that is not finished yet. On the first day I arrived here I visited various resorts, absolutely plunging into faith after those seven years. You have probably noticed that I have not been in a hurry to rejoin my old set, the friends and acquaintances of former times. Indeed, I intend to get on without them as long as I can. You know, in the country with Marfa Petrovna the memory of those places was an endless torment to me, those mysterious places in which a man who knows how can find many things. But hang it! The common folk get drunk; educated young people with nothing to do consume themselves with unrealizable dreams and fancies, and stultify themselves with theories; Jews have flocked here and are hoarding up money, all the rest lead lives of debauchery. I found the town fairly reeking with its familiar odours from the first moment. I chanced one evening on a so-called dance—it was in a horrible den (but I like my sewers filthy), and, of course, there was a *cancan* of an unheard-of kind, such as there never was in my day. Yes, sir, there has been progress there. Suddenly, I looked and saw a little girl of about thirteen, very nicely dressed, dancing with an expert, and with another *vis-à-vis*. Her mother was sitting in a chair by the wall. Well, you can imagine what that *cancan* was like.' The little girl was confused and blushing, and at last, feeling herself insulted, she began to cry. The expert seized her and began to spin her round and posture in front of her, and everybody laughed and—at these moments I love our public, even our *cancan* public—they laughed and shouted, "That's right, serves them right! Children shouldn't be brought here!" Well, I didn't care, and it wasn't any business of mine, whether they were logical or not in soothing their consciences in that way. I had at once made up my mind on my own position, and I went and sat down by the mother, and began talking to her about my being also newly arrived, and what ignorant bores these were, who could not distinguish genuine worth or give it proper respect; I gave her to understand that I had plenty of money, and offered to take them home in my carriage. I took them home and got acquainted with them; they were staying in poky little



lodgings and had only just come to St. Petersburg. The mother declared that she and her daughter could only take my acquaintance as an honour. I learned that they possessed neither stick nor stone of their own, and had come here on business connected with a petition to some Minister. I offered them my services and money; I learned that they had gone to the dance by mistake, thinking that it really was a dancing class; I offered to assist the young lady's education with lessons in French and dancing. They were delighted to accept, taking it for an honour, and our acquaintanceship has continued till now . . . If you like, we will go and see them—only not just now.'

'That's enough. No more of your wicked, base stories, you vile, disgusting, salacious creature!'

'A Schiller, a Russian Schiller, an absolute Schiller! *Où va-t-elle la vertu se nicher?*' You know, I shall go on telling you things like this, on purpose to hear your outcries. Delightfully amusing!'

'Of course! Don't I seem ludicrous even to myself just now?' muttered Raskolnikov bitterly.

Svidrigaylov laughed uproariously; then at last he summoned Philip, settled his bill, and got up to go.

'Well, I'm quite drunk, *assez causé!*' he said. 'A great pleasure!'

'Of course, you would find it a pleasure!' exclaimed Raskolnikov, as he also rose. 'Naturally an accomplished rake like you, with some monstrous scheme of the same sort in his mind, enjoys talking of such adventures, especially in circumstances like these and to a man like me . . . It excites him.'

'Well, if it's like that,' answered Svidrigaylov, with some astonishment, 'if it's like that, you're a pretty fair cynic yourself. At any rate, you have all the makings of a very considerable one. There are many things you know how to recognize, many . . . and, indeed, you are capable of doing many things, too. Well, but that's enough. I am sincerely sorry to have had so little conversation with you, but I shall not lose touch with you . . . Only wait a little . . .'

Svidrigaylov left the tavern, and Raskolnikov followed him. Svidrigaylov was not very drunk; the wine had gone to his head for a moment, but the effect was passing with every minute. He was preoccupied with something, something very important, and his brows were knitted. He was plainly

disturbed and excited by the expectation of something. In the past few minutes his tone to Raskolnikov seemed to have changed, becoming ruder and more mocking. Raskolnikov had perceived this and was also disturbed. He had become very suspicious of Svidrigaylov and resolved to follow him.

They came out on to the street.

'Your way lies to the right and mine to the left, or perhaps the other way round, only—*adieu mon plaisir*. Good-bye for the present.'

He turned right, towards the Haymarket.

## CHAPTER V

RASKOLNIKOV followed him.

'What does this mean?' exclaimed Svidrigaylov, turning round. 'Surely I said . . .'

'It means that I will not part from you now.'

'Wha-a-t?'

They both stopped, and stood for a minute, measuring each other with their eyes.

'From all your half-drunken talk,' said Raskolnikov abruptly and harshly, 'I have come to the positive conclusion that you not only have not given up your vile designs on my sister, but are pursuing them more actively than ever. I know that my sister received a letter this morning. You have been in a fever of impatience all this time . . . Suppose you have managed to dig up a wife on the way; that doesn't mean anything. I want to satisfy myself personally . . .'

Raskolnikov could hardly have defined exactly what he wanted at that moment, or just what it was of which he wished to satisfy himself personally.

'So that's it! Do you want me to call the police?'

'Call them!'

Again they stood face to face for a minute. At last, Svidrigaylov's expression suddenly changed. Satisfied that Raskolnikov was not to be frightened by threats, he assumed a cheerful and friendly air.

'What a man! I didn't mention your affair, on purpose, although of course I am itching with curiosity. A fantastic business. I nearly put off speaking of it till another time, but really, you would provoke a dead man . . . Well, let us go, only let me tell you first that I am only going home for a

moment now, to get some money; after that I shall lock up my room, take a cab, and go out to the Islands for the evening. Well, what good will it do you to follow me?"

"I shall go to your lodgings, all the same, but to see Sofya Semenovna, not you, to apologize for not going to the funeral."

"As you please, but Sofya Semenovna is not at home. She has taken the children to a lady, an elderly lady of high rank, whom I used to know a very long time ago, and who is the patroness of some orphanages. This lady was enchanted when I took her the money for all three of Katerina Ivanovna's nestlings, and gave her more money for the orphanages as well. I finally told her all Sofya Semenovna's story, without any concealment or disguise. It produced an indescribable effect. That is why Sofya Semenovna has been summoned to appear this very day at the hotel where my titled lady, who has come up for a time from the country, is staying."

"It doesn't matter. I will call all the same."

"As you like, only I am not going with you; but what does it matter to me? Here we are at home. Tell me, aren't you—I am sure you are—suspicious of me just because I have been so delicate and not worried you with questions up to now . . . you understand? It seemed extraordinary to you, I'll bet! Well, that shows what you get for being delicate!"

"And listening at doors!"

"Oh, that's what you're after?" laughed Svidrigaslov. "Yes, I should have been surprised if you had let that pass, after all. Ha, ha! I did understand a little, if not much, of what you had been up to, that time . . . there . . . and were telling Sofya Semenovna about, but, all the same, what is it all about? Perhaps I am quite out of date, and can't understand anything any more. Explain it to me, my dear fellow, for God's sake! Instruct me in the latest ideas."

"You couldn't hear anything. It's all lies!"

"But I'm not talking about that, not about that at all (although I did hear something); no, I was talking about the way you keep on sighing all the time. The Schiller in you is always getting into a muddle. Now it seems one mustn't listen at doors. If that is so, go and explain to the authorities how "this extraordinary thing," you must say, "happened to me in such-and-such a way; a slight mistake revealed itself in my theory". If you are so sure that one can't listen at doors, but any old woman you like can be knocked on the head, then



you'd better be off at once to America somewhere. Run away, young man! Perhaps there is still time. I am speaking in all sincerity. You haven't any money, is that it? I'll give you enough for your journey.'

'I am not thinking of that at all,' interrupted Raskolnikov disgustedly.

'I understand (but don't trouble yourself: you needn't say anything unless you want ; I understand what questions are occupying your mind—moral ones, aren't they? Questions appropriate to a man and a citizen? But let them be, why should they concern you now? He, he! Because you are still a man and a citizen? But if so, you shouldn't have got yourself into this, don't thrust yourself into other people's affairs. Well, shoot yourself; or don't you want to?'

'You seem to be deliberately trying to annoy me, so that I shall leave you . . .'

'What an odd creature you are! But here we are; do come in. You see, that is Sofya Semenovna's door, look, there is nobody in. Don't you believe me? Ask the Kapernaumovs; she leaves her key with them. Here is Madame de Kapernaumov herself, eh? What? She is a trifle deaf. Has she gone out? Where to? Well, did you hear that? She isn't here, and she won't be back, perhaps, until very late tonight. Well, now let us go to my rooms. I believe you wanted to call there, too, didn't you? Well, here we are. Madam Ressler is not at home. She is a woman who is always on the go, but she is a very good woman, I assure you . . . and perhaps she might have been of use to you, if you had been a little more sensible. Well, now please observe. I take this five-per-cent bond from the bureau (look what a lot of them I still have! , but this one is destined for the *bureau de change* today. Well, did you see? I have no more time to lose. The bureau is locked, the door is locked, and we are on the staircase again. Well, let us take a cab, shall we? I really am going to the Islands. Wouldn't you like a drive? Look, I'll take this carriage to Elagin Island, shall I? Do you refuse? Can't you stand it any longer? It doesn't matter, come for a drive! I think it may be going to rain; but never mind, we'll have the top down . . .'

Svidrigaylov was already sitting in the carriage. Raskolnikov had decided that his suspicions were not justified, at least for the moment. Without a word in reply, he turned and walked back towards the Haymarket. If he had looked round

even once as he walked, he might have seen that Svidrigaylov, after no more than a hundred yards, had paid off the cab and was once again on the pavement. But it was too late now to see anything; he had turned the corner. Intense loathing drove him away from Svidrigaylov's neighbourhood. 'How could I, even for one instant, hope for anything from that hardened scoundrel, that debauched, licentious brute?' he could not help exclaiming. In fact, however, the judgement Raskolnikov had pronounced was too hasty and ill-considered. There was something about Svidrigaylov that was at least out of the ordinary, if not mysterious. As far as his sister was concerned, Raskolnikov remained convinced that Svidrigaylov would not leave her in peace. But the constant turning of everything over and over in his mind was becoming intolerably burdensome to him.

In his usual way, once he was alone, he fell into deep thought before he had gone twenty yards. Coming up on to the bridge, he stopped by the parapet and gazed down at the water. Close beside him as he stood there was Avdotya Romanovna.

He had met her at the entrance to the bridge but had walked past without seeing her. Dunechka had never before encountered him in this state in the street, and she was struck with dismay. She stopped, uncertain whether to call out to him. Suddenly she saw Svidrigaylov approaching hurriedly from the direction of the Haymarket.

His movements seemed secretive and cautious. He did not come on to the bridge, but stood to one side on the pavement, taking every care to prevent Raskolnikov's seeing him. He had noticed Dunya some time before, and he began to make signs to her. They seemed to be meant to ask her not to call or disturb her brother, but to come to him.

This Dunya did. She went quietly past her brother and up to Svidrigaylov.

'Let us go quickly,' he whispered. 'I do not wish Rodion Romanovich to know of our meeting. I must tell you that I have been sitting with him, not far from here, in a tavern where he had sought me out, and it was only with difficulty that I got away from him. He has learnt somehow of my letter to you and suspects something. Surely it wasn't you who told him? But if not, who was it?'

'Now we have turned the corner,' interrupted Dunya, 'and my brother will not see us. Let me make it clear that I shall

go no farther with you. Tell me what you have to say here; it can all be said in the street.'

'In the first place, it is quite impossible to say it in the street; in the second place, you ought to hear Sofya Semenovna as well, in the third place, I have some papers to show you . . . Well, and finally, if you will not agree to come to my room, I refuse to enter into further explanations, and I shall leave you immediately. Further, I beg you to remember that I am completely possessed of your beloved brother's very extraordinary secret.' Dunya paused irresolutely, turning her searching gaze on Svidrigaylov.

'What are you afraid of?' he observed quietly. 'The town is not the country. And even in the country you did me more harm than I did you, and here . . .'

'Has Sofya Semenovna been told?'

'No, I haven't said a word to her, and I am not even sure that she is at home now. She probably is, however. She buried her stepmother today, it is not the sort of day on which she is likely to go out visiting. I don't want to say anything about this to anybody until the time comes, and I am even a little sorry that I have told you. In this matter the slightest indiscretion amounts to a complete betrayal. Here is where I live, in this house here that we are coming to. Look, there is our porter; he knows me very well, see, he is bowing to us. He sees that I have a lady with me, and has certainly taken note of your face; that will please you if you are very afraid and suspicious of me. Excuse me if I am putting it too crudely. I am in lodgings here. Sofya Semenovna, who is also in lodgings, has the adjoining room. The whole floor is let out in rooms. But why are you frightened, like a child? Am I so very terrible?'

Svidrigaylov twisted his features into a condescending smile, but he was no longer in a mood for smiling. His heart was thumping and his breath caught in his throat. He deliberately raised his voice, to conceal his mounting excitement. Dunya, however, was so irritated by his saying that she was childishly frightened of him and thought him terrible, that she failed to notice this peculiar excitement.

'Although I know that you are a man . . . without honour, I am not in the least afraid of you. Lead the way,' she said with apparent calm, although her face was very pale.

Svidrigaylov stopped at Sonya's door.

'With your permission I will inquire whether she is at home.'



No. That is unfortunate. But I know she may come very soon. If she has gone out, it can only have been to see a certain lady about those orphan children. Their mother is dead. I have interested myself in the case and made arrangements for them. If Sofya Semenovna doesn't return in ten minutes, I will send her to see you this very day, if you wish. Well, here is where I live. These are my two rooms. My landlady, Mrs. Ressler, is through that door. Now please look here, and I will show you my most important proofs: this door leads from my bedroom into two empty rooms, which are to let. Here they are . . . you must please look at them rather carefully . . .'

Svidrigaylov rented two fairly large furnished rooms. Dunechka looked round mistrustfully, but she could see nothing out of the ordinary in the furnishings or arrangement of the rooms, although there was something to see, that Svidrigaylov's apartment, for example, was between two others that were almost unoccupied. His door did not open straight off the corridor, but was reached through two rooms belonging to his landlady, which were almost empty. From his bedroom Svidrigaylov, opening a locked door, had shown Dunechka another apartment, this one to let and also empty. Dunechka stopped on the threshold, not understanding why she was requested to look, but Svidrigaylov hastened to explain.

'Look here, in this large second room. Notice that door; it is locked. Near the door stands a chair, and there is only that chair in the two rooms. I brought it from my own room, so that I could listen more comfortably. Here, immediately behind the door, is Sofya Semenovna's table; she was sitting there talking to Rodion Romanovich. And I listened here, sitting on the chair, on two successive evenings, each time for about two hours—and of course I was able to learn something, don't you think?'

'You listened?'

'Yes, I listened. Now let us go into my rooms; there is nowhere to sit here.'

He led Avdotya Romanovna back into the first of his rooms, which he used as a sitting-room, and asked her to sit down. He himself sat down at the other end of the table, at least two yards from her, but his eyes seemed to glitter with the same flame that had once so frightened Dunechka. She shuddered and again looked mistrustfully round. The gesture was involuntary; she plainly did not wish to reveal her mistrust,

but the isolated situation of Svidrigaylov's rooms had at last impressed her. She would have liked to ask whether his landlady, at least, was at home. but, out of pride, she did not put the question. She was, besides, suffering an incomparably greater anguish than fear for herself. Her distress was unendurable.

'Here is your letter,' she began, laying it on the table. 'Can what you write possibly be true? You hint at a crime committed by my brother. The hint is too plain for you to dare to retract it now. I must tell you that I had heard this stupid story before and that I do not believe a word of it. The suspicion is ridiculous and vile. I know the story, and how and why it was invented. You cannot have any kind of proof. You promised to prove it: speak then! But I tell you beforehand that I do not believe you! I don't believe you' . . .'

Dunechka had spoken rapidly and hurriedly, and colour flooded her face for a moment.

'If you didn't believe me, how could you have taken the risk of coming to see me alone? Why did you come? Simply from curiosity?'

'Don't torment me, speak, speak!'

'One thing is certain, that you are a brave young woman. I swear I thought you would ask Mr. Razumikhin to accompany you here. But he was not with you, or anywhere about; I looked. That was courageous; it means that you wished to protect Rodion Romanovich. But everything about you is god-like . . . As for your brother, what shall I say? You yourself saw him just now. What did he look like?'

'Is that all you have to go on?'

'No. I have his own words. He came here to see Sofya Semenovna on two evenings in succession. I have shown you where they sat. He made a full confession to her. He is a murderer. He killed an old woman, a moneylender, with whom he had pawned things; he killed her sister as well, a dealer called Lizaveta, who arrived unexpectedly during her sister's murder. He killed them both with an axe he had taken with him. He killed them in order to steal, and he did steal; he took money and some things . . . He himself told all this, word for word, to Sofya Semenovna, who is the only one who knows his secret, but who had no part in the murder either in word or deed. On the contrary, she was just as frightened as you are now. Don't be uneasy, she will not betray him.'

'This cannot be true!' murmured Dunechka, with pale stiff lips; she felt suffocated. 'It cannot be. There was not the slightest reason, no cause . . . It is a lie! A lie!'

'He robbed her, that was the only reason. He took money and things. It is true that, by his own confession, he made no use of either the things or the money, but hid them somewhere under a stone, where they still are. But that was because he did not dare use them.'

'But is it likely that he could rob and plunder? Or that he could even dream of it?' cried Dunva, starting up from her chair. 'You know him, you have seen him. Could he be a thief?'

She was almost imploring Svidrigaylov; she had forgotten all her fear.

'There are thousands, millions, of possible combinations and arrangements, Avdotya Romanovna. A thief steals, but then he knows himself to be a scoundrel; but I have heard of a man of good family who robbed the mail, and who knows, perhaps he thought he was doing something respectable! Of course I should not have believed this, any more than you do, if I had heard it at second hand. But I believed my own ears. He explained his reasons, too, to Sofya Semenovna, but at first she could not believe her own ears, although at last she had to believe her own eyes. After all, he himself told her.'

'But what . . . reasons?'

'It is a long story, Avdotya Romanovna. Here you have . . . how can I put it? . . . a kind of theory, the same sort of thing which makes me, for example, consider that a single piece of wrongdoing is allowable, if the chief aim is good. One single evil and a hundred good deeds! Besides, it galls a young man of merit and exorbitant ambition to know that if only he had, for example, some three thousand roubles, it would make all the difference to his whole career, the whole future course of his life, but that the three thousand is lacking. Add to this the irritations of hunger, cramped quarters, rags, and a clear consciousness of the full beauty of his social position, and that of his mother and sister. And above all vanity, vanity and pride, though God only knows there might be good qualities too . . . I don't blame him, please don't think I do; it's no business of mine. Then there was this particular little theory of his—a theory of sorts according to which people are divided, do you see, into the common mass and the special people, those, that is to say, for whom, because of their



elevated position, laws are not written, but who, on the contrary, frame laws for the others, the common mass, the rabble. Well, as a theory it may pass, it's *une theorie comme une autre*. Napoleon had a terrible fascination for him, or rather, what particularly attracted him was the fact that so many men of genius had not heeded the isolated misdeed but marched straight over it, without reflection. He seems to have persuaded himself that he too was a man of genius, that is to say, he was convinced of it for a period. He suffered, and still suffers, greatly from the thought that, although he was capable of conceiving the theory, it was not in his nature to overstep the bounds of the law, without pausing to reflect, and that it follows that he is not a man of genius. Well, that, for a young man with a due share of self-esteem, is humiliating, especially in our day . . .

'And the pangs of conscience? So you would deny him any moral feeling? Is he really like that?'

'Ah, Avdotya Romanovna, everything is mixed up now, though that is not to say that it was ever particularly straightforward. The minds of the Russian people in general are broad, Avdotya Romanovna, like their country, and extraordinarily inclined to the fantastic and the chaotic; but it is disastrous to have a broad mind without special genius. Do you remember how often we two discussed this theme, and in this strain, sitting on the terrace in the garden, in the evening after supper? You were always reproaching me with that breadth of mind. Who knows, perhaps at the very time we were talking he was lying here and making his plans. In our educated Russian society, Avdotya Romanovna, there are no sacred traditions at most someone may possibly frame some for himself out of books . . . or deduce something from old chronicles. But such people are the more learned sort, and, you know, all more or less simpletons, so that a man of the world would think their proceedings quite unbecoming to himself. However, you know my general opinions; I make it a rule to condemn absolutely nobody, since I never do anything myself and don't intend to. But we have spoken of this more than once before. I was even fortunate enough to gain your interest in my opinions . . . You are very pale, Avdotya Romanovna.'

'I know that theory of his. I have read his article, in a magazine, about people to whom everything is permitted . . . Razumikhin brought it to me . . .'

'Mr. Razumikhin? An article by your brother? In a magazine? Is there one? I didn't know. It must be interesting. But where are you going, Avdotya Romanovna?'

'I want to see Sofya Semenovna,' said Dunya faintly. 'Which way does one go? She may have come in, and I must see her at once. Let her . . .'

Avdotya Romanovna could not finish what she was saying; her breath literally failed her.

'Sofya Semenovna will not return before night, I suppose. She should have been here very soon, and if she was not, it means she will be very late . . .'

'Ah, so you have been lying to me! I see . . . you lied . . . you were lying all the time! . . . I don't believe you! I don't believe you!' cried Dunechka frenziedly, quite losing her head.

Almost fainting, she sank on to a chair hastily placed for her by Svidrigaylov.

'Avdotya Romanovna, what is the matter? Don't faint! Here is some water. Take a sip . . .'

He sprinkled her with water. Dunechka shuddered and came to herself.

'The effect was too violent!' muttered Svidrigaylov to himself, frowning. 'Avdotya Romanovna, calm yourself! I tell you, he has friends. We will save him, rescue him. Would you like me to take him abroad? I have money; I can get a ticket in three days. As for his having killed, he may yet accomplish much good in expiation. Calm yourself. He may yet be a great man. Now how are you? How do you feel?'

'An evil man! He is still sneering. Let me go . . .'

'Where? Where do you want to go?'

'To him. Where is he? Do you know? Why is this door locked? We came in by it, and now it is locked. When did you contrive to lock it?'

'After all, we couldn't shout the subject of our conversation all over the place. I am not sneering at all, only I was tired of talking in that strain. Where are you going in such a state? Do you want to betray him? You will drive him to madness and he will give himself away. I tell you they are already on his trail, they have hit the scent. You will only give him away. Wait a little; I saw him and talked to him just now, he can still be saved. Wait. Sit down and we will consider it together. That was why I asked you to come here, so that we could talk about it in private and consider it wisely. Please sit down!'

'How can you save him? Can he possibly be saved?'

Dunya sat down, and Svidrigaylov sat beside her.

'It all depends on you, on you and on you alone,' he began, with flashing eyes, almost in a whisper, stumbling, and hardly articulating some words from excitement.

Dunya recoiled from him in fear. He also was trembling violently.

'You . . . one word from you and he is saved! I . . . I will save him. I have money, friends. I will get him away at once, and I will get a passport, two passports. One for him, the other for me. I have friends; practical people . . . Would you like me to get another passport for you . . . for your mother? . . . What need have you of Razumikhin? I love you so . . . I love you infinitely. Let me kiss the hem of your dress, let me! Let me! It is more than I can bear to hear it rustle. Say to me, "Do this!" and I will do it. I will do anything. I will do the impossible. Whatever you believe in, I will believe in too. I will do anything, anything. Don't look at me like that, don't! I tell you, you are killing me . . .'

He was almost raving. It was as if something in his mind had suddenly given way. Dunya sprang up and flung herself towards the door.

'Open the door, open the door!' she called through the door to anybody who might be outside, and shook it. 'Please open it! Is there nobody there?'

Svidrigaylov controlled himself and got up. A smile of malicious mockery forced itself on to his still trembling lips.

'There is nobody at home there,' he said slowly and deliberately, 'my landlady has gone out and you are wasting your breath shouting like that. You are only getting needlessly worked up.'

'Where is the key? Open the door at once, at once, wretch!'

'I have lost the key and I shall not be able to find it.'

'Oh? Then you are using force!' cried Dunya, as pale as death, and rushed to the corner of the room, where she barricaded herself with a little table that happened to stand near. She did not scream; but she fixed her eyes on her tormentor and followed his every movement. Svidrigaylov remained standing in his place, facing her from the opposite side of the room. He had succeeded in regaining control of himself, at least outwardly. But his face was still pale and the mocking smile had not left it.



'You spoke just now of "force", Avdotya Romanovna. If I do intend force, you can judge for yourself whether I have taken suitable measures. Sofya Semenovna is not at home and it is a long way to the Kapernaumovs, through five locked rooms. Finally, I am at least twice as strong as you and, besides, I have nothing to fear because you will not be able to complain afterwards. You will not want to betray your brother, will you? Besides, nobody will believe you: for what purpose should a young girl have visited a single man in his rooms? So, even if you sacrifice your brother, you won't prove anything; "force" is very difficult to prove, Avdotya Romanovna.'

'Scoundrel,' whispered Dunya indignantly.

'As you please, but note that I was speaking only of a supposition. In my personal belief you are quite right: violence is an abomination. I was simply showing you that your conscience would have nothing to reproach you with if you were . . . if you wished to save your brother voluntarily, in the way I have suggested. I mean you would simply be yielding to circumstances, or even to force, if we can't manage without that word. Think of this: your brother's fate, and your mother's as well, are in your hands. I will be your slave . . . and my life . . . I will wait here . . .'

Svidrigailov sat down on the sofa, some yards away from Dunya. She had no longer the slightest doubt of his unshakable determination. Besides, she knew him . . .

Suddenly she took a revolver out of her pocket, cocked it, and rested the hand that held it on the little table. Svidrigailov sprang up.

'Aha! So that's it,' he exclaimed in astonishment, but still smiling maliciously. 'Well, that entirely changes matters! You yourself are making things very much easier for me, Avdotya Romanovna. Where did you get that revolver, though? Not from Mr. Razumikhin? Why? That revolver is mine! An old friend! And I looked all over for it . . . The lessons in shooting, which I had the honour to give you in the country, were not entirely wasted, then.'

'The revolver did not belong to you, but to Maria Petrovna, whom you killed, wretch! There was nothing of yours in her house. I took it when I began to suspect what you were capable of. Dare to move one step forward, and I swear I will kill you!'

Dunya was in a frenzy. She kept the revolver cocked.

'Well, and what about your brother? I ask out of curiosity,' said Svidrigaylov, still standing in the same place.

'Denounce him, if you will! Don't stir! Not a step! I will shoot! You poisoned your wife, I know you did. You are a murderer yourself! . . .'

'Are you quite certain that I poisoned Marfa Petrovna?'

'Yes! You hinted as much to me; you spoke to me about poison . . . I know you went for some . . . you had it ready . . . It was you! It was certainly you . . . wretch!'

'Even if that were true, it would have been because of you . . . you would have been the cause of it!'

'You are lying! I always hated you, always . . .'

'Ah, Avdotya Romanovna! You seem to have forgotten how you softened towards me in the heat of propaganda and grew tender . . . I could see it in your eyes; do you remember the evening, and the moonlight, and a nightingale singing?'

'Lies!' Dunya's eyes flashed with furious rage. 'Lies and vile slander!'

'Lies? Well, perhaps so. I lied. Women should not be reminded of such things.' (He smiled.) 'I know you will shoot me, you pretty little wild creature. Well, shoot then!'

Dunya raised the revolver and looked at him with her great black eyes flashing fire in her white face. Her lower lip was pale and quivering, but her resolve was firm and she estimated the distance between them and waited for the first move on his part. He had never seen her look so beautiful. The flame that shone in her eyes as she raised the revolver seemed to set him on fire, and his heart contracted with pain. He took a step forward and a shot rang out. The bullet grazed his scalp and lodged in the wall behind him. He stood still and laughed softly:

'The wasp has stung me! She aims straight at the head . . . What's this? Blood!' He took out his handkerchief to wipe away the blood which flowed in a thin trickle down his right temple. The bullet seemed barely to have grazed the skin. Dunya lowered the revolver and stared at Svidrigaylov not so much in terror as in a sort of wild perplexity. It was as though she did not understand what she had done or what was happening.

'Well, you missed! Fire again, I will wait,' said Svidrigaylov softly, still laughing, if rather sourly. 'If you behave like this, I shall have time to seize you before you have got the revolver cocked!'

Dunechka shuddered, hastily cocked the gun, and again levelled it.

'Leave me alone!' she said desperately. 'I swear I will shoot again . . . I . . . will kill you! . . .'

'Well . . . at three paces it is impossible not to kill. But if you don't kill me . . . then . . .'

His eyes gleamed, and he took two more paces forward.

Dunechka pulled the trigger, and the gun misfired.

'You didn't load properly. It doesn't matter! You have another cap there. Put it right. I'll wait.'

He stood in front of her, two steps away, waiting and gazing at her with wild determination in his sombre eyes, inflamed with passion. Dunya realized that he would rather die than let her go. And . . . she would certainly kill him now, at two paces! . . .

Suddenly she flung down the revolver.

'She has given up!' said Svidrigaylov in amazement, and drew a deep breath. Some burden seemed to have lifted suddenly from his heart, and it was perhaps not only the fear of death, which, indeed, it is doubtful if he had felt in that moment. The relief he felt was from another emotion, gloomier and more melancholy, which he could not have defined in all its force.

He went up to Dunya and gently laid his arm round her waist. She did not resist, but her whole body shook like a leaf and she looked at him with imploring eyes. He tried to say something but, although his lips moved, he could not speak.

'Let me go!' implored Dunya. Svidrigaylov started, struck by the sudden difference in her tone.

'So you do not love me?' he asked softly.

Dunya shook her head.

'And . . . you cannot? . . . Not ever?' he whispered in despair.

'Never!' whispered Dunya.

In Svidrigaylov's soul there was an instant of terrible, silent struggle. He gazed at Dunya with an indescribable expression. Suddenly he took away his arm, turned round, and walked quickly away to the window, where he stood for a moment in silence. 'Here is the key!' (He had taken it from the left-hand pocket of his overcoat and laid it behind him on the table, without looking or turning round.) 'Take it; leave quickly! . . .'

He still gazed fixedly out of the window.



Dunya approached the table to take the key.

'Quickly! Quickly!' repeated Svidrigaylov, still without moving or turning round. But the sound of his voice had something terrible in it.

Dunya understood, seized the key, hurried to the door, unlocked it hastily, and rushed from the room. A minute later she was running like a mad woman along the canal towards Voznesensky Bridge.

Svidrigaylov stayed some three minutes longer by the window, at last he turned round, looked about him, and slowly passed his hand over his forehead. There was a strange smile on his face, the weak, pitiful, mournful smile of despair. The blood, which was already almost dry, smeared his palm; he looked at it bitterly, then wetted a towel and washed his temple. The revolver Dunya had flung away from her caught his eye as it lay near the door. He picked it up and looked at it. It was a small old-fashioned weapon which fired three shots; there were still two charges and one percussion cap in it. It could be fired once more. He stood and thought for a moment, then thrust it into his pocket, took his hat, and went out.

## CHAPTER VI

ALL that evening until ten o'clock he spent in wandering between various taverns and brothels. He picked up Katya again somewhere, and she sang another of her servants'-hall songs, about a certain 'villain and tyrant' who 'kissed Katya'.

Svidrigaylov bought drinks for Katya, the organ-grinder, some smokers and servants, and two little clerks. He had drawn these clerks into the company because they both had crooked noses, one twisted to the right and the other to the left. Svidrigaylov was much struck with this circumstance. Finally, they persuaded him to go to a pleasure-garden, where he paid for all of them to go in. This garden contained one frail three-year-old fir tree and three bushes. A 'Vauxhall', really a bar which served tea as well, had been built in it, and besides there were a few green tables and chairs. The public was entertained by a chorus of very poor singers and some drunken German from Munich as a red-nosed, but extremely melancholy, clown. The clerks got into an argument with some other clerks and almost came to blows. They asked Svidrigaylov to settle the dispute. He listened to them for about a quarter of

an hour, but they shouted so loud that there was not the slightest hope of discovering what it was all about. What seemed to be the most firmly established was that one of them had stolen something and even managed to sell it then and there to a Jew who happened along, but then he had refused to share the proceeds with his companion. It turned out that the object he had sold was a teaspoon belonging to the 'Vauxhall'. The loss was discovered and the affair began to take on a troublesome aspect. Svidrigaylov paid for the spoon, got up and left the garden. It was about ten o'clock. During all this time he had drunk nothing at all, and in the 'Vauxhall' had ordered for himself only tea, and that merely for the sake of appearances. The evening had been sultry and overcast. Towards ten o'clock heavy clouds began to pile up overhead, there was a clap of thunder, and rain swept down in a deluge. It fell not in drops but in streams that beat upon the ground like a waterfall. The lightning flashed incessantly, and the flashes lasted while one might count five. Wet through to the skin, Svidrigaylov went home, locked his door, opened his bureau, took out all his money, and tore up some papers. Then, thrusting the money into his pocket, he was about to change his clothes, but when he looked out of the window and heard the thunder and the rain he shrugged his shoulders, took his hat and went out, leaving the door unlocked. He went straight to Sonya. She was at home.

She was not alone; Kapernaumov's four little children were with her. Sofya Semenovna was giving them tea. She greeted Svidrigaylov silently and politely, looked in surprise at his wet clothes, but said nothing. The children fled in unaccountable terror.

Svidrigaylov sat down at the table and asked Sonya to sit beside him. She timidly prepared to listen to him.

'Sofya Semenovna,' he said, 'I may, perhaps, be going to America, and as this is probably the last time we shall see each other, I have come to complete some arrangements. Well, did you see the lady today? I know what she told you, you need not repeat it.' Sonya, blushing, had made some slight movement.) 'People like that always follow the same old lines. As far as your little brother and sisters are concerned, they are definitely provided for and I have paid over the money destined for each of them into trustworthy hands and taken receipts for it. You had better keep the receipts, in case they are needed.

Here you are. Well, now that is done. Here are three five-per-cent bonds, worth three thousand roubles altogether. Take these for yourself, for yourself personally, and let this be between ourselves. Nobody is to know of it, whatever you may hear. You will need them, because, Sofya Semenovna, to live as you have been doing is wrong and now you will have no further need to do so.'

'You have been so very good to me, and those orphaned children, and their poor mother,' said Sonya hurriedly, 'that if I have given you so little thanks up to now, . . . I don't want you to think . . .'

'Stop. Say no more.'

'But this money, Arkady Ivanovich, I am very grateful to you, but I really don't need it now. I have only myself to keep. Please don't think I am ungrateful, but if you want to do good with this money, then . . .'

'It is for you, for you, Sofya Semenovna, and, please, without any discussion, because I really have no time. And you will need it. Rodion Romanovich has two ways open to him—a bullet through the brain, or Siberia.' Sonya looked at him wildly and began to tremble; 'Don't be disturbed, I know everything, and from his own lips, but I am not a talker. I shall not tell anybody. You did right to tell him that he should go and confess everything of his own accord. It would be much better for him. Well, if it is to be Siberia—he will go, and I suppose you will follow him. That is so, isn't it? Isn't it? Well, if so, that means you will need the money. You will need it for him, do you understand? If I give it to you it is all the same as if I gave it to him. Besides, you promised to pay Anna Ivanovna, as well; I heard you. Why is it, Sofya Semenovna, that you take all these debts and obligations on yourself so recklessly? It was Katerina Ivanovna who was in debt to the German woman, not you, so you should let the German go hang. That's not the way to live in this world. Well, if ever anybody asks you—tomorrow, say, or the day after—about me or anything to do with me—and you will be asked, don't mention my having been to see you now, and don't show anybody the money or tell them anything about my having given it to you. Well, now good-bye.' He stood up. 'My kind regards to Rodion Romanovich. By the way: until the time comes keep the money with Mr. Razumikhin. Do you know him? Oh, of course you do. He is all right. Take it to him



tomorrow or . . . when the time comes. Until then hide it carefully.'

Sonya had also jumped up and was gazing fearfully at him. She was longing to say something, to ask questions, but at first she did not dare, and indeed did not know how to begin.

'How can you . . . how can you go now, in such rain?'

'What, mean to go to America and be afraid of the rain! He, he! Good-bye, Sofya Semenovna, my dear. May you live long to be a blessing to others. By the way . . . tell Mr. Razumikhin that I sent him my greetings. Say it in those words. Arkady, you must say, Ivanovich Svidrigaylov sends you his greetings. Don't fail.'

He went, leaving Sonya bewildered and frightened, and filled with vague and distressing forebodings.

It appeared later that at some time after eleven o'clock that same evening he made another extremely odd and unexpected visit. It was still raining. He was wet through when, at twenty minutes to twelve, he entered the crowded little flat of his fiancée's parents, at the corner of the Maly Prospect and the Third Line, on Vasilyevsky Island. He had some difficulty in gaining admittance, and at first his presence caused consternation, but, when he wished, Arkady Ivanovich had extremely charming manners and he immediately succeeded in dispelling the first (and very intelligent) suspicion of his bride's prudent and sensible parents, that he had got so drunk somewhere or other that he did not know what he was doing. The sensible and soft-hearted mother wheeled out her invalid husband in his arm-chair to Arkady Ivanovich and then, in her usual way, proceeded to discuss subjects remote from all that concerned her. (She was a woman who never attacked questions directly, but, if it were absolutely necessary for her to get accurate information about something, such as what day Arkady Ivanovich would be pleased to appoint for the wedding, she always first brought into play various little smiles and rubbings of her hands, and then began to ask curious and even eager questions about Paris and the life of the court there, in due course bringing the subject round by slow degrees to the Third Line on Vasilyevsky Island.) At any other time, of course, all this was received with respect, but on this occasion Arkady Ivanovich proved somehow peculiarly impatient, and brusquely expressed a wish to see his fiancée, although he had been informed at the very beginning that she had already gone to

bed. Naturally, she made her appearance. Arkady Ivanovich at once told her that he was obliged to leave St. Petersburg for a time on very important business, and had therefore brought her various notes to the value of fifteen thousand roubles in silver, which he asked her to accept from him as a gift, since he had long meant to make her this trifling present before their marriage. The particular logical connexion of the gift with his imminent departure, and with the absolute necessity of arriving in pouring rain at midnight, was not, of course, made at all clear by these explanations, but things went off very well, nevertheless. Even the inevitable ohs and ahs, questions and wondering exclamations were unusually restrained and subdued; on the other hand, there were ardent expressions of gratitude, reinforced by tears from the very sensible mother. Arkady Ivanovich rose, laughing, kissed his fiancée, tapped her cheek, reaffirmed his intention of returning soon, and, seeing in her eyes, as well as childish curiosity, a silent, serious question, thought for a moment and kissed her again. At the same time he experienced a moment of real vexation that his present would immediately be locked away in the care of the most sensible of mothers. He went out, leaving them all in a state of extraordinary excitement. But the tender mama, in a rapid undertone, at once began to resolve some of their more pressing doubts, declaring that Arkady Ivanovich was a great man, a man of affairs, with great connexions, a rich man. God only knew what he might have in his mind; he might take it into his head to go away, or to give away money, and consequently there was no reason to be surprised. Of course, it was strange that he was wet through, but Englishmen, for example, were even more eccentric than that, and besides, none of these worldly and fashionable people cared what might be said of them, and they did not stand on ceremony. Perhaps he even came like that on purpose, to show that he was not afraid of anybody. But the most important thing was not to say a word about this to anybody, because nobody knew what might be the consequences, and the money must be put under lock and key at once, and, of course, the best thing about all this was that Fedosya was still in the kitchen, and, above all, above all, nothing must be confided to that sly vixen Resslich, and so on, and so on. They sat and whispered until almost two o'clock. The young lady, however, had gone to bed much earlier, full of wonder and rather melancholy.

Meanwhile, just at midnight, Svidrigaylov crossed the Tuckov Bridge towards Petersburgsky Island. The rain had ceased, but a blustering wind had risen. He was beginning to shiver. For a minute he gazed with peculiar interest, and even with a questioning look, at the black water of the Little Neva, but he soon found it very cold standing near the water, and he turned and walked along the Bolshov Prospect. He walked steadily down the endless avenue for almost half an hour, stumbling sometimes in the darkness on the wooden pavement, but always intently scanning the right-hand side of the avenue in search of something. Somewhere there, nearly at the end of the Prospect, he had recently noticed as he went past a fairly large hotel, built of wood; its name, as far as he could remember, was something like 'The Adrianople.' He was not mistaken; in that remote spot the hotel was so conspicuous that it was impossible to miss it, even in the dark. It was a long wooden building, black with age, and in spite of the lateness of the hour there were still lights and signs of life about it. He went in and asked the ragged waiter who met him in the corridor for a room. The waiter looked him over, pulled himself together, and led him to a cramped and stuffy room, somewhere at the farthest end of the corridor, in a corner under the stairs. But there was no other; all the rest were occupied. The ragged waiter looked inquiringly at Svidrigaylov.

'Is there any tea?' asked Svidrigaylov.

'There might be, sir.'

'Is there anything else?'

'Veal, vodka, hors d'œuvre.'

'Bring me tea and some veal.'

'Don't you want anything else?' asked the waiter, apparently somewhat puzzled.

'No, nothing.'

The ragged waiter retreated, quite disillusioned.

'A marvellous place this is!' thought Svidrigaylov. 'Why didn't I know that? I, too, probably look as if I were coming back from some *café-chantant*, and had had some adventures on the way. I wonder, though, who stays here.'

He lit a candle and looked more closely at the room. It was a tiny hutch of a place, hardly big enough to hold him, with one window; a filthy bed, a stained deal table, and a chair occupied almost all the floor-space. The walls looked as though they had been roughly knocked together from boards, and the



wall paper was dirty and faded, and so dusty and torn that, although its original colour (yellow) could still be guessed at, it was quite impossible to make out its pattern. At one place, where the stairs went up, the wall and ceiling sloped obliquely like those of an attic. Svidrigaylov put down his candle, sat on the bed, and fell into thought. But after some time his attention was distracted by a strange incessant whispering, which sometimes rose almost to a shriek, coming from the adjoining hutch. This sound had never ceased since he went in. He listened, somebody was almost tearfully scolding and upbraiding somebody else, but he could hear only one voice. Svidrigaylov got up and shaded the candle with his hand; light at once shone through a crack in the wall. He went up and looked through it. In the room, which was slightly larger than his own, were two guests. One, in his shirt-sleeves, a man with extraordinarily curly hair and an inflamed red face, stood in the pose of a public speaker, with his legs wide apart to preserve his balance, and pathetically, beating his breast, reproached the other for his beggary and lack of social standing, and reminded him that he had plucked him out of the gutter and could drive him back there when he would, and that only the finger of God sees everything. The object of the tirade sat on the chair with the expression of a man with an irresistible desire to sneeze which he cannot gratify. He glanced occasionally at the orator with a dull and sheepish eye, but he plainly had no idea what the trouble was and it was even doubtful whether he heard anything that was said. On the table, where the candle had nearly burned down, stood an almost empty decanter of vodka, glasses, bread, cucumbers, tumblers, and a long-emptied tea service. Svidrigaylov studied this picture carefully, and then indifferently moved away from the crack and sat down again on the bed.

The seedy waiter, returning with the tea and veal, could not refrain from asking again whether he did not want something more; receiving a negative answer once more, he finally took himself off. Svidrigaylov poached on the tea, to warm himself, and drank a glassful, but his appetite was quite gone and he could not eat anything. He was evidently beginning to be feverish. He took off his overcoat and jacket, rolled himself in a blanket and lay down on the bed. He felt annoyed. 'I ought to have been well for this occasion,' he thought, and laughed shortly. The room felt stuffy, the candle burnt dimly, the

wind howled outside, a mouse scratched somewhere in a corner, and the whole room smelt of mice and some kind of leather. He lay in a half-dream, with the ideas chasing each other through his mind. He would have liked to find some object on which his thoughts could fix themselves. 'There must be a garden of some sort outside the window', he thought; 'I can hear the trees rustling. How I dislike the sound of trees at night in storm and darkness! A nasty sensation!' And he remembered how repulsive he had found it just now, when he was passing the Petrovsky Park. This reminded him of the Tuchkov Bridge and the Little Neva and he seemed to feel cold again, as he had then, standing above the water. 'I have never liked water, even in landscapes,' he thought again, and once more laughed shortly at a certain strange idea: 'You would think I ought to be quite indifferent to all these questions of aesthetics and comfort now, and here I have grown as particular as a wild animal fastidiously choosing a place . . . in similar circumstances. I ought just to have turned into Petrovsky Park. I suppose I thought it was too dark, or too cold. He, he! Are pleasant sensations so nearly essential to me? . . . By the way, why not put out the candle?' (He blew it out.) 'My neighbours have gone to bed,' he thought, no longer seeing the light through the crack. 'Now, Maria Petrovna, now you would do very well to pay me a visit, it is dark, the place is apt, and the choice of time would be original. But of course, it is just now that you will not come . . .'

For some reason he suddenly remembered how, an hour before he carried his design against Dunechka into effect, he recommended Raskolnikov to entrust her to Razumikhin's care. 'The fact is that I said that mostly to torment myself, as Raskolnikov guessed. What a rascal that Raskolnikov is, though! He has brought a lot on himself. He may become a great rogue in time, when the nonsense has left him, but now he wants to live *too much*! In that particular people like him are wretches. Well, the devil take him; let him do as he likes, it's nothing to me.'

He could not sleep. Little by little the image of Dunechka as he had last seen her began to glimmer before him, and a sudden tremor shook him. 'No, now I must throw this off,' he thought, rousing himself; 'I must think of something else. It is strange and laughable: I never greatly hated anybody, I never even felt particularly revengeful, and that is a bad sign,

a bad sign! I didn't like quarrelling either, and never got heated — another bad sign! And how much I promised her! Oh, the devil! But she might indeed have re-moulded me somehow . . . ' He fell silent, and clenched his teeth; again Dunya's image rose before him, exactly as she had been when, after firing once, she became terribly frightened and lowered the revolver, gazing at him, half-stunned, so that he might have seized her twice over and she would not have raised a hand to defend herself, if he had not reminded her himself. He remembered how at that moment his heart had contracted with pity for her . . . 'Oh, to the devil with it! These thoughts again! I must throw them all off, throw them off! . . . '

He was slipping into forgetfulness; his feverish trembling had ceased, suddenly he seemed to feel something running over his arm and leg under the blanket. He jumped. 'Damn it, I'm hanged if it isn't a mouse!' he thought. 'It's the veal I left on the table . . . ' He felt extremely reluctant to unroll himself from the blanket and get up in the shivering cold, but again something unpleasant touched his leg; he tore off the blanket and lit the candle. Shaking with feverish chill he stooped down to look at the bed — there was nothing there, he shook out the blanket and a mouse darted out on the sheet. He tried to catch it, but the mouse, without jumping down from the bed, ran to and fro in zigzags, slipped from between his fingers, ran over his hand, and disappeared under the pillow, he flung the pillow aside, but instantly felt something jump under his shirt and run over his body and down his back. He shuddered with nerves and woke up. The room was dark, he was lying on the bed, still wrapped in the blanket, and the wind howled outside the window. 'How horrible!' he thought with disgust.

He got up and sat on the edge of the bed with his back to the window. 'I should do better not to sleep at all,' he decided. But it blew cold and damp from the window; without getting up, he pulled the blanket towards him and wrapped himself in it. He did not light the candle. He did not think of anything, and did not wish to think, but dreams and fragmentary ideas without beginning or end, or any coherence, rose before him one after another. He fell into a kind of half doze. The cold or the darkness, the dampness or the wind whistling outside the window and shaking the trees, one of these perhaps aroused in him a stubborn fanciful mood and longing — at any rate, his mind began to dwell persistently on flowers. He



imagined a charming landscape; a bright, warm, almost hot day, a holiday—Whit Sunday. A rich luxurious country cottage in the English style, overgrown with sweet-scented flowering plants and with flower-borders all round it; a porch twined with climbing plants and surrounded by beds of roses; a light, cool staircase, richly carpeted and banked with rare flowers in Chinese vases. He particularly noticed great bunches of delicate white narcissi in jars in the windows, with their heavy aromatic fragrance, hanging their heads on their long thick stalks of clear green. He was reluctant to leave them, but he went on up the stairs and into a large, high-ceilinged drawing-room, and again, everywhere, in the windows, round the doors standing wide open to the balcony, on the balcony itself, everywhere there were flowers. The floor was strewn with fragrant freshly cut hay, the windows were open, a cool, fresh, gentle breeze blew into the room, birds were chirping under the windows, and in the middle of the room, on tables shrouded in white satin, stood a coffin. It was lined with heavy white silk, bordered with thick white frilling, and surrounded on all sides by wreaths of flowers. Among the flowers lay a young girl in a white tulle dress, and the hands closely folded over her breast were like marble. But her loosened hair, her bright fair hair, was wet; there was a garland of roses on her head. Her stern, set profile looked as though it too were carved in marble, but the smile on her pale lips was full of infinite, unchildlike grief and immense bitterness. Svidrigaylov knew her. There were no lighted candles, no holy icons, beside the coffin, and no prayers were heard; she was a suicide, drowned. She was no more than fourteen, but that heart had been broken, and had destroyed itself, savagely wounded by the outrage that had amazed and horrified her young childish conscience, overwhelmed her soul, pure as an angel's, with unmerited shame, and torn from her a last cry of despair, unregarded, but defiantly shrieked into the dark night, into the blackness, the cold, the torrents of spring, while the wind howled . . .

Svidrigaylov roused himself, got up from the bed, and reached the window in one stride. The wind whipped furiously into his crowded little room and clung coldly, like hoar-frost, round his face and his breast, covered only by his shirt. Under the window there must indeed be a garden of sorts, a pleasure-garden, it seemed; probably there was music and singing there in the daytime, and tea was carried out to be drunk at

little tables. Now rain spattered in at the window from the trees and bushes, and it was as dark as a cellar, so that it was barely possible to distinguish objects as faintly darker patches in the blackness. Svidrigaylov, stooping down and leaning with his elbows on the sill, stared into the obscurity for a full five minutes. Through the gloom of the night sounded a cannon shot, then another.

'Ah, the signal! The water is rising,' he thought; 'towards morning, in the lower parts of the town, it will swirl through the streets and flood the basements and cellars, the sewer-rats will come up to the surface, and amid the rain and the wind people will begin, dripping wet and cursing, to drag their rubbish to the upper floors . . . What time is it now?' No sooner had the thought crossed his mind, than a clock somewhere near, ticking away in a great hurry, struck three. 'Aha, in an hour it will be night! Why wait for that? I will go at once, I will go straight across to Petrovsky Island and pick out somewhere a tall bush, dripping with rain, so that the slightest touch will bring a million rivulets splashing down all over my head . . .' He fastened the window, lit the candle, pulled on his waistcoat and overcoat, put his hat on his head and went out with his candle into the corridor to look for the tattered water (sleeping in some corner among candle-ends and all sorts of trash), pay for his room, and leave the hotel. 'This is the very best time, I could not choose a better!'

It took a long time to walk the whole length of the narrow corridor; he found nobody, and was just about to shoot when in a shadowy corner, between an old cupboard and a door, something caught his eye, something that seemed to be alive. He stooped down with the candle and saw a child—a little girl, no more than five years old, shivering and crying, her clothes dripping like a wet dish-cloth. She did not seem afraid of Svidrigaylov but looked at him with dull wonder in her big black eyes. Now and then she caught her breath sobbingly, as children do when they have stopped crying after a long time and are beginning to be comforted, but still from time to time break into sobs again. The child's little face looked pale and exhausted, and she was stiff with cold. 'How did she come here? She must have hidden herself and stayed here all night.' He began to question her. The little girl became lively all at once and began to babble in her childish way. 'There was something about 'mummy', 'mummy will be crosso', about a cup that was

'bwoke'. The little girl chattered without ceasing, and it was possible to make out from what she said that she was the neglected child of some drunken cook, probably in that hotel, and that her mother bullied and thrashed her; that she had broken 'mummy's' cup the evening before and been so frightened that she had run away, and after cowering outside in the rain for a long time had crept in here and hidden behind the cupboard. She had crouched all night in the corner, crying and shivering from the damp, the darkness, and the fear that she would be severely thrashed. He carried her into his room, set her on the bed, and began to undress her. The torn shoes on her bare feet were as wet as though they had lain in a puddle all night. When he had undressed her, he laid her on the bed and swathed her from head to foot in the blanket. She fell asleep at once. When he had finished, he relapsed again into moody thoughts.

'Well! Here I am, getting myself involved!' he thought suddenly, with heavy anger. 'How absurd!' Irritated, he took up his candle, to go and find the waiter at all costs, and leave as quickly as possible. 'Oh, the little girl!' he thought with an oath, as he was opening the door, but he turned back once more to see whether she was asleep, and how she was sleeping. Carefully he lifted the blanket. The little girl was sound and peacefully asleep. She had grown warm under the blanket, and there was colour in her pale cheeks. But it was strange, the colour seemed brighter and stronger than the usual roiness of childhood. 'It is the flush of fever,' thought Svidrigaylov, but it looked almost more like the flush of wine—as though she had been given a whole glassful to drink. Her scarlet lips seemed to burn and glow, but what was this? Suddenly it seemed to him that the long black lashes stirred and fluttered, as though they were about to lift, and from under them looked, with an unchildlike wink, a sly, sharp eye, as though the child were not asleep, but only pretending. Yes, it was true, her lips parted in a smile; the corners of the mouth quivered, as if she were still restraining herself. But now she had ceased to control herself at all, and it was a laugh, a downright laugh; an impudent invitation gleamed from that unchildlike face; it was corruption, it was the face of a courtesan, the brazen face of a mercenary French harlot. Now, without further concealment, both eyes were open, enveloping him with their shameless, burning glance, inviting him, laughing . . . There was something monstrous and infinitely offensive in that laugh, in



those eyes, in all that nastiness in the face of a child. 'What! A five-year-old!' whispered Svidrigaylov in real horror. 'This . . . what is this?' But now she turned to him, all her little face glowing, and stretched out her arms . . . 'Accursed creature!' cried Svidrigaylov in horror, raising his arm to strike her . . . But at that moment he awoke.

He was still on the bed, rolled as before in the blanket, the candle had not been lighted, and daylight was already whitening the windows.

'Nightmares all night long!' He raised himself, feeling jaded and angry; his bones ached. There was a thick mist outside, and nothing could be seen through it. It was nearly five o'clock; he had overslept! He got up and put on his still damp jacket and overcoat. He felt in his pocket for the revolver, took it out and correctly replaced the percussion cap; then he sat down, took out a notebook and wrote a few lines in large letters on the front page, where they must be seen, read them over and sat pondering with his elbows on the table. The revolver and the notebook lay by his elbow. Newly awakened flies clustered on the untouched veal, which also stood on the table. He watched them for some time and at last began trying to catch one of them with his free right hand. He tried for a long time, until he was tired with his efforts, but quite unsuccessfully. Finally, catching himself in this interesting occupation, he roused himself with a start, got up, and resolutely walked out of the room. A minute later he was in the street.

A thick malky mist covered the city. Svidrigaylov walked along slippery, greasy, wooden pavements towards the Little Neva. His mind still held the illusory vision of its waters rising in flood during the night, and pictured Petrovsky Island, the wet paths, the soaking grass, the dripping trees and bushes and at last that one bush . . . In an effort to think of something else, he looked disapprovingly at the houses. The avenue was empty of cabs and passers-by. The little bright-yellow wooden houses, with their closed shutters, looked dirty and dejected. The cold and damp were penetrating his whole body and making him shiver. Occasionally he came across signs outside little shops and market-gardens, and he conscientiously read each one. The wooden pavement had come to an end, and he was passing a large stone building. A dirty, shivering cur, with its tail between its legs, crossed his path. A man in a greatcoat lay, dead-drunk, face down on the pavement, he passed him and

went on. A tall watch-tower caught his eye on the left. 'Bah!' he thought. 'This is a good enough place; why go to Petrovsky? At least there will be an official witness . . .' He almost smiled at this new idea and turned into Syezhinskaya Street. Here stood the large building with the watch-tower. Near the big closed gates a little man, wrapped in a soldier's grey greatcoat and wearing a copper helmet that made him look like Achilles, was leaning his shoulder against the wall. He looked with sleepy indifference at Svidrigaylov as he approached. His face had the eternal expression of resentful affliction which is so sharply etched on every Jewish face, without exception. For a short time the two, Svidrigaylov and Achilles, stood contemplating one another in silence. At length Achilles decided that it was out of order for a man who was not drunk to be standing two yards away and staring at him without a word.

'Vell, vot do you vant here already?' he asked, without moving or changing his position.

'Nothing, brother. Good morning to you' answered Svidrigaylov.

'So go somevere else.'

'I am going to foreign parts, brother.'

'Foreign parts?'

'To America.'

'America?'

Svidrigaylov took out the revolver and cocked it. Achilles raised his eyebrows.

'Vot now, this is not the place for jokes!'

'Why shouldn't it be the place?'

'Because it isn't.'

'Well, brother, it doesn't matter. It's a good place . . . If you are asked, say I said I was off to America.'

He lifted the revolver to his right temple.

'But you can't do that here! This is not the proper place!' Achilles, whose eyes had been growing rounder and rounder, started forward.

Svidrigaylov pulled the trigger . . .

## CHAPTER VII

THAT same day, but towards seven o'clock in the evening, Raskolnikov was making his way towards his mother's and sister's flat in Bakaleev's house, where Razumikhin had

installed them. The entrance to the staircase was on the street. As Raskolnikov approached, he seemed to hang back as though he were in two minds whether to go in or not. But he had made up his mind; nothing would have made him turn back. 'Besides, it makes no difference. They don't know anything yet,' he thought, 'and they have got used to finding me unaccountable . . .' His clothes were dreadful, dirty, threadbare, torn and wrinkled after a whole night in the rain. His face was almost distorted with exhaustion, the result of physical fatigue, foul weather, and an inward strife prolonged for almost twenty-four hours. All night he had been alone, God knows where. But at least he had made up his mind.

He knocked at the door; his mother opened it. Dunechka was not there. The maid also happened to be out for the moment. At first Pulkheria Alexandrovna was dumb with joyful amazement; then she seized his hand and drew him into the room.

'Well, here you are!' she began, stammering with joy. 'Don't be angry, Rodya, because my welcome was so foolish and tearful; I am laughing really, not crying. Do you think I am crying? No, I am happy, but it is a foolish way I have; the tears come. It has been like this since your father's death; I cry for everything. Sit down, my darling, you must be tired; I can see you are. Oh dear, you have got yourself into a sadly dirty state.'

'I was out in the rain yesterday, mama . . .' Raskolnikov was beginning.

'Oh no, no!' burst out Pulkheria Ivanovna, interrupting him. 'You thought I was beginning to ask you questions straight away, like a foolish old woman, as I used to; don't be alarmed. Really I understand, I understand everything; now I have learnt how things are done here and really it is more sensible, I can see that for myself. I have come to the conclusion, once for all, that I mustn't expect to understand the considerations that decide your actions, or demand an account of them from you. You may have God knows what plans and business in your mind, or all sorts of ideas may have sprung up in you; am I to be always jogging your elbow to ask you what you are thinking about? You see I . . . Oh Lord, why am I dashing about like a scalded cat? . . . Look, Rodya, I have been reading your article in the magazine for the third time; Dmitry Prokofich brought it for me. Well, I sighed when



I saw it. "See how foolish you are," I thought to myself; "this is what he is busy with, this is the answer to the riddle! Clever people are always like that. He has new ideas, perhaps, in his head just now; he is thinking about them, and I worry and disturb him." I am reading it, my dear, and of course there is a lot that I don't understand; but that must be so—how could I?"

'Show me, mama.'

Raskolnikov took the paper and glanced for a moment at his article. Inconsistent as the feeling might be with his mood and circumstances, he experienced the strange and painfully sweet sensations of the author who sees himself in print for the first time; but then, he was only twenty-three. It lasted only for a moment. After reading a few lines, he frowned and a terrible anguish squeezed his heart. All his inward strife of the past months returned to him in an instant. Annoyed and disgusted, he flung his article down on the table.

'But, Rodya, however foolish I may be, all the same I can tell that in a very short time you will be one of the first, if not the very first, among our men of learning. And people dared to think you were mad! Ha, ha, ha! You don't know, but they really did think that. Wretched crawling worms, how can they understand what true intellect is? And you know, Dunechka, Dunechka too almost believed they were right—as if they could be! Your poor father twice sent something to a magazine—first a poem (I have the manuscript still, I will show it to you some time), and then a whole novel (I copied it out for him, at my own request), and how we both prayed that they would be accepted—but they weren't! A few days ago, Rodya, I was terribly grieved to think of your clothes, the way you live, and what you have to eat. But now I see that I was just being foolish again, because you could get anything you wanted tomorrow, with your brains and talents. It is just that for the moment you have more important things to occupy you and don't want . . .'

'Isn't Dunya at home, mama?'

'No, Rodya. I very often don't see her; she leaves me by myself. I am grateful to Dmitry Prokofich; he comes to sit with me, and talks about you all the time. He is very fond of you and he respects you, my dear. I am not saying that your sister is not very considerate. I really am not complaining. She has her own character, and I have mine; she has acquired some secrets of her own, too; well, I have no secrets from either of

you. Of course, I am firmly convinced that Dunya is too wise, and besides, she loves both me and you . . . but I really don't know what it is all leading to. Here you have made me so happy now, Rodya, by coming, and she has gone out somewhere; when she comes, I shall say, "Your brother has been while you weren't here, and where have you been spending your time?" You mustn't spoil me too much, Rodya. if you can, come, if not, it can't be helped; I shall wait. Whatever happens, I shall know you love me, and I can be content with that. I shall read your writings, I shall hear about you from everybody, and from time to time you will come to see me—what could be better? You have come now, haven't you, to comfort your mother? I can see . . .'

Here Pulkheria Alexandrovna suddenly burst into tears.

'There I go again! Don't look at your foolish mother! Oh Lord, why do I go on sitting here?' she cried, jumping up. 'There is some coffee, and I don't even offer you some! You see what an old woman's selfishness means. I'll get it at once!'

'Mama, don't bother. I am going at once. That is not what I came for. Please listen to me.'

Pulkheria Alexandrovna timidly came to him.

'Mama, whatever happens, whatever you hear about me, whatever anybody says about me, will you love me just as you do now?' he asked with a full heart, seeming not to think of his words or weigh them.

'Rodva, Rodya, what is wrong? How can you ask such a thing? Who will say anything to me about you? And I shouldn't believe anybody, no matter who it was; I should simply send them packing.'

'I came to assure you that I have always loved you, and now I am glad that we are alone, glad even that Dunya is not here,' he went on in the same impulsive way. 'I came to tell you plainly that, although you will be unhappy, you must be sure that your son loves you more now than himself, and that all you have been thinking about my being cruel and not loving you is false. I shall never cease to love you . . . Well, that's enough; I thought that I must do this, begin with this . . .'

Pulkheria Alexandrovna silently embraced him, pressing him close to her and weeping softly.

'I don't know what is the matter with you, Rodya,' she said at last. 'I have been thinking all this time that you were simply bored with us, but now I see from all this that there is some

great misfortune in store for you, and that is why you are sad. I foresaw it long ago, Rodva. Forgive me for talking about it. I think about it all the time, and I can't sleep at night. Last night your sister was talking in her sleep all night, and all about you. I made some of it out, but I couldn't understand it. I've been going about all day as if I were under sentence of death, waiting for something and full of foreboding, and now it has come! Rodva, Rodva, where are you going? Are you going away somewhere?

'Yes.'

'I thought so! But you know I can go with you, if you need me. And Dunya; she loves you, she loves you dearly, and perhaps Sofya Semenovna could come with us, if you want her, you see. I am even willing to accept her as a daughter. Dmitri Prikolich will help us to make our plans to go together . . . but . . . where . . . are you going?'

'Good-bye, mama.'

'What? This very day?' she cried out, as though losing him for ever.

'I can't . . . It is time. I must . . .'

'But can't I go with you?'

'No, but kneel down and pray to God for me. Your prayers perhaps will reach him.'

'Let me make the sign of the cross over you, and bless you. Yes, that is right, that is right. Oh God, what are we doing?'

Yes, he was glad, very glad that nobody else was there, and that he was alone with his mother. It was as though after all these dreadful months, his heart was all at once softened. He fell down before her and kissed her feet, and they wept, with their arms about one another. And she was not surprised, this time she did not question him. Indeed, she had understood for a long time that something terrible was happening to her son, and now a dreadful moment had come for him.

'Rodva, my dear, my first-born,' she said, 'sitting now you are just like the little boy you used to be. You would come to me just like this, and put your arms round me and kiss me. When your father was still alive and we were poor, it was a comfort to have you with us, and when I buried your father, how often we used to weep over his grave with our arms round each other, like this. And all I have wept for a long time now, it is because my mother's heart had a presentiment of disaster. As soon as I saw you the first time, in the evening you remember,



when we had only just arrived here, I guessed everything simply from the way you looked at me, and my heart failed me, then today, when I opened the door, and looked at you, "Well," I thought, "the fatal moment has come". Rodya, Rodya, surely you are not going away immediately?"

'No.'

'You will come here again?'

'Yes . . . I will come.'

'Rodya, don't be angry, I can't even venture to ask questions. I know that I mustn't dare, but all the same, just tell me in two little words. are you going a long way?'

'A very long way.'

'What is there there? Some work, a career for you?'

'What God sends . . . only pray for me . . .'

Raskolnikov went to the door, but she caught at him and looked into his eyes with an expression of despair. Her face was disfigured with fear.

'That's enough, mama,' said Raskolnikov, bitterly regretting that he had ever thought of coming.

'It's not for ever? Surely it's not good-bye for ever? You will really come, come tomorrow?'

'Yes, yes, I will come. Good-bye.'

At last he tore himself away.

The evening was fresh, warm, and bright; the weather had begun to clear early in the morning. Raskolnikov went home, he was in a hurry. He wanted to finish all he had to do before sunset. Meanwhile he didn't wish to encounter anybody. As he went up to his flat he noticed that Nastasya left her samovar and attentively followed his progress with her eyes. 'Can there be somebody in my room?' he thought. The idea that it might be Porfiry filled him with repulsion. But when he reached his room and opened the door he saw Dunechka. She was sitting all alone, lost in thought, and seemed to have been waiting for a long time. He stopped on the threshold and she got up, startled, from the sofa and stood before him, her eyes fixed on his face with a look of terror and unfathomable sorrow. From that look he realized at once that she knew everything.

'Shall I come in or go away again?' he asked mistrustfully.

'I have been with Sonya Semenovna all day; we were both waiting for you. We thought you would be sure to go there.'

Raskolnikov went in and wearily sat down.

'I feel rather weak, Dunya, and I am very tired. And yet

I should have liked to be in full control of myself, at any rate just now.'

Warily he raised his eyes to her.

'Where were you all night?'

'I don't remember very well, you see, sister, I wanted to reach a definite decision and I found myself walking near the Neva many times; I do remember that. I should have liked to end things there, but . . . I decided against it . . .' he whispered, again looking mistrustfully at Dunya.

'Thank God! We were so afraid of that very thing, Sonya Semenovna and I. So you still believe in life, thank God, thank God!'

Raskolnikov smiled bitterly.

'I did not believe in it, but just now, as I stood with my mother's arms round me, we both wept; I do not believe, but I have asked her to pray for me. God knows how that comes about, Dunechka; even I don't understand any of it.'

'You have been to see mother? Have you told her?' cried Dunya, horrified. 'Could you really bring yourself to tell her?'

'No, I didn't tell her . . . in so many words; but she understood a great deal. She has heard you talking in your sleep. I am sure she half-knows already. Perhaps I did wrong to go and see her. I don't even remember myself why I went. I am a despicable creature, Dunya.'

'Despicable, when you are prepared to go to meet your suffering? You are going to meet it, aren't you?'

'Yes. Now. And it was to escape the shame that I wanted to drown myself, Dunya, but the thought came to me, when I was already standing on the bank, that if I had hitherto considered myself strong, then the shame should not frighten me now,' he said, hastening on. 'Is that pride, Dunya?'

'Yes, Rodya, it is pride.'

The almost extinct fire flared up again in his lustreless eyes, it was as though he were pleased that he could still be proud.

'And you don't think, sister, that I was simply afraid of the water?' he asked, with an ugly smile, looking into her face.

'Oh, stop, Rodya!' exclaimed Dunya bitterly.

There was a silence that lasted for some two minutes. He sat with his eyes on the floor; Dunechka was standing at the other end of the table and watching him in anguish. Suddenly he got up.

'It is late, I must go. I am going to give myself up immediately.'

Big tears rolled down her cheeks.

'You are crying, sister, but can you give me your hand?'

'Did you doubt it?'

She clasped him fiercely.

'Surely, by advancing to meet your punishment, you are half atoning for your crime?' she cried, pressing him close and kissing him.

'Crime? What crime?' he cried, in a sudden access of rage. 'Killing a foul, noxious louse, that old moneylender, no good to anybody, who sucked the life-blood of the poor, so vile that killing her ought to bring absolution for forty sins—was that a crime? That is not what I am thinking of, and I do not think of atoning for it. And why are you all pressing in on me from all sides with your "crime, crime!"? It is only now that I clearly realize the full absurdity of my fault-heartedness, now when I have made up my mind to face this unnecessary shame! It was simply my own baseness and incompetence that made me reach my decision, and perhaps the thought of benefit to myself, as that . . . Porfiry . . . suggested! . . .'

'Brother, brother, why are you saying this? You really did spill blood!' cried Dunya, in despair.

'Which everybody sheds,' he put in almost frantically, 'which flows and has always flowed on this earth in torrents, which is poured out like champagne, and for which men are crowned in the Capitol and afterwards called benefactors of mankind. Look a little more closely and consider it carefully. I myself wanted to benefit men, and I would have done hundreds, thousands, of good deeds, to make up for that one piece of stupidity—not even stupidity, but simple clumsiness, since the whole idea was not nearly as stupid as it seems now, when it has failed . . . failure makes anything seem stupid! By that stupidity I meant only to put myself in an independent position, to take the first step, to acquire means, and then everything would have been expiated by immeasurably greater good . . . But I, I failed even to accomplish the first step, because I am a miserable wretch! That's what it all amounts to! All the same, I shan't look at it with your eyes: if I had succeeded, I should have been crowned, but now I shall fall into the trap.'

'No, that's wrong, that's quite wrong! Brother, why do you say these things?'



"All, it's the form that's wrong, the form is not aesthetically satisfactory. Well, I couldn't even understand why smashing people with bombs in a regular siege is 'small, more respectable'. regard for aesthetic considerations is the first sign of incapacity to act . . . Never, never have I recognized this more clearly than now, and I understand less than ever why what I did is a crime. Never have I been stronger, never have I been my own enemy more truly than now . . ."

His white, extended face was flushed with colour. But, as he uttered the last exclamation, his eyes unexpectedly met Darva's, and he read so much of startled feeling in them, that he instantly stopped short. He felt that, with every eye, he had made two poor women unhappy, that he was, in any case, responsible for that.

[illegible]

He went to the table, picked up a thick dirty book, turned it, and took out from between two pages a small water-color portrait on ivory. It was a picture of his late mother-in-law, his former fiancée, who had died of fever. This was the strange girl who had wanted to enter a convent. He gazed for a minute at the expressive, delicate little face, kissed the portrait, and gave it to Dima. She

I talked to her a good deal about him, and I never agree, he said to myself. I talked to her heart a good deal, it was afterwards turned out so much better. But I never agree, he went on, turning to Dunya, - he did not agree

with me, any more than you do, and I am glad she is not here now. The main thing is that now everything is going to be different. My whole life will be snapped in two,' he cried out suddenly, returning again to his own torments, 'everything, everything, and am I prepared for that? Do I want it? They say it is a necessary part of my ordeal. But what purpose is served by all these senseless trials? Shall I be better able to recognize that purpose then, when I am crushed with suffering and idioxy, and senselessly impotent after twenty years of prison, than I am now? What shall I have to live for then? Why do I now acquiesce in such a life? Oh, I knew I was a miserable wretch when I stood at dawn today on the bank of the Neva!'

Together they went out at last. It was hard for Dunya, but she loved him. She walked away, but when she had gone fifty yards she turned round again and looked at him. He was still in sight. When he reached the corner he too turned round; their eyes met for the last time, when he saw that she was watching him he impatiently, even irritably, waved her on, and himself turned sharp round the corner.

'I am cruel, I know,' he thought, beginning to be ashamed of his irritated gesture. 'But why should they love me so much, when I am not worthy of it? Oh, if only I were alone and nobody loved me, and if I had never loved anyone! *All this would never have happened!* I wonder if my spirit will really grow so humble in the next fifteen or twenty years that I shall whine and whimper before people, branding myself a criminal with every word I utter. Yes, exactly, exactly! That is just why they are deporting me now, that is what they want . . . Look at all these scurrying about the streets, and every one of them is a scoundrel and a criminal by his very nature, and worse still, an idiot! But try to save me from exile and they would all go mad with righteous indignation! Oh, how I hate them all!'

He began to consider earnestly 'by what process it might come about that he would finally humble himself before all of them instinctively, out of conviction. And yet why not? Of course, it must be so. Would not twenty years of unrelieved oppression crush him in the end? Water wears away a stone. And why, why live after this? Why am I going there now, when I know that it will all happen according to the book, and not otherwise?'

He had already asked himself that question a hundred times since the previous evening, but all the same he went.

## CHAPTER VIII

It was already dusk when he entered Sonya's room. She had been waiting for him all day in terrible agitation. She and Dunya had waited together for much of the time. Dunya, remembering how Svidrigaylov had said the evening before that Sonya 'knew about it', had gone to her in the morning. We shall not repeat all the details of the women's talk and their tears, or of what close friends they became. Dunya carried away at least one comfort from their interview, that her brother would not be alone; he had gone to Sonya first with his confession; when he felt the need of another human being, he had gone to her; and she would follow wherever fate sent him. Dunya did not even need to ask questions, she knew it was so. She regarded Sonya almost with awe and at first embarrassed her by treating her with such reverence. Sonya was almost ready to burst into tears; she thought of herself, on the contrary, as unfit even to look at Dunya. The lovely image of Dunya, when she bowed to her with such gracious politeness at their first meeting at Raskolnikov's, had remained with her ever since as one of the most beautiful and unattainable visions of her life.

Dunya at last grew impatient and left Sonya, in order to wait for her brother in his own room; she had thought all the time that he would go there first. Sonya immediately began torturing herself with the fear that he might really commit suicide. Dunya felt the same fear. But they had each been trying ceaselessly all day to persuade the other by every sort of argument that it could not happen, and they had felt less anxious while they were together. Now that they had parted, however, neither could think of anything else. Sonya remembered how Svidrigaylov had told her the day before that two courses were open to Raskolnikov—Siberia or . . . She knew, besides, his vanity, his arrogance, his self-esteem, his want of faith. Could it be that only a faint heart and the fear of death had kept him alive, she wondered desperately. The sun was setting. She stood by the window, looking out sadly and fixedly, but nothing could be seen from it but one blank unwhitewashed wall of the next house. At last, when she was completely convinced that the unhappy Raskolnikov was dead, he came into the room.



A joyful cry escaped her. But when she looked attentively at his face she grew pale.

'Yes,' he said, smiling. 'I have come for your crosses, Sonya. It was you who sent me to the cross-roads, why, now that it has come to the point, do you shrink back?'

Sonya looked at him in amazement. His tone seemed to her strange, and a cold shudder ran through her, but after a minute she realized that the tone and the words were both artificial. While he spoke to her his eyes were turned away, as if he wanted to avoid looking directly at her.

'You see, Sonya, I have decided that perhaps it will be better this way. There is one circumstance . . . Well, it would take too long to tell, and there is no need. Do you know what annoys me, though? It makes me angry that all those stupid, bestial faces will soon be crowding round me, gaping and goggling at me, asking stupid questions I shall be forced to answer, pointing their fingers at me . . . Pah! You know, I am not going to Portiry, I am sick of him. I would rather go to my friend the Squab. How I shall surprise him, what a sensation I shall produce! But I ought to be cooler; I have been getting too full of ale lately. Would you believe that I all but shook my fist at my sister just now, simply because she turned round to look at me for the last time? What a filthy state of mind to be in! Ah, that is what I have come to! Well, where are the crosses?'

He seemed not to be himself. He was unable to stay in any one place for more than a moment or concentrate his attention on any one object, his thoughts cut across one another; he talked incoherently; his hands trembled slightly.

Suddenly Sonya took the two crosses, of cypress-wood and copper, from the drawer, made the sign of the cross over herself and over him, and hung the little cypress-wood cross on his breast.

'This, then, is a symbol that I am taking up my cross. He, he! As if my earlier sufferings had been mere trifles! The wooden one, that's the peasant one; the copper one, Lizaveta's, you take for yourself. Show me; was she wearing it . . . then? I know of two things like these, a silver cross and a little ikon; I threw them back on the old woman's breast. They would be truly appropriate now; I ought to put them on . . . But I am talking nonsense and forgetting the real point; I am scatter-brained, somehow! . . . You see, Sonya, I came specially to warn you, so that you should know . . . Well, that's all . . . I really only

came for that. (Hm. I thought all the same that I should have more to say.) Well, you wanted me to go, and here I shall be in prison and your wish will be fulfilled; so why are you crying? You, too? Stop, that's enough! How difficult you are making it for me!

But feeling had been awakened in him; his heart contracted as he looked at her. 'She, why should she be concerned?' he thought to himself. 'What am I to her? Why should she weep, why should she try to look after me, as if she were my mother or Dunya? She's determined to be a nursemaid to me!'

'Make the sign of the cross, and pray, once at least,' Sonya begged in a timid shaking voice.

'Oh, if you wish: just as you like. And with all my heart, Sonya, with all my heart . . .'

But he wanted to say something different.

He made the sign of the cross several times. Sonya seized her shawl and put it over her head. It was a green woollen shawl, probably the one Marmeladov had spoken of, the 'family shawl'. Raskolnikov thought of that for a moment, but he did not ask about it. He had begun to feel very conscious that his mind was wandering wildly and that he was painfully agitated. This alarmed him. It suddenly struck him, too, that Sonya meant to go with him.

'What are you doing? Where are you going! Stay here, stay here! I shall go alone,' he cried in petty annoyance, and went to the door, almost seething with malice. 'What need is there for a regular procession?' he grumbled as he went out.

Sonya was left standing in the middle of the room. He had not even said good-bye to her; he had already forgotten her, a mutinous and poignant doubt had welled up in his breast.

'But am I doing right, is all this the right thing?' he wondered again, as he went down the stairs. 'Is it really impossible to stop now and revise all my intentions again . . . and not go?'

All the same, he went. Suddenly he felt conclusively that he need ask himself no more questions. As he went out into the street, he remembered that he had not said good-bye to Sonya, he had left her standing there in the room, in her green shawl, not daring to stir because of his outburst. He hesitated for a moment. In that moment an idea flashed on him with great clarity, as though it had been lying in wait to strike him at last.

'Why and for what purpose did I go to her now? I told her I had some business with her, but what business was it? I had

absolutely no business at all! To announce that I *was going*? What of that? There's something to call necessary! Do I love her? No, surely I don't? Why, I drove her away just now like a dog. Well, did I, in fact, need to get the crosses from her? Oh, how low I have fallen! No—I wanted her tears, I wanted to see her terror, and watch her heart being torn and tormented! I wanted something, anything, to cling to, some excuse for delay, some human being to look at! I, who had such confidence in myself, such visions of what I would do! I am a beggarly, worthless scoundrel, I am a miserable wretch!"

He was walking along the canal bank, and had not much farther to go. But when he came to the bridge he stopped, turned across it, and walked towards the Haymarket.

He looked eagerly right and left, gazing intently at everything he saw, but unable to concentrate his attention on any: everything slipped away from him. 'In a week, or a month, I suppose I may be taken somewhere in a prison van over this bridge, and look down at this canal—shall I remember this?' came into his mind. 'This sign here, shall I read these same letters then? Look, *Association* is written here, well, I must remember that *a*, the letter *a*, and look at it again in a month's time, at that same *a*; how shall I look at it then? What shall I be feeling or thinking then? . . . Oh God, how petty all this must be, all these present . . . preoccupations of mine! Of course, it must all be very curious . . . in its way . . . (ha, ha, ha! the things I think of! . . . I am becoming childish, posing to myself, why am I disgracing myself? Pah, how people jostle! Look at that fat man—he must be a German—who elbowed me, does he know who it was he was pushing? There is a peasant-woman with a baby, begging, odd that she should consider me more fortunate than herself. I must give her something just for the joke of it! Ha, there's a five-copek piece still left in my pocket; where did it come from? Here you are . . . take it, little mother!"

"God Bless you!" wailed the beggar.

He entered the Haymarket. He found it distasteful, very distasteful, to rub elbows with the crowd, but he went just where the crowd seemed thickest. He would have given the whole world to be alone; but he himself felt that he would not have remained alone for a single minute. There was a drunken man making a disgusting spectacle of himself; he kept trying to dance, but he could not keep his balance. The people were



pressing round him. Raskolnikov pushed through them and stood watching the drunken man for several minutes; then he laughed shortly and abruptly. A moment later he had quite forgotten the man and did not even see him, although he was looking at him. He walked away at last, not even conscious of where he was, but when he came to the centre of the square a sudden sensation came over him, a feeling that mastered him all at once, seized him body and soul.

He had suddenly remembered Sonya's words: 'Go to the cross-roads; bow down before the people, and kiss the ground, because you are guilty before them, and say aloud to all the world, "I am a murderer!"' A shudder shook his whole body at the remembrance. He was so crushed by the weight of all the unescapable misery and anxiety of all this time, and especially of these last hours, that he almost flung himself on the possibility of this new, complete, integral sensation. It had come down on him like a clap of thunder; a single spark was kindled in his spirit and suddenly, like a fire, enveloped his whole being. Everything in him softened on the instant and the tears gushed out. He fell to the ground where he stood . . .

He knelt in the middle of the square, bowed to the ground, and kissed its fith with pleasure and joy. He raised himself and then bowed down a second time.

'Look, here's a chap who's had a crop too much,' remarked a youth near him.

Laughter answered him.

'It's because he's going to Jerusalem, lads, and he's saying good-bye to his family and his country. He's bowing down to the whole world and kissing the famous city of St. Petersburg and the soil it stands on,' added a workman who was slightly drunk.

'He's still quite a young lad!' put in a third.

'Respectable, too!' said someone else soberly.

'Nowadays you can't tell who is respectable and who isn't.'

All these exclamations and observations acted as a check on Raskolnikov and stilled the words 'I am a murderer', which had perhaps been on the tip of his tongue. He endured the remarks calmly, however, and without looking round walked straight down the street leading in the direction of the police office. As he went he caught a glimpse of something that did not, however, surprise him; his feelings had forewarned him that it was bound to happen. While he was

bowing down to the ground for the second time, in the Hay-market, he saw Sonya standing fifty yards away from him on his left. She was trying to hide from him behind one of the wooden booths standing in the square, and it was plain that she had accompanied him all along his distressful way. In that moment Raskolnikov knew in his heart, once and for all, that Sonya would be with him for always, and would follow him to the ends of the earth, wherever destiny might send him. His heart contracted . . . but now he had come to the fatal place . . .

He entered the courtyard briskly enough. He must go up to the third floor. 'I'll go up, anyhow,' he thought. He had a general feeling that it was still a long way to the fatal moment, that he had a great deal of time left and could still reconsider many things.

The spiral staircase was as dirty and littered as ever, the doors of the tenements still stood open, the same kitchens emitted the same reeking fumes. Raskolnikov had not been back since that first time. His legs felt numb and ready to give way but they still carried him. He stopped for a moment to regain his breath and pull himself together, so that he might go in *like a man*. 'But why? What for?' he thought, when he suddenly became conscious of his action. 'If I must drink this cup does it make any difference? The viler the better.' The figure of Ilya Petrovich, the Squib, flashed in that instant before his inward eye. Must he really go to him? Could he not go to some other? To Nikodim Fomich, perhaps? Turn back at once and go straight to the superintendent's flat? At least things would go off in a less official atmosphere . . . 'No, no! To the Squib, the Squib. If I must drink, let it be all at once . . .'

Feeling cold and barely conscious, he opened the office door. This time there were very few people there, only a house-porter and a peasant. The doorman did not even trouble to look out from behind his partition. Raskolnikov went through into the next room. 'Perhaps even yet I need not say anything,' flashed through his mind. In this room one of the clerks, in a frock-coat, not a uniform, was arranging himself at a desk to write something. Another clerk was settling down in a corner. Zametov was not there. Neither, of course, was Nikodim Fomich.

'Is nobody in?' asked Raskolnikov, turning to the personage at the desk.

'Who is it you want to see?'

'Aha! Fee, fi, fo, fum, I smell the blood . . . how does it go? . . . I've forgotten! Your humble servant, sir!' suddenly exclaimed a familiar voice.

Raskolnikov started. The Squib stood before him; he had emerged from the third room. 'It is fate,' thought Raskolnikov. 'Why is he here?'

'Have you come to see us? On what business?' cried Ilya Petrovich. (He was apparently in an excellent temper, and even a trifle exalted with drink.) 'You are too early, if you come on business. I am only here by chance . . . However, anything I can do . . . I confess, Mr. . . . Mr. . . . Excuse me . . .'

'Raskolnikov.'

'Of course, Raskolnikov! You surely couldn't suppose I had forgotten! Please don't think me that sort of person . . . Rodion Ro . . . Ro . . . Rodionovich, isn't it?'

'Rodion Romanovich.'

'Yes, yes, yes! Rodion Romanovich, Rodion Romanovich! I had it on the tip of my tongue. I have even asked about you many times. I confess that I have been sincerely sorry ever since that you and I . . . I was told afterwards that you were a young author and a scholar besides, and, so to speak, the first steps . . . Oh Lord! How many young scholars and men of letters have not been distinguished by some unconventionality to begin with? My wife and I—we both have the highest respect for literature, and my wife is passionately fond of it . . . Literature and art! Let a man be a gentleman and he can acquire everything else by his talents, knowledge, intelligence, and genius. The hat—well, what does a hat signify, after all? Hats are as common as blackberries; I can go and buy one at Zimmermann's, but what is under the hat, what is covered by the hat, that I can't buy . . . I confess I even thought of calling on you to put myself right with you, but I thought perhaps you . . . However, I haven't even asked you—do you really want something? They tell me your family has come here.'

'Yes, my mother and sister.'

'I have already had the honour and pleasure of meeting your sister . . . a person of great charm and culture. I confess I was sorry we got so heated with one another that time. A queer thing! And if, on account of your fainting-fit, I eyed you in a certain way—well, that was brilliantly explained later! Fanaticism and bigotry! I can understand your indignation.



Perhaps you are changing your address because of your family's arrival?'

'N-no, I only . . . I came to ask . . . I thought I should find Zametov here.'

'Oh, yes! Of course you have become friends, I heard of it. Well, Zametov isn't here—you've missed him. Yes, we have lost Alexander Grigoryevich! We've been deprived of his presence since yesterday; he's been transferred . . . and when he left he quarrelled with everybody . . . most discourteously . . . He is a giddy-pated fellow, nothing more—he might even be thought promising; but you can have all our brilliant youngsters! It appears he wants to take some examination or other, but it really it's all for the sake of talking about it here and showing off, that's all the examination amounts to. It's not at all like, for example, you or that Mr. Razumikhin, your friend. You have chosen a learned career and you are not to be turned aside by failures! To you all the beauty of life, one might say, *nihil est*, you are an ascetic, a monk, a hermit! . . . For you a book, a pen behind your ear, learned researches—that's what makes your spirit soar! I myself am a little . . . Have you read Livingstone's Journals?'

'No.'

'I have. But there are such a lot of nihilists now, all over the place, and indeed it is easy to understand why; what times these are, I ask you! You and I, however . . . of course, you aren't a nihilist, are you? Tell me frankly, frankly!'

'N-no.'

'No. You know, you can be open with me, you needn't hesitate, any more than if you were talking to yourself. Duty is one thing, but . . . you thought I was going to say *friendship* is quite another. No, you were wrong! Not friendship, but the sentiments of a citizen and a human being, the feeling of humanity and of love for the Supreme Being. I may be an official and obliged to do my duty, but I am always bound to feel the man and the citizen inside, and to be answerable for him . . . You were speaking of Zametov. Zametov will get involved in some French sort of scandal over a glass of champagne or Russian wine in a disreputable establishment—that's your Zametov for you! And I, perhaps, am consumed, so to speak, by devotion to duty and the loftiest feelings, and besides I have importance, rank, status! I am married and have a family. I am doing my duty as a man and a citizen, and who is

he, I should like to know? I ask you, as a gentleman by education. Then there are an extraordinary number of midwives cropping up all over the place.'

Raskolnikov raised his eyebrows questioningly. Ilya Petrovich had evidently been dining, and his words seemed to come rattling and scattering out for the most part as empty noises. But part of them he did understand, his look was inquiring since he did not know where all this was leading.

'I am talking of those short-haired females,' went on the garrulous Ilya Petrovich. 'It is my own idea to call them midwives and I think the name is very satisfactory. He, he! They push themselves into the Academy and study anatomy well, tell me, if I fall ill am I going to call in a girl to cure me? He, he!'

Ilya Petrovich laughed, delighted with his own wit.

'It is, let us suppose, that his thirst for education is insatiable; but he is educated and that's enough. Why abuse it then? Why insult decent people as that scoundrel Zametov does? Why did he insult me, I ask you? Then again, look what a lot of these suicides there are; you can't imagine. All these people who get through their last few shillings and then kill themselves . . . Why, only this morning we had the case reported to us of a gentleman newly arrived in St. Petersburg. Nikolai Pavlovich, what was his name, that gentleman we have just heard shot himself on Peterburgsky Island?'

'Svidrigaylov,' answered a hoarse voice indifferently from the other room.

Raskolnikov started.

'Svidrigaylov! Svidrigaylov has shot himself,' he cried.

'What? Do you know Svidrigaylov?'

'Yes . . . I know him . . . He has not been here long . . .'

'Yes. He arrived recently. He had lost his wife, he was a man of dissolute conduct, and suddenly he shot himself in a way too shocking to be imagined . . . He left a few words in a notebook to say that he died in his right mind and to ask that nobody should be blamed for his death. This one, they say, had money. How well did you know him?'

'I . . . had met him . . . My sister used to be their governess . . .'

'Ah, ah, ah' . . . So then you can tell us something about him. Did you suspect anything?'

'I saw him yesterday . . . He . . . was drinking . . . I didn't know anything.'

Raskolnikov felt as though a crushing weight had descended on him.

'You look pale again. The atmosphere here is so close . . .'

'Yes, it is time I went,' murmured Raskolnikov. 'Excuse me for troubling you . . .'

'Not at all. Whenever you like! It has been a pleasure, and I am glad to say so . . .'

Ilya Petrovich even held out his hand.

'I only wanted . . . I came to see Zametov . . .'

'I understand, I understand. It has been a pleasure.'

'I . . . am very glad . . . Good-bye . . .'

 smiled Raskolnikov.

He went out; he swayed. His head was reeling and he seemed to have no feeling in his legs. He began to go downstairs, leaning his right hand against the wall. He thought that a porter with a book in his hand pushed past him on his way upstairs to the office, that a dog began to bark furiously somewhere lower down, and that a woman shouted and threw a rolling-pin at it. He reached the foot of the staircase and went out into the courtyard. There, not far from the entrance, stood Sonya, deadly pale; she looked at him wildly, desperately. He stopped before her. Her face expressed pain, weariness, and despair. She threw up her hands. He forced himself to smile, a lost, hideous smile. He stood there for a moment, smiled again, and turned back to the office.

Ilya Petrovich had sat down and was rummaging among some papers. Before him stood the peasant who had jostled against Raskolnikov as he passed him on the stairs.

'A-a-ah! You again! Have you left something? . . . But what is the matter?'

Raskolnikov, white to the lips, walked slowly forward with a fixed stare until he reached the table, leaned his hand upon it, and tried vainly to speak, there emerged only incoherent sounds.

'You are ill. A chair! Here, sit down, sit on that chair. Water!'

Raskolnikov let himself fall on the chair without taking his eyes from Ilya Petrovich's face, which was full of unpleasant surprise. They looked at one another and waited. Somebody brought water.

'It was I . . .' began Raskolnikov.

'Drink some water.'



Raskolnikov waved aside the water and spoke quietly and brokenly, but distinctly.

*'It was I who killed the old woman and her sister, Lizaveta, with an axe, and robbed them.'*

Ilya Petrovich opened his mouth. People ran in from all sides.

Raskolnikov repeated his statement. . .

# EPILOGUE

---

## CHAPTER I

SIBERIA. On the bank of a wide remote river stands a town, one of the administrative centres of Russia, in the town is a fortress, in the fortress is a prison. In the prison Rodion Raskolnikov, second-class convict, had been confined for some months. It was almost eighteen since the day of the murder.

The legal proceedings had passed off without any great difficulty. The criminal had firmly, exactly, and clearly reaffirmed his statement, neither confessing the circumstances nor extenuating them in his own interest, neither misrepresenting the facts nor forgetting the smallest particular. He described the murder in minute detail, explained the mystery of the *pledge*—the piece of wood with its strip of metal—which was found in the dead woman's hand, told how he had taken the keys from the woman and gave a description of the keys, the trunk and its contents, he even enumerated some of the objects which were lying in it. He cleared up the mystery of Lazaveta's murder, and related how Koch arrived and knocked at the door, and how the student came after him, and repeated everything that had passed between them. He told how he afterwards ran downstairs and heard the shouts of Mikielka and Mitka, how he hid in the empty flat and how he then went home. Finally, he directed them to the stone near the gates of the courtyard in Voznesensky Prospect, and the purse and the other things were found under it. In a word, everything was made perfectly clear. The examining magistrates and the judges found it very surprising, among other things, that he had hidden the purse and the other property under the stone without making any use of them, and were most astonished of all that not only did he not remember all the details of the objects he had himself stolen, but he was even uncertain of their number. In particular, the circumstance that he had never once opened the purse and did not know exactly how much it contained seemed incredible.

There were, in fact, three hundred and seventy roubles and sixty copecks in it, (from long lying under the stone some of the biggest notes, at the top, had almost perished.) They spent a

long time trying to discover why the accused should be lying in this one particular, when he so freely and accurately acknowledged his guilt in every other respect. In the end some of them (especially some who were psychologists) even admitted the possibility that he really did not know what was in the purse because he had hidden it under the stone without looking inside it, but from this they concluded that the crime itself could have been committed only in a state of temporary mental derangement, so to speak, as the result of homicidal mania expressed in murder and robbery for their own sakes, without motive or calculation. This conclusion coincided happily with the latest fashionable theory of temporary insanity, which our contemporaries so often try to apply to various criminals. Besides, Raskolnikov's long-standing hypochondria was testified to by many witnesses, including Dr. Zosimov, his former fellow students, his landlady, and the servant. All this powerfully assisted the conclusion that Raskolnikov was not quite like the ordinary murderer and robber, but that something different was involved here. To the extreme annoyance of those who upheld this opinion, the criminal hardly tried to defend himself; to the crucial questions, what had made him commit murder, and what had prompted him to rob, he replied plainly, with the bluntest accuracy, that the motive of the whole thing lay in his wretched position, his poverty and helplessness, his desire to furnish for the first steps of his career the security of the three thousand roubles, at least, that he counted on finding in his victim's possession. His resolve to murder was the consequence of his unstable and cowardly nature, which was moreover exasperated by privation and failure. When he was asked what had induced him to volunteer a confession, he answered that it was sincere remorse. All this was said almost callously . . .

The sentence, however, was more merciful than might have been expected in view of the nature of the crime, perhaps just because the criminal not only did not try to exculpate himself, but even betrayed a desire to magnify his guilt. All the strange and peculiar circumstances were taken into account. The prisoner's illness and poverty up to the time of the crime did not admit of the slightest doubt. The fact that he made no use of the things he stole was accounted for as the effect partly of newly awakened remorse, partly of the criminal's incomplete command of his mental powers at the time. The circumstance of



Lizaveta's unpremeditated murder served to strengthen this last assumption: a man commits two murders and yet forgets that the door is open! Finally, his coming forward with a confession, at the very time when the whole matter had been inextricably entangled by the false self-accusation of a melancholic and fanatic (Nikolay), and when not only was there no clear evidence against the real criminal but there was even practically no suspicion of him (Porfiry Petrovich had fully kept his word)—all this contributed to the mitigation of the defendant's sentence.

Other circumstances, besides, strongly favouring the prisoner, were quite unexpectedly brought to light. Razumikhin unearthed somewhere and put forward testimony that Raskolnikov, while he was at the university, had helped a poor consumptive fellow student with his last resources and almost entirely supported him for six months. When the student died, Raskolnikov looked after the old and ailing father who survived him (and whom the son had maintained by his own efforts almost since his fourteenth year), eventually found a place for him in the hospital, and, when he too died, buried him. All this information had a favourable influence on Raskolnikov's fate. His former landlady, the mother of his dead fiancée, the widow Zaritsyna, gave evidence that while they were living in another house, near Five Corners, Raskolnikov had, during a fire, rescued two little children from a burning room, and had himself been injured in doing so. This evidence was carefully investigated and sufficiently well authenticated by many witnesses. In short, the prisoner was condemned to penal servitude in the second class for a term of no more than eight years, in consideration of his voluntary confession and various extenuating circumstances.

At the very beginning of the legal proceedings Raskolnikov's mother told Ill. Dunya and Razumikhin had found means to remove her from St. Petersburg for the whole time of the trial. Razumikhin had picked out a town on a railway line, not far from St. Petersburg, so that he could closely follow the course of the trial and at the same time see Avdotya Romanovna as often as possible. Pulkheria Alexandrovna's illness was of a rather strange nervous kind, accompanied by at least partial, if not complete, mental derangement. Dunya, returning from her last interview with her brother, found her mother ill, feverish, and delirious. That evening she and Razumikhin

agreed on the answers they would give to her mother's questions about her brother, and even worked out together a complete story of Raskolnikov's having gone away to a distant place on the Russian frontier on a private mission which would bring him in the end both money and fame. But they were surprised to find that neither then nor later did Pulkheria Alexandrovna ask them anything about this. On the contrary, she herself produced a complete account of her son's sudden departure; she told them with tears how he had come to say good-bye to her and gave them to understand by hints that she alone knew many very important and mysterious facts, and that Rodya had many powerful enemies and therefore must hide himself. As for his future career, it seemed it was certain to be brilliant when some hostile circumstances were overcome; she assured Razumikhin that her son would in time be a great political figure, as was proved by his article and his literary brilliance. She was incessantly reading the article, sometimes even aloud; she all but slept with it. Nevertheless, she hardly even asked exactly where Rodya was, in spite of the fact that they avoided talking to her about it, which might have been enough in itself to arouse her mistrust. They began at last to be frightened by Pulkheria Alexandrovna's strange silence on some points. She did not complain, for instance, that there were no letters from him, although earlier, in her little provincial town, she had lived only in the hope and expectation of soon receiving a letter from her beloved Rodya. This circumstance was so inexplicable that it greatly worried Dunya; the idea came to her that perhaps her mother had a foreboding of something terrible in her son's fate, and was afraid to ask lest she should learn of something even more terrible. At all events, Dunya saw clearly that her mother's reason was impaired.

Once or twice, however, it happened that she led the conversation in such a way that it was impossible to answer her without mentioning exactly where Rodion now was, but when the answers were perforce unsatisfactory and suspicious, she fell at once into a sad, gloomy, and silent mood which lasted for a considerable time. Dunya realized at last that it was too difficult to lie and invent, and came to the definite conclusion that it was better to preserve complete silence on certain points, but it became more and more clearly evident that the poor mother suspected something terrible. Dunya recalled among others those words of her brother's, about how their mother had

overheard her talking in her sleep on the night before that last fatal day, after her scene with Svidrigaylov; had she learnt anything then? Often, sometimes after several days or even weeks of dismal brooding silence and speechless tears, the sick woman roused herself almost hysterically and began to talk, hardly pausing for breath, of her son, of her hopes, of the future . . . Her fancies were sometimes very strange. They humoured her, assenting to everything she said (and perhaps she saw clearly that they were only humouring her,, but still she talked . . .

Five months after the criminal had volunteered his confession, his sentence followed. Razumikhin saw him in prison whenever it was possible; so did Sonya. Finally came the separation, Dunya swore to her brother that their parting was not for ever; Razumikhin did the same. Firmly lodged in Razumikhin's young and ardent brain was a plan to lay, during the next two or three years, at any rate the foundations of his future livelihood as well as he could, to accumulate at least a little money, and to emigrate to Siberia, where the soil was rich in every sense, but there were too few inhabitants, too little labour, and too little capital, then he would settle in the town where Rodya was and . . . they would all begin a new life together. They all wept when they said good-bye. During the past few days Raskolnikov had been very thoughtful, he asked about his mother a great deal, and was constantly uneasy about her. His tormented anxiety about her worried Dunya. When he learned the details of his mother's illness he became very depressed. For some reason he was extremely silent with Sonya during all this time. She had long since made all her preparations, with the help of the money Svidrigaylov had left with her, to follow the party of convicts in which he was included. She and Raskolnikov had never made the slightest allusion to this, but both knew that it would be so. At their very last parting, he smiled strangely at his sister's and Razumikhin's passionate assurances of a happy future when he came out of prison, and predicted that his mother's illness would soon end disastrously. At last he and Sonya set off.

Two months later Dunyechka and Razumikhin were married. It was a quiet and sorrowful wedding. Porfiry Petrovich and Zosimov were among those who were invited to it. For some time Razumikhin had looked like a man whose mind is firmly made up. Dunya believed blindly that he would carry out all



his plans; she could not, indeed, do otherwise, for he revealed an iron determination. He began attending university lectures again, among other things, so as to complete his studies. They were always framing plans for the future; both resolutely counted on emigrating to Siberia in five years' time. Until then, they relied on Sonya . . .

Pulkheria Alexandrovna joyfully blessed her daughter's marriage to Razumikhin, but after it she became still more melancholy and troubled. In order to give her a moment of pleasure, Razumikhin told her about the student and his infirm old father, and about how Rodya had suffered from burns in saving the lives of two little children a year ago. These stories brought Pulkheria Alexandrovna's already disordered mind to a pitch of feverish exaltation. She was always talking about them and even beginning conversations in the street (although Dunya always accompanied her). In public vehicles or in shops, wherever she could find a hearer, she led the conversation round to her son, his article, his helping of the student, his being injured in a fire, and so on. Dunechka did not know how to stop her. Besides the danger of this morbidly exalted state of mind, there always threatened the disastrous possibility that somebody might remember Raskolnikov's name from the trial and speak of it. Pulkheria Alexandrovna had learned the address of the mother of the two little children saved from the fire, and was determined to go and see her. Her agitation increased at length beyond all measure. Sometimes she would suddenly begin to cry, and she often fell ill, her mind wandering feverishly. One morning she roundly declared that by her reckoning Rodya ought soon to be with them, and that she remembered his telling her, when he said good-bye, that they must expect him in nine months. She began to put the flat in order and prepare for their reunion, arranging the room she intended for him (her own), cleaning the furniture, washing curtains and hanging up new ones, and so on. Dunya was worried but she said nothing, and even helped her to arrange the room for her brother's arrival. After an anxious day, filled with incessant fancies, happy dreams, and tears, she became ill in the night and by the morning was delirious. She developed a burning fever and two weeks later she died. In her wanderings words escaped her from which it could be concluded that she suspected far more of her son's terrible fate than they had supposed.

It was a long time before Raskolnikov learnt of his mother's

death, although a correspondence with St. Petersburg had been established at the very beginning of his exile in Siberia. It was carried on through Sonya, who wrote punctually every month to Razumiklan and punctually every month received a reply from St. Petersburg. At first Sonya's letters seemed to Dunya and Razumiklan somewhat dry and unsatisfactory, but in the end they both found that they could not have been better written, since from these letters there finally emerged a most complete and accurate picture of their unhappy brother's lot. Sonya's letters were full of the most prosaic actuality, the simplest and clearest description of every circumstance of Raskolnikov's life as a convict. They contained neither statements of her own hopes, nor speculations about the future, nor descriptions of her feelings. Instead of attempts to explain his psychological condition and his inner life generally, there were only facts, his own words, that is, and detailed reports of his health, of what he expressed a wish for at their interviews, the questions he asked her or the commissions he entrusted to her. All this she communicated with extraordinary matter-of-factness. In the end, the picture of their unhappy brother stood out in relief, exactly and clearly drawn in his own words, there could be nothing misleading about it, because it consisted wholly of facts and reports.

Dunya and her husband could derive little consolation from these reports, however, especially in the beginning. Sonya invariably informed them that he was sullen and uncommunicative, and almost completely uninterested in the news she always carried to him from her letters. He sometimes asked about his mother, and when at last, seeing that he had already divined the truth, she told him of Pulkheria Alexandrovna's death, she saw to her amazement that even this did not touch him very deeply, so far, at least, as she could judge from his outward appearance. She told them, among other things, that although he seemed so wrapped up in himself and so wittally remote from everybody else, his attitude to his new life was very direct and simple; he had a clear understanding of his position, did not expect any immediate improvement in it, cherished none of the frivolous hopes so natural in his situation, and showed almost no surprise at anything in his new surroundings, so little resembling all he had known before. She told them that his health was satisfactory. His work he performed without either reluctance or eagerness. He was almost indifferent to what he ate, but the food was so bad, except on Sundays and holidays,

that in the end he was glad to take a little money from her in order to procure his own tea every day; about everything else he asked her not to trouble herself, asserting that all this concern for him only irritated him. Sonya told them besides that all the accommodation in the prison was shared in common, that although she had not seen the inside of their barracks she inferred that they were crowded, hideous, and insanitary, that he slept on a piece of felt stretched over bare boards and that he had no desire to arrange things differently for himself, but that he lived so poorly and roughly not out of any preconceived plan or purpose but simply from inattention and outward indifference to his lot. Sonya's letters did not disguise that not only was he not interested in her visits but, especially at first, he was irritated by her presence and monosyllabic or even rude to her; but in the end he became used to their interviews and found they had grown necessary to him, so that he sadly missed them when for a few days she was ill and unable to visit him. On holidays she saw him at the prison gates or in the guard-room, to which he would be summoned for a few minutes, but on week-days she visited him at work, making her way to the workshops, the brick-works, or the warehouses on the banks of the Irtysh. Sonya informed them that she herself had been fortunate enough to acquire some acquaintances and patrons in the town, and that she did sewing and, since there was no dressmaker in the town, had become indispensable in many houses; but she did not mention that through her Raskolnikov had also come under the protection of the authorities, or that his labours were lightened, and so on. At last the news came (Dunya had noticed signs of alarm and anxiety in the most recent letters) that he was shunning everybody, that the other convicts had begun to dislike him, that for days together he did not speak, and that he was becoming very pale. Suddenly, in her last letter, Sonya wrote that he was seriously ill in the prison ward of the military hospital . . .

## CHAPTER II

HE had been ill for a long time, but it was not the horrors of a convict's life, nor the heavy work, nor the food, nor his shaven head and ragged clothing that had broken him: what did all that hardship and suffering matter to him? He was even glad of the hard work; physical exhaustion at least brought him a few



hours of peaceful sleep. And what did he care for the food that thin cabbage soup with cockroaches in it? In his former life, when he was a student, he had often not had even that. His clothes were warm and appropriate to his way of life. The fetters he did not even feel. Was he to be ashamed of his shaven head and parti-coloured coat? But before whom? Before Sonya? Sonya feared him, and was he to feel ashamed before her?

What was it then? He did, in fact, feel ashamed even before Sonya, whom he tortured because of this by his rough and contemptuous manner. But he was not ashamed of his shaven head or his fetters, his pride was deeply wounded, and it was the wound to his pride that made him fall ill. How happy he would have been if he could have put the blame on himself! Then he could have borne anything, even shame and infamy. But although he judged himself severely, his lively conscience could find no particularly terrible guilt in his past, except a simple *blunder*, that might have happened to anybody. He was ashamed precisely because he, Raskolnikov, had perished so blindly and hopelessly, with such dumb stupidity, by some decree of blind fate, and must humble himself and submit to the 'absurdity' of that decree, if he wished to find any degree of peace.

An objectless and undirected anxiety in the present, and endless sacrifice, by which nothing would be gained, in the future, was all the world held for him. And what did it signify that in eight years he would be only thirty-two and still able to begin a new life? What would he have to live for? What could be his aim? What should he strive for? To live in order to exist? But he had been ready a thousand times before to sacrifice his existence for an idea, a hope, even for a fancy. Mere existence had always meant little to him; he had always desired more. Perhaps it was just because of the strength of his desires that he had considered himself a man to whom more was permitted than to others.

If only fate had granted him remorse, scalding remorse, harrowing the heart and driving sleep away, such remorse as tortured men into dreaming of the rope or deep still water! Oh, he would have welcomed it gladly! Tears and suffering—they, after all, are also life. But he did not feel remorse for his crime.

He might at least have raged at his own stupidity, as before he had raged at the monstrous and infinitely stupid actions that had brought him to prison. But now when he was in prison,

and *free*, he had reconsidered and reweighed all his former actions, and found it completely impossible to think them as stupid and monstrous as they had seemed to him before, at that fatal time.

'How,' he thought, 'how was my idea more stupid than any of the other ideas and theories that have sprung up and multiplied like weeds all over the world, ever since the world existed? One need only look at the matter with a broad and completely independent mind, free from all the common influences, for my ideas not to seem so very . . . strange. Oh, you tuppenny-ha'penny prophets of denial, why do you stop half-way?'

'What makes what I have done seem to them so monstrous?' he asked himself. 'The fact that it was a . . . crime? What does the word mean? My conscience is easy. Of course, an illegal action has been committed; of course, the letter of the law has been broken and blood has been spilt; well, take my head to satisfy the letter of the law . . . and let that be all! Of course, if that were the case, many benefactors of mankind who did not inherit power but seized it for themselves, should have been punished at their very first steps. But the first steps of those men were successfully carried out, and therefore *they were right*, while mine failed, which means I had no right to permit myself that step.'

This was the sole sense in which he acknowledged his crime, that he had not succeeded and that he had confessed.

Another thought added to his suffering: why had he not killed himself? Why, when he stood on the bank of the river, had he chosen rather to confess? Was there really such strength in the will to live, and was it so difficult to overcome it? Had not Svidrigaylov, who feared death, overcome it?

He tortured himself with these questions, unable to realize that perhaps even while he stood by the river he already felt in his heart that there was something profoundly false in himself and his beliefs. He did not understand that that feeling might have been the herald of a coming crisis in his life, of his coming resurrection, of a future new outlook on life.

He preferred to see in all this only the dull bondage of instinct, which he could not shake off, and which he was still not strong enough to break (because of his weakness and worthlessness). He looked at his fellow convicts and marvelled how all of them, also, loved life and cherished it! It seemed to him, indeed, that it was more loved and prized, more highly valued,

in prison than in freedom. What terrible sufferings and hardships some of them had borne, the tramps, for example! How could one ray of sunlight mean so much to them, or the virgin forest, or a cool spring in some remote and hidden solitude seen once years before, that the tramp dreams of and longs for like a lovers' meeting, with the green grass all round it and a bird singing in the bushes? When he looked round him he saw even stranger things.

There was much in his prison surroundings, of course, that he did not and would not see. He lived, as it were, with his eyes cast down; he could not bear to look at the loathsome spectacle. But in course of time he began to find many things surprising and, almost against his will, to notice what he had not previously suspected. The most surprising thing of all, in general, was that terrible unbridgeable chasm which lay between him and all the others. It was as if he and they belonged to different races. They regarded him, and he them, with mistrust and hostility. He knew and understood the general reasons of his separateness, but he would never have admitted that these causes would be in fact so deep-rooted and strong. The prison contained some Polish exiles, who were political prisoners. These simply looked on all the rest as ignorant serfs and despised them; but Raskolnikov could not take that view; it was clear to him that in many ways, though ignorant, they were wiser than the Poles. There were Russians, also, who looked down on them—a former officer and two seminarists; Raskolnikov clearly saw their mistake.

He himself was disliked and avoided by everybody. In time they even began to hate him. Why, he did not know. Men who were far more culpable than he despised him and laughed at his crime.

'You are a gentleman!' they said. 'You shouldn't have gone to work with an axe; it's not at all the thing for a gentleman.'

In the second week of Lent it was his turn, with the rest of his barrack, to prepare for the sacrament. He went to church and prayed with the others. Out of this, he himself did not know why, a quarrel arose one day; they all turned on him in fury:

'You're an atheist! You don't believe in God!' they shouted. 'We must kill you.'

He had never spoken to them about God or religious beliefs, but they wanted to kill him as an atheist, he did not reply to them, but was silent. One of the convicts rushed at him in a



perfect frenzy. Raskolnikov awaited him calmly and silently; not a muscle of his face quivered. The guard managed to get between him and his attacker in time, or blood would have been shed.

There was a question which he could not answer: why was Sonya so well liked by everybody? She did not try to ingratiate herself with them; they rarely met her, except occasionally at work, when she came to see him for a minute. Nevertheless, they all knew her, knew besides that she had followed *him*, and knew how and where she lived. She did not give them money or perform any particular services for them. Once only, at Christmas, she brought a gift of pies and loaves for the whole prison. But little by little closer connexions developed between Sonya and them: she wrote letters for them to their families and posted them. When their relatives came to the town, the convicts told them to leave goods and even money for them in Sonya's care. Their wives and sweethearts knew her and visited her. And when she appeared where they were working, to visit Raskolnikov, or when she met a party of prisoners on their way to work, they would all take off their caps and bow to her. 'Little mother, Sofya Semenovna, you are our kind, affectionate mother,' these coarse, branded criminals would say to the slight little creature. She would smile and bow to them; they were all pleased when she smiled at them. They liked even the way she walked, turning round to watch her, and praising her; they praised her even for being so small; they could not find enough to say in her praise. They even went to her when they were ill.

Raskolnikov was in hospital all through the latter part of Lent and Easter. When he began to recover he remembered the dreams that had visited him while he lay in his fever and delirium. He had dreamt in his illness that the whole world was condemned to fall victim to a terrible, unknown pestilence which was moving on Europe out of the depths of Asia. All were destined to perish, except a chosen few, a very few. There had appeared a new strain of trichinae, microscopic creatures parasitic in men's bodies. But these creatures were endowed with intelligence and will. People who were infected immediately became like men possessed and out of their minds. But never, never, had any men thought themselves so wise and so unshakable in the truth as those who were attacked. Never had they considered their judgements, their scientific deductions,

or their moral convictions and creeds more infallible. Whole communities, whole cities and nations, were infected and went mad. All were full of anxiety, and none could understand any other, each thought he was the sole repository of truth and was tormented when he looked at the others, beat his breast, wrung his hands, and wept. They did not know how or whom to judge and could not agree what was evil and what good. They did not know whom to condemn or whom to acquit. Men killed one another in senseless rage. They banded together against one another in great armies, but when the armies were already on the march they began to fight among themselves, the ranks disintegrated, the soldiers fell on their neighbours, they thrust and cut, they killed and ate one another. In the towns, the tocsin sounded all day long, and called out all the people, but who had summoned them and why nobody knew, and everybody was filled with alarm. The most ordinary callings were abandoned, because every man put forward his own ideas, his own improvements, and there was no agreement, the labourers forsook the land. In places men congregated in groups, agreed together on some action, swore not to disband and immediately began to do something quite different from what they themselves had proposed, accused one another, fought and killed each other. Conflagrations were started, famine set in. All things and all men were perishing. The plague grew and spread wider and wider. In the whole world only a few could save themselves, a chosen handful of the pure, who were destined to found a new race of men and a new life, and to renew and cleanse the earth; but nobody had ever seen them anywhere, nobody had heard their voices or their words.

It distressed Raskolnikov that this ridiculous fantasy lingered so painfully and sadly in his memory, and that he could not shake off for so long the impressions of his delirious dreaming. The second week after Easter was passing in a succession of warm, clear, spring days; in the prison ward the windows were opened (they were barred and guarded by a sentry). Sonya had been able to visit him in the ward only twice during the whole course of his illness; each time she had to beg for permission and it was hard to get. But she often went into the yard, under the hospital windows, especially in the evening, sometimes only to stand and look for a moment at the windows of the ward from a distance. One evening Raskolnikov, who had almost completely recovered, had fallen asleep; when he woke up, he went

by chance to the window and caught sight of Sonya in the distance, standing by the gates of the hospital; she seemed to be waiting for something. It was as if something pierced his heart at that moment; he shuddered, and moved hastily away from the window. The next day Sonya did not come, nor the next after that; he realized that he was waiting anxiously for her. At length he was discharged. When he reached the prison he learnt from the other convicts that Sofya Semënovna had been taken ill and was in bed and not able to go out.

He was very disturbed and sent to inquire after her; he soon heard that her illness was not dangerous. When she in her turn heard that he was anxious and worried about her, Sonya sent him a note, written in pencil, informing him that she was much better, that she had simply had a slight cold, and that she would soon, very soon, come to see him at his work. As he read the note, his heart beat heavily and painfully.

The day was again bright and warm. Early in the morning, at about six o'clock, he went off to his work on the river-bank, where gypsum was calcined in a kiln set up in a shed, and afterwards crushed. Three convicts altogether had been sent there. One of them, with the guard, had gone to the fortress for a tool, the other began splitting wood and putting it in the kiln. Raskolnikov went out of the shed on to the bank, sat down on a pile of logs and looked at the wide, solitary river. From the high bank a broad landscape was revealed. From the other bank, far away, was faintly borne the sound of singing. There, in the immensity of the steppe, flooded with sunlight, the black tents of the nomads were barely visible dots. Freedom was there, there other people lived, so utterly unlike those on this side of the river that it seemed as though with them time had stood still, and the age of Abraham and his flocks was still the present. Raskolnikov sat on and his unwavering gaze remained fixed on the farther bank; his mind had wandered into day-dreams; he thought of nothing, but an anguished longing disturbed and tormented him.

Suddenly Sonya appeared at his side. She had come up almost soundlessly and sat down beside him. It was early, the chill of the morning still lingered. She wore her shabby old pelisse and the green shawl. Her face still bore traces of her illness; it was thinner and paler and hollow-checked. She gave him a joyful welcoming smile, but she held out her hand as timidly as ever.



She always stretched out her hand to him timidly, sometimes even half withdrawing it, as if she feared he would repulse her. He always grasped it reluctantly, always greeted her with a kind of irritation, sometimes remained obstinately silent all through her visit. There had been occasions when she had quailed before him and gone away deeply hurt. But this time their hands remained joined, he gave her a rapid glance, but said nothing and turned his eyes to the ground. They were alone; there was nobody to see them. The guard had turned away.

How it happened he himself did not know, but suddenly he seemed to be seized and cast at her feet. He clasped her knees and wept. For a moment she was terribly frightened, and her face grew white. She sprang up and looked down at him, trembling. But at once, in that instant, she understood. Infinite happiness shone in her eyes; she had understood, and she no longer doubted that he loved her, loved her for ever, and that now at last the moment had come . . .

They tried to speak, but they could not. Tears stood in their eyes. They were both pale and thin, but in their white sick faces there glowed the dawn of a new future, a perfect resurrection into a new life. Love had raised them from the dead, and the heart of each held endless springs of life for the heart of the other.

They knew they must wait and be patient. They had seven more years before them, and what unbearable sufferings and infinite happiness those years would hold! But he was restored to life and he knew it and felt to the full all his renewed being, and she—she lived only in his life!

The same evening, after the barrack was locked, Raskolnikov lay on his plank-bed and thought. Today it had even seemed to him that the other convicts, formerly so hostile, were already looking at him differently. He had even spoken to them and been answered pleasantly. He remembered this now, but after all, that was how it must be—ought not everything to be changed now?

He was thinking of her. He remembered how ceaselessly he had tormented her and harrowed her heart, he remembered her pale thin little face; but those memories now hardly troubled him: he knew with what infinite love he would now expiate all her sufferings.

And what were all, *all* the torments of the past? Everything,

even his crime, even his sentence and his exile, seemed to him now, in the first rush of emotion, to be something external and strange, as if it had not happened to him at all. But this evening he could not think long or coherently of anything or concentrate his attention on any idea, and indeed he was not consciously reasoning at all; he could only feel. Life had taken the place of logic and something quite different must be worked out in his mind.

There was a New Testament under his pillow. Mechanically he took it out. It was hers, the very one from which she had read to him the raising of Lazarus. At the beginning of his prison life he had been afraid that she would pester him with religion, talk about the gospels and press books on him. But to his great astonishment she did not once speak of it, and never even offered him a New Testament. He himself had asked her for it not long before his illness and she had brought it to him without a word. He had not yet opened it.

He did not open it even now, but an idea flashed through his mind: 'Could not her beliefs become my beliefs now? Her feelings, her aspirations, at least . . .'

She also had been full of agitation all day, and at night she even became feverish again. But she was so happy, and her happiness was so unexpected, that it almost frightened her. Seven years, *only* seven years! At the dawn of their happiness, both had been ready, for some few moments, to think of those seven years as if they were no more than seven days. He did not even know that the new life would not be his for nothing, that it must be dearly bought, and paid for with great and heroic struggles yet to come . . .

But that is the beginning of a new story, the story of the gradual renewal of a man, of his gradual regeneration, of his slow progress from one world to another, of how he learned to know a hitherto undreamed-of reality. All that might be the subject of a new tale, but our present one is ended.





## THE CHARACTERS OF CRIME AND PUNISHMENT

THE following list, which includes all persons mentioned more than once or twice in the novel, may be of assistance to English readers who find Russian personal names puzzling and difficult to remember. The usual polite form of address among equals was by the Christian name and patronymic (the 'middle' name, derived from the father's Christian name); surnames were rarely used. The Christian name, used among intimates, had usually several diminutive forms; as these have sometimes no more obvious connexion with the name they are derived from than, say, English 'Polly' with 'Mary', the diminutives used in the novel are given in brackets after the name of the character.

*Pronunciation.* If the reader will remember (i, to give strong stress to the syllable marked with an accent in this list, a) to give the vowels their 'continental' value and pronounce the consonants as in English, a rough approximation to the Russian pronunciation will be obtained. The consonant transliterated 'kh' sounds rather like Scottish 'ch' in 'loch'; 'zh' represents a sound like 's' in 'measure'; 'e' (always stressed) is pronounced roughly 'yo'; 'y' as a vowel is like English 'short i'; and the final '-v' is pronounced '-f'.

RASKÓLNIKOV, Rodión Románovich (Rodya, Rodenka, Rodka, *a former student*

„ Pulkhéria Alexandrovna, *his mother*

„ Avdótya Romanóvna (Dunya, Dunechka), *his sister*

RAZUMÍKHIN, Dímitri Prokófich *his friend*

Aléna Ivánovna, *a moneylender*

Lizavéta Ivánovna, *her sister*

MARMELÁDOV, Semën Zakhárovich, *a dismissed government clerk*

„ Katerína Ivánovna, *his wife*

„ Sófiya Seménovna (Sónya, Sonechka), *his daughter*

Pólna Mikháylovna (Pólya, Pólenka, Polechka)	} <i>Katerína Ivanovna's</i> <i>children</i>
Lénya Lída, Lídochka) <sup>1</sup>	
Kólya (Kólka)	

SVIRIDÓVLOV, Arkády Ivánovich, *Dunya's former employer*

<sup>1</sup> There seems to be some confusion about the little girl's name, Lenya is a diminutive of Elena, Lída of Lydia.

SVIDRIGÁYLOV, Márfa Petróvna, *his wife*

LÚZHIN, Peter Petróvich, *betrothed to Dunya*

LEBEZYÁTNIKOV, Andréy Semenovich, *his friend*

ZARNÍTSYNA, Praskóvya Pávlovna (Páshenka), *Raskolnikov's landlady*

" Natálya Egórevna, *her daughter*

Nastálya Petróvna (Nástenka, Nastásyushka), *her servant*

LIPPEWECHSEL, Amália Ivánovna,<sup>1</sup> *Marmeladov's landlady*

KAPERNAÚMOV, Sonya's landlord

ZOSÍMOV, *a doctor*

ZAMÉTOV, Alexander Grigóryevich, *chief clerk in the police office*

Nikodím Fomich, *chief of police*

Ilyá Petróvich ('the Squib'), *his assistant*

Porfirý Petróvich, *examining magistrate*

DEMÉNTYEV, Nikoláy (Mikoláy, Mikólka, Nikólka, Nikoláshka) } *painters*

Dmítri (Mitrey, Mítka)

<sup>1</sup> This is the patronymic Mrs. Lippewechsel herself lays claim to; Marmeladov refers to her as Amalia Fédorovna, and Katerina Ivanovna always annoys her by saying Amalia Lúdwigovna.

## EXPLANATORY NOTES

*Note on money.* As money plays an important role in *Crime and Punishment*, it may be helpful to establish that the Russian rouble in the novel is roughly equivalent to £2 sterling (or \$3) in today's money.

- 12 *England, where they have political economy*: a reference to the *laissez-faire* economic theories of Victorian Britain, and in particular to the well-known work of John Stuart Mill, *Principles of Political Economy* (1848).
- 15 *Cyrus the Persian* (599–529 BC) founder of the ancient Persian empire, and liberator of the Jews from Babylon.  
*Lewes's 'Physiology'*. *The Physiology of Everyday Life* by George Henry Lewes (1817–78) had been translated into Russian in 1861, and was seen as a key ideological text by the younger 'nihilistic' generation of the 1860s. It is another example of the influence of English thought on contemporary Russian attitudes.
- 17 *The Little Hut* i.e. *Khutorok* (perhaps, more literally a small-holding). A popular ballad about love and revenge 20 words by the 'peasant' poet A. V. Kol'tsov. See also p. 406.
- 40 *Order of St Anna*: a decoration which could be given for civil as well as military service. It had four grades. Most notably the decoration figures as the title and theme of a Chekhov short story, 'An Anna Round the Neck'.  
*Schleswig-Holstein* territory disputed between Prussia and Denmark, which in 1864 led to conflict between them and resulted in the Austro-Prussian war of 1866.
- 48 *Such and such a percentage*: the statistical approach to sociological questions was much discussed in the Russian press at the time, following the translation in 1865 of *Man and the Development of his Faculties. An Experiment in Social Physics* by the Belgian mathematician Adolphe Quetelet (1796–1874). His follower, A. Wagner, is also mentioned (see p. 383).
- 95 *a big satire*: a reference to the fashionable 'denunciatory literature' (*oblichitel'naya literatura*) of the time.
- 100 *yellowish water*: St Petersburg had no system of piped water. Wells were infrequent, and water came principally from the



rivers and canals. Apart from the realism of this detail, it should be noted that the frequent repetition of the colour 'yellow' takes on a symbolic significance throughout the novel, and is associated with madness: i.e. 'yellow house' (*zholtyy dom* is a lunatic asylum).

- 106 *the Movement* the radical movement of the young people of the 1860s.

*the Woman question* female emancipation and female education were burning issues for the young radicals of the 1860s. See also p. 351.

- 107 *Rousseau* is a sort of *Radishchev* Jean Jacques Rousseau, whose *Confessions* are referred to earlier. A. N. Radishchev (1749-1802) is often regarded as the father of the Russian intelligentsia. He was exiled to Siberia for his work *A Journey from St Petersburg to Moscow*, in which he raised the plight of the peasants. He had been compared to Rousseau by Chernyshevsky among others.

*First Line* the first of a series of parallel streets on Vasilyevsky Island. See map.

- 108 *It's a well-known trick* the law allowed for payments to be made to those who had suffered insult, on a scale according to rank. It was seen by the unscrupulous as a way of making money. This a civil servant in the unfinished novel *Brother and Sister* (1864) by N. G. Pomyalovskiy seeks to live by this means.

- 112 *Vrazumakhan*, not *Razumakhan* Razumikhin's name is derived from the word for reason *razum* but by introducing himself in this way, he is implying that his role is that of 'knocker-in of sense' (cf. *vrazumit*, 'to make understand'). See also note to p. 290.

- 110 *Senat* an institution founded by Peter the Great in 1711, as the highest legal instance in the country.

- 115 *When the great hour struck* a reference to the Act of Emancipation of the Serfs, promulgated on 17 March 1861, which was designed to place the country on a new economic footing. See note to p. 273.

- 150 *princesses*: i.e. prostitutes.

- 153 *Fire in Peterburgsky Quarter* fires broke out in St Petersburg in 1862, and their nature and origin became a focal point for political dissension. On the one hand they were blamed on the 'militants' but this was hotly disputed by the defenders of the

younger generation who saw the fires as police provocation

211 *That queen* Marie Antoinette (1755-93), wife of Louis XVI imprisoned and executed in the French Revolution

218 *Crevez, chiens!* 'Die, dogs, if you are not happy'

245 *not such a thing as crime?* the idea that crime was merely a product of social conditions was advanced by Chernyshevsky both in his novel *What is to be done?* and in articles. Again, such intellectual positions had an English precursor in the philanthropist Robert Owen whose reforming ideas were much discussed by Chernyshevsky. Owen's ideas on crime are contained in *A New View of Society* (London, 1813).

246 *The phalanstery is ready*: the ideal social organization advocated by the French Utopian socialist Charles Fourier (1772-1827). Dostoevsky himself had been interested in Fourier at the time of his arrest in 1849. See also note to p. 343.

247 *an article of yours 'Concerning Crime'* another possible English source for Raskolnikov's ideas is De Quincey's *On Murder Considered as One of the Fine Arts*.

251 *the New Jerusalem* the aim of the French Utopian socialist Saint-Simon (1760-1825), in whom Dostoevsky had been interested as a young man. For the 'Christian socialism' of Saint-Simon the building of 'the New Jerusalem' was the aim of the perfect society on earth.

252 *new people* the term for the young radical generation of the 1860s

253 *Lycurgus* the legendary lawgiver of Sparta, credited with establishing its military regime in the seventh century BC

263 *Toulon Egypt* turning points in the career of Napoleon I

264 *the Prophet, on horseback* Mohammed (cf. p. 253)

269 *et nihil humanum* the version of this quotation ascribed to the Roman playwright Terence (c.195-159 BC) is *Homo sum, humani nil a me alienum puto* ('I am a man and reckon nothing human alien to me') — a statement taken to be a most accurate expression of humanism

271 *a nobleman publicly held up to shame* the reference is to a certain Kozlyanov who attacked a female passenger in a tram. The attention this attracted in the press is an example of the themes treated by the so-called 'demagogic literature' of the 1860s. See note to p. 95

271 *the 'Egyptian Nights'* at a literary and musical evening held in Perm, a certain Mrs Tolmachova had given a reading of Pushkin's slightly salacious poem 'Egyptian Nights'. An article in the *Century* (*Vek*) had strongly criticized Tolmachova for her impropriety, and its author had been censured in his turn by the ardent champion of female causes M. L. Mikhaylov. The 'black eyes' refer to the way Tolmachova herself was presented in the article in *Century*.

273 *the abolition of serfdom* by the Act of 1861 many landowners suffered a disjunct decline in their fortunes, particularly if their wealth before 1861, had relied heavily on serf labour. See note to p. 145.

*all kinds of seminarists* in the 1860s the word 'seminarist' became almost synonymous with 'nihilist', and it is a curious fact that these training-schools for priests actually turned out revolutionaries. Chernyshevsky, Dobrolyubov, and Pomyalovsky were all products of the seminary, as later was Joseph Stalin. Cf. also p. 456.

*these Dussauts* Dussaut was the owner of a fashionable St Petersburg restaurant.

274 *j'ai le vin mauvais* 'Wine does not agree with me'.

*Berg* an entrepreneur who organized trips in hot-air balloons in St Petersburg.

290 *Mr Rassudkin*, another 'meaningful' distortion of Razumikhin's name (see note to p. 112). *Rassudok* in Russian means 'reason', 'intellect'.

325 *Sebastopol* *Alma*: during the Crimean War (1853-6), the Battle of the Alma on 8 September 1854 was followed by an eleven-month siege of Sebastopol by British and French troops.

328 *General Mack* field marshal of the Austrian army who in 1805 found himself unexpectedly surrounded by the French army at Ulm, and was defeated and captured by Napoleon.

347 'denouncers': see notes to pp. 95 and 271.

349 *Fourier's system and Darwin's theory* fashionable intellectual theories particularly attractive to the 'nihilists' of the younger generation. See note to p. 246.

*a new 'commune'* Chernyshevsky's influential novel *What is to be done?* advocated the setting-up of communes. One was actually



established in Middle Meshchanskaya Street. The question of the desirability of wives taking lovers is also a contentious issue raised in Chernyshevsky's novel.

- 350 *the abacus*: an ancient bead calculator still to be seen in Russian shops.
- 353 *Dobrolyubov* . *Belinsky*: by the mid 1860s the radical reputation of V. G. Belinsky (1811-49) and even of N. A. Dobrolyubov (1836-61) suffered something of an eclipse, given the ascendancy of more extreme views voiced by D. I. Pisarev (1840-68). Lebezyatnikov is revealing his adherence to the very latest radical opinions. See note to p. 355.
- 354 *the question of kissing hands*: a reference to a famous passage in *What is to be done?* which deplored the practice of kissing women's hands as demeaning.
- 355 *the question of entering rooms*: a key issue concerning the right to individual privacy in marriage raised in *What is to be done?*
- cess-pits* . *Pushkin*: this is a paraphrase of the extreme views on art held by Pisarev. See note to p. 353.
- only one word, 'useful'*: a parody of the ideas of English Utilitarianism, made fashionable in the writings of Chernyshevsky and Pisarev.
- 363 *the traditional 'kutya'*: a dish traditionally associated with funeral feasts in Russia.
- 372 *en toutes lettres*: i.e. 'quite clearly'.
- 377 *Gott der barmherzige*: 'Merciful God!'
- 383 'A General Deduction from the Positive Method' . *Piederit's article (and Wagner's as well)*: in 1866 a collection of translations from the works of Claude Bernard, Molleschott, Piederit, and Adolf Wagner was published under the title *A General Deduction from the Positive Method*.
- 407 *A professor there*: possibly a reference to Claude Bernard (1813-78), an eminent French experimental physician, much denigrated by Dostoevsky for his materialist view of life. He is referred to in *The Karamazov Brothers*.
- 435 *And did you know he was a schismatic*: the Russian schismatics or *raskol'niki*, while ostensibly taking their origins from the schism in the Russian Church in the seventeenth century, were in fact composed of many sects, reflecting a wide diversity of popular religion. The sect here referred to is the *beguny*, the 'runners'.

It was not unknown for such sectarians to wish to take on suffering, even if it meant confessing to crimes which they had not committed. There is a substratum of sectarian imagery in all Dostoevsky's novels, and it is not without significance that in *Crime and Punishment* Raskolnikov's very name is derived from the word for sectarian, *raskolnik*, and that Mikoika, who is a sort of 'double' figure for Raskolnikov in that he confesses to his crime, should be introduced by Porfiry with the words '*On iz raskol'nikov*' (literally, 'He is from the *raskolniki*')

436 *The new courts* these were set up as a result of the legal reforms of 1863-4, and introduced trial by jury.

437 *sayings about blood 'refreslang'* a theory that Napoleon I suffered from abnormally low blood pressure and needed the excitement of battle to make him feel normal was being discussed in the Russian press

442 *a modern dissenter* i.e. a sectarian (see note to p. 435). In 1865 certain Old Believers asked Napoleon III to find refuge for them abroad.

*Mr. Midshipman Easy* the translation substitutes Martyn's hero for Gogol's *Midshipman Dyrka* who is mentioned in the play *Marriage*. But there is confusion on Porfiry's part, for the character he obviously has in mind is another midshipman, referred to in the same play—*Petukh*.

461 *la nature et la verité* 'nature and truth' a mocking reference to the philosophy of Jean-Jacques Rousseau. The phrase is a key refrain in Dostoevsky's *Notes from the Underground*.

463 *Où va-t-elle la vertu se nicher?* 'Where will virtue find a nest?' *assez causé*: 'enough of talking'.

508 *nihi est* is nothing. The phrase appears to identify Raskolnikov with 'nihilism'. Pisarev, in particular, rejected mere 'beauty'. See note to p. 355.

*Livingstone's Journals*. David Livingstone (1813-73) published his *Narrative of an Expedition to the Zambesi and its Tributaries and the Discovery of the Lakes of Shirwa and Nyassa* in 1865.

509 *extraordinary number of midwives* short-haired females. Female 'nihilists' of the younger generation often turned to midwifery as a practical step in their campaign to help the cause of women. They also wore their hair short and often affected blue-tinted glasses.

- 519 *the banks of the Irtysh*. Dostoevsky himself had spent his penal servitude on the banks of the Irtysh in Siberia.
- 523 *a new strain of trichinae* in 1865-6 the existence of microbes called trichinae and epidemics caused by them, were topics of concern in the Russian press. Trichinae infect pigs, and the symbolic use here of an epidemic caused by them suggests the biblical parable of the Gadarene swine, which Dostoevsky would later project as a metaphor for the madness of nihilism in his novel *The Devils*.





SERGEI AKSAKOV

A Russian Gentleman

ANTON CHEKHOV

Early Stories

Five Plays

The Princess and Other Stories

The Russian Master and Other Stories

The Steppe and Other Stories

Twelve Plays

Ward Number Six and Other Stories

A Woman's Kingdom and Other Stories

FYODOR DOSTOEVSKY

An Accidental Family

Crime and Punishment

Devils

A Gentle Creature and Other Stories

The Idiot

The Karamazov Brothers

Memoirs from the House of the Dead

Notes from the Underground and

The Gambler

NIKOLAI GOGOL

Village Evenings Near Dikanka and  
Mirgorod

Plays and Petersburg

ALEXANDER HERZEN

Childhood, Youth, and Exile

MIKHAIL LERMONTOV

A Hero of our Time

ALEXANDER PUSHKIN

Eugene Onegin

The Queen of Spades and Other Stories

LEO TOLSTOY

Anna Karenina

The Kreutzer Sonata and Other Stories

The Raid and Other Stories

Resurrection

War and Peace

IVAN TURGENEV

Fathers and Sons

First Love and Other Stories

A Month in the Country

A SELECTION OF OXFORD WORLD'S CLASSICS

---

APOLLINAIRE, ALFRED JARRY, and MAURICE MAETERLINCK	Three Pre-Surrealist Plays
HONORÉ DE BALZAC	Cousin Bette Eugénie Grandet Père Goriot
CHARLES BAUDELAIRE	The Flowers of Evil The Prose Poems and Fanfarlo
DENIS DIDEROT	This is Not a Story and Other Stories
ALEXANDRE DUMAS (PÈRE)	The Black Tulip The Count of Monte Cristo Louise de la Vallière The Man in the Iron Mask La Reine Margot The Three Musketeers Twenty Years After
ALEXANDRE DUMAS (FILS)	La Dame aux Camélias
GUSTAVE FLAUBERT	Madame Bovary A Sentimental Education Three Tales
VICTOR HUGO	The Last Day of a Condemned Man and Other Prison Writings Notre-Dame de Paris
J.-K. HUYSMANS	Against Nature
JEAN DE LA FONTAINE	Selected Fables
PIERRE CHODERLOS DE LACLOS	Les Liaisons dangereuses
MME DE LAFAYETTE	The Princesse de Clèves
GUY DE MAUPASSANT	A Day in the Country and Other Stories Mademoiselle Fifi
PROSPER MÉRIMÉE	Carmen and Other Stories



BLAISE PASCAL

Pensées and Other Writings

JEAN RACINE

Britannicus, Phaedra, and Athaliah

EDMOND ROSTAND

Cyrano de Bergerac

MARQUIS DE SADE

The Misfortunes of Virtue and Other Early  
Tales

GEORGE SAND

Indiana

The Master Pipers

Mauprat

The Miller of Angibault

STENDHAL

The Red and the Black

The Charterhouse of Parma

JULES VERNE

Around the World in Eighty Days

Journey to the Centre of the Earth

Twenty Thousand Leagues under the Seas

VOI TAIRE

Candide and Other Stories

Letters concerning the English Nation

ÉMILE ZOLA

L'Assommoir

The Attack on the Mill

La Bête humaine

Germinal

The Ladies' Paradise

The Masterpiece

Nana

Thérèse Raquin

A SELECTION OF OXFORD WORLD'S CLASSICS

---

Till Eulenspiegel; His Adventures

Eight German Novellas

GEORG BÜCHNER

Danton's Death, Leonce and Lena, and  
Woyzeck

J. W. VON GOETHE

Elective Affinities

Erotic Poems

Faust- Part One and Part Two

E. T. A. HOFFMANN

The Golden Pot and Other Tales

J. C. F. SCHILLER

Don Carlos and Mary Stuart

*The  
Oxford  
World's  
Classics  
Website*

[www.worldsclassics.co.uk](http://www.worldsclassics.co.uk)

- Information about new titles
- Explore the full range of Oxford World's Classics
- Links to other literary sites and the main OUP webpage
- Imaginative competitions, with bookish prizes
- Peruse *Compass*, the Oxford World's Classics magazine
- Articles by editors
- Extracts from Introductions
- A forum for discussion and feedback on the series
- Special information for teachers and lecturers

[www.worldsclassics.co.uk](http://www.worldsclassics.co.uk)



American Literature

British and Irish Literature

Children's Literature

Classics and Ancient Literature

Colonial Literature

Eastern Literature

European Literature

History

Medieval Literature

Oxford English Drama

Poetry

Philosophy

Politics

Religion

The Oxford Shakespeare

---

A complete list of Oxford Paperbacks, including Oxford World's Classics, OPUS, Past Masters, Oxford Authors, Oxford Shakespeare, Oxford Drama, and Oxford Paperback Reference, is available in the UK from the Academic Division Publicity Department, Oxford University Press, Great Clarendon Street, Oxford OX2 6DP

In the USA, complete lists are available from the Paperbacks Marketing Manager, Oxford University Press, 198 Madison Avenue, New York, NY 10016.

Oxford Paperbacks are available from all good bookshops. In case of difficulty, customers in the UK can order direct from Oxford University Press Bookshop, Freepost, 116 High Street, Oxford OX1 4BR, enclosing full payment. Please add 10 per cent of published price for postage and packing.

12/08



South End Branch Library  
685 Tremont Street  
Boston, MA 02125

**WITHDRAWN**

No longer the property of the  
Boston Public Library.  
Sale of this material authorized by the Library.

**'I wanted to make myself a Napoleon,' states  
Raskolnikov, 'and that is why I killed her.'**

*Crime and Punishment* (1866) is the story of a murder committed on principle, of a killer who wishes by his action to set himself outside and above society. A novel of great physical and psychological tension, pervaded by Dostoevsky's sinister evocation of St Petersburg, it also has moments of wild humour.

Dostoevsky's own harrowing experiences mark the novel. He had himself undergone interrogation and trial, and was condemned to death, a sentence commuted at the last moment to penal servitude. In prison he was particularly impressed by one hardened murderer who seemed to have attained a spiritual equilibrium beyond good and evil: yet witnessing the misery of other convicts also engendered in Dostoevsky a belief in the Christian idea of salvation through suffering.

**THIS EDITION INCLUDES**

**Introduction • Bibliography • Chronology  
Map • List of characters • Explanatory notes**

Translated by Jessie Coulson

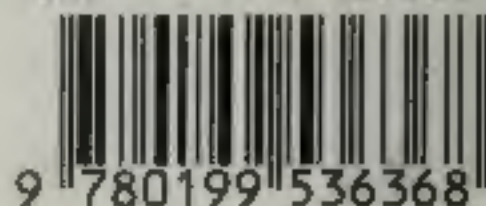
With an Introduction and Notes by Richard Peace

Cover illustration: detail from *They did not expect him*, 1884-8, by Ilya Repin.  
Photo: RIA Novosti

**OXFORD**  
UNIVERSITY PRESS

[www.oup.com/worldsclassics](http://www.oup.com/worldsclassics)

ISBN 978-0-19-953636-8



£6.99 RRP

\$12.95 USA